



DELHI UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

C. No. 42:841:A

A25

Ac. No. 167677

Date of release for loan

91 1963

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of 0.6 nP. will be charged for each day the book is kept overtime.

ORIGINAL SANSKRIT. TEXTS.

ORIGINAL SAṆSKRIT TEXTS

ON THE
ORIGIN AND HISTORY
OF
THE PEOPLE OF INDIA,

THEIR RELIGION AND INSTITUTIONS,

COLLECTED, TRANSLATED, AND ILLUSTRATED,

BY

J. MUIR, D.C.L., LL.D., PH.D.,

CORRESPONDING MEMBER OF THE ROYAL RUSSIAN ACADEMY OF SCIENCES, AND OF THE AMERICAN
ORIENTAL SOCIETY, CORRESPONDING OF THE FRENCH ACADEMY OF INSCRIPTIONS, AND
BRIEN ELITES, HONORARY MEMBER OF THE GERMAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY,
AND FOREIGN MEMBER OF THE PRUSSIAN LITERARY SOCIETY.

VOLUME FOURTH.

COMPARISON OF THE VEDIC WITH THE LATE INTERPRETATIONS OF THE
PRINCIPAL INDIAN DRUIDS.

SECOND EDITION, REVISED



LONDON:

HERTFORD :
PRINTED BY STEPHEN AUSTIN AND SONS.

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

THE object which I have had in view in the present Volume is to compare the representations which are given of the Indian deities *Brahmā*, *Vishnu*, and *Rudra*, and of the goddess *Ambikā*, in the Vedic hymns and *Brāhmaṇas*, with the accounts which we find in the legendary poems called *Itihāsas* and *Purāṇas*, and to show, so far as the materials at our command will allow, to what extent, and by what steps in each case, the earlier conceptions were gradually modified in the later works.

The First Chapter (pp. 3-62) treats of the deity who is described in the later hymns of the *Rig-veda*, and in the *Atharva-veda*, under the different titles of *Viśva-karman*, *Uraṇyagarbha*, and *Prajāpati*, and appears to correspond with the *Brahmā* of the more modern legendary books.

Though this god was originally unconnected with *Vishnu* and *Rudra*, while at a subsequent period he came to be regarded in systematic mythology as the first person in the triad of which they formed the second and third members, yet the general idea entertained of his character, if at all altered, has been less modified in the course of his history than is the case in regard to the other two deities.

* [With the exception of the notes in pages vi., vii., and x., and the alterations in the figures showing the pages in which the several chapters and sections begin and end, rendered necessary by the additions made in this second edition, this preface is reprinted nearly as it originally stood.]

Brahmā was from the beginning considered as the Creator, and he continued to be regarded as fulfilling the same function even after he had sunk into a subordinate position, and had come to be represented by the votaries of Vishnu and Mahādeva respectively as the mere creature and agent of one or other of those two gods (see pp. 188, 194, 230, 267, 273). In later times Brahmā has had few special worshippers; the only spot where he is periodically adored being at Pushkara in Rajputana.* Three of the acts which the earlier legends ascribe to

* See Professor H. H. Wilson's Essay on the Padma Purāṇa, in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society, Vol. V, p. 309, reprinted in vol. III of his collected works, pp. 74 f., and the same author's Oxford Lectures, p. 21. In the preface to his edition of the Nārada Panchāgama, published in the Bibliotheca Indica in 1865, p. 4, the Rev. K. M. Banerjee refers to this subject "Of the three select divinities," (Brahmā, Vishnu, and Śiva) "the first, however, had never become an object of special adoration, having been guilty of an incestuous attempt on his own daughter" (See pp. 40 ff. of this volume) "The incident is thus accounted for in the work now presented to the public." The words referred to will be quoted below. They occur in the tenth section, vv. 30 f. It had been previously related that Brahmā had exhorted his son Nārada to take a wife and so people the world (*śrīśānti kuru mahābhūga kṛitvā dāna-paripāṭhanā*, v. 5). Hereupon Nārada, who was a votary of Kṛishṇa, becomes angry, affirms that devotion to that god is the sole way to attain felicity, and denounces his father as an evil instructor (vv. 7-22). Brahmā in reply curses Nārada, and dooms him to a life of sensuality and subjection to women, etc. (vv. 23-29). Nārada pays back the imprecation in the lines translated by Mr. Banerjee, which I give in the original, with some of those that follow: *śūntasya vachanāṃ śrūtā chukopa Nārada munih | sarvapa pitṛaṇāṃ śighraṃ durayāṇāṃ cha yathochitam | 31 Apūryo bhava dushta trāṇāṃ tran-mantraprasakāh | lutoh | agamyā-gamanecchhu te bhavishyati na vāṇinnyah | 32 Nū adasya tu vāpina sa 'pūryo jagatāṃ vidhih | arishṭvō si a-kanyā-upaṇāṃ cha paschad dhūṣṭarav purā | 33 Iṇuoh vachāṇāṃ tatpūjya bhṛtātah Śaśāṅk idibhih | lappitah kamūyutah cha pūṇat Brahmu babhūra sah | 34 Nāradaḥ t i namasṛjitya pitṛaṇāṃ kamah dhar m | vipra-deham paritijyja gandharvāt cha babhūra sah | 35 "Hearing the words of his father, the muni Nārada became incensed, and straightway cursed him dreadfully, as was befitting. 31. 'Wretch, become no object of adoration: how shall any one be devoted to the forms of thy worship? Thou shalt without doubt lust after her who is no fit object of thy desires.' 32. 'Through this curse of Nārada, the creator of the world ceased to be an object of worship. Beholding the beauty of his daughter, he formerly ran after her.' 33. Afterwards, being reproached by Śaśāṅka and others, he abandoned his corporeal form. Brahmā afterwards became ashamed, being a slave to lust. 34. And Nārada having made obsequence to his lotus-born father, forsook his Brahmanical body, and became a Gandharva." His loves are then related.*

him, or to Emūsha, the assumption of the forms of a tortoise, a boar,* and a fish, are in later works transferred to Vishnu (see pp. 27, 33 f., 36 and 38).

The Second Chapter (pp. 63–208) first of all describes the original conception of Vishnu as he is celebrated in the hymns of the Rig-veda (pp. 63–97). The particular attribute by which he is there distinguished from every other deity is that of striding across the heavens by three paces. This phrase is interpreted by one of the ancient commentators as denoting the threefold manifestations of light, as fire on earth, as lightning in the atmosphere, and as the sun in the sky; and by another as designating the three stages of the sun's daily movement, his rising, culmination, and setting. The latter explanation seems to satisfy best the idea of movement expressed in the description; but the conception is not distinctly developed in any of the texts. Some of the highest divine functions and attributes are also assigned to Vishnu; and we might thus be led to suppose that the authors of these hymns regarded him as the Supreme Deity. But this supposition is invalidated by the fact that Indra is sometimes associated with Vishnu in the performance of these functions, and that several other deities are magnified in terms of similar import (pp. 97–114). The Third Section (pp. 114–121) treats of Vishnu as one of the sons of Aditi. The origin here assigned to this god would lead us to conclude that he was originally considered as of no higher rank than the other beings who bear the same name of Ādityas. The Fourth

* Compare the passage from the Tattirīya Sanhitā, vii. 1, 5, 1; quoted in the first volume of this work, p. 52.

Section (pp. 121-156) contains the legends relating to the same god in the Brāhmaṇas, in which he is identified with sacrifice; while in one of them he is spoken of as a dwarf. The later accounts of the dwarf incarnation are next adduced as recorded in the Rāmāyaṇa, the Mahābhārata, and in the Viṣṇu and Bhāgavata Purāṇas. In the Fifth Section a passage is quoted from the Nirukta (pp. 156 ff.), in which the gods are classified, and the most prominent places are assigned to Agni, Vāyu or Indra, and Sūrya, who seem to have been regarded by the author as the triad of deities in whom the Supreme Spirit was especially revealed, while Viṣṇu and Rudra are merely mentioned as gods who were worshipped conjointly with Indra and Soma, respectively. The later triad of Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Rudra, seems therefore to have been then unknown. The remainder of this Section (pp. 163-298), and pp. 441-491 of the Appendix, are chiefly occupied by quotations from the Rāmāyaṇa and Mahābhārata, containing a great variety of details relating to Rāma and Kṛishṇa, the two heroes who came ultimately to be regarded as the principal incarnations of Viṣṇu; and an attempt is made by an examination of these texts to elucidate the question whether or not a divine nature was ascribed to these two personages by the authors of the two poems as they originally stood. The passages adduced from the Mahābhārata relating to Kṛishṇa make frequent mention of Mahādeva also, and illustrate the conceptions entertained of him at that epoch of Indian history when they were composed. This Section contains also many texts which indicate the existence of a strong rivalry between the adherents of these

two gods. In different passages here cited, Vishnu and Rudra (Mahādeva) are both described by their respective votaries as one with the Supreme Spirit; while in some places they are identified with one another.

The Third Chapter (pp. 299–437) traces the mythological history of Rudra as he is represented in the Rig-veda (pp. 299–320), in the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā (321–331), in the Atharva-veda (332–339), in the Brāhmaṇas and Mahābhārata (339–355), in the Upanishads (355–363), and in various further texts from the Itihāsas and Purāṇas which describe some of this god's proceedings, and indicate the struggles of his votaries to introduce his worship, as illustrated in the story of Dakṣa's sacrifice (363–393). A summary of the conclusions deducible from these Sections is given in pp. 393–405. Pages 405–420 contain an inquiry into the origin of the Linga worship,—though unfortunately nothing better than a negative result is obtained;—and into the question whether or not Mahādeva's worship was most prevalent in the South of India in the epic era. This Chapter concludes with an account of the different representations of the goddess called variously Ambikā, Umā, Kālī, Karālī, Pārvatī, Durgā, etc., which we find in the Kena and Muṇḍaka Upanishads, in the Taittiriya Āraṇyaka, in the Rāmāyaṇa, Harivaṁśa, and Mahābhārata, and in the Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa (pp. 420–437).

• A further indication of the various matters illustrated in this Volume will be obtained by consulting the Index under the names Brahmā, Vishnu, Rāma, Kṛishṇa, Umā, etc.

• It will be apparent to all Sanskrit scholars that the

main results at which I have arrived in regard to Viṣṇu, Rudra, and Ambikā, are not new. Rosen (in the notes to his translation of the R.V. p. li.), Burnouf (Pref. to *Bhāg. Pur.* vol. iii. p. xxii.), whose remarks are subjoined in a note,* and Wilson (Pref. to transl. of R.V. i. p. xxxiv.), had already drawn attention to the text of Yāska and to the Commentary of Durga, by which it is shown that the three steps of Viṣṇu were interpreted by the ancient commentators in the manner which I have indicated in pp. 64 ff.

In the same way Wilson, Weber, and Whitney (see pp. 394 ff. of this Volume), had pointed out that the Rudra of the Rig-veda is very different from the Rudra or Mahādeva of the Purāṇas. And in pp. 421 ff. I have quoted the dissertations of Professor Weber on the mythological history of Ambikā or Umā. The whole, therefore, that I can claim to have effected is to have brought together, and to have illustrated to the best of my power, all the most important texts which I could

* "We can at this day go further still, and affirm that the Viṣṇu of the Vedas is in no way the Viṣṇu of the mythologists. A commentator of a certain authority, Durgachārya, explaining the Nirukta of Yāska, when he arrives at the text of Medhātithi published by Rosen," (i.e. R.V. i. 22, 17 ff.) "says positively that Viṣṇu is the sun, either because he enters into the heaven, or because he entirely occupies it. This interpretation, which he derives from Yāska himself, leaves no doubt on the question what we are to understand by the Viṣṇu of the Vedas, who takes three steps. It is manifestly the luminary of day regarded in the three principal moments of his course, his rising, meridional position, and setting; and there is none of the expressions of the Vedic texts in which this god appears, making himself in three steps master of the celestial vault, to which this explanation given by Yāska several centuries before our era does not apply. We learn by this example what prudence it is indispensable to bring to the studies by the aid of which criticism must restore the chain which connects the mythical development of the Indian religion with the conceptions of the primitive naturalism of the Vedas. Neither the identity of the names, nor even that of the sense, is a sufficiently sure guide; and the ideas, though originally simple, are clothed in forms either so different, or so easy to be confounded, that we cannot judge of the details without having understood and embraced the whole."

discover to have any bearing on the subjects which I have handled.

My best thanks are due to the different scholars who are mentioned in the course of the Work as having given me assistance; and in particular to Professor Aufrecht, whose name recurs perpetually in the following pages, and who has favoured me with the most valuable suggestions and information in respect particularly to the sense of the Vedic texts, which long and careful study has rendered him so competent to interpret.

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

WITH the exception of a variety of additions, interspersed through the work, which in all fill about 60 pp., but little alteration has been made in this Edition. The most important additions, chiefly in notes, will be found in pp. 39 f., 78 f., 126, 131, 138 f., 143 f., 151–156, 165, 167, 200–203, 255 f., 261 f., 267, 278, 289 f., 298, 301–303, 304, 310, 314 f., 317, 321, 327 ff., 337, 341, 347 f., 381, 393, 403, 406, 413 f., 420, 425, 441 f., 456, 464 f., 472, 474, 476, 491–493, 494, 496, and in the “Additional Notes.” The addition in pp. 151–156, from the Matsya Purāṇa, contains a statement (unusual, if not altogether unknown in other Indian works) in reference to Viṣṇu’s incarnations, which represents seven of them as being the result of a curse uttered against the god by Sukra, the priest of the Asurās, whose mother he (Viṣṇu) had slain. At the same time it is affirmed, strangely enough, that these incarnations, though occasioned by a curse, were intended for the repression of unrighteousness when it should become dominant on the earth.

CONTENTS.

PAGES.

v.—xii. PREFACES.

1, 2. PLAN OF THE WORK.

3—62. CHAPTER I. TEXTS FROM THE VEDIC HYMNS, BRĀHMANAS, AND PURĀNAS, ETC., RELATING TO THE CREATION OF THE UNIVERSE, AND TO THE DEITIES VIŚVAKARMA, DAKṢHA, ADITI, HIRAN̄YAGARBHA, SKAMBHA, PRAJĀPATI, PURUṢHA, NĀRĀYAṆA, AND BRAHMĀ.

3—20. SECT. I. Texts from the Rig and Atharva-vedas regarding the creation and some of the deities just named.

20—62. SECT. II. Creation; primeval waters; mundane egg; Brahmā or Prajāpati; morality of the Indian gods; creation of the gods, etc.; according to the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, Manu, the Rāmāyaṇa, the Viṣṇu and Bhāgavata Purāṇas, and the Harivaṃśa.

63—298. CHAPTER II. VIṢṆU, AS REPRESENTED IN THE VEDIC HYMNS, THE BRĀHMANAS, THE ITIHĀSAS, AND THE PURĀNAS.

63—97. SECT. I. Passages in the Hymns of the Rig-veda relating to Viṣṇu.

97—114. SECT. II. Subordinate position occupied by Viṣṇu in the Hymns of the Rig-veda, as compared with other deities, Indra, Varuṇa, etc.

114—121. SECT. III. Viṣṇu as one of the twelve Ādityas, according to the Mahābhārata and Purāṇas.

121—156. SECT. IV. Stories regarding Viṣṇu from the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, the Panchaviṃśa Brāhmaṇa, the Rāmāyaṇa, the Mahābhārata, and the Purāṇas.

- 156—298. SECT. V. Vishnu, as represented in the Nirukta, and his character and incarnations as described in the Rāmāyaṇa, Mahābhārata, and Purāṇas; with Notices of Mahādeva.
- 299—437. CHAPTER III. RUDRA OR MAHĀDRUṬA, AND AMBĪKĀ OR UMĀ, AS REPRESENTED IN THE VEDIC HYMNS, BRĀHMANAS AND UPANISHADS, AND IN THE ITIHĀSAS AND PURĀNAS.
- 299—320. SECT. I. Rudra, as represented in the Hymns of the Rig-veda.
- 321—331. SECT. II. Passages relating to Rudra, and to Ambikā, from the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā of the white Yajur-veda.
- 332—339. SECT. III. Passages relating to Rudra, Bhava, Sarva, etc., from the Atharva-veda.
- 339—355. SECT. IV. Passages relating to Rudra from the Śatapatha and Sāṅkhāyana Brāhmaṇas; and from the Mahābhārata.
- 355—363. SECT. V. Passages relating to Rudra from the Upanishads.
- 363—393. SECT. VI. Some further texts from the Itihāsas and Purāṇas relative to Rudra.
- 393—420. SECT. VII. Conclusions deducible from the preceding sections in regard to the mythological history of Rudra: inquiry in regard to the origin of the Linga worship, and the question whether in the epic era Rudra was especially worshipped in the South of India.
- 420—437. SECT. VIII. Earlier and later representations of Ambikā, Umā, Kālī, Karālī, Pārvatī, or Durgā, according to the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā, the Kena and Muṇḍaka Upanishads, the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, the Mahābhārata, and the Purāṇas.
- 439—501. APPENDIX, CONTAINING CORRECTIONS AND ADDITIONAL TEXTS.
439. NOTE A. Passage from the Uttara Kāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa regarding the creation by Prajāpati.
- 439—441. NOTE B. Passage from the Rāmāyaṇa regarding Vishnu's three steps.
441. NOTE C. Reference to some variations in the text of Schlegel's and the Bombay Rāmāyaṇa.

PAGES.	
441—491.	NOTE D. Passages from the Rāmāyana and Mahābhārata relating to the legendary history of Rāma, and the question whether in the oldest text of the former poem he was represented as an incarnation of Viṣṇu.
491—493.	NOTE E. Quotations from the Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa regarding the Yatis.
494.	NOTE F. Opinions of Professors Roth and Aufrecht regarding the meanings of the root <i>śru</i> .
494.	NOTE G. Quotation from the Rāmāyana regarding Rāvaṇa.
494—497.	NOTE H. Story of Indra and Indrajit.
497—500.	NOTE I. Hymn x. 127 of the Rīgveda; and Durgā-stava, or Rātrisūkta.
500—501.	NOTE J. Quotation from the Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa regarding the tongues of Agni.
502—508.	ADDITIONAL NOTES AND CORRECTIONS, including further remarks and quotations regarding the word Sipivishṭa.
509—524.	INDEX.

ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXTS.

VOLUME FOURTH.

PLAN OF THE PRESENT VOLUME.

REFERENCE has already been made in the second volume of this work (pp. 212-216, 1st ed.)¹ to the great difference which is discoverable between the mythology of the Vedas and that of the Indian epic poems and Purāṇas; and this difference was there illustrated by comparing the representations of Vishnu and Rudra which are given in the hymns of the Rig-veda with those which we find in the productions of a later age. On the same occasion I intimated my intention of treating the same subject in greater detail in a subsequent portion of my work. In pursuance of this design, I propose to collect in the present volume the most important texts regarding the origin of the universe, and the characters of the three principal Indian gods, which occur in the Vedic hymns and Brāhmaṇas, and to compare these passages with the later narratives and popular speculations on the same subjects which are to be found in the Mahābhārata, the Rāmāyaṇa, and the Purāṇas.

This gradual modification of Indian mythological conceptions will indeed be found to have already commenced in the Rig-veda itself, if we compare its later with its earlier portions; it becomes more clearly discernible when we descend from the hymns to the Brāhmaṇas; and continues to exhibit itself still more prominently in the Puranic writers, who, through a long course of ages, gave free scope to their fancy in the embellishment of old, and the invention of new, stories in honour of their favourite gods, till at last the representations given of the most popular divinities became not only at

¹ The passage occurs at pp. 201-204 of the 2nd ed

variance with the characteristics ascribed to their prototypes in the Vedas, but even in some respects different from the descriptions which occur in the older Purāṇas themselves.

These successive mutations in Indian mythology need not occasion us any surprise, as they merely afford another exemplification of a process which may be remarked in the history of all nations which have given free scope to thought, to feeling, and to imagination, in matters of religion.

In carrying out the plan just sketched, I shall, first of all, quote the texts in the Vedic hymns which refer to the creation of the world, and to the deities Viśvakarman, Hiranyagarbha, Prajāpati, etc.; these shall be succeeded (2) by passages from the Brāhmaṇas, and (3) by quotations from Manu, the Mahābhārata, the Rāmāyaṇa, and the Purāṇas having reference to the same subjects.

I shall then proceed in a similar order with the various texts which relate to the gods Viṣṇu and Rudra, and the goddess Ambikā, with occasional notices of other Indian deities.

CHAPTER I.

TEXTS FROM THE VEDIC HYMNS, BRAHMAÑAS, AND PURĀÑAS,
ETC., RELATING TO THE CREATION OF THE UNIVERSE, AND
TO THE DEITIES VIŚVAKARMA, BRAHMAÑASPATI, DAKṢHA,
ADITI, HIRAṆYAGARBHA, SKAMBHA, PRAJĀPATI, PURUṢHA
NĀRĀYAṆA, BRAHMĀ, ETC.

SECT. I.—*Texts from the Rig- and Atharva-vedas regarding the creation
and some of the deities just named.*

SPECULATIONS ABOUT CREATION,—RIG-VEDA, x. 129 (= TAITTIRĪYA
BRĀHMAṆA, ii. 8, 9, 3).

R. V. x. 129, 1 ff.¹—*Na asad āsīt no sad āsīt tadānīm na āsīt rajo
no ryoma paro yat | kim ācarīvaḥ kuha kasya śarmann ambhaḥ kim āsīt
gahanaṁ gabhīram | 2. Na mṛityur āsīt amṛitaṁ na tarhi na rātryāḥ
ahnaḥ¹ āsīt praketaḥ | ānīd avātaṁ svadhayā tad ekaṁ tasmūd ha anyad
na paraḥ kinchanāsa | 3. Tamaḥ āsīt tamasā gūḥam agre² apraketaṁ
salilāṁ sarvaṁ āh idam | tuchhyena ābhv apihitaṁ yad āsīt tapasas tad*

¹ The Vishṇu Purāṇa, i. 2, 21 f., quotes (from some source which is not indicated) a verse which seems to be in some degree founded on the text before us, and employs it in support of the Sāṅkhya doctrine of *Pradhāna*: *Veda-vāda-vido rīpūrūh nityatāḥ Brahma-vādināḥ | paṭhanti vai tam evārtham Pradhāna-pratipādaḥ* 22. *Nāho na rātrir na hāho na bhūmir nāsīt tamo jyotir abhūd na vā 'nyat | śrotrādi-buddhyānupalabhyam ekaṁ prādhānikam Brahma pumāṁsa tadāsīt |* "Brahmans learned in the tenets of the Veda, firm assertors of its principles, repeat the following statement establishing the doctrine of *Pradhāna*. 22. 'There was neither day nor night, neither sky nor earth; there was neither darkness nor light, nor anything else. There was then the One, Brahma possessing the character of *Pradhāna*, the Male, incomprehensible by the ear, or other senses, or by the intellect.' " See Dr. Hall's ed. of Wilson's V. P., vol. i., pp. 23 ff., with the Editor's notes.

² These words are quoted by Kullūka or Manu, i. 5, of which passage this may be the germ. In the Śatapatha Brāhmana, x. 6, 5, 1 (= Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upan-

*mahinā 'jāyataikam | 4. Kāmas³ tad agre samavarttatādhi manaso retah
prathamam yad āsīt | sato bandhum asati niravindan hṛdi pratishya
karayo manishā | 5. (Vāj. S. xxxiii. 74) Tiraschīno vitato rasmir eshām
adhaḥ svid dād upari svid āsīt | retodhāḥ āsan mahimānaḥ āsan svadhū
arastāt prayatiḥ parastāt | 6. Ko anga veda kaḥ iha pravochat kutaḥ
ājātā kutaḥ iyaṁ visrishtiḥ | arvāg devāḥ asya visarjjanena atha ko veda
yatiḥ ābabhūva | 7. Iyaṁ visrishtir yataḥ ābabhūva yadi vā dadhe yadi
vā na | yo asyādhyakṣhaḥ parama vyoman sa anga veda yadi vā na veda |*

"There was then neither non-entity, nor entity; there was no atmosphere, nor the sky which is above. What enveloped [all]? where, in the receptacle of what [was it hid]? was it water,⁴ the deep abyss? 2. Death was not then, nor immortality; there was no distinction of day or night: That, being One, breathed calmly, in self-dependence: there was nothing different from It [that One] or above It. 3. Darkness existed; originally enveloped in darkness, this universe was undistinguishable water; that One which lay void,⁵ and wrapped in a husk [or in nothingness], was developed by the power of fervour. 4. Desire first arose in It, which was the primal germ of mind; [and which] the wise, seeking by their intellect, have discovered in their heart to be the bond between non-entity and entity. 5. The ray [or cord] which stretched across these [worlds],—was it above, or was it below? There were impregnating energies, and mighty powers; a self-supporting principle beneath, and energy above. 6. Who knows, who here can declare, whence has sprung, whence, this creation? The gods are subsequent to the development of this [universe]; who then knows from what it arose? 7. From what

ishad, pp. 26 ff., in Bibl. Ind.), it is said, *Na eva iha kinchana agre āsīt | mrityunā eva idam āvṛtam āsīt* | "Originally there was nothing here. This was enveloped by Death," etc. See also the Taitt. Br. ii. 2, 9, 1 ff., quoted in the first volume of this work, p. 27.

³ In the passages which I shall quote from the S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, etc., further on, we shall see that the creative acts of Prajāpati are constantly said to have been preceded by desire: so '*kāmayatu*, "he desired," etc. In a hymn of the Atharva V. (ix. 2) Kāma is personified as a deity. See the fifth vol. of this work, pp. 402 ff.

⁴ In regard to water, as the origin of all things, see verse 3, and the quotation which are given further on, from R. V. x. 82, 5 f., x. 72, 6; the S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, etc.

⁵ See Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon under the words *ābhu* and *uchhṛya*.

source this creation arose and whether [any one] made it or not,—"He who in the highest heaven is its ruler, He knows, or [even] He does not know."

See Professor Müller's translation of this remarkable hymn, his enthusiastic appreciation of its merits, and his remarks in regard to its age, in his "History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature," pp. 559-566; and Professor Goldstücker's observations on the same subject in his "Pāṇini," pp. 144 f. The hymn is also translated and illustrated in the fifth volume of this work, pp. 356 ff., to which I refer.

VIŚVAKARMAN,—RIG-VEDA, x. 81 AND 82 (= VĀJ. SANH. xvii. 17-23; 25-31; AND TAITT. SANH. iv. 6, 2, 1 ff.).

R. V. x. 81, 1 ff.—*Yā imā rīṣā bhuvanāni juhvaḥ ṛishir hotī nyashīdat pitū naḥ | sa āśīhā dravīmam ichhamānaḥ prathama-chhad avarān' aviveśa | 2. Kiṁ svid āsīd adhishthānam ārambhānam kathamat srit kathā 'sīt | yato bhūmim janayan Viśvakarmā vi dyām aurnod mahinā rīṣrachakrahā | 3. (A. V. 13, 2, 26) Viśvataśchakrahur uta rīṣratomukho viśvatobāhur uta viśvataśpāt | sam bāhubhyām dhamati [namati: T. S.] sam patatrair dyāvā-bhūmī janayan devaḥ ekah⁶ | 4. Kiṁ svid vanaṁ [R. V. x. 31, 7] kaḥ u sa ṛikshaḥ āsa yato dyāvā-prithivī nishṭatakshuḥ | manīṣhino manasū prichhatedu tad yad adhyatishṭhad bhuvanāni dhārayan | 5. Yā te dhāmāni paramāni yā 'ramā yā madhyamā Viśvakarmann utemā | śiksha sakhibhyo havishi svadhārah svayam yajasva tanvām vridhānaḥ | 6. (= S. V. 2, 939.) Viśvakarman havishū vācpridhānaḥ svayam yajasva prithivim uta dyām⁷ | muhyantu anye abhito janāsaḥ¹⁰ ihāsmākam magharā sūrir astu | 7. (= Vāj. S. 8, 45.) Vāchaspatiṁ Viśvakarmānam ūtaye manojuvam vāje adya huteṣa | sa no rīṣvāni havanāni joshud rīṣvaśambhūr avase sādhu-karmā |*

R. V. x. 82, 1 ff.—*Chakshushas pitū manasū hi dhiro ghṛitam¹¹ ene*

⁶ Ob Einer sie schuf oder nicht. Bohtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, under the root *ihā* (p. 903).

⁷ Paramachhado vare | T.S.

⁸ The A.V. reads *yo viśracharshanir uta viśratomukho yo viśvatanpānir uta rīṣa-tassapṛithaḥ | sam bāhubhyām bharati*, etc.

⁹ Instead of *prithivim uta dyām* the S.V. reads *tanvām svā hi te*.

¹⁰ Instead of *janāsaḥ* the Vāj. S. reads *sapatnāḥ*.

¹¹ Compare R.V. v. 83, 8. See the fifth volume of this work, pp. 140 f.

ayanad namnamāne | yadā id antāh adadrihanta pūrve ad id dyāvā-
prithivī aprathetām | 2. Vīśvakarmā vimanāh ad¹² vīhāyāh dhātū
vidhātū paramā uta saṁdrih¹³ | teshām iśhāni sam iśhā madanti yatra
sapta rishin-parah elam ākuh | 3. (=A. V. 2, 1, 3.) Yo nah pitū
janitā yo vidhātū¹⁴ dhāmāni ceda bhuvanāni visvā¹⁵ | yo devānām
nūmadhūk eka eva taṁ sampraśnam bhuvanā yanti anyā | 4. To
āyujanta drchinām sam asmai rishayaḥ pūrve jaritāro na bhūnā |
[=Nir vi. 15] asūrtte sūrtte rajasi nishatte¹⁶ ye bhūtāni samahṛimān
imāni | 5. Paro duā parah enā prathuyā paro devibhir asutaur yad
asti¹⁷ | kaṁ svid garbham prathamam dadhre ūpo yatra devāh sama-
pāyanta visve | 6. Tam id garbham prathamam dadhre ūpo yatra devāh
samagacchanta visve | ayasya nūbhāv adhy elam arpitam yasmin visvāni
bhūni unum tastuh¹⁸ | 7. Na taṁ vidatha yah imā jajuna anyad yushmā-
kam anta am babhūva¹⁹ | nihureṇa prairitāh jalpyu cha asutripah uktha-
śūśaś chānti |

R. V. x. 81, 1 ff—"Our father, who, a rishi and a priest, celebrated a sacrifice, offering up all these creatures,—he, earnestly desiring substance, he, the archetype, entered into later [men] 2 What was the position, which and whence was the principle, from which the all-seeing Vīśvakarma produced the earth, and disclosed the sky by his might? 3 The one god, who has on every side eyes, on every side a face, on every side arms, on every side feet, when producing the sky and earth, shapes them²⁰ with his arms and with his wings. 4. What was the wood, what was the tree, out of which they fashioned the heaven and

¹² *Manasā yad* | T.S.

¹³ See R V iv. 1, 6, and iv 6, 6, and Roth's Illustrations of Nirukta, x 26, p 141

¹⁴ Instead of *yo vidhātū* the A V has *sa uta bandhuh*

¹⁵ *Yo nah soto abhi ā saj jayāna* | T S

¹⁶ *Asūrtte sūrtte rajaso vimāne* | T S

¹⁷ *Gauh yāt* | T.S.

¹⁸ After this verse the Taitt. Sanh. has the following, x [=Vā] S xiii 32] *Vīśva-koṇān hy ayanishṭa devāh ad id gandharvo abhāvād asutiyah | tritriyah pitū janitū oshadhū ām apām garbham vyadadhūt puruṣrū* | "The god Vīśvakarma was born then the Gandharva was produced the second, the third was the father, the generator of plants, he divided into many parts the source of the waters"

¹⁹ *Bhātāni* | T S

²⁰ Compare R V x 72, 2, below, p 11, and R V iv 2-17 (=A. V. xiii. 3, 22) *Āyo na devāh janitū dhāmantaḥ* | "The gods blowing on [or shaping] productions, hke uq"

the earth?²¹ Inquire mentally, ye sages, what that was on which he took his stand, when establishing the worlds. 5. Do thou, Viśvakarman, grant to thy friends those thy abodes which are the highest, and the lowest, and the middle, and these. Thou who art strong in the oblation, exhilarated, thyself offer up thyself.²² 6. Do thou, Viśvakarman, delighted by the sacrifice, thyself offer up heaven and earth. Let other men who are round about me become confounded. May a generous son remain here to us.²³ 7. Let us to-day invoke in our conflict the lord of speech, who is swift as thought, Viśvakarman, for succour. May he who is the source of all prosperity, the beneficent, with a view to our protection, receive graciously all our invocations."

R. V. x. 82, 1.—"The father of insight, wise in mind, impregnated with sap these two [worlds] as they bowed down [before him]. When their remotest ends were fixed, then the heaven and earth extended. 2. Viśvakarman is wise, energetic, the creator, the disposer, and the highest object of intuition. The objects of their desire inspire them with gladness in the place where men say that the One dwells beyond [the abode of] the seven rishis. 3. He who is our father, our creator, disposer, who knows all spheres and creatures, who alone assigns to the gods their names,²⁴ to him the other creatures resort for instruction. 4. The former rishis, who fashioned these creatures in the remote, the near, and the lower atmosphere, offered to him, like worshippers, substance in abundance. 5. That which is beyond the sky, beyond this earth, beyond gods and spirits,—what earliest embryo did the waters²⁵ contain, in which all the gods were beheld? 6. The waters contained that earliest embryo in which all the gods were collected.

²¹ This half verse also occurs in R. V. x. 31, 7. The second half verse, as also the answer given to the question in Taît. Br. ii. 8, 9, 6, "Brahma was the wood, Brahma was that tree," etc., are quoted in the fifth volume of this work, p. 32.

²² See, however, Roth, s.v. *śamā*, and R. V. x. 7, 6; vi. 11, 2.

²³ Prof. Aufrecht proposes to translate this verse as follows: "May all other people around us vanish into nothing, but our own offspring remain blessed in this world." In proof of the sense of "offspring," or "son," here assigned to *sūri* (though it has not always this meaning), he refers to R. V. v. 42, 4; vi. 26, 7; vi. 63, 11; vi. 68, 7; vii. 66, 9; viii. 26, 12. This sense is perhaps also recommended by the parallel in R. V. i. 18f, 4, between *śumakṣhasya sūriḥ* and *divaḥ putraḥ*.

²⁴ *Nāna oha pitā eva karoti* | Mahidhara.

²⁵ Compare verses 1 and 3 of R. V. x. 129, above, p. 3.

One [receptacle] rested upon the navel of the unborn, wherein all beings stood. 7. Ye cannot know him who produced these things; something else is within you. The chanters of hymns go about enveloped in mist, and unsatisfied with idle talk."

I have placed these two hymns together, as they are so similar in character. The sense in some parts of them is clear, in others very obscure. The verses of which they are made up are all to be found in the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā (xvii. 17-23, and 25-31), in the same order in which they occur in the Rig-veda, and without any various readings of importance. They are also repeated in the Taittīriya Sanhitā, with variations, of which the chief have been noted above. Some of them also occur in the Nirukta; viz., R. V. x. 81, 6 in Nir. x. 27; R. V. x. 82, 2 in Nir. x. 26; the second half of R. V. x. 82, 4 in Nir. vi. 15; and R. V. x. 82, 7 in Nir. Pāṇishṭa, ii. 10. Professor Roth, in his Illustrations of the Nirukta (pp. 141, f.), offers some remarks on the 2nd verse of the second, and the 6th verse of the first, of the hymns before us, which I shall translate. He renders the former verse thus: "Viśvakarman, wise and mighty in act, is the creator, the orderer, and the highest image [for the spiritual faculty]. That which men desire is the attainment of good in the world where the One Being dwells beyond the seven rishis." He then proceeds to observe: "Viśvakarman, who is no mythological personage, but the 'creator of all things,' and who in the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā, 12, 61,²⁶ is so far rightly identified with Prajāpati, is here celebrated as equally wise in design, and powerful in execution (the highest conception which can be attained by man): and from him the fulfilment of every desire is obtained beyond the starry heaven, where he resides alone, without the numerous deities of the popular creed. . . . The legend, which relates that Viśvakarman, son of Bhuvana, after he had offered up all beings in sacrifice, concluded by offering up himself, belongs, in my opinion, to the numerous class of stories which have arisen out of a misunderstanding of Vedic passages, viz., in the present instance, verses 1 and 5 of R. V. x. 81."

The Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, viii. 2, 1, 10, and viii. 2, 3, 13, identifies Viśvakarman with Prajāpati (*Prajāpatir vai Viśvakarmā*). See also⁴

²⁶ *Prajāpatir Viśvakarmā vimunchatu.*

the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, iv. 22^o, and Professor Haug's translation, p. 299.

The legend here referred to by Professor Roth is given by Yāska, Nirukta, x. 26:

Tatretihāsam āchakshate | Viśvakarmā Bhuvanaḥ sarvamedhe sarvāni bhūtāni juhavānchakāra sa ātmānam apy antato juhavānchakāra | tad-abbhivādiny eṣā ṛig bhavati 'yaḥ imā viśvā bhuvanāni juhvat' iti |
 "Here they tell a story: Viśvakarman son of Bhuvana offered up all creatures at a universal sacrifice (*sarvamedha*). He finally offered up himself also. The following verse (R. V. x. 81, 1) is descriptive of this, viz., 'he who offering up all beings,' etc."

Some further passages relating to Viśvakarman will be found below, in the sixth section of the third chapter, to which, as well as to the first volume of this work, pp. 52, 76, and 456 f., and to the fifth volume, p. 372, I may refer.

On the 6th verse of the first of the hymns before us (R. V. x. 81), Professor Roth remarks thus: "For the correct understanding of the second pāda (the latter half of the first line), and similar passages, the reader should compare R. V. x. 7, 6, *yathā 'yajaj ṛitubhir deva devān evā yajasva tanvaṁ svajāta |* 'As thou (O Agni) at the measured times, O god, didst sacrifice to the gods, so sacrifice also to thyself.' Agni is to accept the offering for himself also. In the same way are the words of the 5th verse of the hymn before us to be understood; *svayam yajasva tanvaṁ vridhānaḥ |* 'sacrifice to thyself for thine own glorification': the idea of self-immolation has arisen from a misunderstanding of the word *tanū*²⁷ and of the construction of the root *yaj*. The 1st verse of the same hymn (R. V. x. 81, 1) is, as it appears to me, to be understood in a similar manner: 'He who received all these creatures as offerings.' In the passage before us (the

²⁷ In his remarks on the word *Tanūnapāt* in p. 117 of his Illustrations, Professor Roth observes: "The signification has been overlooked, which *tanū* obtains in the older Sanskrit, as well as in Zend and modern Persian, as it there designates our own person, our self, in contrast to things belonging to us. Hence I might explain the word *Tanūnapāt* as meaning 'his own son.' Agni is his own son, because he springs into life either as lightning, or from the friction of wood, without being the product of similar phenomena, or powers." See also Böhlingk and Roth's Lexicon, under the word *Tanūnapāt*.

6th verse of R. V. x. 81) the words would therefore be rendered as follows: 'Viśvakarman, glorify thyself by the sacrifice, offer up to thyself heaven and earth.' The idea of sacrifice is introduced, because every portion of the created universe which is given as a possession to the gods, comes to them in the shape of a sacrifice. The god who takes anything into his possession is said to offer it to himself. The various reading which we find in the Sāma-veda, ii. 939, as compared with the verse before us (viz., *tanvām svā hi te*, 'offer thy body, for it is thine,' instead of *prithivīm uta dyām*, 'offer earth and heaven') may be an amendment in support of the legend."

I do not know whether this view is consistent with the 6th and 7th verses of the Purusha Sūkta. See the first volume of this work, pp. 8, 9, and the fifth volume, pp. 367, ff. Possibly both conceptions (that of the gods sacrificing themselves, and that of their sacrificing to themselves) may have been entertained by the Vedic writers.

[I may here remark that the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, ii. 6, 15 ff., gives a sort of paraphrase on the Purusha Sūkta. The author there puts into the mouth of Brahmā the following lines (verses 21 ff.), which are intended to illustrate the 7th and following stanzas of that allegorical hymn :

21. *Yadā 'eya nābhyūd nalinūd aham āsam mahātmanaḥ | nāvindaṁ yajna-sambhārān Purushāvayavūn rīto |* 22. *Teshu yajnasya paśavaḥ sa-vanaspatayaḥ kuśāḥ | idancha deva-yajanaṁ kūlāś choru-guṇānritāḥ |* 23. *Vastūny oshadayaḥ snehāḥ rasa-loha-mṛido jalam | richo yajūnshi sāmāni chāturhotrancha sattama |* 24. *Nāmadheyūni mantrās cha dakṣiṇās cha vratāni cha | devatānukramaḥ kalpaḥ sankalpas tantram eva cha |* 25. *gatayo matayaś chaiva prāyaśchittaṁ samarpaṇam | Purushāvayavair ele sambhārūḥ sambhritāḥ mayā |* 26. *Iti sambhṛita-sambhārāḥ Purushāvayavair aham | tam eva Puruṣaṁ yajnaṁ tenaivayajam īśvaram |*

"21. When I was produced," says Brahmā, "from the lotus sprung out of the navel of that great Being, I found no materials for sacrifice excepting the members of Purusha. 22. Among them were the victims, the sacrificial posts, the Kuśa grass; they formed the sacrificial ground, and the seasons with their various qualities. The utensils, the grains, the unctuous substances, the flavours, the metals, the earths, the water, the verses of the Rich, the Yajush, and the Sāman, the functions of the four priests, the names [of the rites], the texts, the

gifts, the vows, the list of deities, the ritual rules, the designs, the forms, the arrangements, the meditations, the expiation, the dedication,—all these essentials of sacrifice were derived by me from the members of Purusha. Having thus drawn from the members of Purusha all these appliances, I by this means offered up Purusha, the lord [himself], as a sacrifice.”]

In his note on the Nirukta, vi. 15, Professor Roth translates the 4th verse of the second hymn before us (R. V. 82) as follows: “They who in still, in moving, and falling vapour (*rajas*) created those beings furnished to him the material.” In his Lexicon, however, he renders the word *asūrtta*, not by “still,” but by “distant;” and quotes A. V. x. 3, 9, as another passage in which it occurs.

The later conception of Viśvakarman, as the artificer of the gods, is found in the following passage of the Mahābhārata, i. 2592: *Viśvakarmā mahābhūgo jajne śilpa-prajāpatiḥ | kartā śilpa-sahasrūnām tridaśūnām cha vardhakiḥ | bhūṣaṇūnāmcha sarveśhām kartā śilpavatām varah | yo diryāni vimānāni tridaśūnām cakāra ha | manushyāś chopajīvanti tasya śilpam mahātmanah | pūjayanti cha yaṁ nityaṁ Viśvakarmānam aryaṇam* | “Then was born the illustrious Viśvakarman, the lord of the arts, executor of a thousand handicrafts, the carpenter of the gods, the fashioner of all ornaments, the most eminent of artisans, who formed the celestial chariots of the deities; on whose craft men subsist, and whom, a great and immortal god, they continually worship.”

BRAHMANASPATI, DAKSHA, AND ADITI,—RIG-VEDA, x. 72.²⁸

R. V. x. 72, 1 ff.—*Devānām nu vyaṁ jānū prarocheṣāṁ ripanyayā | uktheshu śasyamāneṣhu yaḥ paśyūd uttare yuge*²⁹ | 2. *Brahmanaspatir otū saṁ karmārah*³⁰ *irādhamat | devānam pūrcye yuge asataḥ sad ajāyata*³¹ |

²⁸ This hymn is also translated and illustrated in the fifth volume of this work, pp. 48 ff.

²⁹ See Benfey's Glossary to the Sāma-veda, under the word *yuga*; and the first volume of this work, p. 45 f.

³⁰ *Karmārah* | *sa yathā bhastrayā 'gnim upadhamaty evam udapādayat* | (Sāyana) “As a blacksmith blows up a fire with a bellows, so he created them.” Compare R. V. x. 81, 3, above p. 6, and note 20, there.

³¹ Compare Atharva-veda x. 7, 25.—*Brāhanta nāma te devāḥ ye'asataḥ pari jānīre | kām tad angam Skambhaya asat āhuḥ parō janāḥ* | “Great are those gods who

Aditi was born, O Daksha, she who is thy daughter; after her the gods were produced, the blessed possessors of immortality." He then proceeds to remark: "Daksha, spiritual force, is the male power, which generates the gods in eternity. As Bhū (the World or Being) and Space are the principles of the Finite, so to both of these is due the beginning of divine life."

Sāyana annotates thus on the 8th verse of the hymn:

"*Aṣṭau putrāṣaḥ*" *putrāḥ Mitrādayo 'diter bhavanti* | "*Ye Aditeḥ tanvas pari*" *śarīrāḥ* "*jātūḥ*" *utpannāḥ* | *Aditer aṣṭa-putrāḥ Adh-varyava-brāhmaṇaḥ pariṇipātāḥ* | *tathā hi* | "*tān anukramishyāmo Mitraḥ cha Varuṇaḥ cha Dhātā cha Aryamā cha Aṁśaḥ cha Bhagaḥ cha Vivasvān Ādityaḥ cheti*" | *tathā tatraiva pradeśāntare Aditīm prastutya āmāṣṭam* "*tasyāḥ uchchheshanām adadhus tat prāśnāt* | *sū reto 'dhatta tasyai chatvāraḥ Ādityāḥ ajāyanta sū drīṭṭyam apibad*" *ityādinā aṣṭānām Ādityānām utpattir varṇāt* |

"Eight sons, Mitra and the rest, were born to Aditi, who sprang from her body. Eight sons of Aditi are enumerated in the Brāhmaṇa of the Adhvaryus, thus: 'We shall state them in order, Mitra, Varuṇa, Dhātri, Aryaman, Aṁśa, Bhaga, Vivasvat, and Āditya.' In another part of the same work, after reference has been made to Aditi, it is recorded: "They placed before her the remnant of the sacrifice. She ate it. She conceived seed. Four Ādityas were born to her. She drank the second [portion], etc. Thus is narrated the birth of the eight Ādityas." See the first volume of this work, pp. 26 f.

The Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa (3, 1, 3, 3 ff.) gives the following explanation of the same (the 8th) verse of this hymn:

Aṣṭau ha vai putrāḥ Aditeḥ | *Yāms tv etad "devāḥ Ādityāḥ" ity āchakshate sapta ha eva te* | *avikṛitāḥ*³⁸ *ha aṣṭamāṁ janayānchakāra Mārttāṇṇāḥ* | *sandegho*³⁹ *ha evāsa* | *yāvān evordhras tāvāms tīryaṇ puruṣa-sammitāḥ ity u ha eko āhuḥ* | 4. *Te u ha ete ūchur devāḥ Ādityāḥ* "*yad asmān anv ajanimā tad amūyeva bhūd* | *hanta imāṁ vikaravāma*" *iti* | *taṁ vichakrur yathā 'yam puruṣo vikṛitas tasya yāni māṁsāni saṅkṛitya sannyāsus tato hasti samabhavat* | *tasmād āhur "na hastinam*

³⁸ *Avikṛitāḥ kara-chareṇādi-vikāraḥ iti tad-rahitam* | Comm.

³⁹ *Samyag upachitāḥ samah nāsīt* | Comm.

*parigrihāyāt puruṣhājāṅg⁴⁰ hi hāstī⁴¹ iti | yam u ha tad vichakruḥ sa
Vivāsvān Ādityas⁴² tasya imāḥ prajāḥ |*

After quoting the text of the Rig-veda, the author of the Brāhmaṇa proceeds :

"Aditi had eight sons. But there are only seven [gods] whom men call the Āditya deities. For she produced the eighth, Mārtāṇḍa, destitute of any modifications of shape (without hands and feet, etc.). He was a smooth lump; of the dimensions of a man, as broad as long, say some. The Āditya deities said, 'If in his nature he be not conformable to ours, then it will be unfortunate; come let us alter his shape.' Thus saying, they altered his shape, as this man is modified (by possessing different members). An elephant sprang out of those [pieces of] his flesh which they cut off, and thence ~~was~~ ^{came} ~~was~~. Wherefore men say, 'let no one catch an elephant, for an elephant partakes of the nature of man.' He whom they then altered was Vivasvat (the Sun) the son of Aditi, from whom these creatures are descended."

HIRANYAGARBHA,—RIG-VEDA, x. 121.

R. V. x. 121, 1 ff. (Vāj. S. 13, 4: A. V. 4, 2, 7)—*Hiranyagarbhaḥ⁴³
samavarttatāgre bhūtasya jātāḥ⁴⁴ patir ekaḥ āsit | sa dādāhāra prithivīm
dyām utemām kasmai devāya⁴⁵ havishā vidhema |* 2. (Vāj. S. 25, 13:
A. V. 4, 2, 1.) *Ya ātmadāḥ baladāḥ yasya viśve upāsate praśiṣham⁴⁶ yasya
devāḥ | yasya chhūyā amṛitaṁ yasya mrityuḥ kasmai devāya ityādi |* 3.

⁴⁰ *Puruṣhājāṅg⁴⁰ puruṣha-prakṛitikaḥ |* Comm.

⁴¹ *Hiranye hiraṇya-puruṣha-rūpe brahmāṇḍe garba-rūpeṇa avasthitaḥ Prajāpatiḥ
Hiranyagarbhaḥ bhūtasya prāṇijātasya agre samavarttata prāṇjātapatteḥ purā
svayam śarīra-dhārī bābhūva |* Prajāpati Hiranyagarbha, existing as an embryo,
in the egg of Brahman, which was golden,—consisting of the golden male (*puruṣha*),—
sprang into being before all living creatures; himself took a body before the pro-
duction of all living creatures." Mahidhara on Vāj. S. 13, 4. (Compare the words
hiranyag⁴⁷ yak⁴⁸ śakunir Brahma nāma | "The golden bird, namely Brahma," in Taitt.
Br. 3, 12, 9, 7.)

⁴² *Jātāḥ*. Compare R. V. ii. 12, 1; R. V. x. 133, 2, *āsatrur Indra jānīṣaḥ*—
"Indra, thou hast been born without a rival;" and R. V. viii. 21, 13. . . . *tvam
anāpīr Indra januṣhā sanāḍ asi* | "Indra of old art thou by nature without a fellow."

⁴³ *Kasmai devāya | Kasmai Kāya Prajāpataye devāya |* "Kasmai, 'to whom,' is
for *Kāya*, the dative of *Ka*, the god Prajāpati." Comm. on Vāj. S. 13, 4. *Prajāpatir
vai Ka tasmai havishā vidhema* | "Ka is Prajāpati: to him let us offer our oblations."
Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, 7, 4, 1, 19.

(Vāj. S. 23, 3 : A. V. 4, 2, 2.) *Yāḥ prāṇaḥ nimishato mahitvā ekaḥ id rājā jagato babhūva | ya īse asya dvīpadās cātushpadāḥ kasmai ityādi* | 4. (Vāj. S. 25, 12 : A. V. 4, 2, 5.) *Yasyemo himavanto mahitvā yasya samudraṁ rasayā⁴⁴ sahāhuh | yasyemūḥ pradīto yasya bāhū kasmai ityādi* | 5. (Vāj. S. 32, 6, 7 : A. V. 4, 2, 3, 4.) *Yena dyaur ugrā prīthivī cha drīlā yena evaḥ stabhitā yena nākaḥ | yo antarikṣo rajaso vimānaḥ kasmai ityādi* | 6. *Yāṁ krandasī⁴⁵ avasā tastabhāne abhy aikṣhelām manasū rejamāno | yatrādhi sūraḥ udito vibhāti kasmai ityādi* | 7. (Vāj. S. 27, 25 : A. V. 4, 2, 6, 8.) *Āpo ha yad bṛihatir vīśvam āyan garbhāṁ⁴⁶ dadhānāḥ janayantir agnim | tato devānāṁ samavarttatāsaur ekaḥ kasmai ityādi* | 8. (= Vāj. S. 27, 26.) *Yāś chid āpo mahinā paryapaśyad dakṣhaṁ dadhānāḥ janayantir yajnam | yo dovesho adhi devaḥ ekṛt⁴⁷ sīt kasmai ityādi* | 9. (= Vāj. S. 12, 102.) *Mā no himsij janitū yaḥ prīthivyāḥ yo vā divaṁ satyadharmā jajānū | yaś chāpas chandrāḥ bṛihatir jajāna kasmai⁴⁸ ityādi* | 10. (= Vāj. S. 10, 20 : A. V. 7, 79, 4 ; 7, 80, 3 ; Nir. x. 43.) *Prajāpate na tvad etāny anyo vīśvā jātāni paritā babhūva | yatkāmās te juhumaḥ tan no astu vayāṁ syāma patayo rayiṇām* |

"1. Hiranyagarbha arose in the beginning; born, he was the one lord of things existing. He established the earth and this sky: to what god shall we offer our oblation? 2. He who gives breath, who gives strength, whose command all, [even] the gods, reverence, whose

⁴⁴ On the word *rasā*, see the second volume of this work, p. 343, note 119.

⁴⁵ *Krandasī* | "This word is explained in Bohtlingk and Roth's Lexicon as meaning (not heaven and earth, as Mahidhara *in loco* understands it, and Sayana on R. V. ii. 12, 8, alternatively interprets,—the other sense assigned being, armies,—but) two armies engaged in battle. See the references there given.

⁴⁶ Compare with verses 7 and 8, the preceding hymns, x. 129, 1, 3 ; x. 82, 5, 6 ; and x. 72, 6.

⁴⁷ I have observed another hymn in the R. V., the 168th of the tenth Maṇḍala, of which the fourth verse ends with words similar to those which conclude the first nine verses of the 121st, except that instead of *kasmai* the 168th hymn has *tasmai*. I quote this verse with the last words of the 3rd. . . . *kva svij jātaḥ kutaḥ ābabhūva* | 4. *ātma devānāṁ bhuvanasya garbho yathāvaśaṁ charati devaḥ eṣaḥ | ghoṣhūḥ id asya śrinivire na rūpaṁ tasmai Vātūya haviṣhū vidhema* | "Where was he produced? whence has he sprung? 4. Soul of the gods, and source of the world, this deity marches at his will. His sounds are heard but [we see] not his form: to this Vāta (wind) let us offer our oblations." Compare St. John iii. 8. "The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth."

shadow is immortality, whose shadow is death—to what god shall we offer our oblation? 3. Who by his might became the sole king of the breathing and winking world, who is the lord of this two-footed and four-footed [creation],—to what god, etc.? 4. Whose greatness these snowy mountains, and the sea with the Rasā [river], declare,—of whom these regions, of whom they are the arms,—to what god, etc. 5. By whom the sky is fiery, and the earth fixed, by whom the firmament and the heaven were established, who in the atmosphere is the measurer of the aerial space;—to what god, etc.? 6. To whom two contending armies, sustained by his succour, looked up, trembling in mind; over whom the risen sun shines,—to what god, etc.? 7. When the great waters pervaded the universe, containing an embryo, and generating fire, thence arose the one spirit (*asu*) of the gods,—to what god, etc.? 8. He who through his greatness beheld the waters which contained power, and generated sacrifice, who was the one god above the gods,—to what god, etc.? 9. May he not injure us, he who is the generator of the earth, who, ruling by fixed ordinances, produced the heavens, who produced the great and brilliant waters!—to what god, etc.? 10. Prajāpati, no other than thou is lord over all these created things: may we obtain that, through desire of which we have invoked thee; may we become masters of riches.”

On Prajāpati, see the fifth volume of this work, pp. 352 f.; 390 ff.

The whole of this hymn is to be found repeated in the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā, the first eight verses in the Taittirīya Sanhitā iv. 1, 8, 3 ff., and most of the verses recur in the Atharva-veda. In making my translation, I have had the assistance of Mahidhara's Commentary on the first-named Veda, as well as of the version given by Professor Müller in his Ancient Sanskrit Literature, p. 569 f. In his annotation on Vāj. S. 27, 5, =verse 7, the commentator Mahidhara refers to the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. 1, 6, 1: *Āpo ha vai idam agre salilam vāsa* | “This [universe] was in the beginning waters, only water;”⁴⁸ and explains the words *garbham dadhānāḥ*, “containing a germ,” thus: *tathā garbham Hiranagarbhalakṣaṇam dadhānāḥ dhārayantyaḥ ataḥ eva agnīm janayantiḥ agni-rūpam Hiranagarbham janayantyaḥ utpādayishyantyaḥ* |

And also containing an embryo (*garbha*) distinguished as the golden

⁴⁸ Compare R. V. vi. 50, 7, quoted in the fifth volume of this work, p. 345; and the quotations from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa and other works in the next section.

embryo *Hiranyagarbha*); and consequently generating, being about to produce, fire,—*Hiranyagarbha* in the form of fire." The Atharva-veda reads this seventh verse somewhat differently, thus (A. V. 4, 2, 6): *Āpo agre viśvam āvan garbham dadhānāḥ amṛitāḥ ritajñāḥ | yāsu devishv adhi devaḥ asit kasmai ityādi* | "In the beginning, the waters, immortal, and versed in the sacred ceremonies, protected (covered?) the universe, containing an embryo; over these divine [waters] was the god," etc. The verse which comes next, the seventh in the A. V., is the first in the R. V. The eighth in the A. V., which has none answering to it in the R. V., is as follows: *Āpo vatsam janayantir garbham agre samairayan | tasyota jāyamānasya ulbaḥ āsīt hiranyayaḥ | kasmai devāya ityādi*—"In the beginning the waters, producing a child, brought forth an embryo, which, as it was coming into life, was enveloped in a golden covering."

The idea of the production of the divine principle by which the gods were animated (*asu*) from the embryo generated in the waters, contained in the seventh verse of the hymn before us (R. V. x. 121, 7) is replaced, as we shall find, in the Brāhmaṇas and the later mythology by that of the generation of Prajāpati, or Brahmā, from the egg formed in the waters. In the verse attached to the hymn as the 10th, the deity celebrated in the hymn is addressed by the appellation of Prajāpati, which became a title of Brahmā. The last verse which I have quoted from the A. V. (iv. 2, 8) assigns a "golden covering" to the embryo produced by the waters.

In another part of the same Veda (A. V. x. 7, 28) the following verse occurs: *Hiranyagarbham paramam anatyudyam janāḥ viduḥ | Skambhas tadagre prāsinchad hiranyaṁ loka antarā* | "Men know *Hiranyagarbha*, the supreme, the ineffable: before him *Skambha* [the Supporter] shed forth gold in the midst of the world."

I shall make some additional quotations from the hymn of the A. V. in which the last cited verse occurs, and the next following. [The whole of the hymn A. V. x. 7, and a portion of A. V. x. 8, are quoted in the fifth volume of this work, pp. 378 ff., which can be referred to.]

EXTRACTS FROM THE ATHARVA-VEDA, x. 7, AND x. 8.

A. V. x. 7, 7.—*Yasmin stabdhvā Prajāpatir lokān sarvān adhārayat | Skambhaṁ tam brūhi katamaḥ svid eva saḥ* | 8. *Yat paramam avamaṁ*

*yachcha madhyamam Prajāpatiḥ saśriḥ viśva-rūpam | kiyatā Skambhaḥ
 praviveśa tatra yan na praviśat kiyat tad babhūva | 9. Kiyatā Skambhaḥ
 praviveśa bhūtaṁ kiyat dhavishyaṁ anvāsya 'sya | ekam yad angam akṛi-
 not sahasradhā kiyatā Skambhaḥ praviveśa tatra | . . . 17. Yo puruṣhe
 brahma vidus te viduḥ parameshthinam | yo veda parameshthinam yaś cha
 veda Prajāpatim | jyeshtham yo brāhmaṇam vidus te Skambham anu-
 samviduḥ | . . . 24. Yatra devāḥ brahmavido brahma jyeshtham upāsate |
 yo vai tān vidyāt pratyakṣam sa brahmā veditā syāt | . . . 32. Yasya
 dhūmiḥ pramā antarikṣam utodasam | divam yaś chakre mūrdhānam
 tasmai jyeshthāya Brahmane namaḥ | . . . 35. Skambho dādāhā dyāv-
 prithivī ubhe imo Skambho dādāhorv antarikṣam | Skambho dādāhā
 pradiśaḥ shaḍ urvī(?) Skambhaḥ idam viśvam bhuvanam āviveśa |
 36. Yaḥ śramāt tapaso jūto lokān sarvān samānase | somaṁ yaś chakre
 kevalam tasmai jyeshthāya brahmane namaḥ | . . . 41. Yo vetasaṁ
 hiranyam tishthantam salile veda | sa vai guhyaḥ Prajāpatiḥ |*

A. V. x. 8, 2.—Skambhenemo viśvabhite dyauś cha bhūmiś cha tish-
 thataḥ | Skambhaḥ idam sarvam ātmanvad yāi prāṇad nimishachcha yat |
 . . . 11. Yad ajati patati yachcha tishthati prāṇad aprāṇan nimishach
 cha yad bhuvāt | tad dādāhā prithivīm viśvarūpam tat sambhūya bhavaty
 ekam eva | . . . 44. Akūmo dhīro amṛitaḥ svayambhūḥ rasena tripto
 na kutaschanonaḥ | tam eva vidvān na bibhāya mṛityor ātmānam dhīram
 ajaram yuvānam |

A. V. x. 7, 7.—“Tell who that Skambha (supporter) is, on whom
 Prajāpati has supported, and established all the worlds. 8. How far
 did Skambha penetrate into that highest, lowest and middle universe,
 comprehending all forms, which Prajāpati created? and how much
 of it was there which he did not penetrate? 9. How far did Skambha
 penetrate into the past? and how much of the future is contained in his
 receptacle? how far did Skambha penetrate into that one member
 which he separated into a thousand parts? . . . 17. Those men
 who know Brahma (the divine essence) in the Male (*Puruṣa*), know
 him who occupies the highest place (*Parameshthin*): he who knows
Parameshthin, and who knows Prajāpati,—they who know the highest

⁴⁹ I know not whether this word has here its ordinary meaning, or the same sense
 which is assigned to the word *vaitasa* in R. V. x. 95, 4, 5; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa,
 xi. 5, 1, 1; and Nir. iii. 21. See also R. V. iv. 58, 5; and Śatap. Br. vi. 5, 2, 11;
 and the fifth volume of this work. v. 384. note.

Brāhmaṇa (divine mystery), they know Skambha. . . . 24. In the place where the gods, the knowers of sacred science (brahma) reverence the highest Brahma,—that priest (brahmā) who knows them clearly, will be a knower. . . . 32. Reverence to that highest Brahma, of whom the earth is the measure, the atmosphere the belly, who made the sky his head. . . . 35. Skambha established both these [worlds] the earth and sky, Skambhā established the wide atmosphere, Skambha established the six wide regions, Skambha pervaded this entire universe. 36. Reverence to that highest Brahma, who, sprung from toil and from austere fervour, has pervaded all the worlds, who made soma for himself alone. . . . 41. He who knows the golden reed standing in the water, is the mysterious Prajāpati.”

. १-४. x. 8, 2.—“These two [worlds] the earth and sky, stand, supported by Skambha. Skambha is all this which has soul, which breathes, which winks. . . . 11. Whatever moves, flies, or stands, whatever exists breathing, or not breathing, or winking,—that omniform [entity] sustains the earth; that, combined, is one only. . . . 44. Knowing that Soul, calm, undecaying, young, who is passionless, tranquil, self-existent, immortal, satisfied with the essence, wanting in nothing,—a man is not afraid of death.”

I quote these passages partly because they contain frequent references to Prajāpati, a name which occurs but sparingly in the Rīg-veda; and partly because they celebrate a new god called Skambha, the “Supporter,” or “Propper,” whose personification may have been suggested by the function of “supporting” the earth and heavens, which, as we shall see in the next chapter, is frequently ascribed to Indra, Varuṇa, Viṣṇu, and Savitṛi.

The verse last quoted (x. 8, 44) seems to contain the idea of the supreme Soul as the object of knowledge.

On the subject of this and the next sections compare the twenty-first section of the fifth volume of this work, pp. 350 ff.

SECT. II.—*Original non-entity; Prajāpati; primeval waters; mundane egg, etc., according to the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, Manu, the Rāmāyana, Viṣṇu Purāṇa, etc.*

The Sātapatha Brāhmaṇa contains the following legends about the creation.

I. Sātapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 1, 1, 1 ff. (pp. 499 of Weber's ed.)—

*Asad vai idam agre āsit | yad āhuḥ 'hiṃ tad asad āsit' iti | rishayo vāva
 to 'agre asad āsit' tad āhuḥ | 'ke to rishayaḥ' iti | prāṇāḥ vai rishayas to
 yat purā 'smāt sarvasmād idam' ichhantaḥ śramena tapasā 'rishame tas-
 mād rishayaḥ | 2. Sa yo 'yam madhye prāṇaḥ esha evendrah | tām esha
 prāṇān madhyataḥ indriyena indha | yad aindhā tasmād Indhaḥ | Indho
 ha vai tam Indrah ity achakshate paroksham | paroksha-kāmāḥ hi devās
 to iddhāḥ sapta nānā puruṣhān asṛijantaḥ | 3. Te 'brāvaṇ "na vai
 itthaṃ santaḥ śakṣyāmaḥ prajānāyitum imān sapta puruṣhān ekam
 puruṣhaṃ karavāma" iti to etān sapta puruṣhān ekam puruṣham
 akurvan | yad ūrddhvaṃ nābhes tau dvau samaubjan | yad avān nābhes
 tau dvau | pakṣaḥ puruṣaḥ | pakṣaḥ puruṣaḥ | pratishṭhā ekaḥ
 āsit | 5. Sa eva puruṣaḥ Prajāpatir abhavat sa yaḥ sa
 puruṣaḥ Prajāpatir abhavad ayam eva sa yo 'yam Agniḥ⁵⁰ chigate |
 6. Sa vai sapta-puruṣo bhavati | sapta-puruṣo hy ayam puruṣo
 yach chatvāraḥ ātmā trayaḥ pakṣa-puchhāni | chatvāro hi tasya
 puruṣasya ātmā trayaḥ pakṣa-puchhāni⁵¹ | atha yad ekena puru-
 ṣheṇa ātmānam vārdhayati tena vīryeṇa ayam ātmā pakṣa-puchhāni
 udyachhati | 8. So 'yam puruṣaḥ Prajāpatir akāmayata
 'bhūyān syām prajāyeya' iti | so 'brūmyat sa tapo 'tapyata | sa
 brūntas tepāno brahma eva prathamam asṛijata trayīm eva vidyām |
 sa eva asmai pratishṭhā 'bhavat tasmād āhur 'brahma asya sarvasya
 pratishṭhā' iti | tasmād anūchya pratishṭhāti pratishṭhā hy eskā
 yad brahma | tasyām pratishṭhāyām pratishṭhito 'tapyata | 9. So
 'po 'sṛijata vāchaḥ eva lokād vāg evāsyā sū 'sṛijyata sū idam sarvaṃ
 āpnot yad idam kincha | yad āpnot tasmād āpaḥ⁵² | yad avṛiṇot tasmād
 vāḥ | 10. So 'kāmayata 'abhyo 'dbhyo 'dhi prajāyeya' iti so 'nayā trayyā
 vidyayā saha āpaḥ prāviśat tataḥ āṇḍam samavarttata tad abhyamṛiśad
 'astv' ity 'astu bhūyo 'stv' ity eva tad abravīt | tato brahma eva pra-
 thamam asṛijyata trayy eva vidyā | tasmād āhur 'brahma asya sarvasya
 prathamajam' ity | api hē tasmāt puruṣhād brahma eva pūrvam asṛijyata
 'tad asya tad mukham eva asṛijyata | tasmād anūchānam āhur 'Agni-
 kalpaḥ' iti | mukham hy etad Agner yad brahma |⁵³*

⁵⁰ Compare S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa vi. 1, 2, 13, and 21 (pp. 502-3); ix. 2, 2, 2 (p. 713). According to vi. 2, 1, 1; and xi. 1, 6, 14, Agni is the son of Prajāpati.

⁵¹ Comp. vi. 2, 2, 4, and 9.

⁵² Compare S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa ii. 1, 1, 3, and vi. 1, 3, 1 ff.

⁵³ Compare Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa ii. 2, 9, 1 ff. quoted in the first volume of this work, pp. 27 ff.

"In the beginning this [universe] was indeed non-existent. But men say, 'what was that non-existent?' The rishis say that in the beginning there was non-existence. Who are these rishis? The rishis are breaths. Inasmuch as before all this [universe], they, desiring this [universe], were worn out (*arishan*) with toil and austerity, therefore they are called *Rishis*. 2. This breath which is in the midst is Indra. He by his might kindled these breaths in the midst: inasmuch as he kindled them, he is the kindler (*Indha*). They call Indha Indra esoterically: for the gods love that which is esoteric. They [the gods] being kindled, created seven separate males (*purusha*). 3. They said, 'being thus, we shall not be able to generate; so let us make these seven males one male.' So speaking, they made these seven males one male (*purusha*). Into the part above the navel, they compressed two of them, and two others into the part below the navel; [one] male [formed one] side; [another] male [another] side: and one formed the base. . . . 5. This [one] male became Prajāpati. The male who became Prajāpati is the same as this Agni who is kindled on the altar. 6. He verily is composed of seven males (*purusha*): for this male is composed of seven males, since [four] make the soul, and three the sides and extremity (*lit.*, tail). For the soul of this male [makes] four, and the sides and extremity three. Now inasmuch as he makes the soul [which is equal to four] superior by one male, the soul, in consequence of this [excess of] force, controls the sides and extremity [which are only equal to three]. . . . 8. This male (*purusha*) Prajāpati desired, 'may I be multiplied, may I be developed.' He toiled, he performed austerity. Having toiled and performed austerity, he first created the Veda (*brahma*), the triple science. It became to him a foundation; hence men say, 'the Veda (*brahma*) is the foundation of all this.' Wherefore having studied [the Veda] a man has a foundation, and this is his foundation, namely the Veda. Resting on this foundation, he performed austerity. 9. He created the waters from the world [in the form of] speech.⁶⁴ Speech belonged to him. It was

⁶⁴ This is illustrated by a passage in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, vii. 5, 2, 21 (p. 617), which says: *vāg vai ajo vācho vai prajāḥ Viśvakarmā jajāna* | "Speech is the mover [or, the unborn]. It was from speech that Viśvakarma produced creatures." And in the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka (p. 290 of Bibl. Ind.) it is said | *trayo lokāḥ ste ova* | *vāg evāyīm loko mano 'ntariksha-lokaḥ prāṇo 'sau lokaḥ* | "It is they which are the three

created. It pervaded all this. Because it pervaded (*āpnot*) all this which exists, it (speech) was called waters (*āpaḥ*); and because it covered (*avrinot*), it was called *vāḥ* (another name of water). 10. He desired, 'May I be reproduced from these waters.' So saying, with this triple science he entered⁶⁵ the waters. Thence an egg arose. He handled it. He said to it, 'let it become,' 'let it become,' 'let it be developed.' From it the Veda was first created,⁶⁶ the triple science. Hence men say, 'the Veda is the first-born of this whole [creation]. Further, [as] the Veda was first created from that Male, therefore it was created his mouth. Hence they say of a learned man that he is like Agni; for the Veda is Agni's mouth."

The same idea about Prajāpati being composed of seven males, occurs again in the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, x. 2, 2, 1, and seems to be connected with the notion of Agni having the size of seven males. (See the commentary on Satap. Br. x. 2, 2, 1).—*Yān vai tān sapta puruṣān ekam puruṣam akurvan sa Prajāpatir abhavat | sa prajāḥ asṛijata | sa prajāḥ ṛiṣiṭvā ūrdhvaḥ udakrāmat | sa etān lokam agachhad yatra esha etat tapati | na ha tarhy anyāḥ etasmād atra yajniyaḥ ūsa tam devāḥ yajnenaiva yasṭum adhriyanta | tasmād etad ṛiṣinā 'bhyanūktān 'yajnena yajnam ayajanta devāḥ ityādi* | "These seven males whom they made one male (*puruṣa*) became Prajāpati. He created offspring. Having created offspring, he mounted upwards; he went to this world where this scorches this. There was then no other being fit for sacrifice: the gods began to offer him with sacrifice. Hence it has been said by the rishi (R. V. x. 90, 16), 'the gods offered the sacrifice with sacrifice.'" Part of the passage, Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 1, 1, 6 is repeated in Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, x. 2, 2, 5.⁶⁷

II. In the preceding story, the gods are represented as the creators

worlds. Speech is this world, mind is the atmospheric world, and breath is that world (the sky)." Regarding the action of Vāch in the creation, compare Weber's Ind. Stud. ix. 477 f., and the passages quoted from him in the fifth volume of this work, p. 391 f.

⁶⁵ Compare A.V. x. 2, 7 | *sa ā varivarti bhuvaneshv antar apo vāsānāḥ kaḥ u tach chiketa* | "He (Puruṣa) moves actively in the worlds, clothed with the waters: who has known this?"

⁶⁶ It had, however, been created before. See a few lines above.

⁶⁷ Compare S'atap. Br. x. 2, 3, 18.—*Septavidho vai agre Prajāpatir asṛijyata*. These words are repeated in x. 2, 4, 8.

of Prajāpati, who in his turn is stated to have generated the waters, which he entered, and from which sprang the mundane egg. In the following story, the order of production is different. The waters generate the egg, and the egg brings forth Prajāpati, who creates the worlds and the gods.

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. 1, 6, 1 ff.—*Āpo ha vai idam agre salilam evāsa*⁶⁸ | *tāḥ akāmayanta 'katham nu prajāyemahi' iti tāḥ asrāmyaṁś tās tapo 'tapyanta | tāsu tapas tapyamānāsu hiraṇmayam āṇḍaṁ sambabhūva | ōjāto ha tarhi saṁvatsaraḥ āca | tad idaṁ hiraṇmayam āṇḍaṁ yāvat saṁvatsarasya velā tāvat paryaplavata | 2. Tataḥ saṁvatsare puruṣaḥ samabhavat sa Prajāpatiḥ | tasmād u saṁvatsare eva stri vā gaur vā vaḍabā vā vijāyate saṁvatsare hi Prajāpatir ājāyata | sa idaṁ hiraṇmayam āṇḍaṁ vyarujat | na aha tarhi kūchana pratishṭhā āsa | tad enam idam eva hiraṇmayam āṇḍaṁ yāvat saṁvatsarasya velā āsit tāvad bibhrat paryaplavata*⁶⁹ | 3. *Sa saṁvatsare vyājīkṛshat | sa 'bhūa'* iti *vyāharat sū iyam prihivy abhavad*⁷⁰ *'bhūvaḥ' iti tad idam antarikṣham abhavat 'avar' iti sū asau dyaur abhavat tasmād u saṁvatsare eva kumāro vyājīkṛshati saṁvatsare hi Prajāpatir vyāharat | . . . 6. Sa sahasrāyur jano | sa yathā nadyai pāram parāpātyed evam svasyāyushaḥ pāram parāchakhyau | 7. So 'rchan śrāmyaṁś chaḥhāra prajākāmāḥ |*

⁶⁸ S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 7, 1, 17.—*Tasya āpaḥ eva pratishṭhā | apo hi ime lokāḥ pratishṭhitāḥ* | "Waters are its support: for these worlds are based upon the waters." S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiv. 8, 6, 1 (= Brihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad, p. 974).—*Āpaḥ evādam agre āsuḥ | tāḥ āpaḥ satyam asrījanta satyam Brahma Brahma Prajāpatim Prajāpatir devān* | "In the beginning waters alone formed this universe. These waters created Truth, Truth created Brahma, Brahma created Prajāpati, and Prajāpati the gods." Compare Taitt. Sanh. vii. 1, 6, 1 ff.; Taitt. Br. i. 1, 3, 6 ff.; and Taitt. Āraṇy. i. 23, 1 ff. quoted in pp. 31 and 52 f. of vol. i. this work. To the same effect is Taitt. Sanh. v. 7, 5, 3, *Āpo vai idam agre salilam āsit*. The A. V. xii. 1, 8, also says: *yā 'rṇave 'dhi salilam agre āsit yām māyābhir anvacharan manīṣikāḥ* | "That earth which formerly was water on the ocean, which the sages followed after by their divine power," etc. R. V. x. 109, 1, speaks of the "divine first-born waters" (*ōpo devīḥ pratīhamajāḥ*). The S'atap. Br. xiv. 2, 2, 2, represents the wind as the ocean, which was the source from which the gods and all creatures issued (*āyaṁ vai samudro yo 'yam pavate | tasmād vai samudrāt sarve devāḥ sarvāṁś bhūtāni samudhravanti* |

⁶⁹ *Tasya Prajāpater āpadaṁ kimapi na babhūva sa cha nirādharatvāt sthātum ataknuvann idam eva dhinnam hiraṇmayāṇḍam punaḥ saṁvatsara-paryantam bibhrat dhārīyan tāv evāpo paryaravat* | "There was no resting place for Prajāpati; and he, being unable to stand, from the want of any support, occupying this divided golden egg for a year, floated about on these waters." Commentary.

⁷⁰ Compare vol. iii. of this work, 2nd ed. pp. 101, 104, and S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa ii. 4, 4, 11, p. 141.

sa ātmany eva prajātim aśṛatta ā āyenaiva devān aśṛijata | to devāḥ
divaṁ abhipadya aśṛijyanta tad devānāṁ devatvaṁ yad divam abhipadya
aśṛijyanta | tasmai aśṛijānāya divā iva āsa⁶¹ | tad eva devānāṁ devatvaṁ
yad asmai aśṛijānāya divā iva āsa | 8. Atha yo 'yam avāṁ prāṇas tena
asurān aśṛijata | to imām eva prithivīm abhipadya aśṛijyanta | tasmai
aśṛijānāya tamaḥ iva āsa | 9. So 'pet "pāpmānaṁ vai aśṛikṣhi yasmai
mo aśṛijānāya tamaḥ iva abhūd" iti | tāṁs tātaḥ eva pāpmanā 'vidhyat |
to tataḥ eva parābhavan | 14. Tūḥ vai itāḥ Prajāpater adhi
devatāḥ aśṛijyanta Agnir Indraḥ⁶² Somaḥ Parameshthi prajāpatyaḥ |
. . . . 18. Sa Prajāpatir Indram putram abravīd ityādi |

"In the beginning this universe was waters, nothing but water. The waters desired, 'how can we be reproduced?' So saying, they toiled, they performed austerity. While they were performing austerity, a golden egg came into existence. Being produced, it then became a year. Wherefore this golden egg floated about for the period of a year. 2. From it in a year a male (*puruṣa*) came into existence, who was Prajāpati. Hence it is that a woman, or a cow, or a mare, brings forth in the space of a year, for in a year Prajāpati was born. He divided this golden egg. There was then no resting-place for him. He therefore floated about for the space of a year, occupying this golden egg. 3. In a year he desired to speak. He uttered 'bhūr,' which became this earth; 'bhuvah,' which became this firmament; and 'svar,' which became that sky. Hence a child desires to speak in a year, because Prajāpati spoke in a year. . . . 6. He was born with a life of a thousand years. He perceived the further end of his life, as [one] may perceive the opposite bank of a river. 7. Desiring offspring, he went on worshipping and toiling. He conceived progeny in himself: with his mouth he created the gods. These gods were created on reaching heaven. This is the godhead of the gods (*devāḥ*) that they were created, on reaching heaven (*divam*). To ~~the~~ while he was continuing to create, it became, as it were, daylight (*divā*). This is the godhead of the gods, that to him as he was continuing to

⁶¹ Divā iva āsa | ākūśaḥ iva babhūva | Comm. Comp. Taitt. Br. ii. 2, 9, translated in the first volume of this work, p. 30.

⁶² In R. V. x. 134, 1 ff. Indra is said to be the son of a mother whose name is not mentioned. See, however, the fifth volume of this work, where this subject is referred to.

create, it became, as it were, daylight. 8. Then from this lower breath he created the Asuras. They were created when they reached this world. To him, when creating, darkness, as it were, appeared. 9. He knew: 'I have created evil, since as I was creating, darkness, as it were, appeared.' He then pierced them with evil; and they in consequence were overcome . . . 14. These [following] gods were created from Prajāpati,—Agni, Indra, Soma, and Parameshthīn, son of Prajāpati. . . . 18. Prajāpati said to his son Indra," etc.

The mundane egg is also mentioned in the Chhândogya Upanishad (p. 228 ff.): *Ādityo Brahma ity ādesaḥ | tasyopavyākhyānam | asad eva idam agre āsit | tat sad āsit | tat samabhavat | tad āṇḍam niravarttata | tat saṁvatsarasya mātṛm aśayata | tad nirabhidhaya | te āṇḍa-kapāle rajataṁ cha suvarṇaṁ cha abhavatām | tad yad rajataṁ sā iyam pṛithivī yat suvarṇaṁ sā dyaur yaj jarāyu⁶³ te parvatāḥ yad ulkā⁶⁴ sa megho nīhāro⁶⁵ yāḥ dhamanayas⁶⁶ tāḥ nadyo yad vāsteyam⁶⁷ udakam sa samudraḥ | atha yat tad ajāyata so 'sāv Ādityas taṁ jāyamānam ghoshāḥ ulūlavo⁶⁸ 'nudatishṭhan ['nūdatishṭhan?'] sarvāṇi cha bhūtāni sarve cha kāmās tasmāt tasyodayam prati pratyāyanam⁶⁹ prati ghoshāḥ ulūlavo 'nutishṭhanti sarvāṇi cha bhūtāni sarve chaiva kāmāḥ |* which is thus translated by Babu Rajendralal Mitra: "The sun is described as Brahma;—its description. Verily at first this was non-existent; that non-existence became existent; it developed,—it became an egg: it remained [quiet] for a period of one year; it burst into two; thence were formed two halves of gold and silver. Thereof the argentine half is the earth, and the golden half the heaven. The inner thick membrane [of the egg] became mountains, and the thin one cloudy fog; the blood-vessels became rivers, and the fluid became the ocean; and lastly, what was born therefrom is the sun, Āditya. On its birth arose loud shouts [or shouts of 'ulu-ulu'], as well as all living beings, and their desires. Hence on the rising, and re-rising [day after day]

⁶³ *Garbha-वेश्मनां sthūlam* | Comm.

⁶⁴ *Sūkṣhmaṁ garbha-pariveśhṇam* | Comm.

⁶⁵ *Avatyāyāḥ (frost)* | Comm.

⁶⁶ *S'irāḥ* | Comm.

⁶⁷ *Vastau dhovam vāsteyam* | Comm. "Abdominal," Wilson.

⁶⁸ *Ururago vicitṛṇa-ravāḥ udatishṭhan utthitavantaḥ* |

⁶⁹ *Pratyasta-gamanam . . . athavā punaḥ punaḥ pratyāgamanam*

of the sun, arise shouts off 'ulu-ulu,' as well as all living beings and their desires." (Bibl. Ind. No. 78, p. 65.)

In the next passage, Prajāpati is said to have taken the form of a tortoise :

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, vii. 4, 3, 5.—*Sa yat kūrmo nāma etad vai rūpaṁ kṛtvā Prajāpatiḥ prajāḥ aśrijata | yad aśrijata akarot tad yad akarot tasmāt kūrmaḥ | Kāśyapo vai kūrmas tasmād āhuḥ 'sarvaḥ prajāḥ Kāśyapyah' iti | sa yaḥ sa kūrmo 'sau sa Ādityaḥ* | "Having assumed the form of a tortoise, Prajāpati created offspring. That which he created, he made (*akarot*); hence the word *kūrma*. Kāśyapa means tortoise; hence men say, 'all creatures are descendants of Kāśyapa.'⁷⁰ This tortoise is the same as Āditya."

In the later mythology it is Viṣṇu who assumes the form of a tortoise :

Thus in the chapter of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa descriptive of Viṣṇu's incarnations it is said (i. 3, 16): *Surāsuraṅgām udadhim mathnatām mathanūchalām | dadhre kamaṭha-rūpeṇa prishṭhe ekādāse vibhuḥ* | "In his eleventh incarnation, the Lord in the form of a tortoise supported on his back the churning-mountain, when the gods and Asuras were churning the ocean."

In its application of the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā, 37, 5, the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, 14, 1, 2, 11, makes the following allusion to the elevation of the earth by a boar: "*Iyaty agre āsīd*" (Vāj. S. 37, 5) *iti | iyatī ha vai iyam agre prithivī āsa prādesa-mātri | tām Emūśaḥ iti varāhaḥ*⁷¹ *ujjaghāna | so 'syāḥ patiḥ Prajāpatis tenaiva enam etanmithunena priyena dhāmnā*⁷² *samardhayati kṛtenaṁ karoti ityādi* |

"'She (the earth) was formerly so large,' etc.; for formerly this

⁷⁰ Kāśyapa is mentioned in the A. V. xix. 53, 10 (see the fifth volume of this work, p. 408); as well as in two rather obscure verses of the Sāma-veda, which do not occur in the Rigveda. The first is i. 90: *Jātaḥ pareṇa dharmajā yajātṛidbhīḥ sahābhwaḥ | pitū yat Kāśyapasyāgniḥ S'raddhā matā Manuḥ kaviḥ* | "Since with thy companions, thou hast been produced through an excellent rite; since Agni is the father, Faith (S'raddhā) the mother, and Manu the bard, of Kāśyapa." The second is i. 361: *Kāśyapasya svarvido yāv āhuḥ sayujāḥ iti | yayor viśvam apī vṛataṁ yajnaṁ dhīrūḥ nichāyaya* | "Whom twain the wise, revering, declare to be the companions of the heavenly Kāśyapa; to whom twain [they declare] the entire power (or ceremonial) and sacrifice to belong."

⁷¹ See R. V. viii. 66, 10.

⁷² In regard to these words compare S'tapathīa Brāhmaṇa, iii. 9, 4, 20.

earth was only so large, of the size of a spa¹. Emūsha, a boar, raised her up. Her lord, Prajāpati, in consequence, prospers him with this pair, the object of his desire, and makes him complete," etc. Compare the passages from the Taittirīya Sanhitā and Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, etc., quoted in the first volume of this work, pp. 52 ff., and 181 ff.; and also the fifth volume of this work, pp. 390 ff.

From Weber's Ind. Stud. i. 78, I find that in the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka also, the earth is said to have been "raised by a black boar with a hundred arms" (*varāheṇa kṛishṇeṇa śata-bāhūnā uddhṛitā*).

I quote some further texts from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa relative to Prajāpati.

In the following he is said to have in the beginning constituted the universe, and to have created Agni (see above, p. 26).

Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, ii. 2, 4, 1.—*Prajāpatir ha vai idam agre ekaḥ evāsa | sa aikṣata 'katham nu prajāyeya' iti | so 'brāmyat sa tapo 'tap-yata so 'gnim eva mukhāj janayānchakre ityādi* | "Prajāpati alone was all this [universe] in the beginning. He considered, 'how can I be reproduced?' He toiled, and performed austerity. He generated Agni from his mouth." Compare the passages quoted in the first vol. of this work, pp. 24, 69 ff.; in volume third, p. 4; and in volume fifth, pp. 390, ff.

In the next passage he is identified with Dakṣa: ⁷³

Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, ii. 4, 4, 1.—*Prajāpatir ha vai etenāgre yaj-neneja prajākāmō 'bahuh prajāyā pasubhiḥ syām śriyaṁ gachheyaṁ yaśaḥ syām annādaḥ syām' iti | sa vai Dakṣo nāma ityādi* | "Prajāpati formerly sacrificed with this sacrifice, being desirous of progeny, [and saying] 'may I abound in offspring and cattle, attain prosperity, become famous, and obtain food.' He was Dakṣa."

In Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 8, 1, 14, Prajāpati is said to be the supporter of the universe (a function afterwards assigned to Viṣṇu): *Prajāpatir vai bhārataḥ sa hi idam sarvaṁ bibhartti* | "Prajāpati is Bharata (the supporter), for he supports all this universe."⁷⁴

⁷³ See R. V. x. 72, 4, 5 (above p. 12).

⁷⁴ In R. V. i. 96, 8, the epithet *Bharata* is applied to Agni. The commentator there quotes another text, no doubt from a Brāhmaṇa, *esha prāṇo bhūtō prajāḥ bibhartti taṁnād esha bhārataḥ* | "He becoming breath, sustains all creatures; hence he is the sustainer."

Compare the first verse of the Muṇḍaka Upanishad, where Brahmā is called the preserver of the world (*bhuvanasya goptā*).

In the next passage Prajāpati is represented as desirous, not to create, but to conquer, the worlds:

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiii. 2, 4, 1.—*Prajāpatir akāmayata 'ubhau lokāu abhijayeyam deva-lokancha manushya-lokancha' ityādi* | "Prajāpati desired, 'may I conquer both worlds,' that of the gods, and that of men," etc. Comp. Satap. Br., x. 2, 1, 1.

In Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiii. 6, 1, 1, Puruṣha Nārāyaṇa is introduced: *Puruṣo ha Nārāyaṇo 'kāmayata 'atitishtheyam sarvāṇi bhūtāny aham eva idam sarvam syām' iti* | *sa etam puruṣha-medham pancha-rātram yajnakratum apasyat tam āharat tena ayajata tena iṣṭvā 'tyatishṭhat sarvāṇi bhūtāni idam sarvam abhavat* | *atitishṭhati sarvāṇi bhūtāni idam sarvam bhavati yaḥ evam vidvān puruṣha-medhena yujate yo vai etad etam veda* |

"Puruṣha Nārāyaṇa desired, 'may I surpass all created things; may I alone become all this?' He beheld this form of sacrifice called 'puruṣha-medha' (human sacrifice) lasting five nights. He took it; he sacrificed with it. Having sacrificed with it, he surpassed all created things, and became all this. That man surpasses all created things, and becomes all this, who thus knowing, sacrifices with the 'puruṣha-medha,'—he who so knows this." The Puruṣha-sūkta is shortly afterwards quoted. Comp. Satap. Br. xii. 3, 41, quoted in the fifth volume of this work, p. 377.

In Satap. Br., xi. 2, 3, 1, Brahma (in the neuter) is introduced as being the original source of all things: *Brahma vai idam agre āsit* | *tad devān arijata* | *tad devān iṣṭvā eshu lokeshu vyārohayad asminn eva loka'gniṁ Vāyūm antarikṣhe divy eva Sūryam* | "In the beginning Brahma was all this. He created the gods. Having created the gods, he placed them in these worlds, in this world Agni, Vāyu in the atmosphere, and Sūrya in the sky." This passage is quoted at greater length in vol. v. of this work, p. 387 ff. Comp. the other passages quoted in pp. 378–390, and Taitt. Br. iii. 12, 3, 1, cited in p. 361, note, of the same volume; and Satapatha Brāhmaṇa xiv., 4, 2, 21, and 23 (=Bṛihadāranyaka Upanishad in Bibliotheca Indica, pp. 198 ff., and 235).

In Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiii. 7, 1, 1, Brahma is described as sacrificing himself: *Brahma vai vrayamāṣu tapo 'tapyata* | *tad aikhata*

'*na vai tapasy dñantyañ asti hanta-aham bhūteshu ātmānañ juhavāñi bhūtāñi cha ātmañi*' iti | *tat sarveshu bhūteshu ātmānañ hutvā bhūtāñi cha ātmañi sarveshañ bhūtānañ śraishṭhyañ svārājyañ ādhipatyāñ paryait | tathaiwa etad yajamānaḥ sarvamedho sarvāñ medhāñ hutvā sarvāñi bhūtāñi śraishṭhyañ svārājyañ ādhipatyāñ paryeti* | "The self-existent Brahma performed austerity. He considered, 'in austerity there is not infinity. Come let me sacrifice myself in created things, and created things in myself.' Then having sacrificed himself in all created things, and all created things in himself, he acquired superiority, self-effulgence, and supreme dominion (compare Manu, xii. 91). Therefore a man offering all oblations, all creatures, in the 'sarvamedha' (universal sacrifice), obtains superiority, self-effulgence, and supreme dominion."⁷⁶ See also Satap. Br. xi. 1, 8, 2 f., quoted in the fifth volume of this work, p. 372, note 554.

The following is the account of the creation, given at a later period by Manu, i. 5 ff., founded, no doubt, on R. V. x. 129, and the passages of the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, given above (pp. 20 ff.), or some other ancient sources of the same character, with an intermixture of more modern doctrines :

Āsīd idañ tamobhūtañ aprajñātañ alakṣhaṇaṇ | apratarkyañ avijñeyāñ prasuptañ iwa sarvataḥ | 6. Tataḥ svayambhūr bhagavāñ aryakto cyañjayāñ idañ | mahābhūtāñi vṛittaujāḥ prādurañsīt tamonudaḥ | 7. Yo 'sāv atīndriya-grāhyaḥ sūkṣmaḥ 'vyaktaḥ sanātanaḥ | sarva-bhūtañmayo 'chintyaḥ sa eva svayāñ udbabhañ | 8. So 'bhīdhyāya śarīrāt svāt sīpīkṣhur cīvidhāḥ prajāḥ | apaḥ eva saarjyādañ tāñ vijāñ avārjijāt | 9. Tad aṇḍāñ abhavaḥ haimāñ sahasrāñśu-samaprabhañ | tasmīñ jājñe svayāñ Brahmā sarva-loka-pitāmaḥ | 10. Āpo nārāḥ iti proktāḥ ūpo vai nara-sūnavaḥ | tāḥ yad asyāyañāñ pūrvañ tena Nārāyaṇaḥ smṛitaḥ | 11. Yat tat kīraṇāñ avyaktañ nityāñ sadasadātmañ | tad-viśiṣṭaḥ sa puruṣaḥ | loka Brahmañi kīrtiyate | 12. Tasminñ aṇḍe sa bhagavāñ uśhitvā parivatsarañ | svayāñ evātmāno dhyāñāt tad aṇḍāñ akaroḥ dvidhā | 13. tābhyañ sa śakalābhyañcha divāñ bhūmincha nirmame | madhya vyomañiśāñ cha-śṭāv apāñ sthānañ cha śāśvatañ |

5. "This universe was enveloped in darkness, unperceived, undis-

⁷⁶ See the discussion on the sense of R. V. x. 81, 1, 5, 6 (above, pp. 9 f.).

tinguishable, undiscoverable, unknowable, as it were entirely sunk in sleep. 6. Then the irresistible self-existent Lord, undiscerned, causing this universe with the five elements and all other things, to become discernible, was manifested, dispelling the gloom. 7. He who is beyond the cognizance of the senses, subtle, undiscernible, eternal, who is the essence of all beings, and inconceivable, himself shone forth. 8. He, desiring, seeking to produce various creatures from his own body, first created the waters, and deposited in them a seed. 9. This [seed] became a golden egg, resplendent as the sun, in which he himself was born as Brahmā, the progenitor of all the worlds. 10. The waters are called 'nārāḥ,' because they are the offspring of Nara; and since they were formerly the place of his movement (*ayana*), he is therefore called Nārāyaṇa. 11. Being formed by that First Cause, undiscernible, eternal, which is both existent and non-existent, that Male (*puruṣa*) is known in the world as Brahmā. 12. That lord having continued a year in the egg, divided it into two parts by his mere thought. 13. With these two shells he formed the heavens and the earth; and in the middle he placed the sky, the eight regions, and the eternal abode of the waters."

It will be observed from verses 9-11, that the appellation *Nārāyaṇa* is applied to *Brahmā*, and that no mention is made of *Vishṇu*.

On verse 8 Kullūka annotates thus: '*Tad aṇḍam abhavad haimam*' iti | *tad vijam Paramēśvarechhayā haimam aṇḍam abhavad haimam iva haimam buddhi-guṇa-yogād na tu haimam eva* | *tadyaika-sakalena bhūmi-nirmāṇasya rakshyamānatrād bhūmeśchāhaimatvasya pratyakṣatvād upachārāśrayaṇam tasminn aṇḍe Hiranyagarbho jātaoṇ | yena pūrva-janmani 'Hiranyagarbho 'ham asmi' iti bhedaḥbheda-bhāvanayā Paramēśvaropāsanā kritā tadīyam liṅga-sarīrāvachchinna-jīvam anupra-vīṣya svayam Paramātmā eva Hiranyagarbha-rūpatayā prādurbhūtaḥ* | "That [seed] became a golden egg,' etc. That seed by the will of the deity became a golden egg. Golden, i.e. as it were golden, from the quality of purity attaching to it, and not really golden; for since the author proceeds to describe the formation of the earth from one of the halves of its shell, and since we know by ocular proof that the earth is not golden, we see that a mere figure of speech is here intended. . . . In that egg Hiranyagarbha was produced: i.e. entering into the living soul,—invested with a subtle body,—of that person

by whom in a former birth the Deity was worshipped, with the contemplation of distinctness and identity expressed in the words, 'I am Hiranyagarbha,' the supreme Spirit himself became manifested in the form of Hiranyagarbha."

The creation is narrated in a similar manner, but without the introduction of any metaphysical elements, in the Harivaṁśa, vv. 35 ff. : *Tataḥ svayambhūr bhagavān śīrikṣhur vividhāḥ prajāḥ | apaḥ eva saśarjū-
dau tāsu vijam avāśrijat | āpo nārāḥ iti proktāḥ āpo vai nara-sūnavaḥ |
ayanaṁ tasya tāḥ pūrvam tena nāgūyanaḥ smṛitāḥ | hiraṇyavarṇam
abhavat tad aṇḍam udakeśayam | tatra jajñe svayam Brahmā svayambhūr
iti naḥ śrutam | Hiraṇyagarbho bhagavān uśhitvā parivatsaram | tad
aṇḍam akarod dvaidham divam bhuvam athāpi cha | tayoḥ śakalayor
madhye akāśam aśrijat prabhūḥ | apsu pūriplavām prithivīm diśascha
daśadhū dadhe |*

"Then the self-existent lord, desiring to produce various creatures, first of all formed the waters, and deposited in them a seed. The waters are called 'nārāḥ,' for they are the offspring of Nara. They were formerly the place of his movement; hence he is called 'Nārāyana.' That seed became a golden-coloured egg, reposing on the water: in it the self-existent Brahmā himself was born, [or, in it he himself was born as the self-existent Brahmā], as we have heard. The divine Hiranyagarbha having dwelt [in the egg] a year, divided it into two parts, heaven and earth. In the midst between these two shells, the Lord created the æther, and the earth floating about on the waters, and placed the regions in ten directions."

In a later part of the same work we find another account of the production of Hiranyagarbha:

Harivaṁśa, vv. 12, 425 ff.—*Jagat-sraśṭu-manāḥ devaś chintayāmāsa
pūrvataḥ | tasya chintayato vaktrād niḥśṛitāḥ puruṣaḥ kila | tataḥ sa
puruṣo devaṁ kiṁ karomīty upaśkhitāḥ | pratyuvācha smitaṁ kṛtvā
deva-devo jagat-patiḥ | 'vibhajātmanam' ity uktvā gato 'ntarjñanam
īśvaraḥ | antarhitasya devasya saśarīrasya bhūsvataḥ | pradīpasyeca
sūntasya gatis tasya na vidyate | tatas teneritūṁ vānīṁ so 'nvachintayata
prabhūḥ | "Hiraṇyagarbho bhagavān yaḥ eśa chhandasā stutaḥ | ekaḥ
prajāpatiḥ pūrvam abhavad bhuvanādhipaḥ | tadū-prabhrīti tasyādyo
yajña-bhāgo vidhīyate | 'vibhajātmanam' ity uktaś tenāsmi sumahātmanā |
katham ātmā vibhajyaḥ syāt sāmānyo hy atra me mahān" |*

"Being desirous to create the world, the deity formerly meditated. As he meditated, a man (*puruṣha*) issued from his mouth. This man then approached the deity, [saying] 'what am I to do?' The god of gods, the lord of the world, answered smiling, 'divide thyself.' Having thus spoken, the lord vanished. The path of the radiant embodied deity, when he has vanished, is not known, like that [of the flame] of an extinguished taper. The lord then meditated [thus] upon the word which the deity had uttered: 'This divine Hiraṇyagarbha, who is celebrated in the Vedic hymn, was formerly the one sole Prajāpati, the ruler of the world. Thenceforward the first half of the sacrifice is allotted to him. "Divide thyself,"—thus have I been commanded by that mighty being. But how is the self to be divided? Here I have great doubt.' " Then follow the verses which have been quoted in the third volume of this work, p. 13 f., to which I refer.

The Rāmāyaṇa, which I quote first according to the recension of Schlegel (which here coincides with the Śerampore, and essentially with the Bombay, editions), thus describes the origin of the world:

Rāmāyaṇa (Schlegel's ed.), ii. 110, 2 ff.—*Imāṃ loka-samutpattiṃ loka-nūcha nibodha me* | 3. *Sarvaṃ salilam evāsit prithivī yatra nirmita* |⁷⁶ *tataḥ samabharat Brahmā svayambhūr dairataḥ saha* | 4. *Sa varāhas tato bhūtva projjahāra vasundharām* | *asṛjachecha jagat sarvaṃ saha putraḥ kṛitātmabhiḥ* | 5. *Ākāśa-prabhavo Brahmā śāsvato nityam avyayaḥ* | *tasmād Marīchiḥ sanjayno Marīcheḥ Kāśyapaḥ sutaḥ* | 6. *Vivasrān Kāśyapāj jayno Manur Vivasrataḥ smṛitaḥ* | *sa tu Prajāpatiḥ pūrram āyādi* |

Vaśiṣṭha says: "Lord of the people, understand from me this [account of] the origin of the worlds. 3. All was water only, in which the earth was formed. Thence arose Brahmā, the self-existent, with the deities. 4. He then, becoming a boar,⁷⁷ raised up the earth, and created the whole world with the saints, his sons. 5. Brahmā, eternal, and perpetually undecaying, sprang from the ether; from him was descended Marīchi; the son of Marīchi was Kāśyapa. 6. From Kāśyapa sprang Vivasvat, and Manu is declared to have been Vivasvat's son. He (Manu) was formerly the Prajāpati," etc.

⁷⁶ See Appendix A.

⁷⁷ Compare S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, 14, 1, 2, 11, quoted above, p. 27.

It will be observed that here it is Brahmā who assumes the form of a boar to raise up the earth from under the ocean. In the Gauda recension of Gorresio, however, this function is transferred to Vishṇu; and this I regard as one proof that this recension of the text is more modern than that followed by Schlegel. I have indicated by italics in my translations the important points in which the two recensions differ from one another.

Rāmāyaṇa (Gorresio's ed.), ii. 119, 2 ff.—*Imām loka-samutpattiṁ loka-nātha nibodha me* | 3. *Sarvaṁ śalīlam erāṣīt vasundhā yena nirmītā | tataḥ samabharat Brahmā svayambhūr Viṣṇur avyayaḥ* | 4. *Sa varāho 'tha bhūtremām ijjahūra vasundharām | asṛjache jagat sarvaṁ sacharācharam avyayam* | 5. *Ākāśa-vrabhavo Brahmā sāvato nityam avyayaḥ | tasmād Marīchiḥ sanjajne Marīcheḥ Kaśyapaḥ sutah* | 6. *Tataḥ paryāyasargena Vivasvān asṛjad Manuṁ ityādi* |

"Lord of the people, understand from me this [account of] the origin of the worlds. 3. All was water only, through which the earth was formed. Thence arose Brahmā, the self-existent, *the imperishable Viṣṇu*. 4. He then, becoming a boar, raised up this earth, and created the whole world, *movable and immovable, imperishable*. 5. Brahmā, eternal, and perpetually undecaying, sprang from the ether; from him was descended Marichi; the son of Marīchi was Kaśyapa. 6. By successive creation, Vivasvat created Manu," etc.

It will be noticed that at the end of the third śloka, the reading of the first recension, viz. *Brahmā svayambhūr daivataiḥ saha*, "Brahmā, the self-existent, *with the deities*," is, in the second, changed into *Brahmā svayambhūr Viṣṇur avyayaḥ*, "Brahmā, the self-existent, *the imperishable Viṣṇu*," whereby Brahmā becomes a mere manifestation of Viṣṇu,—a character of which we have no hint in the earlier recension. Similarly the words which are given in Schlegel's recension, at the close of the fourth śloka, viz. *saha putraiḥ kṛitātmanibhiḥ*, "with the saints, his sons," are in the other recension altered into *sacharācharam avyayam*, "movable and immovable, and imperishable"—epithets descriptive of the world. This second alteration was rendered necessary by the first: for as soon as the god who is the subject of the passage had been changed from Brahmā to Viṣṇu, the mention of sons became inapplicable; as Viṣṇu is not described in the accounts of the creation as having any sons, whereas Brahmā is.

Compare with the fifth verse of the passage before us (in Schlegel's text), the Vishṇu Purāṇa, i. 7, 1 ff.; quoted in the first volume of this work, pp. 64 f. The accounts of Brahmā's descendants are not, however, always consistent. See Manu, i. 32 ff., and Vishṇu Purāṇa, i. 7, 12 ff., quoted in pp. 35 ff., and 64 f., of vol. i.

The origin of the world is similarly described in the Mahābhārata xii. 6805 f.

*Bhṛigur uvācha | Prajā-visargaṁ vividham Mānaso manasā 'erijāt |
samrakṣaṇārtham bhūtānāṁ śṛiṣṭītam prathamato jalam | yaḥ prāṇaḥ
sarva-bhūtānaṁ varāhanto yena cha prajāḥ | parityaktās cha naśyanti
tenedaṁ sarvaṁ āvṛitam | prithivī parvatūḥ meghāḥ mūrtimantaś cha ye
'pare | sarvaṁ tad cārunaṁ jneyam āpaḥ tastambhīro yataḥ | . . .
Brahmakalpe purā brahman brahmarśhināṁ samāgame | loka-sambha-
ra-sandehaḥ samutpanno mahātmanām | To 'tishṭhan dhyānam ālambya
maunam āsthāya nīchalāḥ | tyaktāhārāḥ parana-pāḥ divyaṁ varsha-
satam drījāḥ | teshāṁ Brahmamayī rūṇī sarvashāṁ śrotram ōgamat |
diryā Sarasvatī tota sambabhūva nabhasatāt | purā stimitam ākāśam
anantam aśalopamam | naṣṭa-chandrārka-pavanam prasuptam iva
sambabhuḥ | tataḥ salilam utpannaṁ tamasīcāparaṁ tamaḥ | tasmāc cha
salilotpīḍād udatiṣṭhata mārutaḥ |*

"Bhṛigu says: Mānasa⁷⁸ (the Intellectual) formed by a mental effort the varied creation of living beings. For the preservation of creatures water was first produced,—water which is the breath of all creatures, by which they grow, and forsaken by which they die:—by it all things were covered. The earth, the mountains, the clouds, and other material objects;—all these things must be understood as aqueous, because the waters supported them." Bharadvāja asks how water, fire, air [or wind], and earth were created, and Bhṛigu replies: "Formerly, in an assemblage of Brāhman rishis, in the Brahmakalpa, a doubt arose in their minds, as to the production of the worlds. "These Brāhmans continued fixed in meditation and in silence, eating no food, drinking in only air, for a hundred years of the gods. A voice, of the essence of Brahmā, reached the ears of them all: the divine Sarasvatī

⁷⁸ This word is defined in v. 6775: *Mānaso nāma yaḥ pūrvo vidūto vai maharṣi-
bhīḥ | anūdi-nidhano devas tathā 'bhedyo 'jarāmarāḥ |* "The primeval god, without
beginning or dissolution, indivisible, undecaying and immortal, who is known and
called by great rishis Mānasa," etc.

sprang forth from the heavens.' Formerly⁷⁹ the infinite ether, motionless, like a mountain,—moon, sun and air having been destroyed in it,—appeared as it were asleep. Then water was produced like another darkness (*tamas*) in darkness, and from the foam of that water arose air."

Before proceeding to quote the other texts which I have to adduce regarding the egg of Brahmā, I shall here introduce two quotations, to show how the assumption of the form of a boar, ascribed in the older recension of this passage of the Rāmāyaṇa to Brahmā, is in works of a later date represented as the act of Viṣṇu. The first passage forms a part of the rapid enumeration of the twenty-two incarnations of Viṣṇu, in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, i. 3, 7: *Dvitiyaṁ tu bhavāyāsaḥ rasā-tala-gatāṁ mahim | uddharishyann upādatta yajñesaḥ saukaraṁ vapuḥ* | "Secondly, with a view to the creation of this universe, the lord of sacrifice, being desirous to raise up the earth, which had sunk into the lower regions, assumed the form of a boar."

The second passage to be adduced is from the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, i. 4, 1 ff. (p. 57 ff. of Wilson's English trans., Dr. Hall's ed., vol. i.), and has been already partly quoted in the first volume of this work, pp. 50 f.:

*Maitreya uvācha | Brahmā Nārāyaṇākhyo 'sau kalpādaḥ bhagavān yathā | sasarjja sarva-bhūtāni tad āchakṣhva mahāmune*⁷⁹ | *Parāśaraḥ uvācha | prajāḥ sasarjja bhagavān Brahmā Nārāyaṇātmakāḥ | prajāpati-patir dero yathā tan me niśāmaya | atita-kalpāvasāne niśa-suptotthitāḥ prabhūḥ | sattvrodiktas tato Brahmā śūnyaṁ lokam avaikshata | Nārāyaṇaḥ puro 'chintyaḥ pareshūm api sa prabhūḥ | Brahma-svarūpī bhaga-*

⁷⁹ I take the opportunity of quoting here an answer given in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, i. 3, 1 ff. (p. 44 of Wilson's trans. in Dr. Hall's ed. vol. i.), to the question how it is conceivable that Brahmā should create;—an answer which, if admitted as the only solution of the problem, would have rendered many speculations of the Indian philosophers unnecessary. *Maitreyaḥ uvācha | nirṇāsyāpūrameyasya śuddhāsyūpy amātānmanāḥ | kuthāṁ sargādikaṁ tēpitram | yāhmnāyo 'bhīyupapadyate | Parāśaraḥ uvācha | śaktayaḥ sarva-bhūtvān achintya-jñāna-gocharāḥ | yato 'to Brahmanas tās tu sargādyāḥ bhāva-śaktayaḥ | bhavanti tūpasātāḥ śreṣṭhāḥ pūṇikaṣya yathāhoḥmutā* | "Maitreya asks: How can the agencies of creation, etc., be possible to Brahmā, who is devoid of the [three] qualities, immeasurable, pure, and free from stain? Parāśara answers. Since powers which could not be imagined [?] are actually known to belong to all natures, therefore, O chief of ascetics, these powers of creative agency, etc., belong to the essence of Brahma, as heat is an attribute of fire." Dr. Hall translates differently. See his note. Can the proper reading be *achintyāḥ* in place of *achintya*?

*rān anūdiḥ sarva-sambhavaḥ | toyāntaḥ sa mahiṁ jñātvā jagaty ekārṇave
prabhūḥ | anumānād tad-uddhāraṁ karttu-kāmaḥ Prajāpatiḥ | akarot
sa tanūm anyām kalpādīṣhu yathā purā | matsya-kūrmādikām tadvad
vārāhaṁ vapur āśhritaḥ | veda-yajnamayaṁ rūpam āśeṣa-jagataḥ
sthitaḥ | sthitaḥ sthīrātmā sarvātmā paramātmā Prajāpatiḥ | janaloka-
gataiḥ siddhaiḥ Sanakādyaḥ abhishṛjtaḥ | praviveśa tada toyam ātmā-
dhāro dharādharah | nirīkṣya taṁ tadā devī pātāla-talam āgatam |
tushṭāva prajātiḥ bhūtvā bhakti-namrā rasundharā | Pṛithivī uvācha |
Namaste sarva-bhūtāya tubhyaḥ śankha-gadā-dhara | mām uddhar-
āsmād adya tvaṁ tvatto 'ham pūrvam utthitā | . . . sambhakṣhayitvā
sakalām jagaty ekārṇavīkṛite | śeṣe tvam eva Govinda chintyamāno
manīṣibhiḥ | bharato yat paraṁ rūpaṁ taṁ na jñāti kaśchana | avatār-
eṣhu yad rūpaṁ tad archanti divaukasaḥ | tvām ārūdhya paraṁ Brahma
yātāḥ muktīm mumukṣavaḥ | Vāsudevam anārūdhya ko mokṣaṁ sama-
vāpsyati | . . . tvaṁ yajnas tvaṁ vāśhaṭkūras tvam oṁkāras tvam
agnayaḥ | . . . Evaṁ samstūyamānas tu Pṛithivī pṛithivī-dharaḥ |
sāma-svara-dharaṇi śrīmān jagarjja parighurgharam | tataḥ samutkṣhipya
dharāṁ sa daṁṣṭrayā mahāvarāhaḥ sphuṭa-padma-lochanaḥ | rasātālād
utpala-patra-sannibhaḥ samutthito nilaḥ ivāchalo mahān | . . . evaṁ
samstūyamānas tu Paramātmā mahīdharaḥ | vjjahāra mahiṁ kṣhipraṁ
nyastavāṁś cha mahāmbhasi | tasyopari jalaughasya mahatī naur iva
sthitā | vilatatvāt tu dehasya na mahi yāti samplavam |*

“Maitreya said: Tell me, great Muni, how, at the beginning of the Kalpa, that divine Brahmā called Nārāyaṇa created all beings. Parāsara replied: Hear from me how the divine Brahmā, lord of the Prajāpatis, who had the nature of Nārāyaṇa, created living beings. At the close of the past (or Pādma) Kalpa, Brahmā, the lord, endowed predominantly with the quality of goodness, awoke from his night-slumber, and beheld the universe void. Ho [was] the supreme lord Nārāyaṇa, who cannot even be conceived by others, existing in the form of Brahmā, the deity without beginning, the source of all things. [The verse given in Manu i. 10, and the Harivaṁśa, v. 36, regarding the derivation of the word Nārāyaṇa, is here quoted.] This lord Prajāpati, discovering by inference,—when the world had become one ocean,—that the earth lay within the waters, and being desirous to raise it up, assumed another form. As he had formerly, at the commencement of the [previous] Kalpas, taken the shape of a fish, a tortoise, etc. (so now), entering

the body of a boar,—a form composed of the Vedas and of sacrifice, —the lord of creatures, who throughout the entire continuance of the world remains fixed, the universal soul, the 'supreme soul, the self-sustained, the supporter of the earth, hymned by Sanaka and other saints residing in the Janaloka, entered the water. Beholding him then descended to Pātāla, the goddess Earth, bowing down, prostrated in devotion, sang his praise: 'Reverence, bearer of the shell and club, to thee who art all things: raise me to-day from this place: by thee have I been formerly lifted. . . . Having swallowed up the universe, when the world has become one ocean, thou, Govinda, sleepest, meditated upon by the wise. No one knows that which is thy highest form: the gods adore that form which [thou assumest] in thy incarnations. Worshipping thee, the supreme Brahma, men desirous of final liberation have attained their object. Who shall obtain liberation without adoring Vāsudeva? . . . Thou art sacrifice, thou art the vashaṭkāra (a sacrificial formula), thou art the oṃkāra, thou art the fire.' . . . Being thus celebrated by the Earth, the glorious upholder of the earth, with a voice like the chanting of the Sāmaveda, uttered a deep thundering sound. Then the great boar, with eyes like the expanded lotus, tossing up the earth with his tusk, rose up, resembling the leaf of the blue lotus, from the lower regions, like the great blue mountain. . . . [The boar is then again lauded by Sanandana and other saints, in a hymn, in the course of which his different members are compared in detail to some of the materials and implements of sacrifice, etc.—See Wilson's Vishnu Purāṇa, 2nd ed., i., pp. 63 ff.] . . . Being thus hymned, the supreme Soul, the upholder of the earth, lifted the earth up quickly, and placed it upon the great waters. Resting upon this mass of waters, like a mighty ship, the earth does not sink, owing to the expansion of its bulk."⁸⁰ See also the Mahābhārata iii. 10932 ff.

⁸⁰ Another instance in which an act ascribed to Brahmā by earlier writers is transferred to Vishnu in the later Purāṇas, may be found in the story of the deluge in the Mbh., Vanaparva, 12, 797 ff. (see the first volume of this work, pp. 196 ff.); towards the conclusion of which, vv. 12, 797 f., the Fish declares himself to be Brahmā: *Athūbravīd animishas tūn rishin sa hitas tada | aham Prajāpatiḥ Brahmā yat-param nādhigamyate | matsya-rūpeṇa yūyancha mayā 'smād mokṣhitūḥ bhayāt |* "Then the god (iii. the unwinking), kindly-disposed, said to those rishis, 'I am the Prajāpati Brahmā, above whom no being is discoverable: by me in the form of a fish

The Linga Purāṇa, however, which is of the Śaiva class, and has not, as such, any interest in glorifying Viṣṇu, describes Brahmā as the deity who took the form of a boar: Part i. 4, 59 ff.: *Rātrau chaikārnave Brahmā nashṭe sthūvara-jangame | sushvāpāmbhasi yas tasmād Nārāyaṇaḥ iti smṛitaḥ | sarvavy-ante prabuddho vai drakṣtvā śunyaṁ charācharam | sraṣṭuṁ tadā matiṁ cakre Brahmā brahma-vidāṁ varaḥ | udakair āplutāṁ kṣmāṁ tām samādāya sanātanaḥ | pūrva-vat sthāpayāmāsa vārāhaṁ rūpam āsthitaḥ |* "In the night, when all things movable and immovable had been destroyed in the universal ocean, Brahmā slept upon the waters, and is hence called Nārāyaṇa. At the close of the night, awaking, and beholding the universe void, Brahmā, chief of the knowers of Brahma, then resolved to create. Having assumed the form of a boar, this eternal [god] taking the earth, which was overflowed by the waters, placed it as it had been before."

[In Böhlingk and Roth's Lexicon, s. v. *varāha*, reference is made to a further passage from the Taitt. S. vi. 2, 42, in which the boar is mentioned (see above, pp. 27 f.). I quote this with another story which follows it: *Yajno devebhyo nilāyata Viṣṇurūpam kṛtvā | su prithivīm praviśat | tam devāḥ hastān samrabhya uichhan | tam Indraḥ upary upary aty ukṛmat | so 'bravīt "ko nū 'yam upary upary aty akramīd" iti | "aham durge hantā" iti | atha "kas tvam" iti | "aham durgād āhartu" iti | so 'bravīt "durge vai hantū avocathāḥ | rarāho 'yam vāmamohaḥ saptānām girīṇām parastād vittuṁ vedyam*

you have been delivered from this danger.'" Compare the story as told in the Bhāg. Pur. (and see Burnouf, Pref. to Bhāg. Pur., iii. p. xxiii.). Bhāg. Pur. viii. 24, 4: *Ity ukto Viṣṇurāteṇa bhagavān Vādarūyaṇiḥ | urācha charitaṁ Viṣṇor matsya-rūpeṇa yat kṛtam | S'ukah urācha | 7. āsīt atīta-kalpānte Brāhma nar-mittiko luyah | samudh opaplutās tatra lokīḥ bhūrādyaḥ nripaḥ | 8. Kūlenāgata-nidrasya dhātūḥ śiśayishor | mukhato niṣṣṛjātūn vedāṇ Hayagrīvo 'ntike 'harat | 9. Jñātā tad danarendrasya Hayagrīvasya chesṣṭitam | dadhāra sapharirūpam bhagavān Hurir īraraḥ ityādi |* "Being thus addressed by Viṣṇurāta, the divine Vādarūyaṇi related the deed of Viṣṇu done by him under the form of a fish. S'uka said 7. At the end of the past Kalpa there was a Brāhma, or partial, dissolution of the universe (see Wilson's Viṣh. Pur., 2nd ed., vol. i., p. 113; vol. v., p. 186); in which the earth and other worlds were submerged under the ocean. The powerful Hayagrīva [coming] near, snatched away the Vedas which had issued from the mouth of the creator, who from drowsiness, which had supervened through time, was disposed to sleep. Having discovered this deed of Hayagrīva, chief of the Danavas, the divine lord, Hari, took the form of a sapharī fish," etc.

Asurāṇām bibharti taṁ jahi yaśi ūrge hanta 'ei' iti | sa darbhā-puṅḡlam udrihya sapta girin bhittvā taṁ ahaṇ | so 'bravīd "durgād vai āhartā avocathāh | etam āhara" iti | taṁ śhyo yaṇaḥ eva yaṇam āharat | yat tad vittaṁ vedyaṁ asurāṇām avindanta tad ekaṁ vedyai veditvam | Asurāṇām vai iyaṁ agre āsit | yāvad āsinaḥ parāpaśyati tāvad devānām | te devāḥ abruvann "astv eva no 'syām api" iti | "Kiyad vo dāsyāmaḥ" ei | yāvad iyaṁ salāvṛiki triḥ parikrāmati tāvan no datta" iti | sa Indrah salāvṛiki-rūpaṁ kṛtvā imām triḥ sarvataḥ paryakrāmat | tad imām avindanta | yad imām avindanta tad vedyai veditvam | sū vai iyaṁ sarvā eva vedīḥ |

"The sacrifice, assuming the form of Vishṇu, disappeared from among the gods, and entered into the earth. The gods joined hands, and searched for him. Indr passed over above him. He (Vishṇu) said, 'Who is this who has passed over above me?' (Indra replied :) 'I am he who slays in a castle, but now who art thou?' (Vishṇu said :) 'I am he who carries off from a castle.' He (Vishṇu) said : 'Thou hast said a *slayer in a castle*. This boar, the plunderer of wealth, keeps the goods of the Asuras on the other side of seven hills. Kill him, if thou art a *slayer in a castle*.' He (Indra), plucking up a bunch of Kuśa grass, pierced through the seven hills, and slew him. He (Indra) then said : 'Thou hast said *I am he who carries off from a castle* ; so carry him off.' He (Vishṇu), the sacrifice, carried off the sacrifice for them. Inasmuch as they obtained (*avindantu*) these goods of the Asuras, this is one reason why the altar is called *vedi*.

"This earth formerly belonged to the Asuras, whilst the gods had only as much as a man can see when sitting. They (the gods) said, 'Let us have a share in this earth also?' 'How much shall we give you?' (asked the Asuras). 'As much as this she jackal can go round in three (steps).' Indra, assuming the form of a she-jackal, stopped all round the earth in three (strides). Thus the gods obtained (*avinanta*) it. And from this circumstance the altar derives its name of *vedi*."

Compare the various stories about the original position of the gods in reference to the Asuras, given above, and in the fifth vol. of this work, p. 15, note].

To return to the mundane egg. In the Vishnu Purāṇa i. 2, 45 ff. we have the following account of its production, in which the simplicity of the older mythical conceptions is destroyed by the intermixture of metaphysical ideas borrowed from the Sāṅkhya philosophy. In fact, though it forms here the subject of a magniloquent description, the egg was an element in the cosmogonic traditions with which any writers less ingenious and fanciful than the authors of the Purāṇas would, perhaps, have found it somewhat inconvenient to deal in such a way as to harmonize with the current philosophical speculations: *Ākūśarāyu-tejāmsi salilam prithivī tathā | śabdādibhir guṇair brahman saṁyuktāny uttarottaraiḥ | śāntāḥ ghorās cha mūḍhās cha viśeṣhās tena te smṛitāḥ | nūnārīryyāḥ prithag-bhūtās tatas te saṁhatim vinā | nāśa-knucan prajāḥ sraśtum asamāgamyā kritśāśaḥ | sametyūnyonya-saṁyogam paraṣpara-samāśrayāḥ | eka-sanghāta-lakṣhyās cha samprāpyaikyam aśeṣhataḥ | Puruṣādhiṣṭhītatvāḥ cha Pradhānānugraheṇa cha | mahādādayo viśeṣhāntāḥ aṇḍam utpādayanti te | tat krameṇa viriḍdhāṁ tu jalā-budbuda-rat samam | bhūtebhyo 'ṇḍam mahābuddhe rīḥat tad udake śayam | prākṛitam Brahma-rūpasya Viṣṇoḥ saṁsthānam uttamam | tat-rūpyakta-srarūpo 'sau vyakta-rūpī jagat-patiḥ | Viṣṇur Brahma-srarūpeṇa svayam eva vyavasthitaḥ | Meru-tūlyam abhūt tasya jarāyus cha mahādharaḥ | garbhodakam samudrās cha tasyūsan sumahātmanah | sūdri-dvīpa-samudrās cha saṁyotir loka-sangrahaḥ | tasminn aṇḍe 'bhavad vipra sa-devāsura-mānushaḥ | vāri-raṅgy-anilākāśais tato bhūtādīnā rahiḥ | vṛitam daśagunair aṇḍam bhūtādir mahatā tathā | aṇḍaktenārīto brahmaṁsai taiḥ sarvaiḥ sahito mahān | ebhir āvaranair aṇḍam saptaḥḥ prākṛitair vṛitam | nārikela-phalasyāntar vījam vāhya-dalair iva | juṣhan rajo-guṇaṁ talra svayam viśveṣvaro Hariḥ | Brahmā bhūtvā 'sya jagato viśiṣṭau sampravarttate |*

"Ether, air, fire, water and earth, when joined in order, with sound and the other qualities in succession, are then called specific, being soothing, terrific, or stupefying,⁸¹ but being of different powers, and separated from one another, they could not, without contact, and without being combined together, produce living creatures. [At length] having attained to mutual conjunction, being dependent upon each other, having a tendency to amalgamation, and having so attained an

⁸¹ See Wilson's Sāṅkhya Karikā, pp. 119 ff., and Vishnu Pur., 2nd ed., vol. i., p. 38 ff.

entire unity,—being presided over by Puruṣha (spirit) and favoured by Pradhāna (matter), these principles, commencing with Mahat (intellect), and down to the gross elements inclusive, generate an egg. Gradually augmented from the elements, smooth like a bubble of water, that vast egg, resting on the water, was the material and appropriate receptacle of Viṣṇu in the form of Brahmā. There, undiscernible in his essence, Viṣṇu, the lord of the world, himself abode in a discernible shape, in the form of Brahmā. It was like mount Meru; the mountains were the womb, and the seas were the uterine fluids of that vast [production]. In that egg, O Brahmān, were collected the worlds, with their hills, continents, and oceans, the luminaries, the gods, Asuras, and men. This egg was enveloped externally by water, fire, air, ether, and the source of the elements (*bhūtādi*, i.e. *ahankāra*) increasing in tenfold progression; and in the same way 'Ahankāra' was invested by 'Mahat'; and Mahat with all these [aforesaid principles] was surrounded by the indiscreet principle (*Pradhāna*). The egg is enveloped in these seven material coverings, as the seed within the cocoa-nut is surrounded by the outward husks. Assuming there the quality of passion (*rajas*) Hari, the universal lord, himself becoming Brahmā, engages in the creation of this world."

The Viṣṇu Purāṇa does not connect the egg any further with the creation, or tell us how it became divided, etc., etc.

The Linga Purāṇa, Part i., 3, 28 ff., gives a similar description of the egg: *Mahadādi-viśeshāntāḥ hy aṇḍam utpādayanti cha | jalā-bud-budā-vat tasmāt avatīrṇaḥ Pitāmahaḥ | sa eva bhagavān Rudro Viṣṇur viśvagataḥ prabhuh | tasminn aṇḍe tv ime lokāḥ antar viśvam idaṁ jagat | aṇḍam daśa-guṇenaiva nabhasā vāhyato vṛitam | ākāśaś chāvṛitas tadvad ahankāreṇa śabdajāḥ | mahatū śabda-hetur vai pradhānenāvṛitaḥ svayam | saptaṇḍāvaranāny āhuḥ tasyātmā Kamalāsanaḥ | koṭi-koṭy-ayutāny atra chāṇḍāni kathitāni tu | tatra tatra chaturvaktṛāḥ Brahmāṇo Narayo Bhavāḥ | śṛiṣṭāḥ pradhānena tadā labdhvā Śāmbhōstu sannidhiṁ ityādi |*

"And these principles, from Mahat to the gross elements inclusive, generate an egg, like a bubble of water, from which issued the Parent [of the universe], who was the same as divine Rudra, and Viṣṇu, the omnipresent lord. Within that egg were these worlds,—this entire universe. The egg was externally invested with a tenfold ether; in like manner, the ether, sprung from sound, was surrounded by 'ahankāra';

the cause of sound (*ahankāra*) by Mahat, and the latter itself by Pradhāna. These men call the seven coverings of the egg; its soul is Kamalāsana (Brahmā). Here ten thousand crores of crores of eggs are declared (to exist), in which four-faced Brahmās, Haris, and Bhavas (Sīvas) were created by Pradhāna, which had attained to proximity with Sambhu (Siva)."

The Bhāgavata Purāṇa has the following passage on the same subject in the third Book, in answer to an inquiry how the Prajāpatīs created the world :

Bhāg. Pur. iii. 20, 12 ff.—*Maitreyaḥ uvācha | Daivena durvitarkyeṇa pareṇānimishēṇa cha | jātakshobhād bhagavato mahān asid guṇa-trayāt |* 13. *Rajaḥ-pradhūnād mahatas trilingo daiva-choditāt | jātāḥ sasarjju bhūtādir viyadādīni panchasaḥ |* 14. *Tūni chaikaikaḥ srashtum asam-arthāni bhautikam | saṁhatya daiva-yogena haimam aṇḍam avāsṛjan |* 15. *So 'sayiṣṭābdkhi-salile aṇḍa-kosho nirātmakeḥ | sāgraṁ vai varsha-sāhasram anvacāsit tam īśvaraḥ |* 16. *Tanya nābher abhūt padmaṁ sahasrārkorudīdhiti | sarva-jīva-nikāyauko yatra svayam abhūt Svarāt |* 17. *So 'nurishṭo bhagavatā yaḥ śete salilāsaye | loka-saṁsthāṁ yathā-pūrvam nirmame saṁsthayā svayā |*

"Maitreya said :

12. "The Great principle (Intelligence) arose from the three qualities agitated by the Divine Being in consequence of an inscrutable destiny, supreme and ever wakeful. 13. Springing from the Great principle (in which the quality of passion prevailed, and which was impelled by destiny), the source of the elements (*bhūtādi* or *ahankāra*), characterized by the three qualities (*guṇas*), created the ether and other principles, in groups of five. 14. These principles being severally unable to create, deposited, when united by the action of destiny, a golden egg formed of the elements. 15. This egg-shell lay lifeless on the waters of the ocean: the Lord dwelt in it for a complete [period of a] thousand years. 16. From his navel sprang a lotus splendid as a thousand suns, the abode of all living things, where Svarāt (Brahmā) himself was born. 17. He penetrated by the Divine Being who reposes on the receptacle of waters, constructed as before, the substance (*saṁsthā*) of the worlds with his own substance."

The same ideas are repeated in a later chapter of the same book :

Bhāg. Pur. iii. 26, 50 ff.: *Etāny asaṁhatya yadā mahad-ādīni sapta*

vai | kṛā-karma-guṇopeto jagadādir⁶.upāviśet | 51. Tatas tenānuvid-
dhebhya [kṣubhitebhyaḥ, Comm.] yuktebhya 'ṇḍam ahetanam | utthitam
Puruṣo yasmād udātishṭhad asau Virāṭ | 52. Etad aṇḍam viśeṣākhyam
krama-vṛiddhair dasottaraiḥ | toyādibhiḥ parivṛitam pradhānenāvṛitair
vahiḥ | yatra loka-vitāno 'yaṁ rūpam bhagavato Hareḥ | 53. Hirāṇ-
mayād aṇḍa-koshād utthāya solile-śgyāt | tam āviśya mahādevo bahudhā
nirbībheda kham [chhidram, Comm.] 54. Nirabhidyatūsyā prathamam
mukham vāṇī tato 'bhavad ityādi |

50. "When these seven principles, Mahat and the rest, remained un-
combined, the [god who is the] source of the universe entered into them,
united with time, action, and the qualities. 51. Then out of these
principles penetrated by him, and combined, there arose a lifeless egg,
from which sprang Puruṣa, viz. that Virāṭ. 52. This egg, named
Viśeṣa (the specific) was surrounded by water, and other elements
gradually increasing in extent by a tenfold progression, which in their
turn were externally invested by Pradhāna. In this egg [was formed]
this expanse of worlds, which is the form of the divine Hari. 53.
Having arisen out of the envelopment of this golden egg reposing
upon the water, the great god, pervading it, opened up many apertures.
54. First his mouth was divided, from which speech issued," etc.

The same process is also described in the second book of the same
Purāṇa, sect. 5, 32 ff.; but it is unnecessary to adduce more than a
verse or two of the passage.

34. Varṣa-pūga-sahasrānte tad aṇḍam udakeśayam | kṛā-karma-
svabhāva-stho jīvo 'jīvam ajīrayat | 35. Sa eva puruṣas tasmād aṇḍam
nirbīdhya nirgataḥ | sahasrorv-anghri-bāhv-akṣaḥ sahasrānana-śīrṣhavān |

34. "At the end of many thousand years, the Life (Jīva) residing
in time, action, and nature, gave life to that lifeless egg reposing on the
water. 35. Splitting the egg, Puruṣa issued forth with a thousand
thighs, feet, arms, eyes, faces, and heads."

The same subject is yet again referred to in another text of the same
work.

Bhāg. Pur. ii. 10, 10 f. : Puruṣo 'ṇḍam vinirbīdhya yadā 'dru sa
vinirgataḥ | ātmano 'yanam anvichhann apo 'srākṣhīc chhuchīḥ śuchīḥ |
tāsv avātsīt svasriṣṭāsu sahasra-parivatsarān | tena Nārāyaṇo nāma
yad āpaḥ puruṣodbhavāḥ |

10. "When, splitting the egg, Puruṣa first issued from it, seeking

a receptacle for himself, he created the pure waters, himself pure. 11. In these waters created by himself he dwelt a thousand years. Hence he is named Nārāyaṇa, because the waters were produced from Puruṣa."

The story about Brahmā's incestuous passion for his own daughter, which is sometimes alluded to in the Purāṇas, is thus noticed in the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, 1, 7, 4, 1 ff.⁸²—*Prajāpatiḥ ha vai svām duhitaram abhidadhyau divaṁ vā ushasaṁ vā 'mithunā enayā syām' iti taṁ sambabhūva* | 2. *Tad vai devānāṁ āgaḥ āsa 'yaḥ itthaṁ svām duhitaram asmākaṁ svasāraṁ karoti' iti* | 3. *Te ha devāḥ ūchur 'yo 'yaṁ devaḥ paśunām īṣṭe 'tisandhaṁ vai ayaṁ chardti yaḥ itthaṁ svām duhitaram asmākaṁ svasāraṁ karoti vidhya imam' iti* | *taṁ Rudro 'bhyāyatyā vīryādha tasya sāmī retāḥ prachaskanda tatā id nūnāṁ tad āsa* | 4. *Tasmād etad rishiṇā 'bhyānūktam 'pitā yat svām duhitaram adhiṣṭhan kṣmayā retāḥ sanjagmāno nishinchad' iti tad āgni-mārutam ity ukthaṁ tasmīns tad vyākhyāyate yathā tad devāḥ retāḥ prajānayan | teshāṁ yadū devānāṁ krodho vyad atha Prajāpatiḥ abhishajyaṁs tasya taṁ śalyaṁ nirakṛintan | sa vai yajnaḥ eva Prajāpatiḥ* |

"Prajāpati cast his eyes upon his own daughter, either the Sky, or the Dawn, [desiring] 'May I pair with her.' So [saying] he had intercourse with her. 2. This was a crime in the eyes of the gods, who said: '[He is guilty] who acts thus to his own daughter, our sister.' 3. The gods said: 'This god who rules over the beasts, commits a transgression in that he acts thus to his own daughter, our sister: pierce him through.' Rudra aimed at, and pierced, him. Half of his seed fell to the ground. So it happened. 4. Accordingly this has been said by the rishi (R. V. x. 61, 7), 'when the father embracing his daughter, uniting with her, discharged his seed on the earth,' etc. This is a hymn addressed to Agni and the Maruts; and it is there related in what manner the gods generated this seed. When the anger of the gods had passed away, they applied remedies to Prajāpati, and cut out of him the arrow. Prajāpati is sacrifice."

The following is the context of the passage of the Rig-veda referred

⁸² See the passages from the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa and the Matsya Purāṇa on the same subject, with the remarks subjoined, in the first vol. of this work, pp. 107 ff.

to in the preceding legend, which refers apparently to some atmospheric phenomenon. It is hard to say what gods or powers of nature are denoted by the father and the daughter respectively,⁸³ and the passage is obscure and difficult to translate, even with the aid of Sāyana's comment, for a copy of which I am indebted to Professor Müller. The 4th verse is addressed to the Aśvins. The commentator regards verses 5-7 as intended to show how "Rudra Prajāpati created Rudra Vāstoshpati with a portion of himself:" (*Yathā svāmśena bhagavān Rudraḥ prajāpatir Vāstoshpatiṁ Rudram asrijat tad etad-ūtibhir tisribhir vadati.*)

R. V. x. 61, 4: *Krishnā yad goshu aruṇiṣhu sīdāt divo napātā Aśvinā huve vām | vītam me yajnam āgatam me annaṁ varanvānsā na isham asmṛita-dhrū |* 5. *Prathishṭa yasya vīrakarmam ishṇād anushṭhitaṁ nu naryyo apauhat | punas tad ārṇhati yat kanūyāḥ duhitur āḥ anubhṛitam anarvā |* 6. *Madhyā yat kartvam abharād abhīke kāmāṁ kṛṇvāne pitari yuvatyām | manānag reto jahatur viyantā sīnau nishiklāṁ sukṛitasya yonau*⁸⁴ | 7. *Pitā yat svām duhitaram adhishkan kshmayā retāḥ sanjagmāno nishinechat | svādhyo ajanayan brahma derūḥ vāstoshpatiṁ vratapām nira-takshan |*

"When the dark female (night) stands among the tawny cows (rays of the dawn?), I invoke you twain, Aśvins, sons of the Sky.⁸⁵ Come eagerly to my sacrifice, come to my oblation, as desiring sustenance, ye who do not disappoint my longings.⁸⁶ 5. That male, whose prolific virile (organ) was extended, now withdrew it, after it had been sent forth. Again the irresistible [god] draws forth that which had been

⁸³ In Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa vi. 1, 2, 1 ff., it is related that Prajāpati, being desirous of creating, connected himself with various spouses, or associates, for this purpose, first,—in the form of, or by means of, Agni,—with the Earth (*So 'guṇiṁ pruthivīm mīthunāṁ samabhavat*): from which union sprang an egg, and thence Vāyu; next, through Vāyu he united himself with the Air (*antarikṣha*, neuter), and again an egg was produced, and thence Aditya (the Sun); thirdly, through Aditya he connected himself with Dyaus (the Sky); fourthly, fifthly, sixthly, and seventhly, through his mind (*manas*) with Vāch; the result of which, in each of the last four cases, was his own pregnancy (*garbhī abhavat*).

⁸⁴ The same phrase occurs in R. V. iii. 29, 8.

⁸⁵ See the fifth vol. of this work, pp. 234 and 239.

⁸⁶ Such is the meaning given by Professor Roth to *asmṛita-dhrū* from *a+smṛita+dhru*, "not suffering what I have desired to fall." See s.v. 2, *dhrū*. Sāyana renders it, *asmṛita-drohaḥ mayi droham asmarantaḥ* | "forgetting injury—forgetting injury to me."

introduced [into the womb of] his youthful daughter. 6. [They then did] in the midst that which was to be done at their contact, when the father loved the youthful damsel,—separating from each other, they discharged a little seed which was shed on the surface, on the place of holy ceremonies. 7. When the father, bent on impregnating his own daughter, united with her, discharged his seed on the earth, the benevolent gods generated prayer, they fashioned Vāstoshpati, the protector of sacred rites."

The same story is repeated in the later literature, as in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa iii. 12, 28 ff., only that Vāch is the daughter of Brahmā who is there spoken of: *Vāchaṁ duhitaraṁ tanviṁ Svayambhūr haratīm manaḥ | akāmāṁ chakame kshattaḥ sakāmaḥ iti naḥ śrutam |* 29. *Tam adharme kṛta-matim vilokya pitaraṁ sutāḥ | Marīchi-mukhyāḥ munayo viśrambhāt pratyabodhayan |* 30. *Naitat pūrvaiḥ kṛtām tvad ye na karishyanti chāpare | yas traṁ duhitaraṁ gachher anigrihyāṅgajam prabhuh |* 31. *Tejīyasām api hy etad na suślokyaṁ jagadguro | yaḍ vṛittam anutishṭhan |* 32. *Tasmai namo bhagavate ya idaṁ svena rochishū ātmasthaṁ ryanjayāmāsa sa dharmam pātum arhati |* 33. *Sa itthaṁ grīnataḥ putrūn puro dṛishṭvā prajāpatin | prajāpati-patis tanvaṁ tatpāja vṛīḍitas tadā | tāṁ diśo jagrihur ghorāṁ nīhāraṁ yad vidus tamaḥ |*

"We have heard, O Kshatriya, that Svayambhū (Brahmā) had a passion for Vāch, his slender and enchanting daughter, who had no passion for him. The Munis, his sons, headed by Marīchi, seeing their father bent upon wickedness, admonished him with affection: 'This is such a thing as has never been done by those before you, nor will those after you do it,—that you, being the lord, should sexually approach your daughter, not restraining your passion. This, O preceptor of the world, is not a laudable deed even in glorious personages, through imitation of whose actions men attain felicity. Glory to that divine being (Vishnu) who by his own lustre revealed this [universe] which abides in himself,—he must maintain righteousness.' Seeing his sons, the Prajāpatis, thus speaking before him, the lord of the Prajāpatis (Brahmā) was ashamed, and abandoned his body. This dreadful body the regions received, and it is known as foggy darkness."

This legend of Brahmā and his daughter, though, as appears from the passage in the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, it has occasioned scandal among

the Indian writers from an early period, is not to be regarded in the same light as many other stories regarding the licentious actions of some of the other gods. The production of a female and her conjunction with the male out of whom she was formed, is regarded in Mann i. 32, as one of the necessary stages in the cosmogonic process (and finds its near parallel in the book of Genesis): *dvidhā krītā 'tmano deham arddhena puruṣho 'bhavat | arddhena nārī tasyāṁ sa Virājam asrijat prabhūḥ* | "Dividing his own body into two, [Brahmā] became with the half a man, and with the half a woman; and in her he created (i.e. according to the commentator, begot)⁸⁷ Virāj." Compare also the passage from the Vishṇu Purāṇa i. 7, 12 ff. quoted in the first volume of this work, p. 65, and the passage from the Satap. Brāhmaṇa cited in the same vol., p. 25 f.⁸⁸ On the injustice of ascribing an immoral character to the Hindu writings, or to the deities whom they describe, on the ground of such legends as the one before us, or of the dialogue between Yama and Yamī in the 10th hymn of the tenth Maṇḍala of the Rīg-veda, see some instructive remarks by Prof. Roth in the third vol. of the Journal of the American Oriental Society, pp. 332–337.

The case is different, however, with another class of stories, which are frequently to be met with in the Itihāsas and Purāṇas, in which various adulterous amours, of the Asvins, Indra, Varuṇa, and Kṛishṇa, are described.—See the passages from the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, iv. 1, 5, 1 ff.; the Mahābhārata, Vanaparva, v. 10, 316 ff., quoted or abstracted in the fifth vol. of this work, pp. 250 ff., and in Indische Studien, i. 198; the Rāmāyaṇa i. 48, 16 ff. (Schlegel's and Bombay ed., Gorresio's ed. i. 49); and the passages quoted from the Mbh. in the first volume of this work, pp. 310, 466 (with note), and 467. In all these cases a licentious character is evidently attributed to the gods.⁸⁹

⁸⁷ *Maithuna-dharmena Virāj-sañjanam puruṣam nirmītarān |*

⁸⁸ "The Matsya P. has a little allegory of its own on the subject of Brahmā's intercourse with S'atarūpī; for it explains the former to mean the Vedas, and the latter the Sāvitrī, or holy prayer, which is their chief text; and in their cohabitation there is therefore no evil: *Veda-rāśiḥ smṛito Brahmā Sāvitrī tad-adhiṣṭhītu | tasmān na kaśchid doṣaḥ syāt Sāvitrī-gaṇane vibhoḥ* |"—Wilson's Vishṇu Pur., 2nd ed., vol. i., p. 108, note. See the first vol. of this work, p. 112.

⁸⁹ Kumārila Bhaṭṭa, however, attempts to explain allegorically not only the dalliance of Brahmā with his own daughter, but also the adultery of Indra with Ahalyā.—See the passage quoted from him and translated in Müller's Anc. Sansk.

In the case of Krishna the following is the reasoning by which the author of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa attempts to quiet the scruples of some of the purer-minded among the devotees of the pastoral deity, and to vindicate his morality, by seeking to impart a mystic character to those loose adventures which had been the occasion of scandal to them, though, no doubt, well suited to the taste of his coarser worshippers.

Bhāg. Pur., x. 33, 27 ff.—*Rājā uvācha | saṁsthāpanāya dharmasya prasamāyetaṛasya cha | avatīrṇo hi bhavagān aṁśena jagadīśvaraḥ | 28. Sa kathaṁ dharma-setūnāṁ vaktū kartū bhirakṣitū | pratipam ācharād brahman paradārūbhimarśanam | 29. Āptakamo Yadu-patiḥ kṛitavān vai jugupsitam | kim-abhiprāyaḥ etaṁ naḥ gaṁśayaṁ ohhindhi suvata | Srī-S'ukah uvācha | 30. Dharma-vyatikramo dṛiṣṭaḥ īśvarānācha sāhasam | tejīyasāṁ na doṣhāya vahnēḥ sarvabhujō yathā | 31. Naitat samācharej jātu manasā 'pi hy anīśvaraḥ | vinaśyaty ācharan mauḍhyād yathā 'rudro 'bdhijaṁ viṣham | 32. Īśvarānāṁ vachaḥ satyaṁ tathairā-charitaṁ kvachit | teshāṁ yat eva-vacho yuktam buddhimāṁs tat samā-charat | 33. Kuśalācharitenaishām iha svārtho na vidyate | viparyayena vā 'nartho niraḥankārīṇāṁ prabho | 34. Kimutākkhila-sattvānāṁ tīryāṁ-martya-divaukasāṁ | īsitūṣ cheṣitāvyaṇāṁ kuśalākuśalānvayaḥ | 35. Yat pāda-pankaja-parāga-niṣheva-triptāḥ yoga-prabhāva-vidhutākkhila-karma-bandhāḥ | svairāṁ charanti munayo 'pi na nahyamānās tasyecchayā 'tla-vapushaḥ kulaḥ eva bandhaḥ | 36. Gopīnāṁ tat-patīnāṁcha sarveṣhāṁ eva dehināṁ | yo 'ntaḥ charati so 'dhyakṣaḥ kṛīḍanenecha deha-bhāk | 37. Anugrahāya bhūtānāṁ mānuṣhāṁ deham āśritaḥ | bhajate tādrīṣiḥ kṛīḍāḥ yāḥ śrutvā tat-paro bhavet | 38. Nāsūyan khalu Kṛiṣṇāya mohitās tasya mūyayā | manyamūnāḥ eva-parśvasthān svān svān dūrān Vrajaukasāḥ | 39. Brahma-rūtre upāvṛtite Vāsudevaṇumoditāḥ | anichhantyo yayur gopyaḥ svagrihān bhagavat-priyāḥ⁹⁰ |*

Lit., pp. 529 f. In the Rāmāyaṇa⁹¹ i. 49 Indra tells the gods that his adulterous act had tended to their benefit, by exciting the wrath of Gautama and so neutralizing the fruit of those austerities of the saint which threatened danger to the celestials. On this the commentator in the Bombay ed. remarks: *Dharma-dhurandharasyāpi Sakraya adharma pravṛttau, vijāṁ darsayitum āha |* "What follows is said to show what was the ground of Indra's practising unrighteousness, though he is the supporter of righteousness."

⁹⁰ This passage is partly quoted in my Mata-parikṣā, published in Calcutta in 1852, p. 87; and in Prof. Banerjee's Dialogues, p. 383 f.

"The king said: 27. The divine lord of the world became partially incarnate for the establishment of virtue, and the repression of its opposite. 28. How did he, the expounder, author, and guardian of the bulwarks of righteousness, practise its contrary, the corruption of other men's wives? 29. With what object did the lord of the Yadus (Kṛishṇa) perpetrate what was blameable? Resolve, devout saint, this our doubt. Śuka said: 30. The transgression of virtue, and the daring acts which are witnessed in superior beings, must not be charged as faults to those glorious persons, as no blame is imputed to fire, which consumes fuel of every description. 31. Let no one other than a superior being ever even in thought practise the same: any one who, through folly, does so, perishes, like any one not a Rudra [drinking] the poison produced from the ocean." 32. The word of superior beings is true, and so also their conduct is sometimes [correct]: let a wise man observe their command, which is right. 33. These beings, O king, who are beyond the reach of personal feelings, have no interest in good deeds done in this world, nor do they incur any detriment from the contrary. 34. How much less can there be any relation of good or evil between the lord of all beings, brute, mortal, and divine, and the creatures over whom he rules? (i.e. since he is entirely beyond the sphere of virtue and vice, how can any of his actions partake of the nature of either?) 35. Since Munis, who are satisfied by worshipping the pollen from the lotus of his feet, and by the force of abstraction have shaken off all the fetters of works,—since even they are uncontrolled, and act as they please, how can there be any restraint upon him (the Supreme Deity) when he has voluntarily assumed a body? 36. He who moves within the gopīs (milkmen's wives) and their husbands, and all embodied beings, is their ruler, who only in sport assumed a body upon earth. 37. Taking a human form out of benevolence to creatures, he engages in sports such as that those who hear of them may become devoted to himself. 38. The [male] inhabitants of Vraja harboured no ill-will to Kṛishṇa, since, deluded

²¹ Comp. Mbh. i. 2785. *Yas tu Nārāyaṇo nāma deva-devaḥ sanātanaḥ | tasyāñśo mānusheshv āsīt Vāsudevah pratūpavān |* See further passages to be quoted in chapter ii., sect. v., below.

²² This refers to the poison drunk by Śiva at the churning of the ocean. See Rāmāyaṇa i. 45, 26, ed. Schlegel, and Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, note p. 78 (1st ed.). The passage of the Rāmāyaṇa will be quoted further in chap. iii., sec. vi.

by his illusion, they each imagined that his own wife was by his side. 39. When Brahmā's night had arrived, the gopīs, beloved and gladdened by Kṛishṇa, departed unwillingly to their own homes."

This passage is followed (v. 40) by an assurance on the part of the author of the Purāṇa, that the person who listens with faith to the narrative of Kṛishṇa's sports with the cowherds' wives, and who repeats it to others, shall attain to strong devotion to that deity, and shall speedily be freed from love, that disease of the heart (*vikrīḍitaṁ Vrajavadhūbhīr idam̐ cha Viṣṇoḥ śraddhānvito 'nuśṛiṇuyād atha varṇayed yaḥ | bhaktim parām bhagavati pratilabhya kāmāṁ hṛid-rogam āśv apahinoty achireṇa dhīraḥ*). A remarkable instance of homœopathic cure, certainly!

I quote the remarks of the commentator, Śrīdhara Svāmin, on verses 30 ff. of this passage: 30. *Parameśvare kāmūtika-nyāyena parihartuṁ sāmānyato mahatāṁ vṛttam āha 'dharmavyatikramah' iti | 'sāhasan̐cha dṛiṣṭam' Prajāpatiṇdra-Soma-Viśvāmītrādīnāṁ | tachcha teshāṁ tejasvināṁ doṣhāya na bhavatīti* | 31. *Tarhi 'yad yad ācharati śreṣṭhīhaḥ' iti nyāyena anyo 'pi kuryād ity āśankya āha 'naitad' iti | 'anīśvaro' dehādi-para-tantro yathā Rudra-vyatirikto viśham ācharan bhakṣhayan* | 32. *Katham̐ tarhi sadāchārasya prāmānyam̐ atah̐ āha 'īśvarāṇām' iti | teshāṁ vachāḥ satyam̐ atas tad-uktam̐ āchared eva | ācharitaṁ kvuchit satyam̐ atah̐ 'eva-vacho yuktaṁ' teshāṁ vachasā yad uktam̐ aviruddham̐ tat tad eva ācharet* | 33. *Nanu tarhi te 'pi kim evaṁ sāhasam̐ ācharanti tatra āha 'kusale' ti | prārabdha-karma-kṣhapaṇa-mūtram̐ eva teshāṁ kṛityaṁ na anyad ity arthaḥ* | 34. *Prastutam̐ āha 'kimuta' iti | 'kuśalākuśalān̐vayo' na vidyate iti kim punar vaktavyam̐ ity arthaḥ* | 35. *Etad eva sphuṭīkaroti | yasya pūda-pankaja-parāḡasya nīshevanena triptāḥ yadvā yasya pūda-punkaja-parāḡe nīshevā yeshāṁ te tathā te cha te triptāścha iti bhaktāḥ ity arthaḥ | tathā jñānīnāś cha na nahyamānāḥ bandhanam̐ aprāpn̐wantah̐ | para-dūratvaṁ gopīnām̐ angīkṛitya parihṛitam̐* | 36. *Idānim̐ bhagavataḥ sarvāntaryāmīnāḥ para-dūra-sevā nāma na kāchid ity āha 'gopīnām' iti | 'yo'ntas̐ charaty adhyān̐kṣho' buddhy-ādi-sāḡkṣha eva kriḡḡanena dehābhūk na tv̐asmad-ādi-tulyo yena doṣhaḥ syād iti* | 37. *Nanv̐ evaṁ ched āptakūmasya nindite kutaḥ pravṛittir̐ ity āha 'anugrahāya' iti | śṛiṅgāra-rasākṛiṣṭha-chetaso 'ti-bahir-mukhān̐ api eva-parān̐ kartum̐ iti bhāvah̐* | 38. *Nanv̐ anye 'pi bhinnāchārāḥ eva cheshṭitam̐ evam̐ eva iti vadanti tatrāha 'nāsūyann' iti | evambhū-taiśvaryābhāve tathā kurvantaḥ pūpūḥ jneyāḥ iti bhāvah̐* |

"In order to refute [the charge of immorality] in regard to the Supreme Deity, by the *a fortiori* argument, the author states generally the conduct of great persons in the words 'the transgression,' etc. The 'daring acts witnessed' are those of Prajāpati, Indra, Soma, Viśvāmitra, and others; and these are not to be charged to them as faults. 31. Having intimated the doubt that according to the reasoning 'whatever an eminent person does,'²³ etc., etc., there is a danger that another person may do the like,—he says, 'Let no one do the same,' etc.; 'no one other than a superior being,' i.e. no one who is in subjection to a body, etc.; 'as any one separate from Rudra using,' swallowing, 'poison.' 32. Whence, then, is the authority for pure conduct? He tells us in the words, 'of superior beings,' etc. Their word is true; therefore let their declarations be followed. Their conduct is [only] sometimes true [correct]: therefore, let 'their correct words,' viz., that, not being contrary [to right], which is declared by their word, be followed. 33. In answer to the question why these superior beings also thus practise 'daring acts,' he states, in the words 'good deeds,' etc., that they have no other concern whatever than merely to nullify [the consequences of] their commenced works [so as to prevent these works from interfering with their final liberation]. 34. He arrives at his main subject in the words 'how much less,' etc.: i.e. [in the case of the supreme Viṣṇu] there is no such relation of good or evil: What more is to be said? 35. He makes this clear. [The first words here mean either] 'they who are satisfied by worshipping the pollen of the lotus of his feet'; or 'they who are worshippers of the pollen of the lotus of his feet, and are also satisfied, i.e. devotees'; further, who are wise men, not bound,—finding no restraint. The objection that the gopīs were other men's wives is [here] admitted, and obviated. 36. Now he [further] asserts, in the words 'the gopīs,' that in the case of the divine, all-pervading, Being there is no such thing as an attachment to other men's wives [since he pervades, and is one with, everything]. It is 'he who moves within, the ruler,' the witness of the understanding, etc., who in sport takes a body; but he does not resemble such persons as ourselves, so that he should be in fault. 37. The author now, in the words 'out of benevolence,' answers

²³ This text, from the Bhagavad Gītā, will be quoted below.

the question why, if the case be so, the Being who has no want unsatisfied should engage in acts which have been censured: the purport is, that he seeks to incline to himself even such persons as are attracted by sensual love, and greatly devoted to external things.⁵⁴ 38. But do not others of a very different mode of life represent their own conduct as of this very description? In reference to this he says 'they harboured no ill-will,' etc. The drift is, that those who without such divine character act in the same way are to be considered sinners."

The following is the passage referred to by the commentator in his annotation on verse 31. It will be seen that it inculcates a doctrine diametrically opposed to that urged in the earlier part, at least, of the argument by which the author of the Bhāgavata endeavours to justify the adulteries of Kṛishṇa, and perfectly coincident with the tenor of the condemnation which the same author (who is inconsistent with himself) had, in an earlier part of his work, pronounced on Brahmā by the mouth of his sons (above, p. 47):

Bhagavad Gītā, iii. 20 ff.—*Karmaṇaiva hi saṁsiddham āsthitāḥ Janakādayaḥ | loka-sangrahaṁ evāpi sampāśyan kartum arhasi |* 21. *Yad yad ācharati śreṣṭhaḥ tat tad evetaro janaḥ | sa yat pramāṇaṁ kurute lokas tad anuvartate |* 22. *Na me Pārthāsti kartavyaṁ trishu lokeshu kinchana | nānavāptam avāptavyaṁ varte eva cha karmaṇi |* 23. *Yadi hy ahaṁ na varteyaṁ jātu karmaṇy atandritaḥ | mama vartmānuvartante manusyaḥ Pārtha sarvaśaḥ |* 24. *Utsideyur ime lokāḥ na kuryāṁ karma ched ahaṁ | sankarasya cha kartā syām upahanyām imāḥ prajāḥ |* 25. *Saktāḥ karmaṇy avidvāṁso yathā kurvanti Bhārata || kuryād vidvāṁs tathā 'saktāḥ chikīrṣur loka-sangrahaṁ |* 26. *Na buddhi-bhedaṁ janayed ajñānāṁ karma-sanginām | joshayet sarva-karmāṇi vidvān yuktāḥ samācharan |*

"20. For it was by works that Janaka and other sages attained perfection. You also ought to act, seeking the edification of mankind.⁵⁵ 21. Whatever a person of eminence practises, that the rest of men also [do]. Whatever authoritative example he sets, the people follow. 22. There is nothing in the three worlds, son of Prithā, which I have

⁵⁴ I find this sense of the word *bahirmukha* in Molesworth's Marathi Dictionary.

⁵⁵ Compare Raghuvamśa iii. 46. . . . *pathaḥ tusher darśayitāraḥ īśvarāḥ mānasaṁ ūdadate na paddhatim |* "Our lords, who point out to us the pure way, do not [themselves] pursue an unclean path."

to do, nor anything unattained which I have to attain; and yet I continue in action. 23. If I were not to continue diligently engaged in works, O son of Prithā, men would follow my course in every respect. 24. These people would be ruined if I did not practise works; and I should occasion a confusion of castes: I should destroy these creatures. 25. In the same way as the ignorant, who are attached to works, perform them, so let the wise man perform them, without attachment, seeking the edification of mankind. 26. Let not the wise man create a distraction of mind among ignorant persons who are attached to works: let him fulfil all ceremonies with alacrity, while he practises them with abstracted mind."

I quote here some other interesting stories which I have observed in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa regarding Prajāpati, the creation of the gods, and the manner in which they acquired immortality, and became superior to the Asuras, or to other deities. (Compare the fifth volume of this work, pp. 12-16.) The first extracts tell how Prajāpati himself became immortal, and what difficulties he encountered in the work of creation.

Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, x. 1, 3, 1 (p. 761 ff.)—*Prajāpatiḥ prajāḥ asṛj-
jata | sa ūrdhvebhyāḥ eva prānebh्यो devān⁹⁶ asṛijata ye 'vānchaḥ prānās
tebhyo martyūḥ prajāḥ | atha ūrdhvam eva mṛityum prajābhyo 'ttāram
asṛijata | 2. Tasya ha Prajāpater ardham eva martyam āsit ardham
amṛitam | tad yad asya martyam āsit tena mṛityor abibhet | sa vibhīyat
imām praviśad dvayam bhūtvā mṛichcha āpaścha | 3. Sa mṛityur devūn
abravīt 'kva nu so 'bhūd yo no 'śṛiṣṭa' iti | 'tvad bibhīyat imām prā-
vikahad' iti | so 'bravīt 'taṁ vai anvichkhāma taṁ sambharāma na vai ahaṁ
taṁ himsishyāmi' iti | taṁ devūḥ asyāḥ adhi samabharan | yad asya apsu
āsīt tāḥ apaḥ samabharann atha yad asyām tām mṛidam | tad ubhayaṁ
sambhṛitya mṛidancha āpaścha iṣṭakām ākurvaṁs tasmād etad ubhayaṁ*

⁹⁶ The gods are sometimes mentioned in the Rig-veda (see i. 34, 11; i. 45, 2) as being thirty-three in number. Here is an enumeration of them in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, iv. 5, 7, 2: *Aṣṭau Vasavaḥ ekūdaśa Rudrāḥ dvādaśa Ādityūḥ ime eva dyāvā-prthivī trayastriṁśau | trayastriṁśad vai devūḥ Prajāpatiḥ chatustriṁśaḥ |* "There are eight Vasus, eleven Rudras, twelve Ādityas, and these two, heaven and earth are the [thirty-second and] thirty-third. There are thirty-three gods, and Prajāpati is the thirty-fourth."

iṣṭākā bhavati mṛicchoha āpascha | 4. *Tad etāḥ vai asya tāḥ pancha martyāḥ tanvaḥ āsan loma tvaṇ māṁsam asthi majjā attha etāḥ amṛitāḥ mano vāk prāṇāś chakakūḥ śrotram* | 6. *Te devāḥ abruvann 'amṛitam imañ karavāma' iti | tasya etābhyām amṛitābhyāñ tanūbhyām etam martyām tanūm parigrihya amṛitām akurvann ityādi* | 7. *tato vai Prajāpatir amṛito 'bhavat* . . . | . . .

x. 1, 4, 1.—*Ubhayañ ha etad agre Prajāpatir āsa martyāñ chaiva amṛitancha | tasya prāṇāḥ eva amṛitāḥ āsuḥ śarīrañ martyam | sa etena karmaṇā etayā avṛitā ekadhā 'jaram, amṛitam ātmānam akuruta* |

“Prajāpati produced creatures. From his upper breaths he formed the gods, and from his lower breaths mortal creatures. After the creatures he created Death the devourer. 2. Of this Prajāpati, half was mortal, and half immortal. With that part of him which was mortal, he was afraid of Death.⁶⁷ Fearing, he entered this [earth], having become two things, earth and water. 3. Death said to the gods, ‘what has become of him who created us?’ [They answered], ‘fearing you, he has entered this earth.’ Death said, ‘let us search for, and collect him. I will not kill him.’ The gods then collected him on this [earth]. The part of him which was in the waters, they collected those waters, and the part which was in this [earth], they [collected] that earth. Having collected both of these, the earth and the waters, they made a brick. Hence these two things make a brick, viz. earth and water. 4. Then these five parts of him were mortal, hair, skin, flesh, bone, and marrow; and these immortal, mind, voice, breath, eye, ear. . . . 6. The gods said, ‘let us make him immortal.’ So [saying], having surrounded this mortal part with these immortal parts, they made it immortal thence Prajāpati became immortal”

x. 1, 4, 1.—“Prajāpati was formerly both of these two things, mortal and immortal. His breaths were immortal, and his body mortal. By this rite, by this ceremonial, he made himself uniformly undecaying and immortal.”

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa x. 4, 49 1: *Prajāpatiñ vai prajāḥ sṛjyamānam pūpmā mṛityur abhiparijaghāna | sa tapo 'tapyata sahasrañ saṁvatsarān pūpmānañ vijihāsann ityādi* | “Misery, death, smote Prajāpati when

⁶⁷ Comp. Tsitt. Sanh. ii. 3, 2, 1. *Devūḥ vai mṛityor abībhayūḥ, te Prajāpatim upādhāvan* | “The gods were afraid of Death: they hastened to Prajāpati,” etc. See also S’atap. Br. x. 4, 2, 2, quoted in the first volume of this work, p. 69.

he was creating living beings. He performed austerity for a thousand years, to get free from misery." See the passages to a similar effect, quoted in the first volume of this work, pp. 68 ff., and Śatap. Br. xi. 4, 3, 1 ff., quoted in the fifth volume, p. 349; and further the same Brāhmaṇa, iv. 6, 3, 1: *Prajāpater ha vai prajāḥ sasrijñāsya parvāni visasraṃsuḥ*: "As Prajāpati was creating living beings, his joints became relaxed," etc.

The next extracts tell how the gods acquired immortality; and the first of them also informs us of a means whereby men may become immortal, after the decay of their bodies.⁸⁸

Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, x. 4, 3, 1 ff. (p. 787): *Esha vai mṛityur yat saṃvatsaraḥ | Esha hi martyānām aho-rātrābhyām āyuh kṣhinoty alha mriyante tasmād esha eva mṛīyuh | sa yo ha etam mṛityuṃ saṃvatsaram veda na ha asya esha purā jaraso 'ho-rātrābhyām āyuh kṣhinoti sarvaṃ ha eva āyur eti | 2. Esha eva antakaḥ | esha hi martyānām aho-rātrābhyām āyusho 'ntam gachhati' alha mriyante | tasmād esha eva antakaḥ | sa yo ha etam antakaṃ mṛityuṃ saṃvatsaram veda na ha asya esha purā jaraso 'ho-rātrābhyām āyusho 'ntam gachhati sarvaṃ ha eva āyur eti | 3. Te devāḥ etasmād antakād mṛityoḥ saṃvatsarāt Prajāpater bibhayān-chakrur 'yad vai no 'yam aho-rātrābhyām āyusho 'ntam na gachhed' iti | 4. Te etān yajnakratūṃs tenire 'gnihotraṃ darśa-pūṇamāsau chāturmāsyaṇi paśubandhaṃ saumyam adhvaram | te etair yajna-kratubhir yajamānāḥ na amṛitatvam ānasire | 5. Te ha apy Agniṃ chikyire | te 'parimitāḥ eva parisṛitāḥ upadadhur aparimitāḥ yajushmatir aparimitāḥ lokamprīṇāḥ yathā idam apy etarhy eke upadadhati iti devāḥ akurvann iti te ha na eva amṛitatvam ānasire | 6. Te 'rchantaḥ śrāmyantaś cherur amṛitatvam avarurutsamānāḥ | tān ha Prajāpatir uvācha 'na vai me sarvāni rūpāṇy upadhattha ati vā eva rechayatha na vā 'bhyūpayatha tasmād na amṛitāḥ bhavatha' iti | 7. Te ha ūcuh | 'tebhyo vai nas tvam eva tad brūhi yathā te sarvāni rūpāṇy upadadhāma' iti | 8. Sa ha uvācha shashṭīm cha trīṇi cha śatāni parisṛitāḥ upadhattha shashṭīm cha, trīṇi cha śatāni yajushmatir adhi shaṭ-trīṃśatam alha lokamprīṇāḥ dāsa*

⁸⁸ Comp. Śatap. Br. ix. 5, 1, 1 ff., quoted in the first volume of this work, p. 14, note; and the same Brāhmaṇa ix. 3, 3, 2. In Śatap. Br. x. 3, 5, 13, happiness, or gladness, is said to be the soul or essence of all the gods (*ānandātmano ha eva sarve devāḥ*).

⁸⁹ *Gachhati*=*gamayati* | Comm.

cha sahasrāṇy aṣṭau cha śatāṇy upadhātā atha me sarvāṇi rūpāṇy upadāsyatha atha amṛitāḥ bhaviṣhyatha' iti | te ha tathā devāḥ upadadhus tato devāḥ amṛitāḥ āsuh | 9. *Sa mṛityur devān abravīd 'ittham eva sarve manushyāḥ amṛitāḥ bhaviṣhyanty atha ko mahyam bhāgo bhaviṣhyati' iti | te ha āchur 'na ato 'pargh kaśchana saha śarireṇa amṛito 'sad yadā eva tvam etam bhāgam harāṣai | atha vyāvṛitya śarireṇa [śarīram viḥāya, Comm.] amṛito 'śud yo 'mṛito 'sad vidyayā vā karmaṇā vā' iti | yad vai tad abruvan 'vidyayā vā karmaṇā vā' ity eśhā ha eva sū vidyā yad Agnir etad u ha eva tat karma yad Agniḥ |* 10. *Te ye evam etad vidur ye vā etat karma kurvate mṛitvā punaḥ sambhavanti | te sambhavantaḥ eva amṛitatvam abhi sambhavanti | atha ye evaṁ na vidur ye vā etat karma na kurvate mṛitvā punaḥ sambhavanti te elasya eva annam punaḥ punar bhavanti |*

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, p. 787.—“It is this year which is death; for it wears away the life of mortals by days and nights, and then they die; wherefore it is it which is death. Whoso knows this death [which is] the year,—it does not wear away his life by days and nights before [the time of] his decay: he lives through his whole life. 2. This [the year] is the ender; for it by days and nights brings on the end of the life of mortals, and then they die: hence it is the ender. Whosoever knows this ender, death, the year, it does not by days and nights bring on the end of his life, before his decay: he lives through his whole life. 3. The gods were afraid of this ender, death, the year [which is] Prajāpati, ‘lest he should by days and nights bring on the end of our life.’ 4. They performed these rites of sacrifice, viz. the agnihotra, the darśa and pūrnamāsa, the chāturmāsya (oblations offered at intervals of four months), the paśubandha, and the saumya adhvara: but sacrificing with these rites they did not attain immortality. 5. They moreover kindled sacrificial fires; they celebrated pariśrīts, yajushmatīs, lokam-prīṇās, without definite measure, as some even now¹⁰⁰ celebrate them. So did the gods, but they did not attain immortality. 6. They went on worshipping and toiling, seeking to acquire immortality. Prajāpati said to them, ‘Ye do not celebrate all my forms; ye either carry them to excess, or ye do not fully carry them out; hence ye do not become

¹⁰⁰ This seems to be a polemical hit aimed by the author of the Brāhmaṇa at some contemporaries who followed a different ritual from himself.

immortal.' 7. They said, 'Tell us how we may celebrate all thy forms.' 8. He said, 'Perform 63 hundred parīśrīts, 63 hundred and 36 yājush-mātis, and 10 thousand 8 hundred lokamprīnās: ye shall then celebrate all my forms, and shall become immortal.' The gods celebrated accordingly, and then they became immortal. 9. Death said to the gods, 'In the same way all men will become immortal, and then what portion shall remain to me?' They said, 'No other person shall henceforward become immortal with his body, when thou shalt seize this portion [the body]: then every one who is to become immortal through knowledge or work, shall become immortal after parting with his body.' This which they said, 'through knowledge or work,' this is that knowledge which is Agni, that work which is Agni. 10. Those who so know this, or those who perform this work, are born again after death; and from the fact of being born, they are born for immortality. And those who do not so know, or those who do not perform this work, and are born again after death, become again and again his (death's) food."

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. i. 2, 12.—*Martyāḥ ha vai agre devāḥ āsuh | sa yadū eva te saṁvatsaram āpur atha amṛitāḥ āsuh | sarvaṁ vai saṁvatsarah | sarvaṁ vai akshayyam | etena u ha asya akshayyaṁ sukṛitam bhavaty akshayyo lokah* | "The gods were originally mortal.¹⁰¹ When they obtained the year, they became immortal. The year is all: all is undecaying: by it a man obtains undecaying welfare, an undecaying world."

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. 2, 3, 6.—*Martyāḥ ha vai agre devāḥ āsuh | sa yadū eva te Brahmanā pur (vyūptāḥ, Comm.) atha amṛitāḥ āsuh* | "The gods were originally mortal. When they were pervaded by Brahma, they became immortal" (see the context of this passage in the fifth vol. of this work, p. 388). Comp. Taitt. Br., iii. 10, 9, 1, quoted in the first vol. of this work, p. 71.

The following story describes how the gods became distinguished from, and superior to, the Asuras. Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, ix. 5, 1, 12 ff. (p. 741).—*Devāścha Asurāścha ubhaye prajāpatyāḥ Prajāpateḥ pitur*

¹⁰¹ See Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, ii. 2, 2, 8, quoted in the second volume of this work, p. 388, note 36, for another legend on this same subject, in which the gods are said to have become immortal by another means.

*dāyam*¹⁰² *upeyur vācham, eva satyān, ite satyanohaiva anṛitanoha | te ubhaye eva satyam avadann ubhaye 'nṛitam | te ha sadṛisāṁ vadantaḥ sadṛisāḥ eva āsuh | 13. To devāḥ uterijya anṛitaṁ satyam anvālebbhire | asurāḥ u ha uterijya satyam anṛitam anvālebbhire | 14. Tad ha idam satyam ikshānchakre yad asureshv āsa 'devāḥ vai uterijya anṛitaṁ satyam anvālepeata hanta tad ayāni' iti jād devān ājagāma | 15. Anṛitam u ha ikshānchakre yad deveshv āsa 'asurāḥ vai uterijya satyam anṛitam anvālepeata hanta tad ayāni' iti tad asurān ājagāma | 16. To devāḥ sarvaṁ satyam avadan sarvam asurāḥ anṛitam | te devā āsakti¹⁰³ satyaṁ vadantaḥ aishāvīratarāḥ iva āsur anāḍhyatarāḥ iva | tasmād u ha etad yaḥ āsakti satyaṁ vadaty aishāvīratarāḥ iva eva bhavaty anāḍhyatarāḥ iva | sa ha tv eva antato bhavati¹⁰⁴ devaḥ hy evāntato 'bhavan | 17. Atha ha asurāḥ āsakti anṛitaṁ vadantaḥ ūshaḥ iva pipisur¹⁰⁵ āḍhyaḥ iva āsuh | tasmād u ha etad yaḥ āsakti anṛitaṁ vadaty ūshaḥ iva eva pisaty āḍhyaḥ iva bhavati parā ha tv eva antato bhavati parā hy asurāḥ abhavan | tad yat tat satyaṁ trayī sū vidyā | te devāḥ abruvan 'yajnam kṛtvā idam satyaṁ tanavāmhai' | 27. Teshu preteshu tṛitiya-savanam atavata | tat samasthūpayan | yat samasthūpayāṁs tat sarvaṁ satyam āpnuvāṁs tato 'surāḥ apapupruvire | tato devāḥ abhavan parā 'surāḥ | bhavaty ātmanā parā 'sya dvishan bhrūtrivyo bhavati yaḥ evaṁ veda |*

"The gods and Asuras, both descendants of Prajāpati,¹⁰⁶ obtained their father Prajāpati's inheritance, speech, true and false, both truth

¹⁰² Compare S'atap. Br., i. 7, 2, 22.

¹⁰³ *Āsakti satyam | kevalam satyam |* Comm.

¹⁰⁴ Some such preposition as *adhi* might appear to be wanted here; but Dr. Aufrecht suggests to me that *bhavati* may be taken in a pregnant sense as meaning, "he really exists, continues, or prevails." Compare the words at the close of the 27th paragraph of this passage.

¹⁰⁵ I am indebted to Dr. Aufrecht for pointing out to me another passage of the S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa where the word *pisaty* occurs, and which throws light on the one before us. The passage in question occurs in pp. 71, 72, of the Brāhmaṇa, i. 7, 3, 18. *Pesukam vai vāstu pisatyati ha prajāyā pasubhir yasya evaṁ viduḥśo 'nush-tubhau bhavataḥ |* "His house becomes flourishing, he increases in progeny and cattle,—that man who, when he knows this, has the two *anush-tubhs*." The commentator explains the word *pesukam* as equal to *abhiwardhana-śīlam*, "whose nature is to increase," and *pisatyati* as meaning *atīvridhho bhavati*, "he becomes exceedingly augmented."

¹⁰⁶ Comp. Taitt. Br. i. 4, 1, 1. *Ubhaye vai ete Prajāpater adhy asṛijyanta devāś cha asurāś cha | tān na vyajānād "ime anye ime anye" iti |* "Gods and Asuras were both created from Prajāpati. He could not distinguish the one as different from the other."

and falsehood. They both spoke truth, and both [spoke] falsehood. Speaking alike, they were alike. 13. Then the gods, abandoning falsehood, adopted truth; while the Asuras, abandoning truth, adopted falsehood. 14. The truth which had been in the Asuras perceived this, 'the gods, abandoning falsehood, have adopted truth; let me go to it.' So [saying, truth] came to the gods. 15. Then the falsehood which had been in the gods perceived, 'the Asuras, abandoning truth, have adopted falsehood; let me go to it.' So [saying, falsehood] came to the Asuras. 16. The gods [then] spoke entirely truth, and the Asuras entirely falsehood. Speaking truth exclusively (or devotedly), the gods became, as it were, weaker, and, as it were, poorer. Hence it happens that the man who speaks exclusively truth becomes, as it were, weaker and poorer; but in the end he becomes [prosperous], for the gods became so in the end. 17. Then the Asuras, speaking exclusively falsehood, increased like saline earth, and became, as it were, rich. Hence it happens that he who speaks exclusively falsehood increases like saline earth, and becomes, as it were, rich; but succumbs in the end, for the Asuras succumbed. That which is truth is the triple science (the three Vedas). Then the gods said, 'Let us, after performing sacrifice, celebrate this truth.' The gods then performed a variety of sacrifices, which were always interrupted by the arrival of the Asuras. At length, 27. "When these had gone, they celebrated the third Savana, and accomplished it. Inasmuch as they accomplished it, they found it entirely true. Then the Asuras went away, and the gods became [superior, while] the Asuras were worsted. The man who knows this becomes in his own person superior, and his hater, his enemy, is defeated."

Another story relates to the same subject, Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, v. i. 1, 1 (=xi. 1, 8, 1 f.): *Devās cha vai Asurās cha ubhaye prajāpatyāḥ paspridhire | tato 'surāḥ atimānena eva "kasmin nu vayam juhuyāma" iti śvesho eva āsyeshu juhvatas cheruḥ | te 'timānena eva parābābhūvūḥ | tasmād na atimanyeta | parābhavasya hy etad mukhaṁ yad abhīmānaḥ |* 2. *Atha devāḥ anyo 'nyasmin juhvatas cheruḥ | tebhyāḥ Prajāpatiḥ ātmānam pradadau | yajno ha eṣāṁ āsa yajno hi devānāṁ annam |* "The gods and Asuras, both of them the offspring of Prajāpati, strove together. Then the Asuras, asking themselves to whom they should offer their oblations, through presumption went on placing them in

their own mouths;¹⁰⁷ and in consequence of this their presumption they were overcome. Wherefore let no one be presumptuous; for presumption leads to defeat. 2. The gods went on offering their oblations to one another. Prajāpati gave himself to them; sacrifice became theirs; for sacrifice supplies the food of the gods."¹⁰⁸

The following is from the Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, iii. 2, 9, 6 f. : *Asurā-nām vai iyam agre āsīt | yāvad āsīnaḥ parāpaśyati tāvad devānām | te devūḥ abruvan "astv eva no 'yam api" iti "kyaṁ no dāsyatha" iti | "yāvad vwayam parigrihṇītha" iti* | "This [earth] formerly belonged to the Asuras. The gods had only as much as any one can see while sitting. The gods said to them, 'Let us also have a share in it. What will you give us?' 'As much as you yourselves can encompass.'" The different classes of gods then encompassed it on four sides.¹⁰⁹

The next legend explains how inequality was introduced among the gods. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, iv. 5, 4, 1 (p. 397 f.).—*Sarve ha vai devāḥ agre sadriśūḥ āsuh sarve punyūḥ | teshām sarveshām sadriśānām sarveshām punyānām trayo 'kāmayanta 'atishṭhāvānaḥ syāma' ity Agnir Indraḥ Sūryaḥ | 2. Te 'rchantaḥ śrāmyantaś cheruḥ | te etūn atigrāhyān dadriśus tūn atyagrihṇata | tad yad enān atyagrihṇata tasmād atigrāhyān nāma | te 'tishṭhāvāno 'bhavan | yathā te etad atishṭhā iva atishṭhā iva ha vai bhavati yasya evaṁ vidushaḥ etān grahūn grihṇanti | 3. No ha vai idam agre 'gnau varchaḥ āsa yad idam asmin varchaḥ | so 'kāmayata 'idam mayi varchaḥ syād' iti | sa etān graham apaśyat tam agrihṇīta tato 'sminn etad varchaḥ āsa | 4. No ha vai idam agre Indre ojaḥ āsa yad idam asmin ojaḥ | so 'kāmayata 'idam mayy ojaḥ syād' iti | sa etān graham apaśyat tam agrihṇīta tato 'sminn etad ojaḥ āsa | 5. No ha vai idam agre sūrye bhrūjaḥ āsa yad idam asmin bhrūjaḥ | so 'kāmayata 'idam mayi bhrūjaḥ syād' iti | sa etān graham apaśyat tam agrihṇīta tato 'sminn etad bhrūjaḥ āsa | etāni ha vai tejāmsy etāni vīryāny ātman dhatte yasya evaṁ vidushaḥ etān grahūn grihṇanti |*

"Originally the gods were all alike, all pure. Of them, being all alike, all pure, three desired: 'May we become superior,' viz. Agni, Indra, and Sūrya (the sun). 2. They went on worshipping and toiling.

¹⁰⁷ Comp. the words *ye adhi śruptāv ajuhvata*, R. V. i. 51, 6; and Sāyana's comment thereon.

¹⁰⁸ Comp. Śatap. Br. xi. 3, 2, 1: *Sarveshām vai eṣa bhūtānām sarveshām devānām ātmā yad yajnaḥ* | "Sacrifice is the soul of all beings, of all the gods."

¹⁰⁹ Comp. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 6, 2, 11; vi. 6, 3, 2; xi. 2, 7, 26.

They saw these atigrāhyas;¹¹⁰ they offered them over and above. Because they did so, these draughts (or cups) were called atigrāhyas. They became superior. As they [became] thus, as it were, superior, so superiority is, as it were, acquired by the man, of whom, when he knows this, they receive these grahas (draughts, or cups). 3. Originally there was not in Agni the same flame, as this flame which is [now] in him. He desired: 'May this flame be in me.' He saw this graha, he took it; and hence there became this flame in him. 4. Originally there was not in Indra the same vigour, etc., etc. [as in para. 3]. 5. Originally there was not in Sūrya the same lustre, etc., etc. [the same as in para. 3]. That man has in himself these forces, these energies, of whom, when he knows this, they receive these grahas."

¹¹⁰ By this name are called "three particular grahas, or sacrificial vessels, with which libations were made in the Jyotishṭoma sacrifice to Agni, Indra, and Sūrya." Prof. Goldstucker's Dict. The word is explained by Böhtlingk and Roth, as meaning "*haustus insuper haurendus*," a draught to be drunk over and above; the designation of three fillings of the cup, which are drawn at the Soma offering.

CHAPTER II.,

VISHṆU, AS REPRESENTED IN THE VEDIC HYMNS, THE
BRAHMAṆAS, THE ITIHĀSAS, AND THE PURĀNAS.SECT. I.—*Passages in the Hymns of the R̥ig-veda relating to Viṣṇu.*

R. V. i. 22, 16 ff. : 16 (=S. V. 2, 1024). *Āto dēvāḥ avantu no yato Viṣṇur vichakrame | prithivyāḥ sapta dhāmabhiḥ* | 17 (=S. V. i. 222; Vāj. S. 5, 15; A. V. 7, 26, 4). *Idaṁ Viṣṇur vichakrame tredhā nidadhe padam | samūlham asya pāṁsure* [*pāṁsule* | S. V.] 18 (=S. V. 2, 1020; Vāj. S. 34, 43; A. V. 7, 26, 5). *Trīṇi padā vichakrame Viṣṇur gopāḥ adūbhyah | ato dharmāni dhārayan* | 19 (=S. V. 2, 1021; Vāj. S. 6, 4; A. V. 7, 26, 6). *Viṣṇoḥ karmāni paśyata yato vralūni paspaśe | Indrasya yuyah¹ sakhā* | 20 (=S. V. 2, 1022; Vāj. S. 6, 5; A. V. 7, 26, 7). *Tad Viṣṇoḥ paramam padaṁ sadā paśyanti sūrayah | divivi chakshur ātatam* | 21 (=S. V. 2, 1023; Vāj. S. 34, 44). *Tad viprāso vipanyavo jāgrivāṁsah samindhato | Viṣṇor yat paramam padam* |

16. "May the gods preserve us from the place from which Viṣṇu strode² over the seven regions of the earth."³ 17. Viṣṇu strode over this [universe]; in three places he planted his step: [the world, or

¹ *Yuyō vā sakhā vā*, R. V. ii. 28, 10; *yuy*, i. 10, 9; *yuyūya*, ix. 66, 18.

² Mbh. S'ānti-Parva, v. 13171: *Kramaṇāch chāpy aham Pārtha Viṣṇur ity abhisaṁjñitah* | "And from striding, O son of Prithā, I am called Viṣṇu." The A. V. ix. 6, 29, speaks of the steps of Prajāpati being imitated by his worshipper (*Prajāpater vai eṣha vikramān anuvikramate yah upaharati*).

³ Instead of the words *prithivyāḥ sapta dhāmabhiḥ*, the Sāma-veda reads, *prithivyāḥ aśhi sūnavi*: "over the surface of the earth." This verse, as well as the following ones, is rendered by Professor Benfey, in his translation of the Sāma-veda, as well as in his "Orient und Occident," i. 30. He understands the place from which Viṣṇu strides to be the sun, referring to verse 20. For the sense given by Sayana to this and the following verses, see Wilson's translation of the R̥ig-veda and notes *in loco*. Compare also Rosen's Latin version.

his step, was] enveloped in his dust.⁴ 18. Vishṇu, the unconquerable⁵ preserver, strode three steps, thereby maintaining fixed ordinances. 19. Behold the acts of Vishṇu, through which this intimate friend of Indra perceived⁶ established laws. 20. Sages constantly behold that highest position of Vishṇu, like an eye fixed in the sky. 21. Wise men, singing praises, and ever wakeful, light up⁷ [by the power of their hymns?] that which is the highest station of Vishṇu."

The 17th verse of this hymn is quoted in the Nirukta, xii. 19;⁸ where we have the following explanations of its purport, derived by Yāska from two older writers:—

Yad idam kincha tad vikramate Viṣṇuḥ | tridhā nidhatte padam |
'tredhā-bhāvāya prithivyām antarikṣhe divi' iti Śākapiṇiḥ | 'sam-
rohāne viṣṇupade gayasirasi' ity Aurnavābhāḥ | 'samūḍham asya pāṁ-
sure' | pyāyane 'ntarikṣhe padaṁ na dṛśyate | apivā upamārthe syāt |
samūḍham asya pāṁsure iva padaṁ na dṛśyate ityādi |

"Vishṇu strides over this, whatever exists. He plants his step in a three-fold manner,—i.e. 'for a three-fold existence, on earth, in the atmosphere, and in the sky,' according to Śākapiṇi; or, 'on the hill where he rises, on the meridian, and on the hill where he sets,' according to Aurnavābhā. 'Samūḍham asya pāṁsure,' i.e. his step is

⁴ According to Benfey, translation of S. V., p. 223, note, this phrase, the world is veiled in Vishṇu's dust, means, it is subjected to him. In his "Orient und Occident," he explains it thus: "he is so mighty that the dust which his tread raises, fills the whole earth." Can this dust be understood of the dazzling brightness of the sun's rays, surrounding his progress, and obscuring his disc from the view of the observer? The prophet Nahum says, i. 3, "The Lord hath his way in the whirlwind and in the storm, and the clouds are the dust of his feet."

⁵ *Adābhya* may also mean "who cannot be deceived." The idea of Vishṇu being pre-eminently the preserver of the universe, which became current in later times, may possibly have been derived from this verse.

⁶ *Sāyana* gives to the root *spas* the sense of "hindering," or "touching." Benfey, in his S. V., renders *paspasē* by "received," and, in the "Orient und Occident," by "firmly fixed." The sense, he says, is this: "Look to the sun, where the terminus lies from which Vishṇu started (verses 16, 21), and in which all the powers which work in nature have their source." Roth, in his Illustrations of the Nirukta, pp. 138 f., thinks that the sense of "beholding" is suitable in all the texts where forms of the root *spas* occur in the R. V.

⁷ Benfey renders *saminidhate* "glorify." The commentator on the Vāj. S. 34, 44, makes it *dīpayante* = *upāsate*. Roth, under the word, explains "they kindle [Agni?] when Vishṇu is in his highest position."

⁸ Formerly cited in part in the second volume of this work.

not seen in that prolific region, the atmosphere (*pyāyane antarikṣhe*): or the phrase may be metaphorical, 'enveloped in his dust, as it were, his step is not seen,' etc.

The following is the comment of Durgāchārya⁹ on this passage of the Nirukta:

Vishṇur Ādityaḥ | Katham iti yataḥ āha 'tredhū nidadhe padam' nidhatte padaṁ nidhānam padaiḥ | kva tat tāvat | 'prithivyām antarikṣhe divi' iti Śākāpūṇiḥ | pāṛthivo 'gnir bhūtvā prithivyām yat kinchid asti tad vikramate tad adhiṣṭiṣṭhati | antārikṣhe vaidyutātmanā | divi suryātmanā | yad uktam 'tam ū akrinṣan tredhū bhuve kam' (R. V. x. 88, 10) iti | 'samārohaṇe' udaya-girāv udyan padam ekaṁ nidhatte | 'vishṇu-pade' madhyandine 'ntarikṣhe | 'gayasirasy' astāṅgirāv ity Aurnavābhāḥ āchārya manyate |

"Vishṇu is the sun [Āditya].¹⁰ How so? Because [the hymn] says, 'in three places he planted his step'; i.e. plants his step, [makes] a planting with his steps. Where, then, is this done? 'On the earth, in the firmament, and in the sky,' according to Śākāpūṇi. Becoming terrestrial fire, he strides over,—abides in, whatever there is, on earth; in the shape of lightning, in the firmament; and in the form of the sun, in the sky. As it is said (in the R. V. x. 88, 10), 'They made him to become threefold.' Aurnavābhā Āchārya thinks [the meaning is] this, 'He plants one foot on the 'samārohaṇa' (place of rising), when mounting over the hill of ascension; [another] on the 'vishṇu-pada,' the meridian sky; [a third] on the 'gayasiras,' the hill of setting."¹¹

It thus appears from the statement of Yāska that the two old writers whom he quotes had proposed two different interpretations of Vishṇu's steps.

First: Śākāpūṇi thought that the triple manifestation of the god, in the form of fire on earth, of lightning in the atmosphere, and of the solar light in the sky, was intended in the hymn. This threefold distribution of divine agency is thus referred to in another interesting passage of the Nirukta, vii. 5:

⁹ Already quoted in the second volume of this work.

¹⁰ The Atharvaveda, v. 26, 7 has the following reference to Vishṇu: *Vishṇur yunaktu bahudhā tapāmsi asmīn yajne suyujaḥ svāhā |*

¹¹ See Appendix B.

Tisraḥ eva devatāḥ iti 'Nairuktāḥ Agniḥ prithivī-sthāno Vāyur vā Indro vā 'ntariksha-sthānaḥ Sūryo dyu-sthānqḥ | tūśm mahābhāgyād ekaiḥkasyāḥ api bahūni nāmadheyāni bhavanti | api vā karma-prithaktvād yathā hotā 'dhvanyur brahmā udgātā ity apy ekasya sataḥ | api vā prithag eva syuḥ | prithag hi stutayo bhavanti tathā 'bhīdhānāni ityādi |

"There are only three deities, according to the Nairuktas (etymologists), Agni, whose place is on earth, Vāyu, or Indra, whose place is in the atmosphere, and Sūrya, whose place is in the sky. These [deities] each receive many designations, in consequence of their greatness,¹² or from the diversity of their functions, as [the appellations of] hotṛi, adhvaryu, brahman, and udgātṛi are applied to one and the same person. Or [the gods in question] may all be distinct, for distinct hymns and appellations are addressed to them," etc.¹³

According to Śākapūni, therefore, Viṣṇu would be the god who is manifested in a three-fold form on earth, in the atmosphere, and in the sky.

Secondly: Aurṇavābha interprets the passage differently. He understands the three steps of Viṣṇu, not of fire, lightning, and solar light, but of the different positions of the sun at his rising, his culmination, and his setting.¹⁴ According to him, therefore, Viṣṇu is simply the sun.

Sāyana (see Professor Wilson's translation, p. 53, note) understands this passage as referring to the three steps of Viṣṇu in his "Dwarf incarnation," of which I shall supply details further on. The commentator on the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā annotates thus on 5, 15 (=verse 17 of the hymn before us):

Viṣṇus trivikramāvatāraṁ kṛtvā idam viśvaṁ vichakrame vibhajya kramate sma | tad eva āhu | tredhā padam nidadhe bhūmāv ekam padam

¹² Καὶ ταῖα πολλῶν ὀνομάτων μορφή μιν, Æschylus Prom. Vinet. v. 217.

¹³ In a previous part of this passage, vii. 4, it is said, *Mahābhāgyād devatāyāḥ ekaḥ ātmā bahudhā stūyate | ekasya ātmano 'nye devāḥ pratyangāni bhavanti* | "From the greatness of the Deity the one Soul is celebrated in many ways. The different gods are members of the one Soul," etc. Compare Mr. Colebrooke's Essays, i. 26 f.; or p. 12 f. of W. and N.'s ed. It appears from an advertisement in No. 75 of *Trübner's American and Oriental Literary Record*, that these Essays are being reprinted under the editorship of Prof. E. B. Cowell. (August, 1872.)

¹⁴ This is the view taken by Prof. Max Müller: "This stepping of Viṣṇu is emblematic of the rising, the culminating, and the setting of the sun," etc. Trans. of R. V., vol. i., p. 117.

antariṁśhe dvītiyaṁ divi trītiyaṁ iti kṛtmād Agni-Vāyu-Sūrya-rupena ity arthaḥ |

“Vishṇu, becoming incarnate as Trivikrama (the god who stepped thrice), strode over,—i.e. stepped by separate strides over,—this whole [universe]. It is this that [the *ṛishi*] expresses [in the words], ‘In three places he planted his step,’ i.e. one step on the earth, a second in the atmosphere, and a third in the sky: in the successive forms of Agni, Vāyu, and Sūrya.”

The commentator here combines the view that the Dwarf incarnation of Vishṇu is referred to in the hymn, with the conception that his different steps on the earth, in the atmosphere, and in the sky, were taken in the successive characters of Agni, Vāyu, and Sūrya, which is the interpretation of Śākapūṇi, as explained by Durga. There is no trace in the words either of Śākapūṇi, or of Aurnavābha, as handed down by Yāska, of any allusion to such a Trivikrama incarnation of Vishṇu.¹⁵

I proceed to quote in order from the Rig-veda further texts relative to Vishṇu.

R. V. i. 61, 7: *Asyed u mātuh savaneshu sadyo mahaḥ pitum papirān chāru annā | mushūyad Vishnuḥ pachataṁ sahīyān vidhyad varāhaṁ tira adrim astā*—“Having at the libations of that great measurer [of the worlds, i.e. Indra], drunk the potion, and [eaten] the pleasant oblations, the impetuous Vishṇu straightway stole the cooked mess, pierced the boar and shot through the mountain.” See R. V. viii. 66, 10, below, and the quotation from Śāyaṇa’s note on that verse.

¹⁵ The Brāhmaṇas, as well as the hymns, contain frequent allusions to the three steps or stations of Vishṇu. See the Śātap. Br. vi. 7, 4, 7 ff.; Taitt. Sanh. i. 7, 5, 4. The Vājasaneyi Sanhitā has the following additional reference to them. According to the commentator, the interlocutors in the two verses are the brahman and udgātṛ, priests. Vāj. Sanh., xxiii. 49: *Prichhāmi tvā chitaye devasakha yadi tvam atra manasā jagantha | yeshu Vishṇus treshu padeshu eshṭas teshu viśvam bhuvanam āviveśa |* 50 *| Api teshu trishu padeshu asmi yeshu viśvam bhuvanam āviveśa | sadyaḥ paryeyi prithivīm uta dyām ekenāngena divo asya prishṭham |* “I ask thee, friend of the gods, that I may know, if thou by thy mind hast reached so far,—did Vishṇu, in the three steps (or spheres) in which he is worshipped, pervade the entire universe? | 50. I am even in those three steps by which he pervaded the entire universe. Straightway I move around the earth and heaven; with one member, (I move) over the surface of this sky.”

R. V. i. 85, 7: *Te avardhanta eva-tavast mahitvanā ā nākaṁ śasthur uru chakriro sadah | Vishṇur yad ha evad vṛiṣaṇam mada-chyutaṁ vayo na sīdann adhi barhiṣi priye |*

"They (the Maruts), strong in themselves, increased in greatness. They ascended to heaven, and have made [for themselves] a spacious abode. When Vishṇu assisted the hero [Indra?] who humbles pride,¹⁶ they sat down like birds on the sacrificial grass which they love."

R. V. i. 90, 5, 9.—*Ūta no dhiyo go-agrōḥ Pūshan Vishṇo eva-yāvaḥ | karta naḥ svastimataḥ | 9. śaṁ no 'Mitraḥ śam Varuṇaḥ śaṁ no bhavatu Aryamā | śaṁ naḥ Indro Bṛihaspatiḥ śaṁ no Vishṇur urukramaḥ |*

5. "Pūshan, Vishṇu, swift goer, make our prayers to bring us cattle and other possessions: make us prosperous. . . . 9. May Mitra, may Varuṇa, may Aryaman, may Indra, may Bṛihaspati, may the wide-striding Vishṇu, all grant us prosperity."

I now come to a hymn which, with the exception of the last verse (where two gods are alluded to), is devoted exclusively to the celebration of Vishṇu's praises.

R. V. 1, 154 (=Vāj. S. 5, 18; A. V. 7, 26, 1).—*Vishṇor nu kaṁ*

¹⁶ Though the commentator *in loco* renders *mada-chyutam* by *madasya harsha-nya ūsektāram*, "dispenser of exhilaration" he interprets it in his note on R. V. i. 51, 2 — where it is an epithet of Indra—by *śati ṛṇām madasya gurvasya chyāvayitāram*, "who brings down the pride of his enemies." In R. V., viii. 1, 21, the word *mada-chyut* is again applied to Indra, and in R. V. viii. 85, 5, to his thunderbolt. [I leave my translation to stand as it was in the first edition. Benfey, however, "Orient und Occident," ii. 248, renders the clause about Vishṇu thus: "When Vishṇu protects the dropping (Soma) who distils intoxication," and refers to a paper of his own in the Gött. Gel. Anzeigen regarding the relation of Vishṇu to Soma. In Bohtlingk and Roth's Lexicon the word *madachyut*, as it is to be understood in this passage, is translated "delightful," "gladdening," "inspiring." Prof. Müller, Translation of R. V., vol. i., renders the clause, "When Vishṇu descried the enrapturing Soma." In his note, p. 116, he remarks: "Vishṇu, whose character in the hymns of the Veda is very different from that assumed by him in later periods of Hindu religion, must here be taken as the friend and companion of Indra." After quoting various texts about the two gods, he adds, "The mention of Vishṇu in our hymn is therefore by no means exceptional, but the whole purport of this verse is nevertheless very doubtful, chiefly owing to the fact that several of the words occurring in it lend themselves to different interpretations." He says, p. 118, that "bringing down pride" is a meaning which the word *madachyut* clearly has not in the Veda. When applied to the thunderbolt, he says it ought to be rendered "wildly rushing down"; and when referred to Indra, his horses, or the Āsṛins, or to horses in general, he would translate it by "furiously or wildly moving about."]

*vīryāṅi pravocchaṃ*¹⁷ | *yaḥ pāṛthivāni vimame rajāṃsi* | *yo askabhāyad uttarāṃ sadhasthāṃ viśhākramāṇas tredhā urugāyaḥ* | 2. (= A. V. 7, 26, 2, 3; Nir. 1, 20): *Pra tad Viṣṇuḥ stavate vīryeṇa mṛigo na bhīmaḥ kucharo girishthāḥ*¹⁸ | *yasyorushu trishu vikramaṇeshu adhikakṣiyanti bhuvanāni viśvā* | 3. *Pra Viṣṇave śūsham etu manīma girikṣute urugāyā*¹⁹ | *vṛiṣṇe* | *yaḥ idaṃ dirgham prayataṃ sadhastham eko vimame tribhir it padebhīḥ* | 4. *Yasya tri pūrṇā madhunā padāni akṣāyamānā svadhayā madanti* | *yaḥ u tridhātu prithivīm uta dyām eko dādāra bhuvanāni viśvā* | 5. *Tad asya priyam abhi pāthā* (R. V. iii. 55, 10) *asyām naro yatra devayaro madanti* | *urukramasya sa hi bandhur itthā Viṣṇoḥ pade parama madhvaḥ utsaḥ* | 6. (Vāj. S. 6, 3; Nir. 2, 7): *Tā vām vāstūni uśmasi gamadhyai yatra gāvo bhūri-śringāḥ ayāsaḥ* | *atrāha tad urugāyasya vṛiṣṇaḥ paramam padam ara bhāti bhūri* |

"I declare the heroic deeds of Viṣṇu, who traversed the mundane regions, who established the upper sphere, striding thrice, the wide-stepping. 2. Therefore is Viṣṇu celebrated for his prowess, terrible like a wild beast, destructive, abiding in the mountains [or, clouds, if this be an epithet of the god]; he within [the range of] whose three vast paces all the worlds abide. 3. Let my inspiring hymn proceed to Viṣṇu, the dweller in the [aerial] mountains, the wide-stepping, the vigorous, who alone traversed with three steps this wide, extended firmament;—4. Whose three [steps, or] stations, replenished with

¹⁷ The same form of expression occurs in a hymn to Indra (R. V. i. 32, 1), *Indrasya viśvāni pravocchaṃ*, etc. Compare R. V., ii. 15, 1.

¹⁸ On this verse the Nirukta remarks: "*Kucharaḥ*" *iti charati karma kṛtsitam* | *atha chid devatūbbhidhānāṃ kva ayaṃ na charati iti* | *girishthāḥ girishthāyī giriḥ parvataḥ . . .* (at-prakṛti itarat sandhu-sāmānyād megha-sthāyī megho 'pi girir etusmād eva) | "*Kuchara*" is one who does (*charati*) a blamable action. If the word be a designation of the god, it will mean 'where does he not go?' '*Girishthāḥ*' means 'abiding in the mountains;' for *giri* means 'mountain.'" . . . The author then gives various etymologies of the word *parvata*, "mountain," one of which is that it is derived from *parvan*, "a joint"; and then proceeds: "From this sense is derived another (owing to the idea of joint being common to both), viz., that of 'abiding in the clouds,' for a cloud also is called *giri* for the same reason." See Roth's Illustrations of the Nirukta, p. 17. The same comparison, *mṛigo na bhīmaḥ kucharo girishthāḥ*, is applied to Indra in R. V., x. 180, 2 (= S. V., ii. 1223, and A. V. 7, 84, 3). Böhtlingk and Roth, *s. v.*, think the word *Kuchara* may signify "slowly-moving," "slinking." The word *mṛiga* is applied to Varuṇa in R. V. vii. 87, 6.

¹⁹ *Urugāyasya* = *prithu-gamanasya adhikastuter vā*.—Sāyana on R. V. iii. 6, 4. *Urugāyasya* = *mahāgateh*.—Nir. ii. 7.

honey, imperishable, gladden^{us} with food; who alone hath triply sustained the universe, the earth, and the sky, [yea] all the worlds. 5. May I attain to that beloved heaven of his, where men devoted to the gods rejoice; for (such a friend is he) there is a spring of honey in the highest abode of the wide-stepping Vishṇu. 6. We yearn to attain to those abodes of you twain, where the many-horned and swiftly-moving cows abide. Here that supreme abode of the wide-stepping, vigorous [god] shines intensely forth."

I shall quote a portion of the explanation Sāyaṇa gives of the words *pārthivāṇī rajāṁsi*, in the first verse of the preceding hymn: *Yo Viṣṇuḥ pārthivāṇī prithivī-sambandhīni rajāṁsi ranjanātmakāni kṣhity-ādi-loka-trayābhimānīny Agni-Vāyū-Āditya-rūpāni rajāṁsi viname viśeṣheṇa nirmame | atra trayo lokāḥ api prithivī-śabda-vāchyaḥ | tathā cha man-trāntaram* (R. V. i. 108, 9), 'yad Indraṅni aramasyām prithivyām madhyamasyām puramasyām uta stha' iti | Taittirīye 'pi 'yo' syām prithivyām asy āyusha' ity upakramya 'yo dvitīyasyām tṛtīyasyām prithivyām' iti | tasmāl lokatrayasya prithivī-śabda-vāchyatvam | . . . yadvā yo Viṣṇuḥ pārthivāṇī prithivī-sambandhīni rajāṁsi adhastana-sapta-lokān vimame | . . . rajaḥ-śabdo lokāḥ-vācī 'lokāḥ rajāṁsy uchyante' iti Yāskenoṭkatvāt | . . . athavā pārthivāṇī prithivī-nimittakāni rajāṁsi lokān vimame | bhūr-ādi-loka-trayam ity arthāḥ | bhūmyām upārjita-karma-bhogārthatvād itara-lokānām tat-kāraṇatvam |

"[The meaning is], Vishṇu who formed,—especially constructed,—the terrestrial [regions]; i.e., those connected with *prithivī* (the earth),—the regions (*rajāṁsi*),—the things whose nature is to delight (*ranjanātmakāni*),—existing in the form of Agni, Vāyu, and Āditya, who represent the three worlds, the earth, etc. Here all the three worlds are intended to be designated by the term *prithivī*. Thus another text [R. V. i. 108, 9] says: 'Whether, Indra and Agni, ye are in the lowest world (*prithivī*), in the middle [world], or in the highest,' etc. In the Taittirīya also, [we have the words] beginning with 'thou who with thy life art in this world,' etc.; [and proceeding] 'who in the second, or third world,' etc. Hence the three worlds are intended to be signified by the word *prithivī*. . . Or, [the meaning may be], the Vishṇu who formed the terrestrial [regions], the regions connected with the earth, the seven worlds beneath the earth. The term *rajas* denotes a world, since Yāska says 'worlds are called *rajāṁsi*.' . . . Or [the

sense may be], he made the terrestrial regions, the worlds caused by the earth, i.e. the three worlds, the earth and the others. For as the other worlds are destined to be enjoyed as the rewards of merit acquired on earth, the latter is the cause of the former."

The following is the passage of the Nirukta, iv. 19, referred to by Sāyaṇa, which gives the meanings of *rajas*: *Rajo rajateḥ | jyotiḥ rajaḥ uchyate | udakam rajaḥ uchyate | lokāḥ rajāmsy uchyante | asrig²⁰-ahanī rajasi uchyete | 'rajāmsi chitrāḥ vicharanti tanyavaḥ' ity api nigamo bhavati |*

"*Rajas* is derived from the root *raj*. Light is called *rajas*. Water is called *rajas*. The worlds are called *rajāmsi*. [Blood and day, or] day and night, are called *rajasi*. There is also a text (R. V. v. 63, 5), 'Brilliant and resounding [the Maruts] sweep over the worlds.'"—See also Nir. x. 44, and xii. 23, and R. V. i. 90, 7.

In R. V. i. 164, 6, mention is made of six worlds (*rājāmsi*): *vi yas tastambha śal imā rajāmsi*, "who established these six worlds."

The verb *vimame* cannot, I think, have the meaning, which the commentator assigns to it, of "constructing." It occurs not only in verse 1, of the hymn before us, but in verse 3 also, where it must have the sense of "measuring," or "traversing,"²¹ as it could not fitly be said of Vishṇu that he constructed the firmament with three steps. The phrase *rajaso vimānaḥ*, "measurer of the world," occurs in R. V. x. 121, 5 (above p. 16), and in R. V. x. 139, 5, quoted in the third volume of this work, p. 260. In R. V. i. 50, 7, the participle *vimimānaḥ* seems to have the same sense: *vi dyām eshi rajas prithvī ahā mimāno aktubhiḥ | paśyan jansuṇi sūrya |* "Sun, thou traversest the sky, measuring the broad space (*rajas*), and the days, with thy rays,²² beholding created things."

The phrase *rajaso vimānaḥ* occurs also in R. V. iii. 26, 7 (= Vāj. S. 18, 66), where Agni says of himself that he is *arkas tridhātuh rajaso vimānaḥ*²³ | "the threefold light, the measurer of the world," which the commentator explains thus: *tredhā ātmānam vibhajya tatra Vāy-ātmanā rajaso 'ntarikṣhasya vimāno vimātā 'dhishtṛhāta 'smi |* "Triply

²⁰ Roth conjectures that the word *asrig* here is spurious.—Illust. of Nir., p. 46.

²¹ See Bohtlingk and Roth s. v. *mā+vi*.

²² The word *aktubhiḥ* is rendered "nights" by Yāska in his explanation of this passage, Nir. xii. 23, and by the commentator; but the latter explains the same word by *raśmibhiḥ*, "rays," in his annotation on R. V. i. 94, 5.

²³ This verse is explained in a spiritual sense in Nirukta Paṇiṣṭha ii. 1.

dividing myself, I am, in the character of Vāyu, he who abides in the atmosphere."

Compare, with the phrase before us, Habakkuk iii. 6: "He stood and measured the earth," etc.

I shall adduce one other passage R. V. v. 81, 3 (=Vāj. S. 11, 6), in which the same phrase occurs, where this function of measuring the world is ascribed to Savitṛi (the sun): *Yasya prayānam anv anye id yayur devāḥ devasya mahimānam ojasū | yaḥ pāṛthivāni vimame sa etaśo rajāṁsi devaḥ Savitā mahitrānā* | - "He, the god whose course and whose might the other gods have followed with vigour, who measured [or traversed] the terrestrial regions by his power, this god Savitṛi is a steed."

This text is quoted and commented on in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, 6, 3, 1, 18: '*Yasya prayānam anv anye id yayur*' iti | *Prājāpatir vai etad agre karma akarot | tat tato devāḥ alurvan* 'devāḥ devasya mahimānam ojasū' iti | *yajno vai mahimā | devāḥ devasya yajnaṁ vīryam* "ojasū" ity etad | '*yaḥ pāṛthivāni vimame sa etaśaḥ*' iti | *yad vai kincha asyān tat pāṛthivam tad esha sarvaṁ vimimite | rasmibhir hy enad abhyavatanoti* | '*rajāṁsi devaḥ Savitā mahitrānā*' iti | *ime vai lokāḥ rajāṁsi | asāv Adityo devaḥ Savitā | tām esha mahimnā vimimite* | "Whose course the other gods have followed.' Prajāpati formerly performed this rite. The gods afterwards did it, [according to the words] 'the gods [followed] his [display of] power with vigour.' Power means sacrifice. This, [then, is said, that] the gods [followed] the sacrifice, the energy, of the god with vigour. 'He who measured out the terrestrial [regions] is a steed.' Whatever is on this [earth] is terrestrial. All this he measures out: for he stretches over [all] this with his rays. 'The god Savitṛi [measured out] the regions by his power.' These worlds are the regions: that Aditya (sun) is the god Savitṛi. He measures them out by his power."

The author of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa introduces the words *pāṛthivāni vimame rajāṁsi*, with a part of R. V. vii. 99, 2, at the close of his account of the Dwarf incarnation of Viṣṇu, assigning to them, however (whether ignorantly, or knowingly), a different meaning from that which they have in the hymn,—Bhāg. Pur. viii. 23, 29: *Pāram mahimnāḥ uru-vikramato grīṇāno yaḥ pāṛthivāni vimame sa rajāṁsi martyaḥ | kiṁ jāyamānaḥ uta jātaḥ upaiti martyaḥ ity āha mantradṛṣṭiḥ ṛṣiḥ puru-*

śhaśya yasya | "The mortal who celebrates the utmost limits of this wide-striding (Vishṇu's) greatness, computes the [particles of the] dust of the earth. Can 'the mortal who is being born, or has been born,' attain to it? Thus speaks the ṛishi who saw a hymn regarding this Purusha."

This verse is explained by the commentator thus: *Uru bahu vikramato Vishṇor mahimnaḥ pāraṁ yo gr̥ṇāno bhavati sa martyaḥ pārthivāni rajāṁsy api viname ganitavān | yathā pārthiva-paramānu-gaṇanam aśakyam tathā Vishṇor guṇa-gaṇanam aśakyam ity arthaḥ | tathā cha manthro 'Vishṇor nu kaṁ viryān' iti | etad eva mantrāntarārthaṁ sūchayann āha yasya puruṣasya pūrṇa-mahimnaḥ pāram mantra-ḍṛig ṛishir Vasishṭhaḥ ity evam āha | katham | kiṁ jāyamāno jāto vā upaiti na ko' pi iti vadann anantatreṇa eva āha ity arthaḥ | tathā cha manthro 'na te Vishṇo jāyamāno na jāto deva mahimnaḥ param antam āpa' iti |* "The mortal who celebrates the utmost limits of the greatness of the wide-striding Vishṇu, has computed also the particles of the dust of the earth. The meaning is, as the computation of the atoms of the earth is impossible, so also the enumeration of Vishṇu's qualities is impossible. Thus a hymn (R. V. 1, 154) says: 'I declare the heroic deeds of Vishṇu,' etc. Alluding to the sense of another verse (R. V. vii. 99, 2), he says the same thing in these words: 'regarding the utmost limit of the full greatness of which Purusha, Vasishṭha, the seer of the hymn, thus speaks:' How? 'Can any man being born, or already born, attain it?' No one. By this expression he intimates its infinitude. Thus the hymn says: No one who is being born, or has been born, has attained, O divine Vishṇu, to the furthest limit of thy greatness."

The sixth verse of the hymn before us is thus commented on in the Nirukta, ii. 6, 7: *Sarve 'pi rāsmayo gāvaḥ uchryante | . . . tāni vām vāstūni kāmayaṁahe gamanūya yatra gāvo bhūri-śringāḥ . . . ayāso 'yanāḥ | tatra tad urugāyasya Vishṇor mahāgateḥ paramam padam parārḍhyastham avabhāti bhūri* | "All rays are called *gāvaḥ*." Then, after quoting the verse, the author proceeds to explain it: "We desire to attain to these regions of you two, where are the many-horned cows, . . . the moving. There the highest abode, situated in the loftiest sphere, of that wide-stepping, large-pacing, Vishṇu shines forth brightly."

The verse is rendered thus, by Roth (Illustrations of Nir., p. 19): "May we arrive at your abodes, where the many-horned, moving,

cattle are; for thence shines brilliantly down the highest place of the far-striding Showerer." Roth then proceeds to remark: "This verse occurs in a hymn to Vishṇu; consequently the dual *vām* ['of you two'] cannot refer to the doity of the hymn. Durga meets the difficulty, as the commentators frequently do with inconvenient duals, by saying *vām iti dampātī abhipretya*, etc. [*vām* refers to the husband and his wife.] But here we have rather a proof of the fact that, in the arrangement of the Veda, many verses have been inserted in wrong places. The verse is addressed to Mitra and Varuṇa; and, perhaps, belonged to one of the hymns to those two gods which immediately precede this in the Saṁhitā. The verse has been introduced into the wrong place because Vishṇu is referred to in it. Compare verse 3. The inconvenient reading has been already altered in the Vājasaneyi Saṁhitā (6, 3)," which, instead of *tā vām vāstūny uśmasi gamadhyai*, "we desire to go to these abodes of you two," etc., reads, *yā te dhāmāny uśmasi*, etc., "to which realms of thine we desire," etc., etc.

In the next hymn Indra and Vishṇu are jointly extolled:

R. V. i. 155.—*Pra raḥ pāntam*²⁴ *andhaso dhiyāyate mahe sūrāya Viṣṇave cha archata | yā sāmuni parvatānām adabhyā mahas tasthatur arvateva sādhanū | 2. Tvesham itthā samaraṇam*²⁵ *śimivator Indra-Viṣṇu suta-pāḥ vām urushyati | yā martyāya partidhīyamānam it kṛiśūnor astur asandām urushyathaḥ | 3. Tūḥ im vardhanti mahi asya pauṁsyaṁ ni mātaraḥ nayati retase bhuje | dadhāti putro araram param pitur nāma tṛitīyam adhi rochane divaḥ | 4. Tat tad id asya pauṁsyaṁ grīṇīmasi inasya trālur arikasya mīlhuṣaḥ | yaḥ pāṛthivāni tribhir id vigāmabhir uru kramish! orugāyāya jivase | 5. Dve id asya kramāṇe svardriṣo abhikhyāya martyo bhuranyati | tṛitīyam asya nakir ā dadharshati vyaśaḥ chana patayantaḥ patatrināḥ | 6. Chaturbhiḥ sākāṁ navatincha nāmabhiḥ cakram na vṛittam vyatin avīripat | bṛihaachchhu-riro vimimānaḥ rikvabhir yuvā 'kumārah prati eti āhavam |*

"Sing praises to the great hero (Indra), who desires the draught of your soma, and to Vishṇu, who both swiftly rose invincible, to the summit of the [aerial] mountains, as if [carried by] an excellent steed. 2. Indra and Vishṇu, the drinker of the libation escapes the assault, so fierce, of you two who are violent,—who avert from the [pious]

²⁴ *Pāntam* = *pānīyam*.—Nir. vii. 25.

²⁵ *Samaraṇam* s. = *sangrāma-nāma*.—Nigh. 2, 17.

mortal that which is aimed at him,—the bolt of the archer Kṛiṣānu. 3. These [libations, according to Śāyana] augment his virility; he conducts the parents (heaven and earth) to receive the fertilizing seed; the son has the inferior name; the superior belongs to the father; the third is above the light of heaven. 4. We celebrate this virility of him, the strong, the deliverer, the innoxious, the bountiful, who with three steps traversed²⁶ far and wide the mundane regions, for the sake of [granting us] a prolonged (*lit.* wide-stepping) existence.²⁷ 5. A mortal is agitated when contemplating two of the steps of this heavenly [deity]; but no one dares to attempt his third step,²⁸ not even the soaring, winged birds. 6. With four and ninety names, he has impelled his steeds, like a rolling wheel. Accoutred by his encomiasts, vast in body, the youthful, full-grown [deity], advances to the combat.”

R. V. 1, 156.—*Bhava mitro na śevyo ghrītāsutir vibhūta-dyumnaḥ evayāḥ u saprathāḥ | adha te Viṣṇo viduṣhū chid ardhyaḥ stomo yajnaścha rādhyo havishmutā |* 2. *Yā pūrvyāya vedhase navīyase sumajjānaye Viṣṇave dadāṣati | yo jātum asya mahato mahi bravat sa id u śravobhir yujyān chid abhi asat |* 3. *Tam u stotūrah pūreyaṁ yathā vīda rītasya garbhāṁ januṣhū pipartana | ā asya jānanto nāma chid rivaktana mahas te Viṣṇo sumatīm bhajāmahe |* 4. *Tam asya rājā Varuṇas tam Aśvinā kratuṁ sachantu mārutasya vedhasaḥ | dādāhāra dakṣam uttamam aharīdaṁ vṛajāṁ cha Viṣṇur sukhivān apornute |* 5. *Ā yo virūya sachathāya dairyaḥ Indrāya Viṣṇuḥ sukrīte sukrīttarah | vedhāḥ ajinvat trishadhaḥasthaḥ āryam rītasya bhāge yajamānām ā bhajat |*

“Be to us beneficent like a friend, worshipped with butter, greatly renowned, swiftly-moving, broadly diffused. Truly, Viṣṇu, thy praise is to be celebrated by the sage, and sacrifice is to be performed to thee by the worshipper. 2. He who worships Viṣṇu, the ancient, the disposer [or the wise], the recent, the [god] with the noble spouse,²⁹—he who extols the nature of this mighty Being, shall excel

²⁶ Compare R. V. i. 22, 17, 18 (above, p. 63, f.), and R. V. i. 154, 1, 3 (p. 69).

²⁷ Compare R. V. vi. 69, 5 (below).

²⁸ See R. V. vii. 99, 1, below.

²⁹ Śāyana gives two explanations of the word *sumaj-jāni*. The first makes it *svayam evotpannūya*, “born by his own power” (in proof of which sense he quotes Nir. vi. 22: *Sumat svayam ity arthaḥ | “sumat means svayam, self”*). The second meaning is thus stated: *Sutarām mādayati iti sumat | tadṛśī jāyā yasya sa . . . | tasmai sarva-jagan-mūdāna-śīla-S’rī-pataye | “su-mat means ‘greatly*

his friend²⁹ in renown. 3. Encomiasts, satisfy [with worship], as ye know how to do, him who, by his nature, is the primeval source of sacred rites. Knowing his name declare, 'Vishṇu, we enjoy the good will of thee, the mighty one.' 4. King Varuṇa and the Āśvins have done homage to the power of this ruler [or wise god] who is attended by the Maruts. Vishṇu possesses excellent wisdom, which knows the proper day;³⁰ and with his friends, opens up the cloud. 5. The divine Vishṇu, who has hastened to seek companionship with the beneficent Indra, [himself] more beneficent,—this wise [god], occupying three stations, has gratified the Ārya, and renders the worshipper a sharer in the sacred ceremony."

R. V. i. 164, 36 (A. V. 9, 10, 17; Nir. Par. ii. 21).—*Sapta ardha-garbhāḥ bhuvanasya reto Viśṇos tiṣṭhanti pradiśā vidharmanī | te dhātībhir manasā te vipaśchitāḥ paribhuvāḥ pari bhavanti viśvataḥ |* "Seven embryos, the prolific sources of the world, abide by the command of Vishṇu in the function of supporting [the universe]. They by thought, and by mind, they intelligent, embracing, comprehend all things."

I do not attempt any explanation of this obscure and mystical utterance.

R. V. i. 186, 10.—*Pro Āśvināv avase kṛiṇudhvam pra Pūshanam svatavaso hi santi | advesho Viṣṇur Vātaḥ Rībhukshāḥ achha sumnāya vavṛitīya devān |* "Dispose the Āśvins, dispose Pūshan, to succour us, for they have power in themselves. Vishṇu is free from malice, and so is Vāta (Vāyu) and Rībhukshan. May I incline the gods to be favourable to us."

R. V. ii. 1, 3.—*Tvam Agne Indro vṛishabhāḥ satām asi tvaṁ Viṣṇur*

gladdening.' *Sumaj-jāni* then signifies 'one who has such a wife.' The phrase will thus mean, 'to the lord of Śrī, whose nature it is to gladden the world.'" Dr. Aufrecht thinks that *jāni* has always the sense of wife, and supposes the wife here alluded to to be the world. Prof. Roth, *Illust. of Nir.*, p. 90, supposes *sumat* to be derived from *su*, and to mean "easily," "gladly."

²⁹ Compare the words *yuyjo vā sakhā vā* in R. V. ii. 28, 10, where *yuyja* is explained by Sāyana as = *yojana-samarthaḥ pitrādīr vā*; and R. V. i. 22, 14, where the same word *yuyja* is said to be equivalent to *anukūla*, "friendly." Compare also *ayuja* in R. V. viii. 51, 2.

³⁰ See the interpretation of the word *aharvid* given by Sāyana on R. V. i. 2, 2. In Böhtlingk and Roth's Dictionary the word is explained as signifying "long known."

urugāyo namasyaḥ | tvam brahmā rayividḥ Brahmanāspate tvam vidhartāḥ sachase purandhyā | "Thou, Agni, art Indra, most energetic of heroes; thou art Vishṇu, the wide-stepping, the adorable; thou, Brahmanāspati, art a priest, possessor of wealth; thou, sustainer, art associated with sacred wisdom."

R. V. ii. 22, 1 (S. V. i. 457).—*Trīkadrukeshu mahisho yavāsīraṁ twiśushmas tripat somam apibad Vishṇunā sutaṁ yathā 'vasat | sa im māmāda mahi karma kartave mahām uruṁ sa enaṁ satchad devo devaṁ satyam Indram satyaḥ Induḥ |* "The great [Indra], of mighty force, satiating himself, has drunk the soma, mixed with barley-meal, poured forth by Vishṇu at the Trikadruka ceremony, as much as he desired. He [Soma] has stimulated the great and vast [god, Indra,] to achieve mighty acts. He, the god, the true Indu (Soma), has attended him, the god, the true Indra."

R. V. iii. 6, 4.—*Mahān sadhasṭhe dhruve ā nishatto antar dyāvā māhine haryamānaḥ | āskre sapatnī ajare amṛikte sabardughe urugāyasya³¹ dhenū |* "The great [god, Agni,] is seated in his firm abode, beloved, between the mighty heaven and earth,—those two cows, joint-wives of the wide-stepping [god], united, undecaying, inviolable, dispensers of water." Agni himself may be the "wide-stepping god" intended here.

R. V. iii. 54, 14.—*Vishṇuṁ stomāsaḥ puru-dasman arkāḥ bhagasyeva kārīṇo yūmani gman | urukramaḥ kakuho yasya pūrvīr na mardhanti yuvalayo janitriḥ |* "Our hymns and praises have proceeded to Vishṇu, the worker of many wonders, like bards proceeding in the train of their lord. He is the wide-stepping, the exalted, whose [will] the numerous, youthful, mothers do not disregard."

R. V. iii. 55, 10.—*Vishṇur gopāḥ³² paramam pāti pāthaḥ³³ priyā dhāmāni amṛitā dadhānaḥ | Agnis tā viśvā bhuvanāni veda mahad devānām asuratvam ekam |* "Vishṇu, a protector, preserves the highest heaven, sustaining the dear,³⁴ undecaying regions. Agni knows all these worlds: great and incomparable is the divine nature of the gods."

³¹ *Prithugamanasya adhika-stuter vū*; Sūrya, who names Agni as the god; though he makes heaven and earth to be the wives of the sun.

³² Compare R. V., i. 22, 18. The word Vishṇu is here regarded by the commentator as an epithet of Agni, and rendered by "pervading." The hymn is, however, according to the Anukramanikā, one addressed to all the gods.

³³ *Pāthaḥ* occurs also in R. V. i. 154, 5. See above.

³⁴ Or, "vast." The commentator renders the word *priya* by *aparimita*, "unmeasured," in his note on R. V. iii. 32, 7.

R. V. iv. 2, 4.—*Aryamaṇaṁ Varuṇaṁ Mitrāṁ aśhām Indrā-Viśhṇū Maruto Aśvinā uta | su-aśvo Agne su-rathaḥ su-rādhdhā ā id u vaha su-haviṣhe janāya* | “Agni, [do thou, who hast] beautiful steeds, a beautiful car, and [bestowest] rich gifts, bring to the pious worshipper from among these [gods], Aryaman, Varuṇa, Mitra, Indra and Viśhṇu, the Maruts, and the Aśvins” (comp. R. V. vii. 39, 5, below).

R. V. iv. 3, 7.—*Kathā mahe puṣṭim-bharāya Pūshne kad Rudrāya sumakhāya havir-de | kad Viśhṇave uru-gāyāya reto³⁵ bravaḥ kad Agne Sarave bṛihatyai* | “Why, Agni, [shouldst thou declare our sin] to the great supplier of nourishment, Pūshan? why to Rudra, the vigorous, the giver of oblations? why shouldst thou declare our sin to the wide-stepping Viśhṇu? why to the great Saru (Nirṛiti?).”

R. V. iv. 18, 11.—*Uta mālā mahiṣham anvaṇad amī tvā jahati putra devāḥ | Atha abraṇid Vṛitraṁ Indro hanishyan sakhe Viśhṇo vitarāṁ vikramasva* | “And his mother sought to draw back the mighty [Indra], saying, ‘My son, those gods forsake thee.’ Then Indra, being about to slay Vṛitra, said, ‘Friend Viśhṇu, do thou stride vastly.’”

The last words of this verse form the commencement of the 12th verse of the 89th hymn of the 8th Maṇḍala, which I shall introduce here.

R. V. viii. 89, 12.—*Sakhe Viśhṇo vitarāṁ vikramasva dyaus dehi lokāṁ vajrāya viśhkabhe | hanāva Vṛitraṁ riṇachāva sindhūn Indrasya yantu prasave viśṛiṣṭāḥ* | “‘Friend Viśhṇu, stride vastly;’ Sky, give room for the thunderbolt to descend; let us slay Vṛitra, and let loose the waters; let them, when released, flow by the impulse of Indra.”³⁶

³⁵ Dr. Aufrecht suggests that the original reading here may have been *repas* = *āgas*, “sin.” But as the text stands he would connect *retas* with *sarave*, so as to give the sense, “our sin (understood), which is the occasion for the great arrow of destruction.” Böhtlingk and Roth render *retas* by “libation.”

³⁶ The Taittirīya Sanhitā, ii. 4, 12, 2, has the following story about Indra and Viśhṇu: *Tasmād Indro 'bhidheḥ api Tvashṭū | Tvashṭū tasmai vajram asinchat | tapo vai sa vajraḥ āsit | tam udyantūṁ na āsaknot | a'ha vai tarhi Viśhṇur anyū devatū āsit | so 'bravid "Viśhṇave ehi idam āharishyāvo yena ayam-idam" iti | sa Viśhṇus tredhā ātmānam vinyadhata prithivyāṁ tritīyam antarikshe tritīyāṁ divi tritīyam | abhiparyāvartād hy abibhet | yat prithivyāṁ tritīyam āsit tena Indro vajram udāyachhad Viśhṇo-anushṭhitāḥ | so 'bravid "mā me prahūḥ | asti vai idam mayi vīryam | tat te pradāsyāmi" iti | tad aśmai prāyachhat | tat pratyagrihṇāt | "adhūh mā" iti tad Viśhṇave 'tiprāyachhat | tad Viśhṇuḥ pratyagrihṇād "asmāvo Indrāḥ indriyāṁ dadhāto" iti | yad antarikshe tritīyam āsit tena Indro vajram udāyachhad Viśhṇo-anushṭhitāḥ | so 'bravid "mā me prahūḥ | asti vai idam mayi vīryam | tat*

II. V. iv. 55, 4.—*Vi Aryamā Varuṇas cleti panthām iśhas-patiḥ su-vitām gātum Agniḥ | Indrā-Vishṇuṁ nri-vad u shu stavānā śarma no yan-tam amavaḍ varūtham |* 'Aryaman and Varuṇa know the path; so too Agni, the lord of strength [knows] a prosperous road. Indra and Vishṇu, when ye are lauded, according to human ability, bestow on us prosperity and strong protection."

R. V. v. 3, 1-3.—*Tvam Agne Varuṇojāyase yat tvam Mitro bhavasi yat samiddhaḥ |* *tvō viśve sahasas-putra devās tvam Indro dāsushe mart-*

te pradāsyāmi" iti | *tad asmai prāyachhat | tat pratyagrihṇāt* | "dvir mā adhāḥ" iti *tad Vishṇave atiprāyachhat | tad Vishṇuḥ pratyagrihṇāt* "asmāsv Indrāḥ indriyaṁ dadhātu" iti | *yad divi tritīyam āsit tena Indro vajram udayachhad Vishṇu-anu-shkhitāḥ |* so 'bravīt mā me prahāḥ | *yena ahaṁ idam asmi "tat te pradāsyāmi"* iti | "tvī" ity abravīt | "sandhām tu sandadhānuhai | tvām eva praviśāmi" iti | "yan mām praviśeḥ kim mā bhunjyāḥ" ity abravīt | "tvām eva indhīya tava bhogāya tvām praviseyam" ity abravīt | *tañ Vritraḥ praviśat | udaraṁ vai Vritraḥ | kshut khalu vai manushyasya bhrātṛivyaḥ | yaḥ evaṁ veda hanti kshudham bhrātṛivyaḥ | tad asmai prāyachhat | tat pratyagrihṇāt* | "trir mā 'dhāḥ" iti *tad Vishṇave 'tiprāyachhat | tad Vishṇuḥ pratyagrihṇāt* "asmāsv Indrāḥ indriyaṁ dadhātu" iti | *yat triḥ prāyachhat triḥ pratyagrihṇāt tat tridhāto tridhātutvam | yad Vishṇur anvatishkṛata Vishṇave 'tiprāyachhat tasmād Aindrāvaishṇavaṁ havir bhavati* | "Indra was afraid of him, as was also Tvasṭri. Tvasṭri moistened for him the thunderbolt: it was heat or austere-fervour (*tapas*). He could not lift it. Now there was another deity, Vishṇu. Indra said: 'Come, Vishṇu, we two will take that whereby he is this [which he is].' Vishṇu divided himself into three parts, [placing] one on earth, a second in the air, and a third in the sky. For he was afraid of [Vritra's] development (*abhiparyāvartāt*: *yasmūd asya Vritrasya abhiparyāvartāt sarva-dig-vyāpi-rūpāyāḥ vridhder ayam Indro 'bibhet*, Comm.). With the third [of Vishṇu] which was on the earth, Indra lifted the thunderbolt, followed by Vishṇu. Vritra said, 'Do not smite me: there is in me this energy: that I will give to thee.' He gave, and Indra took it, and passed it on to Vishṇu, [saying,] 'Thou hast supported me.' Vishṇu received it, [saying,] 'May Indra impart energy to us.' Indra then lifted the thunderbolt with the third [of Vishṇu] which was in the air," etc., as before. "Indra passed it on to Vishṇu, saying, 'Thou hast twice supported me,'" etc. "Indra then, followed by Vishṇu, lifted the thunderbolt with the third [of Vishṇu] which was in the sky. Vritra said, 'Do not smite me; I will give thee that whereby I am that [which I am].' Indra agreed. 'Let us make an agreement; let me enter into thee' [said Vritra]. 'If thou interest me, wilt thou eat me?' [replied Indra]. 'I will kindle thee; I will enter thee for thy enjoyment' [answered Vritra]. He accordingly entered into him. Vritra is the belly. Hunger is man's enemy. He who knows this slays his enemy. So Vritra gave Indra [that whereby] he was what he was]. Indra took it, [and saying,] 'Thou hast thrice supported me,' passed it on to Vishṇu," etc., etc., as before. "From the circumstance that the one god gave, and the other took [what was given], thrice, the 'tridhātu' derives its character. And from the fact that Vishṇu followed Indra, and the latter passed on [what he had received] to the former, there is an oblation called 'Aindrāvaishṇava,' i.e. common to both the gods."

yāya | 2. *Tvam Aryamā bhavasi yat kanīmā nānta svadhāvan gr̥hyam bibharsī* | *anjanti mitram sudhitāmēna gobhir yad dampatī samanāsā kṛinoshi* | 3. *Tava śriye Maruto marjayanta*³⁷ *Rudra yat to jamina chāru chitram* | *padañ yad Vishṇor upamañ nidhāyi tena pāsi guhyañ nāma gonām* |

"Thou, Agni, [art] Varuṇa, when thou art born; thou art Mitra when thou art kindled: son of strength, in thee [reside] all the gods; thou art Indra to the man who sacrifices. 2. Thou art Aryaman when thou, self-sustaining, possessest the mysterious name of the maidens. Men anoint thee, like a benevolent friend, with milk, when thou makest the husband and wife to be of one mind. 3. For thy glory, Rudra, [or, terrible Agni], the Maruts have adorned themselves, such is that beautiful and wondrous birth of thine.³⁸ Through that which has been fixed as the highest abode of Vishṇu, thou possessest the mysterious name of the cows."

R.V. v. 46, 2-4 (=Vāj. S. 33, 48, 49).—*Agne Indra Varuṇa Mitra devāḥ śardhaḥ pra yanta Māruta uta Vishṇo* | *ubhā Nāsatyā Rudro adha gnāḥ Pūshā Bhagaḥ Sarasvatī jushanta* | 3. *Indrāgnī Mitrā-Varuṇā Aditiṃ svāḥ prithivīm dyām Marutaḥ parvatān apuḥ* | *huve Vishṇum Pūshanam Brahmanaspatim Bhaguṃ nu śaṃsuṃ Savitāram ūtuye* | 4. *Uta no Vishṇur uta Vāto asridho dravinodāḥ uta Somo mayas karat* | *uta Ribhavaḥ uta rāye no Ásvinā uta Tvashṭā uta Vibhṡā anu mānate* |

2. "Agni, Varuṇa, Mitra, ye gods, give us strength, and thou Vishṇu with the Maruts. Both the Ásvins, Rudra, and the wives of the deities, with Pūshan, Bhaga, and Sarasvatī, are pleased. 3. I invoke Indra and Agni, Mitra and Varuṇa, Aditi, Heaven, Earth, Sky, the Maruts, the Mountains, the Waters, Vishṇu, Pūshan, Brahmanaspati; I praise Bhaga and Savitṛi, that they may succour us. 4. And may Vishṇu, and the Wind, uninjuring, and Soma, the bestower of riches, give us happiness. And the Ribhus, Ásvins, Tvashṭri, and Vibhṡā are favourable to us, so as to [grant us] wealth."

R.V. v. 51, 9.—*Sajūr Mitrā-Varuṇābhyām sajūḥ Somena Vishṇunā* | *ā yāhi Agne Atri-vat uto rāṇa* | "Associated with Mitra and Varuṇa,

³⁷ Compare R. V. vii. 3, 5.

³⁸ This refers, Dr. Aufrecht suggests, to the production of lightning in the air at the time of a storm.

associated with Soma and Vishṇu, come Agni, and rejoice in our libation, as [in that of] Atri.”

R. V. v. 87, 1 (S. V. i. 462).—*Pra vo mahe matayo yantu Vishṇave Marutvate girijāḥ evayāmarut | pra śardhāya prayajyave sukhādāye tarase bhanded-īṣṭāye dhuni-vratāya śavase | . . . 4. Sa chakrame mahato nir uru-kramāḥ samānasmat padasaḥ evayāmarut | yadā ayukta imanā evād adhi śhṇubhir vishpardhaso vimahaso jigāti sevridho nṛibhiḥ | . . . 8. Advesho no Maruto gātum ā itana śrota havam jaritur evayāmarut | Vishṇor mahāḥ samanyavo yhyotana smad rathyo na dāmsanā apa dveshāmsi sanutāḥ |*

“May your hill-born (or, voice-born) hymns proceed to the great Vishṇu, attended by the Maruts, O Evayāmarut, (swiftly-moving Marut?); and to the troop [of Maruts], impetuous, wearing beautiful rings, strong, rushing on exultingly,—to that power which delights in resounding. . . 4. The wide-striding [god] strode forth from the great common abode, O Evayāmarut; when by himself he has yoked his emulous and vigorous [steeds], he issues from his own [abode] with his swift heroes, augmenting our felicity. . . 8. Maruts, come in a friendly spirit to our song, hear the invocation of your worshipper, Evayāmarut; of the same mind with the great Vishṇu, like men riding in chariots, drive our enemies away far from us by your might.”

The hymn from which these verses are taken is quoted and translated in Prof. Benfey's Glossary to the Sāma-veda, p. 39 f.

R. V. vi. 17, 11.—*Vardhān yaṁ viśve Marutāḥ sajoshāḥ pachat śatam mahishān Indra tubhyaṁ | Pūshā Vishṇus trīṇi sarāṁsi dhāvan vṛitrahanam madiram aṁśum asmai |* “For thee, Indra, whom all the Maruts, in concert, will magnify, Pūshan and Vishṇu cooked a hundred buffaloes. For him three lakes discharged the Vṛitra-slaying, exhilarating soma.”²⁹

²⁹ To illustrate the last line, Dr. Aufrecht has pointed out to me another passage, R. V. viii. 66, 4: *Ekayā pratidhā pibat sūkam sārāṁsi trīṇīśatam | Indrah somasya kṇukā |* “Indra swallowed at one draught thirty lakes of Soma. . . .” This verse is quoted in Nir. v. 11. I have not attempted to translate the difficult word *kṇukā*, at the close. See Roth's Illust. of Nir. p. 60, f. In a review of Pictet's Origines Indo-Européennes, vol. ii., in Kuhn und Schleicher's Beiträge zur Vergl. Sprachforschung, iv. 279, f., Prof. Weber refers to this passage. “Saras, a pond,” he says, “in the sense of cup (R. V. viii. 66, 4. . .), which reminds us of the ‘weltmeer’ (world-ocean) of our students, is no doubt merely a poetical metaphor.” See also R. V. vii. 103, 7; viii. 7, 10.” In R. V. v. 29, 7 f., Agni is said to have cooked three hundred buffaloes for Indra, who ate them, and drank three lakes of soma, when proceeding to fight with Vṛitra.

R. V. vi. 20, 2.—*Divo na tubhyam anu Indra satrā asuryaṁ dṛghbhir
dhāyi viśvam | Ahiṁ yad Vṛitram apo vavrivāmsaṁ hant rjishin Vish-
ṇunū sachūnaḥ* | “All divine power, like that of the Sky, was completely
communicated to thee, Indra, by the gods,⁴⁰ when thou, O impetuous
[deity], associated with Vishṇu, didst slay Vṛitra Ahi, stopping up the
waters.”

R. V. vi. 21, 9.—*Pra ūtaye Varuṇam Mitram Indram Marutaḥ kṛṣh-
va avase no adya | pra Pūṣaṇaṁ Viṣṇum Agnim Purandhiṁ Savitāram
ośadhīḥ parvatūṁścha* | “Dispose to-day to our help and succour
Varuṇa, Mitra, Indra, the Maruts, Pūshan, Viṣṇu, Agni, Purandhi,
Savitṛi, the plants and the mountains.”

R. V. vi. 48, 14.—*Taṁ vaḥ Indram na sukratūṁ Varuṇam iva māyi-
nam | Aryamaṇaṁ na mandraṁ śṛipra-⁴¹bhojasāṁ Viṣṇuṁ, na stuṣhe
ādīśe* | “I praise thee, of great power like Indra, wondrous in might
like Varuṇa, pleasant like Aryaman, conferring large enjoyment like
Viṣṇu, that thou mayest bestow wealth.”⁴²

R. V. vi. 49, 13.—*Yo rajāṁsi vimame⁴³ pāṛthivāni tris chid Viṣṇur
Manave bādhitāya | tasya te śarmann upadadyamāne rāyū madema tanvā
tanū cha* | “May we, ourselves and our offspring, be gladdened by
wealth, under the protection afforded by thee, that Viṣṇu who thrice
traversed the mundane regions for Manu [or the Āryan man] when he
was oppressed.”⁴⁴

R. V. vi. 50, 12.—*Te no Rudraḥ Sarasvatī sajośhāḥ mīḥhushmanto
Viṣṇur mṛṇantu Vāyuḥ | Rībhukshāḥ Vājo daivyo vidhātā Parjanyaṁvātā
pipyatūm iṣaṁ naḥ* | “May these dispensers of blessings, Rudra, Saras-
vatī, Viṣṇu, and Vāyu together be gracious to us. May Rībhukshan,
Vāja, the divine Vidhātṛi (or disposer), Parjanya and Vāta replenish
our store of nutriment.”

⁴⁰ *Stotribhīḥ*, “worshippers,” according to Sāyaṇa.

⁴¹ The word *śṛipra* occurs also in R. V. i. 96, 3; i. 181, 3; iii. 18, 5; iv. 50, 2; viii. 25, 5; and viii. 32, 10=S. V. i. 217. By Yaska, Nir. vi. 17, it is derived from the root *śṛip*, “to go” (see Roth’s Illust., p. 83); and is rendered by Sāyaṇa *sarpana-śīla*, “going,” *prasṛita*, “extended,” etc. (See also Benfey’s Glossary to the S. V.) The word *viśva-bhojasam* occurs in the preceding verse vi. 48, 13.

⁴² Such is the sense assigned to *ādīśe* by Sāyaṇa: in Wilson’s Sanskrit Dictionary I find the word *pradeśana* rendered “a gift or offering, anything given to the gods, superiors, or friends,” etc.

⁴³ *Tribhir eva vikramaṇaiḥ parimitavān* | “measured with three strides.”—Sāyaṇa. Compare R. V. i. 154, 1, above (p. 69, ff.), and vii. 100, 4, below (p. 87).

⁴⁴ *Asurair hūṁsitāya* | “injured by Asuras.”—Sāyaṇa.

R. V. vi. 69, 1-8.—*Sam vām karmṇā sam iṣā hinomi Indrā-Vishṇu apasas pāre asya | jushethām yajnaṁ draviṇaṁ cha dhattam arishṭair naḥ pathibhiḥ pārayantā | 2. Yā viśvasāṁ janitārā matinām Indrā-Vishṇu kalasā soma-dhānā | pra vām girāḥ śasyamānāḥ avantu pra stomāso gīyamānāso arkaiḥ | 3. Indrā-Vishṇu mada⁴⁵-paṭi madānām ā somam yātām draviṇo dadhānā | sam vām anjantu aktubhir matinām sam stomāsaḥ śasyamānāsaḥ ukthaiḥ | 4. Ā vām āsvāso abhimāti-śāhah Indrā-Vishṇu sadhamādo vahantu | jushethām viśvā havanā matinām upa brahmāni śrinutam giro me | 5. Indrā-Vishṇu tat panayāyyaṁ vām somasya made uru chakramāthe | akrinutam antarikṣhaṁ variyo aprathatām jivase no rajāṁsi | 6. Indrā-Vishṇu havishā vāvṛidhānā agrādvānā namasā rūtahavyā | ghrīlāsuti draviṇaṁ dhattam asme samudrah sthaḥ kalasāḥ somadhānāḥ | 7. Indrā-Vishṇu pibatam mādhu asya somasya dasrā jaṭharāṇ prinethām | ā vām andhāṁsi madirāni agmann upa brahmāni śrinutam havam me | 8. (A. V. 7, 44, 1) Ubhā jigyaṭhur na parā jayethe na parā jigye kataraschanainoḥ | Indrascha Vishṇo yad apaspridhethām tredhā sahasraṁ vi tad airayethām |*

"Indra and Vishṇu, I stimulate you twain with this rite and oblation: at the conclusion of this ceremony do ye accept our sacrifice, and grant us wealth, conducting us to our object by secure paths. 2. Indra and Vishṇu, ye who are the generators of all prayers, and are, [as it were,] the bowls which hold the soma-juice, may the words which are now recited gratify you, and the hymns which are sung with praises. 3. Indra and Vishṇu, ye two lords of exhilarating draughts, come to the soma-juice, bringing with you wealth; may the hymns uttered with praises anoint you⁴⁵ twain with the unguents of our prayers. 4. Indra and Vishṇu, may your steeds, vanquishing foes, and sharing in your triumph, bear you hither. Accept all the invocations of our hymns, and hear my devotions and prayers. 5. Indra and Vishṇu, this deed of you twain is worthy of celebration, that, in the exhilaration of the soma-juice, ye took vast strides;⁴⁶ ye made the

⁴⁵ Compare R. V. iii. 17, 1.

⁴⁶ The commentator remarks on this: *Yadyapi Vishṇor eva vikramas tathāpy ekūr-tathāud ubhayor ity uchyate* | "Though 'striding' is an act of Vishṇu only, yet it is so [described as here] owing to both gods having one end in view." In R. V. vii. 99, 6 (see below), the epithet *urukrama*, "far-stepping," is applied in the same way to both these deities. In the Harivansa, 7418, it is applied to Ś'iva.

atmosphere wide, and stretched out the worlds, for our existence.⁴⁷ 6. Indra and Vishṇu, gladdened by our oblation, ye to whom are due the first draughts of the soma, ye to whom offerings should be presented with reverence, and to whom butter is offered, bring us wealth, for ye are the ocean, the bowl in which the soma is held. 7. Indra and Vishṇu, workers of wonders, drink this sweet potion; fill your bellies with soma; the exhilarating soma-draughts have reached you; hear my prayers and invocation. 8. Ye two have both conquered, and are not vanquished. Neither of these twain has been vanquished. Vishṇu, when thou and Indra strove, ye scattered thrice a thousand [of your foes].”⁴⁸

R. V. vii. 35, 9 (= A. V. xix. 10, 9).—*Saṁ no Aditir bhavatu vratabhīḥ saṁ no bhavantu Marutaḥ sū-arkāḥ | saṁ no Viśṇuḥ saṁ u Pūṣā no astu saṁ no bhavitraṁ saṁ u astu Vāyuḥ* | “May Aditi be propitious to us with her acts: may the well-hymned Maruts be propitious to us: may Vishṇu, may Pūshan, may the Air,⁴⁹ may Vāyu, be propitious to us.”

⁴⁸ Comp. i. 155, 5, above.

⁴⁷ The commentator explains this as follows. *Yad yad vastu praty apaspridhethām asuraḥ saha aspridhethāni tredhā loka-veda-vāgātmanā tridhā sthitaṁ sahasram amitaṁ cha vi tad airayethām vyakramethām ity arthaḥ | tathā cha brāhmaṇam ubhā jigyathur ity aehbhāvākasya | ubhau hi tau jigyathur na parājayethe na parājigye iti na hi tayoh kataraschana parājigye* ‘Indraś cha Viśṇuḥ yad apaspridhethām tredhā sahasram vi tad airayethām’ iti | *Indraś cha ha vai Viśṇuḥ cha asurair guyudhāte tān ha sma jiteva ūchataḥ “kalpāmuhai” iti | te ha tathā ity asurāḥ ūchuḥ* | so ‘bravīd Indro “yūrad evāyaṁ Viśṇus trir vikramate tūvad asmākam aha yushmākam itarad” iti | ag imān lokān vicakrame’tho vedān atho vācām | tad ūchuḥ “kiṁ tat sahasram” iti “ime lokāḥ ime vedāḥ atho vāg” iti brūyāt | “airayethām airayethām” ity aehbhāvākāḥ ukthye ‘bhyaśyati’ | Ait. Br. 6, 15 (see Prof. Haug’s translation, pp. 403, f.). “In reference to whatever thing ye two strove, i.e. strove with the Asuras, over that, in its three characters, i.e. as existing in its character of world, Veda, and speech, and in number a thousand, and immeasurable, ye strode. Thus a Brāhmaṇa [the Aitareya, 6, 15.] says: ‘ye both conquered; this is what the Aehbhāvāka priest [repeats]: for ye both conquered, ye are not vanquished, neither was vanquished, for neither of these two was vanquished’ [the last line of the verse before us is then cited]. Indra and Vishṇu fought with the Asuras. Having conquered them, they said, let us divide [the world]. The Asuras said, be it so. Indra said, As much as this Vishṇu strides over in three strides, so much shall be ours; the rest yours. He strode over those worlds, then the Vedas, then speech. When people say, what is that thousand? let him say, These worlds, these Vedas, then speech. The Aehbhāvāka priest repeats at the Ukthya ritual, ye scattered, ye scattered.” Comp. Taitt. S. vii. 1, 5, 5.

⁴⁹ The word *bhavitra* is explained by Śāyana as = *bhuvanam antarikṣham udakam vā*. “The world, or the atmosphere, or water.” The word, Dr. Aufrecht informs me, does not occur again in the Vedas.

R. V. vii. 36, 9.—*Achhā ayaṁ vo Marutaḥ ślokaḥ etu achhā Viṣṇuṁ nishikta-pām śravobhir ityādi* | “Maruts, may this hymn reach you: may it [reach] Viṣṇu, the preserver of embryos, with its eulogies,” etc.

R. V. vii. 39, 5.—*Ā Agne giro divaḥ a prithivyāḥ Mitrāṁ vaha Varuṇam Indram Agnim | Ā Aryamānam Aditiṁ Viṣṇum eṣhām Sarasvatī Maruto mādayantām* | “Agni, from heaven and earth bring Mitra, Varuṇa, Indra, Agni, Aryaman, Aditi, Viṣṇu to the hymns of these persons;⁴⁹ may Sarasvatī and the Maruts be gratified.”

R. V. vii. 40, 5.—*Asya devasya mīḥusho vayāḥ Viṣṇor eṣhasya⁵⁰ prabhṛithe havirbhīḥ | vido hi Rudro rudriyam mahitvām yāsishṭām vartir Āśvināv irāvāt* | “The branches of this prolific and rapid deity Viṣṇu [are to be worshipped?] with oblations at the offering. For Rudra possesses impetuous power. The Āśvins have come to our place of sacrifice which is provided with food.”

R. V. vii. 44, 1.—*Dadhikrām vaḥ prathamam Āśvinā Ushasam Agniṁ samiddham Bhagam ūtaye huve | Indraṁ Viṣṇum Pūṣaṇam Brahmanaspatiṁ Ādityān dyāvā-prithivī apah evaḥ* | “I invoke you for succour, first Dadhikrā, the Āśvins, Ushas, the kindled Agni, Bhaga, Indra, Viṣṇu, Pūshan, Brahmanaspati, the Ādityas, Heaven and Earth, the Waters, the Sky.”

R. V. vii. 93, 8.—*Etāḥ Agne āśushānśaḥ iṣṭīr yutoḥ sacā abhi āśyāma vājān | mā Indro no Viṣṇur Marutaḥ parikhyann ityādi* | “Breathing forth these petitions, may we, O Agni [and Indra], with [the help of] you twain, obtain food. Let not Indra, Viṣṇu, and the Maruts despise us,” etc.

⁴⁹ Bohtlingk and Roth, *s.v. eṣha*, conjecture that in this verse the correct reading is *eṣhām*, “the rapid,” as an epithet of Viṣṇu, and not *eṣhām*.

⁵⁰ Sāyana interprets the first words of the verse before us thus, *Viṣṇoḥ sarva-devātmakasya asya devasya anye devāḥ vayāḥ śākhāḥ iva bhavanti* | “Other gods are, as it were, branches of this god, who is the soul of all the gods.” He explains *eṣhasya* as follows: *Prabhṛithe havirbhīr havī-rūpāir annaiḥ eṣhasya prāpranīyasya*, “one who can be brought by oblations of food.” The same epithet *eṣha* is applied to Viṣṇu in the other two following passages referred to in Bohtlingk and Roth's Lexicon under this word. R. V. ii. 34, 11.—*Tūn vo maho Marutaḥ evayāeno Viṣṇor eṣhasya prabhṛithe havāmāhe | ityādi* | “At the offering of the rapid Viṣṇu we invoke you, the great, and impetuous Maruts,” etc. R. V. viii. 20, 3.—*Vidma hi Rudriyāṇām īśahmam ugram Marutām simivātām | Viṣṇor eṣhasya mīḥushām* | “For we know the fiery vigour of the sons of Rudra, the impetuous Maruts, of the rapid Viṣṇu, [all of them] prolific.”

R. V. vii. 99, 1.—*Paro mātrayā⁶¹ tanvā vṣidhāna'na te mahitayā⁶²anu
 āsmuvanti | ubhe te vidma rajasi prithivyāḥ Viśhno deva tvam para-
 masya vīte | 2. Na te Viśhno jāyamāno na jāto deva mahimnaḥ param
 antam āpa | ud astabhnāḥ nākam ṛishvaṁ bṛihantaṁ dādhartha prāchiṁ
 lakubham prithivyāḥ | 3' (= Vāj. S. v. 16). Irāvati dhenumatī hi
 bhūtaṁ suyavasiniṁ manusha⁶³ dāsasyā | Vi astabhnāḥ rodasi Viśhno ete
 dādhartha prithivīm abhito mayūkhaiḥ | 4. Uruṁ yajnāya chakrathur
 u lokam janayantā Sūryam Ushasam Agnim | dāsasya chid vṛisha-
 siprasya māyāḥ jaghnathur narā prītanājyeshu | 5. Indrā-Viśhnū dṛiṁ-
 hitāḥ S'ambarasya nava puro navatiṁ cha śnathishṭam | śataṁ varchinaḥ
 sahasraṁ cha sūkam hathe aprati asurasya virān | 6. Iyam manīshā
 bṛihati bṛihantā urukramā tavasā vardhayanti | rare vām stomāṁ
 vidatheshu Viśhno pinvatam iśho vṛijaneshu Indra | 7. (S. V. 2, 977 ;
 Taitt. Sanh. ii. 2, 12, 4) Vashaṭ tē Viśhno āsaḥ ā kṛṇomi tad me jushasva
 S'ipivishṭa havyam | vardhantu tvā sushtutayo giro me yūyam pūta svasti-
 bhikḥ sādā naḥ |*

"Thou who, with thy body, growest beyond our measure, [men] do not attain to thy greatness: we know both thy two regions of the earth; thou, divine Vishnu, knowest the remotest [world]."⁶² 2. No one, O divine Vishnu, who is being born, or who has been born, knows the furthest limit of thy greatness. Thou didst prop up the lofty and vast sky; thou didst uphold the eastern pinnacle of the earth.⁶³ 3. [Ye two worlds,] be ye abundant in food, cows, and pastures, through beneficence to man. Vishnu, thou didst prop asunder these two worlds; thou didst envelope the earth on every side with beams of light. 4. Ye (Indra and Vishnu) have provided ample room for the sacrifice, producing the sun, the dawn, and fire. Ye, O heroes, destroyed in the battles the wonderful powers of the hostile (*dāsa*) Vṛishasipra. 5. Indra and Vishnu, ye smote the ninety-nine strong cities of Sambara; together, ye slew, unopposed, a thousand and a hundred heroes of the Asura Varchin. 6. This great hymn gladdens you twain, the great, the wide-striding, the powerful; Vishnu and Indra, I present to you twain a hymn at the sacrifices. Supply abundant nutriment in our habitations. 7. Vishnu, I utter to thee this invocation from my mouth.

⁶¹ Compare *paro-mātram rishishamam Indram*; R. V. viii. 57, 1.

⁶² Yajur-veda v. 16 reads *manave*.

⁶³ Comp. R. V. i. 155, 5, above, p. 74.

⁶⁴ Compare Isaiah xl. 22 xlv. 12, 18.

Sipivishṭa,⁵⁴ favourably receive this my oblation. May my laudatory hymns delight thee: do you always preserve us with blessings."

R. V. vii. 100.—*Nu marto dayate sanishyan yo Vishṇave urugāyāya dāsat | pra yaḥ satrūchū manasā yajāte etāvantaṁ naryam āvivāsāt |*
 2. *Tvaṁ Vishṇo sumatiṁ viśvajanyām aprayutām ecayāvo matiṁ dāḥ |*
parcho yathā naḥ suvitasya bhūrer, aśvāvataḥ puruṣchandrasya rūyaḥ |
 3. *Trir devaḥ pṛithivīm eśaḥ etāṁ vi chakrame śatarchasam mahitvā |*
pra Vishṇur astu tavasas taviyān tveshaṁ hi asya śhāvīrasya nāma |
 4. *Vi chakrame pṛithivīm eśaḥ etāṁ kṣhetrāya Vishṇur manushe dāśāyan |*
dhruvāso asya kīrayo janāsaḥ urukṣitīm sujanimā chakūra | 5. (S. V. 2, 976; Taitt. S. ii. 2, 12, 5; Nir. 5, 9.) *Pra tat te adya S'ipivishṭa nāma ayaḥ śaṁsāmi vayunāni vidvān | taṁ tvā grīṇāmi tavasam atavyān*
kshayantam asya rajasah parāke | 6. (S. V.² 2, 975; Taitt. S. ii. 2, 12, 5; Nir. 5, 8.) *Kim it te Vishṇo parichakāhyam bhūt⁵⁵ pra yad vavakṣhe*
S'ipivishṭo asmi | mā varpo asmad apa gūha etad yad anyarūpaḥ samitṛhe
babhātha | (The seventh verse is repeated from the last hymn.)

"That man never repents who, seeking [for good], brings offerings to Vishṇu, the wide-stepping, who worships him with his whole heart, and propitiates such a powerful [god]. 2. Vouchsafe to us, swiftly-moving Vishṇu, thy benevolence, which embraces all mankind, thy unpreoccupied regard; that thou mayest grant us abundant good, and brilliant wealth, with horses. 3. Thrice the swift god by his greatness has traversed this earth with its hundred lights. May Vishṇu the strongest prevail over the strong: for awful is the name (nature) of that immovable [being]. 4. The swift Vishṇu traversed the earth to bestow it for a habitation on Manu [or man]. The men who praise him are secure: [the god] of exalted birth has given them an ample abode. 5. I, a devoted worshipper, who know the sacred rites, to-day celebrate this thy name, S'ipivishṭa; I, who am weak, laud thee who art strong, and dwellest beyond this lower world. 6. What, Vishṇu, hadst thou to blame, that thou declaredst, 'I am S'ipivishṭa' ? Do not conceal from us this form, since thou didst assume another shape in the battle."⁵⁶

⁵⁴ See the note on this word where it occurs in the hymn next following.

⁵⁵ The Sāma-veda reads *parichakāhi nāma*.

⁵⁶ The following illustration of this verse is quoted by Professor Benfey from the commentary on the corresponding passage of the S. V.: *Purā khalu Vishṇuḥ svaṁ*

R. V. viii. 9, 12.—*Yad Indreṇa sarathāṃ yāśho Abvinā ygf vā Vāyuṇa bhavataḥ samokasā | yad Ādityabhir, Rībhūbhiḥ sajoshasā yad vā Viśṇor vikramaneṣhu tiśṭhataḥ* | “When, Āsyins, ye ride in the same car with Indra, or when ye dwell in the same abode with Vāyu, or when ye are associated with the Ādityas and the Rībhū, or when ye abide in the strides of Viśṇu.”

rūpam parityajya kṛitrimaṃ rūpāntaraṃ dhṛtrayan saṅgrāme Vasisthasya sādhyam chakāra | taṃ jñānāṃ rishir anayū pratyāchakṣte | “Viśṇu formerly abandoning his own form, and assuming another artificial shape, succoured Vasistha in battle. Recognizing the god, the rishi addresses him with this verse.” In Nir. v. 8 and 9, Yāska quotes verses 5 and 6 of the hymn before us in inverse order. After telling us (v. 7) that, “according to Āupamanyava, Viśṇu has two names, S’ipivishṭa, and Viśṇu, of which the former has a bad sense” (*S’ipivishṭo Viśṇur iti Viśṇor dve namanī bhavataḥ | kutsitārthiyam pūrvam bhavati ity Āupamanyavaḥ*), Yāska quotes verse 6, on which he observes: *Kiṃ te Viśṇo ‘prakhyātam etad bhavaty aprakhyāpanīyaṃ yan na prabrūshe | śepaḥ iva nirvrahitō ‘smi ity apratipanna-raśmih | api vā praśaṃsā-nāmaiva abhipretam ‘ēyāt | kiṃ te Viśṇo prakhyātam etad bhavaty prakhyāpanīyaṃ yad uta prabrūshe | S’ipivishṭo ‘smi ity pratipanna-raśmih | śipayo ‘tra raśmayah uchyante | tair ūvishṭo bhavati | mū varpo asmad apagūha etat | varpaḥ iti rūpa-nāma . . . | yad anya-rūpaḥ samitḥ saṅgrāme bhavasi saṃyata-raśmih* | “What, Viśṇu, is this undeclared thing of thine, not to be declared, which thou tellest not? ‘I am enveloped like a private member,’ i.e. with rays obscured. Or, by *S’ipivishṭa* a laudatory appellation may be intended; ‘what is this declared thing of thine, which is to be declared, that thou tellest?’ ‘I am *S’ipivishṭa*, i.e. one whose rays are displayed.’ The word ‘*śipi*’ here means ‘rays;’ with these he is pervaded. ‘Do not conceal this form:’ *varpas* is a word meaning ‘form.’ . . . ‘That thou art of another form in the battle (*samitḥ = saṅgrāme*), with thy rays withheld.’” See Taitt. S., vol. ii., p. 585. On v. 5, Yāska remarks: Nir. v. 9: “*Tut te ‘dya S’ipivishṭa nāma ayaḥ śaṃsūmi*” | *aryo ‘ham aśmi tēvaraḥ stomānām | ayaḥ tvam asi iti vā | taṃ tvā śtaumi tavasam atavyāṃs tavasaḥ iti mahato nāmadheyam uditō bhavati | nivasantam aśyāṃ rajasaḥ parāke parākṛānte* | “‘I, a master, to-day celebrate this thy name, *S’ipivishṭa*.’ I am *aryaḥ*, a master of praises. Or, thou art a master. ‘I, weak, praise thee, the strong.’ *Tavasa* is a word used for ‘great.’ ‘Dwelling beyond (*parāke = parākṛānte*) this lower world.’” From the above quotation, it appears that even in the time of Yāska, the sense of the word *S’ipivishṭa* was uncertain. In the Mahābhārata, Śāntiparva, vv. 13229, ff., Kṛishṇa is introduced as explaining the sense of the word thus (if the writer intended to represent Yāska as the Vedic rishi by whom the word was first applied to Viśṇu, he could not have been a particularly good Vedic scholar): *S’ipivishṭeti chākhyāyām kīna-rāmā cha vo bhavet | tenāvishṭam tu yat kinchid Chhipivishṭeti oha smritāḥ | Yāsko mām rishir ayaḥpro naiḥa-yaṇeṣhu gītavān | S’ipivishṭaḥ iti hy asmād guhya-nāma-dhara hy aham | etutvā mām S’ipivishṭeti Yāskaḥ sarshir udāra-dhīḥ | mat-prasādād adho naṣṭam Niruktam abhijagmivān* | “A bald man is designated by the word *S’ipivishṭa*. Anything which is penetrated by that is called *S’ipivishṭa*. Yāska, the serene rishi, celebrated me at many sacrifices. In consequence of this, I bear the mysterious name of *S’ipivishṭa*. Yāska, that rishi of large understanding, having lauded me as *S’ipivishṭa*, recovered by my favour the Nirukta, which had been destroyed.”

R. V. viii. 10, 2.— . . . *Bṛihaspatiṁ Viśvāndevān ahaṁ huve* *Indrā-Viṣṇu Aśvināv āpu-heśhasā* | “I invoke Bṛihaspati, the Viśve-devas, Indra and Viṣṇu, and the Aśvins with quickly neighing steeds.”

R. V. viii. 12, 16 (=S. V. i. 384; A. V. 20, 111, 1).—*Yat somam* *Indra Viṣṇavi yad vā gha Trita Āptye* | *yad vā Marutuṁ mandasā sam* *indubhiḥ* | . . . 25. *Yad Indra pritanājye devās tvā dadhiro puraḥ* | *ād it te haryatā harī vacakṣhatuḥ* | 26. *Yadā Vṛitraṁ nadi-vṛitaṁ* *śavasā vajrinn abadhīḥ* | *ād id ityādi* | 27. *Yadā te Viṣṇur ojasā trīṇi* *padā vichakrame* | *ād id ityādi* |

“Whether, Indra, thou [drinkest] soma along with Viṣṇu, or with Trita Āptya, or with the Maruts art exhilarated by libations. . . . 25. When, Indra, the gods placed thee in their front in the battle, then thy dear steeds waxed strong. 26. When, thunderer, thou didst by thy might slay Vṛitra, who stopped up the streams, then thy dear steeds grew strong. 27. When by thy force Viṣṇu strode three steps, then thy dear steeds waxed strong.”

R. V. viii. 15, 8 (=S. V. 2, 996, f.; A. V. 20, 106, 26).—*Tava* *dyaur Indra pauṁsyam prithivī vardhati śravaḥ* | *tvām āpaḥ parvatāsas* *cha hinvire* | 9. *Tvām Viṣṇur bṛihaṁ kṣhayaḥ⁶⁷ Mitro grīṇāti Varuṇaḥ* | *tvām śardho madati anu mārutam* | 10. *Tvaṁ vṛiṣhā janānām mañ-* *hiṣṭhaḥ Indra jajnishe* | *satrā viśvā su-apatyāni dadhishe* |

8. “Indra, the sky augments thy manhood, and the earth thy renown. The waters and the mountains stimulate thee. 9. Viṣṇu, who dwells on high, Mitra, and Varuṇa celebrate thee; the troop of Maruts follows thee with exultation. 10. Of all beings, thou, Indra, hast been born the most bountiful hero; thou hast made all things altogether prolific.”

R. V. viii. 25, 11.—*Te no nāvam uruśhyata divā-naktaṁ sūdānavaḥ* | *ariśhyanto ni pāyubhiḥ sachemahi* | 12. *Aghnate Viṣṇave vayam ariś-* *yantaḥ sūdānave* | *śrudhi svayāvan sindho pūrva-chittaye* | 13. (Nir. v. 1) *Tad vāryam vṛiṇimahe variṣṭhaṁ gopayatyam* | *Mitro yat pānti Varuṇo* *jad Aryamā* | 14. *Uta naḥ 'sindhur apām tad Marutas tad Aśvinā* | *Indro Viṣṇur miḍhvāmśaḥ sajoshasāḥ* |

⁶⁷ Benfey, in his translation of the Sama-veda, renders *kṣhaya* by “king.” Roth, in his Lexicon, thinks this sense is not established, and renders the words *bṛihaṁ kṣhayaḥ* by “high abode, i.e. heaven, or those who dwell in the high abode, the gods.” He also conjectures that the correct reading in this passage may be *bṛiṣat-kṣhayaḥ*, “who dwells on high.”

"Do ye, bountiful [gods], preserve our 'bard'⁵⁸ night and day. / May we, free from injury, receive your protection. 12. Free from injury, we [offer praise] to the innocuous, and bountiful Vishṇu. Listen, O self-moving Ocean, [to us] as your first thought. 13. We desire that excellent treasure, worthy to be guarded, which Mitra, Varuṇa, and Aryaman possess. 14. And may the Ocean of waters, may the Maruts, may the Aśvins, Indra, and Vishṇu, all of them prolific, associated together, [bestow] that upon us."

R. V. viii. 27, 8.—*Ā prayāta Maruto Viṣṇo Aśvinā Pūshan mākinayā dhīyā | Indrah āyātu prathamah sanishyubhir vṛṣhā yo vṛitrah grīṇe* | "Come hither, ye Maruts, Viṣṇu, Aśvins, Pūshan, at my hymn. May Indra come the first, he who is celebrated by those who desire [his blessing], as the vigorous, the slayer of Vṛitra."

The following hymn, in the seventh verse of which Viṣṇu is mentioned, is interesting from the manner in which the various characteristics of the different gods are succinctly described :

R. V. viii. 29, 1 ff.—*Babhrur eko viṣṇuṇaḥ sūnaro yuvā anji ankto hranyayam | 2. Yonim ekaḥ ā sasāda dyotano antar deveshu medhrah | 3. Vāṣim eko bibharti haste āyasīm antar deveshu nidhruviḥ | 4. Vayam eko bibharti haste āhitaṁ tena vṛitrāṇi jighnate | 5. Trigṇam eko bibharti haste āyudhaṁ śuchir ugro jalūsha-bheshajaḥ | 6. Pathaḥ ekaḥ pīpāya tasharo yathā esha veda nidhinām | 7. Tṛiṇi ekaḥ urugāyo vi chakrame yatra devāso madanti | 8. Viḍhir dvā charataḥ ekayā saha pra pravāsā va vasataḥ | 9. Sado dvā chakrāte upamā divi samrājā sarpirāsuti | 10. Archantaḥ eke mahi sāma manvata tena sūryam arochayan |*

"One⁵⁹ is a youth, brown, variable,⁶⁰ active. A golden lustre invests him. 2. Another,⁶¹ luminous, has seated himself on the place

⁵⁸ Dr. Aufrecht tells me that the word *nāvam* is so accented that it cannot mean "ship." He regards it as a mass. noun from the root *nu*, "to praise;" and assigns to it the sense of "bard," or "hymn." That there is such a word as *nāva* is proved by its occurrence in R. V. ix. 45, 5. *Induṁ nāvāḥ anūshata* | where it must mean "the bards, or hymns, celebrated Indu."

⁵⁹ Soma, as the moon, according to the commentator. M. Langlois thinks the sun is meant. Dr. Aufrecht thinks the troop of Maruts, *Marud-gaṇa*, may be meant, to whom, he remarks, the epithet *babhru*, "dark-brown, tawny," is as applicable as it is to their master, Rudra, to whom it is frequently given.

⁶⁰ Bohtlingk and Roth understand *viṣṇuṇa* of the changing phases of the moon.

⁶¹ Agni, according to the commentator. *Atra yonim itī lingād Agnir uchyate* |

of sacrifice, wise, amidst the gods. 3. Another⁶³ holds in his hand an iron axe, steadfast, among the gods. 4. Another⁶⁴ holds the thunderbolt poised in his hand, with which he slays his enemies. 5. Another,⁶⁵ bright, fiery, possessing healing remedies, holds a sharp weapon in his hand. 6. Another⁶⁶ watches the roads like a robber: he knows the treasures. 7. Another,⁶⁷ wide-stepping, strode three [strides, in the regions] where the gods rejoice. 8. Two [others]⁶⁷ ride on birds (horses) with one [goddess]: they dwell afar, as if abroad. 9. Two [others],⁶⁸ the highest, have made their abode in the sky, monarchs, worshipped with butter. 10. Some, worshipping, have meditated a great sâma-hymn, by which they have caused the sun to shine."

R. V. viii. 31, 10.—*Ā śarma parvatānām vṛjimahe nadīnām ā Viṣṇoḥ sachā-bhuvāḥ* | "We seek for protection from the mountains, the rivers, and Viṣṇu who is associated with them."

R. V. viii. 35, 1, 14.—1. *Agninā Indreṇa Varuṇena Viṣṇunā Ādityaiḥ Rudrair Vasubhiḥ sachā-bhuvā* | *sajoshasā Ushasā Sūryeṇa cha somam pibātam Āśvinā* | 14. *Angirasvantā uta Viṣṇuvantā Marutvantā jaritūr gachhatho havam ityādi* | "Āśvins, drink the soma-juice, united with Agni, Indra, Varuṇa, Viṣṇu, the Ādityas, Rudra, the Vasus, and associated with Ushas and Sūrya. 14. Attended by Angiras, by Viṣṇu, and by the Maruts, you come at the invocation of your worshipper."

R. V. viii. 66, 10.—*Viśvā it tā Viṣṇur ābharād urukramas tvā ishitaḥ* | *śatam mahishān kahīra-pākam odanaṁ varūham Indra omuṣham* | "The wide-striding Viṣṇu, urged by thee, O Indra, carried off all [these things], a hundred buffaloes, broth cooked with milk, and a fierce (?) hog."

This verse is considered by Dr. Aufrecht to contain an allusion to

⁶³ Tvāṣṭri.

⁶⁴ Indra.

⁶⁵ Rudra. Compare R. V. i. 43, 4, where Rudra is named, and the same epithet, *jalāśha-bheśhaja*, is applied to him, and R. V. vii. 35, 6, where he is called *jalāśha*, "healing."

⁶⁶ Pūshan.

⁶⁷ Viṣṇu.

⁶⁸ The Āśvins. In various passages of the R. V., the daughter of the Sun is said to ride on the car of the Āśvins. See the account of these deities in the fifth volume of this work. In R. V. v. 73, 5, the goddess is called Sūryā.

⁶⁹ Mitra and Varuṇa.

some myth (also referred to in R. V. i. 61, 7, 'quoted in p. 67), in which Viṣṇu appears to have been represented as carrying off cattle, a hog, and other provisions for the use of Indra. Compare Professor Wilson's note (d) on R. V. i. 61, 7. The same story may be alluded to in R. V. vi. 17, 11, above, p. 81. See also the note there.

Sāyaṇa gives two explanations of the verse (viii. 66, 10), that of the Nairuktas or etymologists, and that of the Aitihasikas or recorders of legends. I cite the latter only. The story there told is the same as I have already cited above (pp. 39 f.) from the Taittirīya Saṁhitā; but it is here given in a different and conciser version. Part of the following quotation consists of Sāyaṇa's own application of two Vedic texts, R. V. i. 61, 7, quoted above, p. 67, and viii. 66, 10, which has just been given.

Aitiḥāsika-pakṣe | charaka-brāhmaṇe itiḥāsaḥ ūpnāyate | "Viṣṇur yajnaḥ | sa devebhyaḥ ātmānam antarahāt | tam anya-devatāḥ na avindan | Indras tv aveṣṭi | sa Indram abravīt 'ko bhavān' iti | tam Indrah pratyabravīt 'aham durgānām asurānām cha hantā | bhavāns tu kaḥ' iti | so 'bravīt 'aham durgād āhartā | tvam tu yadi durgānām asurānām cha hantā tato 'yaṁ varāho vāma-muṣaḥ ekaviṁśatyāḥ purāṁ pāre 'śmanmayīnām vasati | tasminn asurānām vasu vāmaṁ asti | tam imaṁ jahi' iti | tasya Indras tūḥ puro bhittvā hridayam avidhyat | adhi tatra yad ūṣit tad Viṣṇur āharat" iti | so 'yam itiḥāso "asya id u mātuḥ savaneṣu" "viśvā it tā Viṣṇur" ity ābhyām pratipāditaḥ | tayor madhye "asya id u mātur" ity atra Viṣṇunā "he Indra tvam 'durgānām hantā' ity ātmānam kathayasi tarhi vāma-muṣaṁ varāham asuraṁ jahi" ity uktārtho "vidhyad varāham" iti pādēna pratipāditaḥ | Indreṇa cha 'Viṣṇo tvam 'durgād āhartā" iti brāṣhe | mayā purāṇi jīṭāny asuraś cha ghātitaḥ tasya vāmaṁ vasu ānaya' ity ukto Viṣṇu-mūrtis tasya Varāḥasurasya dhanam mumoṣa | so 'rtho "muṣāyad Viṣṇuḥ pachatam" iti pādēna sūchitaḥ | sa kim punar muṣhitavān iti tad atra uchyate "viśvā it tā" iti |

"On the part of the Aitiḥāsikas a story is recorded in the Charaka Brāhmaṇa (i.e. the Brāhmaṇa of the Black Yajur Veda): 'Viṣṇu is the sacrifice. He withdrew himself from the sight of the gods. The other gods did not discover him; but Indra knew [where he was]. He said to Indra, Who art thou? Indra replied, I am the destroyer of castles, and Asuras; but who art thou? He said, I am he who

removes [the spoil] from the castle: but if thou art the destroyer of castles and Asuras, then this Varāha, a plunderer of goods, dwells on the other side of twenty-one stone ramparts; in him abide the wealth and property of the Asuras: slay him. Indra broke through these ramparts, and pierced his heart; and Vishṇu carried off all that was found there.' This story is set forth in the two verses, the one beginning 'Having at the libations,' etc. (R. V. i. 61, 7), and 'The wide-striding Vishṇu,' etc. (viii. 66, 10). In the fourth quarter of the first of these verses the words 'pierced the boar' (Varāha) refer to the clause of this story in which Vishṇu says, 'Thou, Indra, callest thyself a destroyer of castles; slay then the Asura Varāha, the plunderer of goods.' The third quarter of the same verse, 'the impetuous Vishṇu stole the cooked mugs,' alludes to the other clause of the story in which the being in the form of Vishṇu, being addressed by Indra in the words, 'Vishṇu, thou callest thyself the being who carries off goods from the castle. I (Indra) have conquered the castles and slain the Asura; now, therefore, bring the treasures plundered, the property of the Asura Varāha.' But what was it that he plundered? That is declared in the words, the wide-striding Vishṇu, etc. (viii. 66, 10)." The verse is then explained. The story in the Brāhmaṇa seems to be made up from the obscure hints in the hymns.

R. V. viii. 72, 7 (=Vāj. S. 33, 47).—*Adhi na Indra eshām Vishṇo sajātyānām | ita Maruto Aśvinā* | "Remember, Indra, Vishṇu, Maruts, Aśvins, us thy kinsmen."

R. V. ix. 33, 3 (S. V. 2, 116).—*Sutaḥ Indrāya Vāyave Varuṇāya Marudbhyaḥ | somaḥ arshanti Vishṇave* | "The soma-draughts poured forth, hasten to Indra, Vāyu, Varuṇa, the Maruts, and to Vishṇu."

R. V. ix. 34, 2.—*Sutaḥ Indrāya Vāyave Varuṇāya Marudbhyaḥ | somo arshati Vishṇave* | "The soma hastens to Indra, Vāyu, Varuṇa, the Maruts, and Vishṇu." ~.

R. V. ix. 56, 4.—*Tram Indrāya Vishṇave svādur Indo pari srava | nrin stotrin pāhi amhasaḥ* | "Indu, do thou flow, sweet, to Indra, to Vishṇu. Preserve from sin the men who praise thee."

R. V. ix. 63, 3.—*Sutaḥ Indrāya Vishṇave somaḥ kalāśa aksharat | madhumān astu Vāyave* | "The soma, when poured forth, flowed into the vessel for Indra, for Vishṇu. May it be honied for Vāyu."

R. V. ix. 65, 20 (S. V. 2, 345).—*Apsāḥ Indrāya Vāyave Varuṇāya Maruḍbhyāḥ | somo arshati Vishṇave* | “Pouring forth streams, the soma hastens to Indra, Vāyu, Varuṇa, the Maruts, and to Vishṇu.”

R. V. ix. 90, 5.—*Matsi Soma Varuṇam matsi Mitrā matsi Indram Indo pavamāna Vishṇuni | matsi śardho Maruṭam matsi devān matsi mahām Indram Indo madāya* | “Soma, Indu, purified, thou exhilaratest Varuṇa, thou exhilaratest Mitrā, thou exhilaratest Indra, thou exhilaratest Vishṇu, thou exhilaratest the troop of the Maruts, thou exhilaratest the gods, and the great Indra, that they may be merry.”

R. V. ix. 96, 5 (=S. V. ii. 293).—*Somaḥ pavate janitā matinām janitā divo janitā prithivyāḥ | janitā Agner janitā Sūryasya janitā Indrasya janitā uta Vishṇoḥ* | “Soma is purified [he who is] the generator of hymns, the generator of the Sky, the generator of the Earth, the generator of Agni, the generator of Sūrya, the generator of Indra, and the generator of Vishṇu.”

This verse is quoted, and thus explained in the Nirukta-*pariśiṣṭa*, ii. 12: *Somaḥ pavate | somaḥ sūryaḥ prasavanāt | janitā matinām prakūṣa-karmaṇām āditya-raśmīnām divo dyotana-karmaṇām āditya-raśmīnām prithivyāḥ prathana-karmaṇām āditya-raśmīnām Agner gati-karmaṇām āditya-raśmīnām Sūryasya svikaraṇa-karmaṇām āditya-raśmīnām Indrasya aiśvarya-karmaṇām āditya-raśmīnām Vishṇor vyāpti-karmaṇām āditya-raśmīnām ity adhidaivatam | atha adhyātman | somaḥ ātmā apy etasmād eva indriyāṇām janitā ity arthuh | api vā sarvābhir vibhūtibhir vōbhūtata (?) ātmā ity ātma-gatim āchashṭe* | “Soma is purified. Soma is ‘sūrya’ (the sun), from generating (*prasavanāt*). He is the generator of hymns (or thoughts), i.e. of those solar rays whose function it is to reveal; of the Sky, i.e. of those solar rays whose function it is to shine; of the Earth, i.e. of those solar rays whose function it is to spread; of Agni, i.e. of those solar rays whose function it is to move; of Sūrya, i.e. of those solar rays whose function it is to appropriate (*svikaraṇa*); of Indra, i.e. of those solar rays whose function is sovereignty; of Vishṇu, i.e. of those solar rays whose function is diffusion: such is the mythological explanation. Now follows the spiritual interpretation, i.e. that which refers to soul. Soma is also the soul; and for this cause he is the generator of the senses: such is the meaning. Or, he thus declares the course of the soul, that it is variously modified by all its changing manifestations.”

R. V. ix. 166, 6. (=S. V. ii. 366).—*Pavasva vāja-sātamah pavitre dhāraya sutaḥ | Indraya Soma Vishṇave devobhyo madhumattamah |* “Soma, be purified, dispenser of strength, poured out in a stream into the filter, for Indra, for Vishṇu, for the gods, most honied.”

R. V. x. 1, 3.—*Vishṇur iṭhā paramam cśya vidvān jāto bṛhann abhi pāti tṛtīyam | aśa yad asya payo akrataḥ svaṁ sachetaso abhi achanti atra |* “Vishṇu, knowing thus his (Agni’s) highest [birth-place], when born, the great being, protects his third [birth-place, on earth]. Men unanimously worship him here, when they offer him their libation face to face.”⁶⁹

R. V. x. 65, 1.—*Agnir Indro Varuṇo Mitro Aryamā Vāyuḥ Pūṣhā Sarasvatī sajoshasah | Ādityāḥ Vishṇur Marutaḥ Svar bṛihat Somo Rudro Aditir Brahmanaspatiḥ |* “Agni, Indra, Varuṇa, Mitra, Aryaman, Vāyu, Pūshan, Sarasvatī, associated together, the Ādityas, Vishṇu, the Maruts, the great Sky, Soma, Rudrā, Aditi, Brahmanaspati.”

R. V. x. 66, 4, 5.—*Aditir dyāvā-prithivī ṛitam mahad Indrā-Vishṇu Marutaḥ Svar bṛihat | devān Ādityān avase havāmahe Vasūn Rudrān Savitāraṁ sudaṁsasam | 5. Sarasvān dhūbhir Varuṇo dhṛitavṛataḥ Pūṣhā Vishṇur mahimā Vāyur Aśvinā | brahma-kṛito amṛitāḥ viśva-vedasah śarma no yaṁsan trivarūtham aṁhasah |*

“We invoke Aditi, Heaven and Earth, the great Ceremonial, Indra and Vishṇu, the Maruts, the great Sky, the divine Ādityas, to our succour, the Vasus, Rudras, and Savitṛi, the wonder-working. 5. May Sarasvat, through our prayers, may Varuṇa, whose ordinances are fixed, Pūshan, Vishṇu, the great Power, Vāyu, the Aśvins, the immortals, offerers of prayer, possessors of all wealth, grant us a triple protection from evil.”

R. V. x. 92, 11.—*Te hi dyāvā-prithivī bhūri-retasā Narāsāmsaḥ chaturango Yamo 'ditiḥ | devas Tvashṭā Dravinodah Ribhukshanaḥ prarodasī Maruto Vishṇur arkire |* “The prolific Heaven and Earth, the four-limbed Narāsansa, Yamā, Aditi, the god Tvashṭri, Dravinodas, the Ribhukshans, the two worlds, the Maruts, Vishṇu have been honoured.”

R. V. x. 113, 1.—*Tam asya dyāvā-prithivī sachetasā viśvebhīr devair anu tushmam āvatām | yad aī kṛiṇvāno mahimānam indriyam pītvi somasya kratumān avardhata | 2. Tam asya Vishṇur mahimānam ojasā*⁷⁰

⁶⁹ See above p. 66 f.; and the fifth volume of this work, p. 207.

⁷⁰ The same combination of words, *mahimānam ojasā*, occurs in R. V. v. 81, 3, above, p. 72.

*am̐tūm dadhanvān madhuno vi.rap̐sate | d̐yeb̐h̐ir Ind̐ro maghavā payā-
vab̐h̐ir V̐ritrām jaghanvān ab̐havad vap̐nyāḥ |* “The concordant heaven
and earth, with all the gods, have stimulated that vigour of his.
When he went on displaying his energetic greatness, drinking the
soma, the powerful god exulted. 2. Vishṇu, in his might, bringing
the soma plant, [the source of] his greatness, is full of the honied
juice. Indra, the opulent, with the gods attending, having slain V̐ritra,
became distinguished.”

R. V. x. 128, 2 (A. V. 5, 38).—*Mama devāḥ vihave santu sarve
Indravanto Maruto Viṣṇur Agnir ityādī |* “May the gods all attend
on my invocation, the Maruts with Indra, Vishṇu, Agni,” etc.

R. V. x. 141, 3 (Vāj. S. 9, 26; A. V. 3, 20, 4).—*Somaṁ rājānam
avase 'gniṁ gīrb̐h̐ir havāmāḥ*⁷⁰ | *Ādityān Viṣṇuṁ Sūryam brahmā-
ṇaḥ Bṛihaspatim |* . . . 5. (Vāj. S. 9, 27; A. V. 3, 20, 7.) *Arya-
maṇam Bṛihaspatim Indraṁ dānūya chodaya | Vātaṁ Viṣṇuṁ Saras-
vatīm Savitāranaḥ vājinam |* “We invoke with hymns king Soma,
to our aid, and the Ādityas, Vishṇu, Sūrya, and the priest Bṛihaspati.
5. Excite Aryaman, Bṛihaspati, Indra, to generosity, and Vāta, Vishṇu,
Sarasvatī, and Savitṛi, the heroic.”

R. V. x. 181, 1.—*Prathāś cha yasya Saprathāś cha nāma ānushṭu-
bhāya havisho havir yat | Dhātur dyutānāt Savitūś cha Viṣṇoḥ rathan-
taram ā jabhāra Vasishṭhaḥ |* 2. *Avindan te atihitāṁ yad āsīd yajnasya
dhāma paramaṁ guhā yat | Dhātur dyutānād Savitūś cha Viṣṇor Bhar-
advājo bṛihad ā chakre Agneḥ |* 3. *Te 'vindan manasā dīdhyānāḥ yajuh
skannam prathamāṁ devayānam | Dhātur dyutānād Savitūś cha Viṣṇor
ā Sūryād abharan gharman ete |*

“Vasishṭha has received from the shining Dhātṛi, from Savitṛi, and
from Vishṇu, the Rathantara, that which is the offering of the fourfold
sacrifice, whereof Prathas and Saprathas are the names. 2. These
[sages] discovered what was very far removed, the supreme and secret
abode of sacrifice. Bharadvāja has received the Bṛihat from the
shining Dhātṛi, from Savitṛi, from Vishṇu, and from Agni. 3. Con-
templating with their minds, these [sages] discovered the descended
Yajush, the first path to the gods. From the shining Dhātṛi, Savitṛi,
Vishṇu, Sūrya, they brought down Gharma.”

R. V. x. 184, 1 (= A. V. 5, 25, 6).—*Viṣṇur yoniṁ kalpayatu Tvashṭā*

⁷⁰ The Vājasaneyi Sanhitā reads *anv̐rab̐h̐āmāḥ* instead of *gīrb̐h̐ir havāmāḥ*.

rāpāñi pīṁśatu | a vīnohatir Prajāpatir' Dhātā garbhaṁ dadhātu te |
 "Let Vishṇu form the womb; let Tvashṭri mould the forms; let Prajāpati infuse [the seminal principle]; let Dhātṛi form the embryo."

SECT. II.—*Subordinate position occupied by Vishṇu in the hymns of the Rig-veda as compared with other deities.*

The preceding passages are all, or nearly all, which the Rig-veda contains regarding Vishṇu. In my remarks on R. V. i. 22, 16 ff. (above p. 64 ff.), I have quoted the opinions of two of the most ancient interpreters of the Veda, Śākapūni and Aurnāvābha, on the character of Vishṇu. The former regards him as a god who, in what are called his three strides, is manifested in a threefold form, as Agni on earth, as Indra or Vāyu in the atmosphere, and as the Sun in heaven. The second writer, Aurnāvābha, on the other hand, interprets Vishṇu's three strides as the rising, culmination, and the setting of the sun. These three strides are also noticed, as we have seen above, in R. V. i. 154, 1, 2, 3, 4; i. 155, 4, 5; vi. 49, 13; vii. 100, 3, 4; viii. 29, 7; while in other places (R. V. ii. 1, 3; iii. 54, 14; iv. 3, 7; iv. 18, 11; viii. 89, 12; v. 3, 3; v. 87, 4; viii. 9, 12; viii. 66, 10; x. 1, 3) the epithet "wide-stepping," or "wide-striding," is either applied to this deity, or, at least, some allusion is made to this function, or to this god's station in the heavens. In R. V. vi. 69, 5, and vii. 99, 6, Indra is associated with Vishṇu as taking vast strides.

As the peculiar divine office of Vishṇu, indicated by his three steps, stages, or stations, was differently understood by the oldest interpreters whose opinions have been handed down to us, it is natural to suppose that it was not so clearly defined or understood as the functions of some of the other gods, as Agni and Indra for example. But the specific character of many, I may say most, of the Vedic gods is far from being distinctly determined in the hymns.

Some other acts of even a higher character are attributed to Vishṇu. In R. V. i. 154, 1, 2; vii. 99, 2, 3, he is said to have established the heavens and the earth, to contain all the worlds in his strides; in R. V. vi. 69, 5, and vii. 99, 4, to have, with Indra, made the atmosphere wide, stretched out the worlds, produced the sun, the dawn and fire; in R. V. i. 156, 4, to have received

the homage of Varuṇa; while in R. V. vii. 99, 2, his greatness is described as having no limit within the ken of present or future beings. The attributes ascribed to Vishṇu in some of these passages are such that, if these latter stood alone in the Rig-veda, they might lead us to suppose that this deity was regarded by the Vedic Rishis as the chief of all the gods. But, as we have already seen, Indra is associated with Vishṇu even in some of those texts in which the latter is most highly magnified (as R. V. i. 155, 1 ff.; vi. 69, 1 ff.; vii. 99, 4 ff.; viii. 15, 10); nay, in one place (R. V. viii. 12, 27), the power by which Vishṇu takes his three strides is described as being derived from Indra; in R. V. iv. 18, 11, vi. 20, 2, and viii. 89, 12, he is the associate of Indra; in another text (R. V. viii. 15, 9), Vishṇu is represented as celebrating Indra's praises; while, in R. V. ix. 96, 5, Vishṇu is said to have been generated by Soma.

It is also a fact, notorious to all the students of the Rig-veda, that the hymns and verses which are dedicated to the praises of Indra, Agni, Mitra, Varuṇa, the Maruts, the Aśvins, etc., are extremely numerous; whilst the entire hymns and separate verses in which Vishṇu is celebrated are much fewer, and have all, or nearly all, been adduced in the preceding pages.

The reader will also have noticed that, in a large number of shorter passages which I have cited, Vishṇu is introduced as the subject of laudation among a great crowd of other divinities, from whom he is there in no way distinguished as being in any respect superior. From this fact, we may conclude that he was regarded by those writers as on a footing of equality with the other deities.

Further, the Rig-veda contains numerous texts in which the Rishis ascribe to Indra, Varuṇa, and other gods, the same high and awful attributes and functions which are spoken of in the hymns before cited as belonging to Vishṇu. I shall quote a sufficient number of these texts to show that, in the Rig-veda, Vishṇu does not hold a higher rank than several of these other divinities. If, on the other hand, we look to the large number of texts, in which, as I have just stated, some of the other gods are celebrated, and to the comparatively small number of those in which Vishṇu is exclusively or prominently magnified, we shall come to the conclusion that the latter deity occupied a somewhat subordinate place in the estimation and affections of the ancient rishis

I shall first adduce a number of passages in which divine attributes and functions of the highest character are ascribed to Indra.⁷¹

R. V. i. 7, 3—*Indro dīrghāya cakshase ā sūryam rohayad divi ityādi* | “Indra has raised up the sun in the sky to be seen from afar,” etc.

R. V. i. 52, 8.— . . . *ayachhathāh bāhor vajram āyasam adhārayo divi ā sūryam dṛiṣe* | . . . 12. *Tvam asya pāre rajaso vyomanaḥ svabhūty-ojāḥ avase dhṛiṣhan-manah | chakṛiṣhe bhūmim pratimānam ojasah apah svaḥ paribhūr eshi ā divam* | 13. *Tvam bhuvah pratimānam prithivyāḥ ṛiṣha-vīrasya bṛihataḥ patir bhūḥ | viśvam ā aprāḥ antarikṣham mahitvā satyam addha nakir anyas tvāvān* | 14. *Na yasya dyāvā-prithivī anu vyacho na sindhavo rajaso antam ānaśuḥ | nota svarīṣṭim made asya yudhyataḥ eko anyach chakṛiṣhe viśvam ānushak* |

“Thou hast grasped in thine arms the iron thunderbolt; thou hast placed the sun in the sky to be viewed. . . . 12. [Dwelling] on the further side of this atmospheric world, deriving thy power from thyself, daring in spirit, thou, for our advantage, hast made the earth, the counterpart⁷² of [thy] energy; encompassing the waters and the sky, thou reachest up to heaven. 13. Thou art the counterpart of the earth, the lord of the lofty sky, with its exalted heroes. Thou hast filled⁷³ the whole atmosphere with thy greatness. Truly there is none other like unto thee.⁷⁴ 14. Whose vastness neither heaven and earth have equalled, nor the rivers of the atmosphere have attained its limit,—not when, in his exhilaration, he fought against the appropriator of the rain (?); thou alone hast made everything else in due succession.”

R. V. i. 55, 1.—*Divas chid asya varimā vi paprathe Indram na mahnā prithivī chana prati* | “His vastness is extended even beyond the sky: the earth is not comparable to Indra in greatness.”

R. V. i. 61, 9.—*Asya id eva prarīriche mahitvāṁ divas prithivyāḥ pari antarikṣāt ityādi* | “His greatness transcends the sky, the earth, and surpasses the atmosphere,” etc.

⁷¹ Compare the additional texts of the same tenor in the fifth vol. of this work, pp. 99 ff.

⁷² Compare R. V. i. 102, 8; ii. 12, 9; x. 111, 5 (below). The word *pratimāna* also occurs in R. V. x. 138, 3.—See the second volume of this work, p. 362.

⁷³ Compare R. V. i. 81, 6; ii. 15, 2; vi. 17, 7; vii. 20, 4; vii. 20, 4; vii. 98, 3; and x. 134, 1 (below).

⁷⁴ Compare R. V. i. 81, 6; iv. 30, 1; vi. 30, 4; and vii. 32, 23 (below).

R. V. i. 81, 5.—*Ā papraṇ pāṛthivāṃ rajo badbadhe rochanā divi | na tvāvān Indra kśāhāna na jāto na janishyat- ati viśvāṃ vavakshītha |* “He has filled the terrestrial region: he has fastened the luminaries in the sky. No one like thee, Indra, hath been born, or shall be born: thou hast transcended the universe.”

R. V. i. 102, 8.—*Trivishṭi-dhātu pratimānam ojasas tiro bhāmīr nripate triṇi rochanā | ati idaṃ viśvāṃ dhruvanāṃ vavakshītha āsātrur Indra janushā sanād asi |* “The three worlds, O king, the three luminaries are a triple counterpart of [thy] energy. Thou hast transcended this whole universe. By nature, Indra, thou art of old without an enemy.”⁷⁵

R. V. i. 103, 2.—*Sa dhārayat prithivīm paprathachcha vajreṇa hatvā nir apaḥ sasarja | ahann Āhim ityādi |* “He established the earth and stretched it out; smiting with the thunderbolt, he let loose the waters. He slew Ahi,” etc.

R. V. i. 121, 2.—*Stambhād hā dyām ityādi |* 3. . . . *tastambhād dyām chatushpade naryūya dvipade |* “He has supported the sky, etc. 3. . . . He has propped up the sky for the four-footed [beasts], and for the two-footed race of man.”

R. V. ii. 12, 1 (Nirukta, x. 10).—*Yo jātaḥ eva prathamō manasvān devo devān kratunā paryabhūṣhat*⁷⁶ *| Yasya śuśhmād rodasī abhyasetām nṛimṇasya mahnā sa janāsaḥ Indrah |* 2. *Yah prithivīm vyathamānam adṛimhad yah parvatūn prakupitūn aramṇāt | yo antarikṣhaṃ vimamsa variyo yo dyām astabhnāt sa janāsaḥ Indrah |* 9. . . . *Yo viśvasya pratimānam babhūva yo achyuta-chyut sa janāsaḥ Indrah |* 13. *Dyāvā chid asmaḥ prithivī namete śuśhmāch chid aśya parvatāḥ bhayante ityādi |*

“He who, immediately on his birth, the first, the wise, surpassed the gods in force; at whose might the two worlds shook, through the greatness of his strength, he, O men, is Indra. 2. He who fixed the quivering earth; who gave stability to the agitated mountains;

⁷⁵ Compare R.V. viii. 21, 13; x. 133, 2 (below).

⁷⁶ *Kratunā karmaṇā paryabhavat paryagrīhāt paryarakṣad atyakrāmad vā . . . nṛimṇasya mahnā balasya mahattvena.*—Nirukta. At the end of the comment the writer adds: *iti rīsher dṛṣṭīrthasya prītur bhavaty ākhyāna-saṁyuktā |* “Thus when the rishi has seen the subject [of his hymn], gratification ensues, conjoined with a narrative.”

who measured" the vast atmosphere; who propped up the sky, he, O men, is Indra. 9. . . He who has been a counterpart of the universe; who casts down the unshaken, he, O men, is Indra. . . 13. Even the sky and the earth bow down to him; even of his might the mountains are afraid," etc.

R. V. ii. 15, 1.—*Pra gha nu aṣya mahato mahāni satyā satyaṣya karaṇāni vooham | trikadrakeshu apīdat sutasya aṣya made ahiṃ Indro jaghāna |* 2. *Avamśe dyām astabhāyad bṛihantam ā rodasī aprīṇad antarikṣham | sa dhārayat prithivīm paprathach cha somasya tā made Indras cakāra |* 3. *Sadmeva prācho vi mimāya mānair ityādi |*

"I declare the mighty deeds of this mighty one; the true acts of this true one. From the three cups Indra drank of the soma, and in its exhilaration he slew Ahi. 2. He propped up the vast sky in empty space;⁷⁷ he hath filled the two worlds, and the atmosphere. He hath upheld the earth, and stretched it out. Indra has done these things in the exhilaration of the soma. 3. He measured with measures the eastern (regions) as an abode," etc.

R. V. iii. 30, 9.—*Ni sāmānām ishirām Indra bhāmim mahim apūrām sadane sasattha | astabhñād dyām vṛishabho antarikṣham arahantu āpas tvayeha prasūtāḥ |* "Thou, Indra, hast fixed in its place the level, the blooming," earth, the great, the boundless. The vigorous god has propped up the sky, and the atmosphere: may the waters flow, sent forth now by thee."

R. V. iii. 32, 7.—*Yajūma id namasā vṛiddham Indram bṛihantam rishvam ajaram yuvānam | yasya priye mamatur yajñiyasya na rodasī mahimānam mamāte |* 8. *Indrasya karma sukrītā purūṇi vratāni devāḥ na minanti viśve | dādharma yaḥ prithivīm dyām utemām jajāna sūryam uhasam sudamśāḥ |* 9. *Adrogha satyaṃ tava tad mahitvaṃ sadyo yaj jāto apībo ha somam | na dyūvaḥ Indra tavasas te ojo nāhā na māśāḥ śarado varanta⁸⁰ |*

⁷⁷ Compare R. V. i. 164, 1, 3, and the other corresponding passages above, p. 69 ff.; and R. V. ii. 15, 3, immediately following. The word here, however, may mean "constructed." With the first part of the verse compare R. V. x. 149, 1, below (p. 110).

⁷⁸ Compare R. V. x. 149, 1 (below); and Job xvi. 7, "He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing." See also R. V. x. 111. 5; and vi. 72, 2 (below).

⁷⁹ Bohtlingk and Roth, *s.v.*, explain *ishira* as meaning "fresh," "blooming."

⁸⁰ Compare verse 16 of this same hymn, and R. V. viii. 77, 3: *Na tvā bṛihanto adrogo varanta |* "The mighty mountains do not stop thee."

"We worship, with reverence, the mighty Indra, the powerful, the exalted, the undecaying, the 'youthful' The beloved⁸¹ worlds (heaven and earth) have not measured, nor do they [now] measure, the greatness of this adorable being.⁸² 8. Many are the excellent works which Indra has done; not all the gods are able to frustrate the counsels of him, who established the earth, and this sky, and, wonder-working, produced the sun and the dawn. 9. O innoxious god, thy greatness has been veritable since that time when, as soon as thou wast born, thou didst drink the soma. Neither the heavens, nor the days, nor the months, nor the seasons, can resist the energy of thee [who art] mighty."

R. V. iii. 44, 3.—*Dyām Indro haridhāyasam prithivīm harivarpaṣam | adhārayad ityādi* | "Indra upheld the sky with its golden supports, and the earth with its golden form," etc.⁸³

R. V. iv. 16, 5.—*Pavakṣhe Indro amitam ṛjīṣhī ubhe ā prapau rodasī mahitvā | atas chid asya mahimā virechi abhi yo viśvā bhuvanā babhūva* | "The impetuous⁸⁴ Indra hath waxed immeasurably; he has filled both worlds with his vastness. Even beyond this extends the majesty of him who transcends all the worlds."

R. V. iv. 30, 1.—*Nakir Indra tvad uttaro na jyāyān asti Vṛitrahān | nakir eva yathā tvam* | "There is none, Indra, higher than thee, or superior to thee, thou slayer of Vṛitra; neither is there any like thee."

R. V. vi. 17, 7.—*Pāprātha kṣhām mahi daṁso vi ūrvīm upa dyām ṛishvo bṛihad Indra stabhāyāḥ | adhārayo rodasī devaput্রে pratne mātara yāhvī rītasya* | "Thou hast filled the broad earth with thy mighty

⁸¹ Sūyana explains *priye* as meaning *aparimite*, "immeasurable."—See vii. 87, 2.

⁸² Dr. Aufrecht proposes to translate the last clause thus. "his beloved (spouses), heaven and earth, imagine, but do not measure (=comprehend) the greatness of this holy being." He regards the repetition of the root *mā* "to measure" in two different forms as purposeless, and conjectures that *mamatuḥ* may be the perfect of *man*, and used for *mamanatuḥ* or *mamnatuḥ*. Compare the aorist *amata*, and *asavān* for *asavān*; see also R. V. vii. 31, 7: *Mahān asi yasya te nu svadhāvarī sahaḥ | mamnāte Indra rodasī* | "Thou art great, (thou) to whose energy the self-supporting Heaven and Earth have submitted themselves."

⁸³ In the hymn from which this verse is taken, the changes are rung on the words *hari*, *harita*, etc.

⁸⁴ See Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon under the word *ṛjīṣhin*, and Benfey's note 260, on R. V. i. 32, 6, in his "Orient and Occident." The verse before us (iv. 16, 5) is translated by the same author in his Glossary to S. V., p. 162. See also his Glossary to the Sāmaveda, s.v. *ṛjīṣhin*.

works; thou, Indra, exalted, hast mightily propped up the sky; thou hast supported the two worlds, of whom the gods are the offspring, the ancient and mighty parents of holy rites."

R. V. vi. 30, 4.—*Satyam it tad na tvāvān anyo asti Indra devo na martyo jyāyān ityādi* | "This is a truth, there is no other, god or mortal, like thee, Indra, or greater than thee," etc.

R. V. vi. 31, 2.—*Tvad-bhiyā Indra pāṛthivāni viśvā achyutā chit chyāvayante rajāmsi | dyāvā-kṣhāmā parvatāso vanāni viśvān drīḷham bhayate ajmann ā te* | "Through fear of thee, Indra, all the mundane regions, however steady, totter; heaven and earth, mountains, forests, everything that is fixed, is afraid at thy coming."

R. V. vi. 38, 3.—*Taṁ vo dhiyā paramayā purājām ajaram Indram abhi anūshi arkair ityādi* | "I have lauded with an excellent prayer, and with praises, thee, Indra, born of old, and undecaying."

R. V. vii. 20, 4.—*Ubhe chid Indra rodasī mahitvā ā paprātha tavishibhis tvishmaḥ ityādi* | "Thou, powerful Indra, hast filled both worlds with thy mighty deeds," etc.

R. V. vii. 32, 16.—*Tva id Indra avamaṁ vasu tvam pushyasi madhyamam | satrā viśvasya paramasya rājasi nakis tvā gosku vṛinvate* | . . . 22. *Abhi tvā śūra nonumaḥ adugdhāḥ iva dhenavaḥ | īśānam asya jagataḥ swardṛiṣam īśānam Indra tasthushaḥ* | 23. *Na tvāvān anyo divyo na pāṛthivo na jāto na janishyate ityādi*⁸⁵ |

"Thine, O Indra, is the lowest wealth; thou possessest the middle; verily thou rulest over all the very highest; none resist thee among the cattle. . . . 22. We, O heroic Indra, like un milked cows, approach with our praises thee who art the heavenly lord of this moving, and of the stationary [world]. 23. No one, celestial or terrestrial, has been born, or shall be born, like to thee."

R. V. vii. 98, 3 (=A. V. 20, 87, 3).—*Ā Indra paprātha uru antarikṣam yudhā devebhyo varivāś chakartha* | . . . "Indra, thou hast filled the wide sky: thou hast by battle acquired freedom for the gods."⁸⁶

⁸⁵ This entire hymn is translated in Müller's *Anc. Sansk. Lit.* pp. 543 ff.

⁸⁶ The words at the close of this verse occur also in R. V. i. 59, 5 (see below). In regard to *varivāś*, compare R. V. i. 63, 7: *amloḥ rājan varivāś Pūruve kaḥ* | "Thou affordedst relief to Pūru from his strait." The word occurs R. V. ix. 97, 16, in the plural, *varivāśi kṛiṇvan*. In the Nighantu, 2, 10, it is said to mean "wealth."

R. V. viii. 3, 6 (=S. V. ii. 938).—*Indro mahā rodasī paprathasā chhavaḥ Indraḥ sūryam arochayat* | *Indre hṛ viśvā bhuvanāni yemire ityādi* | “The mighty Indra by his power has spread out the two worlds; Indra has lighted up the Sun: on Indra all the worlds are supported,” etc.⁸⁷

R. V. viii. 21, 13 (=S. V. 1, 399; A. V. 20, 114, 1).—*Abhrātrivyo anā tvam anāpir Indra janushā sañād asi* | *yudhā id āpitvam ichhase* | “Indra, by thy nature, thou art indeed of old without a rival, without a fellow. By battle thou seekest alliance.”

R. V. viii. 36, 4.—*Janitā divo janitā prithivyaḥ ityādi* | “Generator of the sky, generator of the earth,” etc. (Indra).

R. V. viii. 37, 3.—*Ekarūd asya bhuvanasya rājasi ityādi* | “Thou rulest a sole monarch over this world,” etc. (Indra).

R. V. viii. 51, 2.—*Ayujō asamo nribhir ekaḥ kṛishṭīr ayasyaḥ* | *pūrvīr ati pravāṛidhe viśvā jātāny ojasā ityādi* | “Without a fellow, unequalled by men, [Indra] alone, unconquerable, has surpassed in power many tribes, and all creatures.”

R. V. viii. 59, 5 (=S. V. i. 278).—*Yad dyāvah Indra te satam satam bhūmīr uta syuḥ* | *na tvā vajrin sahasram sūryāḥ anu na jātam aṣṭa rodasī* | “If, Indra, a hundred skies, and a hundred earths were thine, a thousand suns could not equal thee, thunderer, nor could anything created, [nor] the two worlds.”

This verse is quoted and briefly commented on in the Nirukta Pariśiṣṭa i. 1, ff.: *Atha imāḥ atistutayaḥ ity āchakshate api vā sampratyayaḥ eva syād mahābhāgyād devatāyāḥ* | . . . *Yadi te Indra satam divaḥ satam bhūmayāḥ pratimānāni syur na tvā vajrin sahasram api sūryāḥ na dyāvā-prithivyāv apy abhyaśnuwītām iti* | “Now these [which follow] are what are called exaggerated praises; or they may be expressions of perfect faith owing to the grandeur of the Deity.” Then, after citing

⁸⁷ In the 8th verse of this hymn (=S. V. 2, 524; Vāj. S. 33, 97; A. V. 20, 99, 2) the following words occur: *asyed Indro vāṛidhe vṛishṇyaṁ savaḥ made sutasya viśṇavi* | “Indra increased his fecundating strength, in the exhilaration of this soma, at the sacrifice.” *Viśṇavi*, the word here rendered “sacrifice,” is the locative case of *viśṇu*. Böhtlingk and Roth, s.v., think the word here has this sense, as the Brāhmaṇas frequently employ the phrase *yajno vai Viśṇuḥ* | “Viśṇu is the sacrifice.” The commentator of the Vāj. Sanhita explains it by *sarva-sarira-vyūpake*, “That which pervades the whole body.” Sāyana, too, makes it = *kṛitma-dehasya vyūpake* |

passages referring to Agni and Varuna, the writer quotes the verse before us, and thus paraphrases it: "If, Indra, a hundred skies, a hundred earths be the counterparts [with which thou art compared], not even a thousand suns, O thunderer, nor heaven and earth, can equal thee."

R. V. viii. 67, 5.—*Nakam Indro nikartave na Sakrah parisaktave visvam śrinoti paśyati* | "Indra is not to be overcome, Sukra is not to be overpowered. He hears and sees all things."⁸⁸

R. V. viii. 77, 4.—*Yoddhā 'si krātva śavasota dāmsanā visvā jātū abhi majmanā | ā tvā ayam arkaḥ ūtaye vavartati yaṁ Gotamāḥ ajijanan* | 5. (S. V. 1, 312.) *Pra hi rivikṣhe ojasā divo antebhyas*⁸⁹ *pari | na tvā vivyācha rajaḥ Indra pāṛthivam anu svadhām vavakṣitha* |

"A warrior, thou surpasses all creatures in power, in vigour, in exploits, in strength. This hymn, which the Gotamas have generated, incites thee to succour us. 5. For by thy might thou hast overpassed the bounds of the sky. The mundane region hath not contained thee: thou hast grown according to thine own will."⁹⁰

R. V. viii. 78, 5 (≡ S. V. ii. 779 f.)—*Yaj jāyathāḥ apūrva Maghavan Vṛitra-hatyāya | tat pṛithivīm aprathayas tad astabhnāḥ uta dyām* | 6. *Tut te yajno ajāyata tad arkaḥ uta haskṛitiḥ | tad visvam abhibhūr asi yaj jātām yachcha jantvam* |⁹¹

"When thou, O unrivalled Maghavan (Indra), wast born for the destruction of Vṛitra, then thou didst spread out the earth, and then thou didst establish the sky. 6. Then was thy sacrifice produced; then thy hymn and thy song of praise. Then thou didst transcend all things that have been born, or shall be born."

R. V. viii. 82, 11.—*Yasya te nu chid ādiṣaṁ na minanti svarājyaṁ na devo na adhrigur janaḥ* | "Whose command, and empire, no one,—whether god, or audacious mortal,—can resist."

R. V. viii. 86, 9.—*Na tvā devāsaḥ āśata na martyāso adrivaḥ | visvā*

⁸⁸ This hymn is translated by Professor Müller, Zeitsch. D. M. G. for 1853, p. 375.

⁸⁹ Instead of *antebhyaḥ* the S. V. reads *sadbhyaḥ*.

⁹⁰ At the end of the verse the S. V. reads *ati visvam vavakṣitha* | "Thou hast transcended the universe." On the sense of *svadhā*, see Roth, *Illust. of Nir.* pp. 40 f. and 132; and Müller, *Tranal. of R. V.* vol. i. pp. 49 ff.

⁹¹ Compare the words *yaj bhūtām yachcha bhūvyam* in the Puruṣa Sūkta, R. V. x. 90, 2. See the first volume of this work, in the early part of which this entire hymn is translated.

jātāni śavaśā abhihūr asi ityādi | 10 (S. V. i. 37e). *Viśvāḥ pritanāḥ abhihūtaraṁ naraṁ*⁹² *sajus tatakeṣu Indraṁ jajanus cha rājase* | *kratvā varishṭhaṁ vare*⁹³ *āmurim uta ugram ojishṭhaṁ tavaśam*⁹⁴ *tarasvinam* |

"Thee, O hurler of rocks, neither gods nor mortals have equalled. Thou transcendest in power all creatures, etc. 10. They, united, have formed and generated for dominion the heroic Indra, the vanquisher of all armies, eminent in power, destroyer, fierce, strong, vigorous, and swift."

R. V. viii. 87, 2.—*Ivām Indra abhihūr asi tvaṁ sūryam arochayaḥ* | *viśvakarmā viśvadevo mahān asi* | "Thou, Indra, art the most powerful; thou hast kindled the sun; thou art great, the architect of all things, and the lord of all."

R. V. x. 43, 5 (=A. V. 20, 17, 5; Nir. 5, 22).—*Kṛitaṁ na śvaghñi vichinoti devane saṁvargaṁ yad Maghavā sūryaṁ jayat* | *na tat tē anyo anu vīryaṁ śakad na purāṇo Maghavān na uta nūtanah* | "When Maghavan has conquered spoils⁹⁵ from the sun, he is like a gamester who gathers in his gains at play.⁹⁶ No other, Maghavan, either old or recent, can imitate that thy prowess."

R. V. x. 48, 3.—*Mahyaṁ Tvashṭā vajram atakehād āyasaṁ mayi devāso avṛjann api kratum* | *mama anikaṁ sūryasya iva dustaram mām āryanti kṛitena kartvena cha* | "Tvashṭri fashioned for me (Indra) an iron thunderbolt; into me the gods have infused force. My splendour is unsurpassed, like that of the sun. Men praise me for what I have done and shall do."

R. V. x. 86, 1 (=A. V. xx. 126, 1).—. . . *viśvasmād Indrah uttaraḥ* | (Repeated at the close of every verse of this hymn.) "Indra is superior to every other."

⁹² The Sāma-veda reads *narah*.

⁹³ The Sāma-veda reads *kratve vare sthemany āmurim*. It is difficult to assign a sense to *vare* in the text.

⁹⁴ The Sāma-veda reads *tarasaṁ*.

⁹⁵ Sāyana explains *saṁvargaṁ* as = *saṁyag vṛishṭer varjayitūram* | "discharger of rain." The word, as Dr. Aufrecht informs me, occurs only once again in the R. V. viz. in viii. 64, 12: *saṁvargaṁ saṁ rayiṁ jaya* | and he adds that the translation "spoils" is supported by several passages of the S. P. Br. e.g. i. 7, 2, 24 (p. 69): *pitur dāyam uperyuḥ . . . kathaṁ nu imam api saṁvṛiṇyīmahi* (Schol. *apaharemaḥ*): Ibid. *samavṛiṇyāta, saṁvṛiṇkṛta*. S. P. Br. i. 9, 2, 34: *sarvaṁ yajnaṁ saṁvṛjya* (= *samṛpti-pūrvam saṁhṛitya*). In the R. V. Indra is called *samvṛit samatou* "the spoiler in battles."

⁹⁶ The same phrases occur in R. V. x. 42, 9, and A. V. 7, 50, 6; 20, 89, 9.

R. V. x. 111, 1.—*Manishinaḥ pra bhasadhvam manishām yathā yathā matayaḥ santi nṛṇām | Idraṁ satyaḥ ā irayāma kṛitebhiḥ sa hi vīro girvanasyur vidānaḥ |* 2. *Ritasya hi sadaso dhītir adyaut saṁ gārshteyo vṛishabho gobhir ānaḥ | ud atishṭhat tavishṇo ravena mahānti chid saṁvivyācha rajāṁsi |* 3. *Indraḥ kila śrutyai asya veda sa hi jiṣṇuḥ pathikṛit sūryāya | ād menām kṛiṇvann achyuto bhuvad goḥ patir divaḥ sanajāḥ apratītaḥ |* 4. *Indro mahnū mahato arṇavasya vratā aminād Angirobbhir grīṇānaḥ | purūṇi chid ni tatāna rajāṁsi dādḥura yo dharuṇaṁ satyatātā |* 5. *Indro divaḥ pratimānam pṛithivyāḥ viśvā veda savanū hanti Sushṇam | mahīm chid dyūm ā atanot sūryeṇa chūskambha chit skambhanena skabbīyān |*

“Sages, present the prayer, according as are the various thoughts of men. Let us move Indra, with his genuine acts, for he is a hero, and loves our hymns. 2. The hymn has shone forth from the place of sacrifice. The bull, offspring of a heifer, has approached the cows; he has arisen with a loud bellowing; he has embraced in himself the vast regions. 3. Indra by hearing is surely aware of this [hymn]. For he, the victorious, has formed a path for the sun, and then creating the female of the bull, became the unshaken, eternal and matchless lord of the sky (compare R. V. i. 51, 13; i. 121, 2). 4. Celebrated by the Angirases, Indra by his power has defeated the designs of the great streaming [cloud-demon];⁹⁷ he has stretched out many worlds, he who has laid a foundation in truth. 5. Indra, [who is] the counterpart of the heaven and of the earth, knows all libations, slays Sushṇa; with the sun, he has extended the vast sky, and, [being] a strong supporter, he has supported it with a support.”⁹⁸

R. V. x. 133, 2 (=S. V. ii. 1151).—*Tvaṁ sindhūn avāṣṛijaḥ adharācho akann Ahiṁ | āsattrur Indra jajñishe viśvam pushyasi vāryam ityādi |* “Thou hast let loose the streams to flow downwards; thou hast slain Ahi. Indra, thou hast been born without a foe: thou possessest all that is desirable,” etc.

R. V. x. 134, 1 (=S. V. i. 379).—*Ubhe yad Indra rodasī āpaprātha*

⁹⁷ That this is the allusion in the word *arṇava* is shown by the following passage: R. V. x. 67, 2.—*Indro mahnū mahato arṇavasga vi mūrdhānam abhinad Arbūdasya ityādi |* “Indra by his power split asunder the head of the great streaming Arbuda,” etc.

⁹⁸ Compare R. V. vi. 72, 2, below.

*ushāḥ iva | mahāntāṃ tvā mahīnāṃ saṃrājāṃ chakṣagānām | devī janitṛi
aṣṭjanad bhadrā janitṛi aṣṭjanat*⁹⁹ | “When thou, Indra, like the dawn,
didst fill both the worlds, a divine mother bore thee, the mighty
monarch of mighty creatures,—a gracious mother bore thee.”

How great soever the attributes assigned to Indra may be, we see that here he is not regarded as a self-existent being, but as the son of a mother. See the earlier part of the account of this deity in the fifth volume of this work.

The two following texts refer to Indra in conjunction with another god :

R. V. vi. 72, 2.—*Indrā-Somā vāsasyatha ushāsam ut sūryaṃ nayatho
jyotishā saha | upa dyāṃ skambhathuḥ skambhanena aprathatam prithi-
vīm mātaraṃ vi* | “Indra and Sōma, ye cause the dawn to shine, ye
make the sun to rise with the light. Ye have propped up the sky
with a support,¹⁰⁰ ye have spread out the earth, the mother.”

R. V. vii. 82, 5.—*Indrā-Varuṇā yad imāni chakrathur viśvā jātāni
bhūvanasya majmanā ityādi* | “Indra and Varuṇa, since ye have made
all these creatures of the world by your power,” etc.

The passages next following celebrate the divine attributes of Varuṇa :

R. V. i. 24, 8.—*Uruṃ hi rājā Varuṇas chakāra sūryāya panthām
anu-etavai u ityādi* | “King Varuṇa hath made a broad path for the
sun to follow,” etc.

R. V. ii. 27, 10.—*Tvaṃ viśveshām Varuṇa asi rājā ye cha devāḥ asura
ye cha martāḥ* | “Thou, divine Varuṇa, art king of all, both of those
who are gods, and of those who are men.”—Quoted in Müller’s *Anc.
Sansk. Lit.*, p. 534.

R. V. vi. 70, 1.—*Ghṛitavati bhūvanānām abhisriyā ūrvī prithivī ma-
dhu-dughe supesāsā | dyāvā-prithivī Varuṇasya dharmanā viśvakabhite
ajare bhūri-retasā* | “Full of fatness, the common abodes of creatures,
wide, broad, dropping sweetness, beautiful in form, heaven and earth
are sustained asunder by the support of Varuṇa, undecaying, abundant
in fertility.”

R. V. vii. 86, 1.—*Dhīrā tu asya mahinā janūṃshi vi yas tastambha
rodasi chid ūrvī | pro nākam riśvām nunude bṛihantāṃ doitā nakshatram
poprathach oha bhūma* | “Wise are his creations who by his power

⁹⁹ The last line is repeated at the close of each of the five following verses.

¹⁰⁰ Compare R. V. ii. 15, 2; x. 111, 5; and x. 149, 1, below.

propped asunder the two worlds, thought vast. He raised up the lofty and wide firmament, and spread out apart the stars and the earth."—This hymn is translated in Müller's Sansk. Lit., pp. 540 f.

R. V. vii. 87, 1.—*Radat patho Varunaḥ sūryāya pra arṇāṁsi samudriyā nadīnām | sargo*¹⁰⁰ *na śriṣṭo arvatir ritāyan chakāra mahir avanir ahabhyaḥ |* 2. *Ātmā te vāto rajaḥ ā pavinot paśur na bhūrnir yavaso sa-savān*¹⁰⁰ *| antar mahi bṛihatī rodasī ime viśvā te dhūma Varuṇa priyāni |*

"Varuṇa has opened out paths for the sun, and the courses of the rivers leading to the ocean. Like a troop (of horses) let loose, following the mares, he has made great channels for the days. 2. The wind, thy breath, has sounded through the atmosphere, like an impetuous beast rushing along a pasture. Within [thee ?] are these two great and vast worlds; all thy realms, O Varuṇa, are beloved."¹⁰¹

R. V. viii. 42, 1.—*Astabhnād dyām Asuro viśtavedāḥ amimita varimānam prithivyāḥ | āsidad viśvā bhuvanāni samrūd viśvā it tāni Varuṇasya vratāni |* 2. *Eva vandasva Varuṇaṁ bṛihantaṁ namasya dhīram amṛitasya gopām | sa naḥ śarma trivarūthaṁ viyāṁsad ityādi |*

"The omniscient Spirit (*Asura*) has propped up the sky; he has measured¹⁰² the expanse of the earth; he has occupied all the worlds, the monarch: all these are the achievements of Varuṇa. 2. Reverence, then, the mighty Varuṇa, bow down before the wise guardian of immortality. May he extend to us triple protection," etc.

The next texts refer to the Sun (Sūrya, Āditya, or Savitṛi):

R. V. i. 50, 7.—*Vi dyām eshi rajas prithvī ahā mimāno aktubhiḥ | paśyan janmāni Sūrya |* "Thou traversest the sky, the broad expanse, measuring the days with thy rays; beholding created things, O Sūrya."

R. V. viii. 90, 11, 12 (=S. V. ii. 1138, 9).—*Baḍ mahān asi Sūrya baḍ Āditya mahān asi | mahas te sato mahimā panasyato addha deva mahān asi | Baḥ Sūrya śravasā mahān asi satrū deva mahān asi | mahnā devānām asuryaḥ purohito vibhu jyotir adābhyam |*

"Verily, Sūrya, thou art great; verily, Āditya, thou art great. The majesty of thee who art great is celebrated: certainly, god, thou art great. 12. Verily, Sūrya, thou art great in renown: O god, thou art

¹⁰⁰ The word *sarga* occurs also in R. V. i. 190, 2; iii. 33, 4; vi. 32, 5; vi. 46, 13.

¹⁰⁰ In regard to this participle, see the note (82) on R. V. iii. 32, 7, above, p. 102.

¹⁰¹ See note (81) on R. V. iii. 32, 7, above, p. 102.

¹⁰² See above, p. 71.

truly great; through thy greatness thou art the "divine leader of the gods, the pervading, irresistible luminary."

R. V. x. 149, 1.—*Savitā yantraiḥ prithivīm aramṇād askambhane Savitā dyām adṛimhat | asvām iva adbhukshad dhunim antariksham atūrte baddhaṁ Savitā samudram | 2. Yatra samudraḥ skabhito vi-
aunaḍ apām napāt Savitā tasya vedā | ato bhūr ataḥ āḥ utthitāṁ rajo ato
dyāvā-prithivī aprathetām |*

"Savitṛi has established the earth by supports; Savitṛi has fixed the sky in unsupported space;¹⁰³ Savitṛi has milked the atmosphere, which resembles a sounding horse,—the ocean fastened in the impassable expanse. 2. Savitṛi, the son of the waters, knows the place where the ocean, supported, issued forth. From him the earth, from him the atmosphere arose; from him the heaven and earth extended."

¹⁰³ In later times, as is well known, the earth is represented in Hindu mythology as resting on the head of the serpent Śeṣha, or on some other support. Thus it is said in the Vishnu Pur. ii. 5, 19 (Wilson, Dr. Hall's ed. ii. 212): *Sa bibhrat śekhara-bhūtam aśeṣhaṁ kshiti-maṇḍalam | āste pātāla-mūla-sthaḥ Śeṣho 'śeṣha-sūrūrohitāḥ |* "Śeṣha, worshipped by all the gods, supports the whole region of the earth which forms a diadem on his head, and stands beneath the base of Pātāla." The Siddhāntas, or scientific astronomical works of India, however, maintain that the earth is unsupported. Thus it is said in the Siddhānta-siromani, iii. 2: *Bhūmeḥ piṇḍaḥ śaḍāṅka-jña-kavi-ravi-kujeyārki-nakshatra-kakṣā-vṛittair vṛitāḥ san mṛid-anīla-salīla-vyoma-tejomayo 'yam | nānyādhāraḥ sva-śaktyaiva viyati niyataṁ tiśṭhati ityādi |* . . . 4. *Mūrto dhartā ched dhāritṛyās tad-anyaś tasyāpyanyo 'syaisam atrānavasthā | antye kalpyā chet sva-śaktiḥ kim ādye kim no bhūmir ityādi |* which is thus translated by the late Mr. L. Wilkinson in the Bibl. Indica (new series), No. 13: "2. This globe of the earth formed of [the five elementary principles] earth, air, water, the ether, and fire, is perfectly round, and encompassed by the orbits of the Moon, Mercury, Venus, the Sun, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn, and by the constellations. It has no [material] supporter; but stands firmly in the expanse of heaven by its own inherent force. On its surface throughout subsist [in security] all animate and inanimate objects, Danujas and human beings, gods and Daityas." . . . "4. If the earth were supported by any material substance or living creature, then that would require a second supporter, and for that second a third would be required. Here we have the absurdity of an interminable series. If the last of the series be supposed to remain firm by its own inherent power, then why may not the same power be supposed to exist in the first—that is, in the earth? For is not the earth one of the forms of the eight-fold divinity, i.e. of Śiva?" Arya Bhaṭṭa, one of the most ancient of Indian scientific astronomers, even maintained that the alternation of day and night is the result of the rotation of the earth on its own axis. His words, as quoted by Mr. Colebrooke (Essays, ii. p. 392), are these: *Bha-panjaraḥ sthīro bhūr evāvṛityāvṛitya prāṭidivasikāś vādayātamayau sampādāyati nakshatra-grahūṇām |* "The starry firmament is fixed. It is the earth, which, continually revolving, produces the rising and setting of the constellations and planets."

The first of the preceding verses is quoted by Yāska (Nir. x. 32), and illustrated as follows: *S'avitā yantrañ prithivīm aramayat | anāram-bhane 'ntarikṣhe Savitā dyām adṛimhat | āsvam iva adhukṣhad dhunim antarikṣhe megham baddham atūrte baddham atūrne iti vā 'tvaramāṇe iti vā Savitā samuditāram iti | kam anyam madhyamād evam avakṣhyat | Ādityo 'pi Savitā vohyate.* "Savitri by supports has caused the earth to rest; Savitri has fixed the sky in the place which has no basis—the atmosphere. Savitri has milked the cloud fastened in the atmosphere,—the impassable, or the unhastening—(the cloud) sounding as a horse, and that which rises. What other god than the intermediate one (i.e. the deity residing in the atmosphere) would he have thus described? The sun also (whose place is in the sky) is called Savitri."

Prof. Roth (Illust. of Nir., p. 143) thus translates the verse: "Savitri has fixed the earth with supports, he has fastened the heaven in unsupported space; he has milked the atmosphere shaking itself like a horse, the stream which is confined within limits which cannot be overpassed." In his Lexicon, however, Prof. Roth gives to *dhuni* the sense of "sounding" (which is also adopted by Prof. M. Müller, Transl. of R. V. i. 95). He then observes: "According to Yāska the Savitri who is here mentioned must be the intermediate one, on account of his function in causing rain."

The following passages refer to Agni:

R. V. i. 59, 5.—*Divaś chit te bṛihato Jātavedo vaiśvānara pra ririche mahitvam | rājā kṛishṇinām asi mānushinām yudhā devebhyo varivaś chakartha |* "Jātavedas, present with all men, thy greatness surpasses even that of the vast sky. Thou art the king of human creatures; by battle thou hast obtained freedom for the gods" (see R. V. vii. 98, 3, above p. 103).

R. V. i. 67, 3.—*Ajo na kṣhām dādharma¹⁰³ prithivīm tastambha dyām mantrebhiḥ satyair ityādi |* "Like the moving [sun, or the unborn] he upheld the broad earth; he supported the sky with true texts," etc.

The next verses celebrate the greatness of Parjanya:

R. V. vii. 101, 4.—*Yasmin viśvāni bhuvanāni tasthus tistro dyāvas tredhā sasur apah ityādi |* 6. *Sa retodhāḥ vṛishabhāḥ śasvatinām tasminn ātmā jagataś tastushaśa |* (Compare R. V. i. 115, 1.) "He

¹⁰³ Comp. R. V. viii. 42, 10:—*Yāḥ skambhena vi rodasī ajo na dyām adhārayat |*

in whom all the worlds abide, and the three heavens, and [by whom] the waters flowed in three directions, etc. 8. He is the bull that impregnates all [the cows]: in him is the soul of the moving and stationary world" (comp. *sūryaḥ ātmā jagatas tastushaś cha*, R. V. i. 115, 1).

The next passage refers to the god called Gandharva:

R. V. x. 139, 5.—. . . *Divyo Gandharvo rajaso vimānaḥ* | "The divine Gandharva, measurer of the world," etc.

The last set of passages which I shall adduce celebrate the greatness of Soma:

R. V. ix. 61, 16 (= S. V. 1, 484).—*Pavamāno ajñjanad divas chitraṁ na tanyatum | jyotiṣ vaiśvānaram bṛihat* | "The purified [Soma] has generated the great light which is common to all mankind, like the wonderful thundering of the sky."

R. V. ix. 86, 28.—*Tvamāḥ prajāḥ divyasya retasas tvam viśvasya bhuvanasya rājasi | athedaṁ viśvam pavamāna te vāse tvam Indo pratishamo dhūmadhāḥ asi* | 29. *Tvam samudro asi viśvavit kave tavemāḥ panoha pradīso vidharmanī | tvam dyām cha prithiviṁ chāti jadhriṣhe tava jyotiṁśhi pavamāna sūryaḥ* | 30. *Tvam pavitre rajaso vidharmanī devebhyāḥ soma pavamāna pūyase | tvām Uśijāḥ prathamāḥ agribhūnata tūbhyemā viśvā bhuvanāni yemire* |

"All these creatures spring from thy divine seed; thou art the lord of the whole universe. All this, purified god, is under thy control; thou, Indu, art the first sustainer of the regions. 29. Thou, sage, art an all-containing ocean; all these five quarters of the world are upheld by thee. Thou hast ascended beyond the sky and the earth; thine, O purified god, are the luminaries and the sun. 30. In the filter which is the support of the world, thou, pure Soma, art purified for the gods. The Uśijes first gathered thee. To thee all these worlds have bowed."

R. V. ix. 89, 6.—*Viśvāmbho divo dharaṇaḥ prithivyāḥ viśvāḥ uta kṣhitayo haste asya ityādi* | "He is the supporter of the sky, the upholder of the earth: all men are in his hand."

R. V. ix. 96, 5, which has been quoted above (p. 94), should be again referred to here.

R. V. ix. 97, 24.—*Pavitrebhiḥ pavamāno nṛichakṣhāḥ rājā devānām uta martyānām ityādi* | "[Soma], purified by filters, the beholder of men, is the king of gods and of mortals," etc.

R. V. ix. 100, 8.—*Pavamāna mahi śravaś chitrebhīr yāsi raśmibhiḥ* ¹⁰⁴ | *śardhan taṁāṁsi jighnase viśvāni dāśuśho griḥe* | 9. *Tvaṁ dyāṁ cha mahi-
vratā prithivīm chāti jabhriśhe ityādi* | “Thou, pure [Soma], marchest
onward to great renown, by thy brilliant rays; daring, thou wilt
destroy all darkness in the house of thy worshipper. 9. Thou, achiever
of great deeds, hast ascended above heaven and earth,” etc.

R. V. ix. 107, 7.— . . . *Tvaṁ kavir abhavo deva-vītamah ā sūryaṁ
rohaya divi* | “Thou art a sage most pleasing to the gods; thou hast
caused the sun to rise in the sky.”

R. V. ix. 109, 4 (=S. V. ii. 591).—*Pavasva soma mahān samudraḥ
pitā devānām viśvā abhi dhāma* | “Be purified in all abodes, Soma,
[who art] a great ocean, the father of the gods,” etc.

The preceding texts are amply sufficient to show that Viṣṇu is not
the only god to whom the highest divine functions are ascribed in the
Veda, but that, on the contrary, the same attributes are assigned, and
with far greater frequency, to several of the other deities.

The following passage from Professor Müller's *Ancient Sanskrit
Literature* (p. 532 f.) shows that all the principal Vedic deities are, in
their turn, addressed by their worshippers as supreme :

“When these individual gods are invoked, they are not conceived as
limited by the power of others as superior or inferior in rank. Each
god is to the mind of the supplicants as good as all the gods. He is
felt, at the time, as a real divinity, as supreme and absolute, in spite of
the necessary limitations which, to our mind, a plurality of gods must
entail on every single god. All the rest disappear for a moment from
the vision of the poet, and he only who is to fulfil their desires stands
in full light before the eyes of the worshippers. ‘Among you, O gods,
there is none that is small, none that is young: you are all great
indeed,’ ¹⁰⁵ is a sentiment which, though, perhaps, not so distinctly
expressed as by Manu Vaivasvata, nevertheless, underlies all the poetry
of the Veda. Although the gods are sometimes distinctly invoked as
the great and the small, the young and the old (R. V. i. 27, 13), this is
only an attempt to find the most comprehensive expression for the
divine powers, and nowhere is any of the gods represented as the slave

¹⁰⁴ Compare R. V. ix. 4, 1 : *Sanū cha Soma jeehi cha pavamāna mahi śravaś* | and
ix. 83, 6 : *Jayan śravo bṛihat* |

¹⁰⁵ R. V. viii. 30, 1, quoted by Müller, p. 531.

of others. It would be easy to find, in the numerous hymns of the Veda, passages in which almost every single god is represented as supreme and absolute. In the first hymn of the Second Maṇḍala, Agni is called the ruler of the universe,¹⁰⁶ the lord of men, the wise king, the father, the brother, the son, and friend of men;¹⁰⁷ nay, all the powers and names of the others are distinctly ascribed to Agni. The hymn belongs, no doubt, to the modern compositions; yet, though Agni is thus highly exalted in it, nothing is said to disparage the divine character of the other gods. Indra is celebrated as the strongest god in the hymns as well as in the Brāhmaṇas, and the burden of one of the songs of the Tenth Book¹⁰⁸ is: *Viśvasmād Indra uttarāḥ* | 'Indra is greater than all.' Of Soma it is said that he was born great, and that he conquers every one.¹⁰⁹ He is called the king of the world,¹¹⁰ he has the power to prolong the life of men,¹¹¹ and in one verse he is called the maker of heaven and earth, of Agni, of Sūrya, of Indra, and of Viṣṇu.¹¹² If we read the next hymn, which is addressed to Varuṇa (*śarpasṛṣ*), we perceive that the god here invoked is, to the mind of the poet, supreme and almighty. Nevertheless, he is one of the gods who is almost always represented in fellowship with another, Mitra; and even in our hymn there is one verse, the sixth, in which Varuṇa and Mitra are invoked in the dual. Yet what more could human language achieve, in trying to express the idea of a divine and supreme power, than what our poet says of Varuṇa: 'Thou art lord of all, of heaven and earth.' Or, as is said in another hymn (ii. 27, 10), 'Thou art the king of all; of those who are gods, and of those who are men,' etc.

SECT. III.—*Viṣṇu as one of the Ādityas.*

In the hymns of the Veda the Ādityas, or sons of Aditi, are alluded to as being seven or eight in number; but only six deities, of whom Viṣṇu is not one, are specified by namo' as belonging to this class.¹¹³

¹⁰⁶ "Tvaṁ viśvāni svaṅka patyase | ii. 1, 8.—See Nirukta Parīṣiṣṭa I.

¹⁰⁷ ii. 1, 9.

¹⁰⁸ x. 86.

¹⁰⁹ ix. 59.

¹¹⁰ ix. 96, 10: *bhuvanasya rājā*.

¹¹¹ ix. 96, 14.

¹¹² ix. 96, 5.

¹¹³ See Bohtlingk and Roth's *Lexicon* under the word *Āditya*; Prof. Roth's dissertation on the Ādityas in his paper "on the principal gods of the Arian nations," *Journal of the German Oriental Society*, vol. vi., pp. 68 ff.; and the 5th vol. of this work, pp. 54 ff. Sūrya (the Sun) is however called *Āditya* in R. V. x. 88, 11 (Nir. vii. 29).

The following are the only texts which I consider it necessary to cite on this subject :

R. V. ii. 27, 1 (Nir. xii. 36).—*Imāḥ girāḥ Ādityebhyo ghṛitamūḥ sanādṛājabhyo juhvā juhomi | śṛinotu Mitro Aryamā Bhago nas tuvijāto Varuṇo Dakṣho Aṁśaḥ* | “With my tongue I of old offer up these praises, dropping with unctuousness, to the kings, the Ādityas: may Mitra, Aryaman, Bhaga, the mighty Varuṇa, Daksha, Anśa, hear us.” Yāska makes *tuviajāto* to be=*bahujātaḥ cha Dhātā*, thus understanding it to designate Dhātṛi, as a seventh Āditya.

R. V. ix. 114, 3.—*Sapta diśo nānā-sūryāḥ sapta hotāraḥ pitviḥ | devāḥ Ādityāḥ ye sapta tebhīḥ Somābhirakṣa naḥ* | “The seven points of the compass, with their respective suns, the seven hotṛi priests, and the seven gods, the Ādityas,—with these, O Soma, protect us.”

In another text (R. V. x. 72, 8, 9), which has already been quoted in p. 12 f., it is said that Aditi had eight sons, though she only presented seven of them to the gods, and cast out Mārtāṇḍa, the eighth.

In his explanation of the first text, which I have now quoted (R. V. ii. 27, 1), Sāyaṇa observes of the Ādityas: *Te cha Taittirīye ‘aṣṭau putṛāso Aditer’ ity upakramya spāṣṭam anukrāntāḥ* | “*Mitrascha Varuṇascha Dhātācha Aryamācha Aṁśuscha Bhagascha Indrascha Vivasvāns cha ete’ iti* | “They (the Ādityas) are distinctly specified in the passage of the Taittirīya, beginning with the words, ‘The eight sons of Aditi,’ as ‘these, Mitra, Varuṇa, Dhātṛi, Aryaman, Anśu, Bhaga, Indra, and Vivasvat.’”

In a passage of the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa (iii. 1, 3, 3 ff.) quoted above (p. 14, f.), the Ādityas are alluded to as eight in number, in conformity with the text of the R. V. x. 72, 8, 9. In other texts of the same Brāhmaṇa mention is made of twelve Ādityas.

Vishṇu, as is remarked by Messrs. Böhtlingk and Roth, *s.v.*, is mentioned along with the Ādityas [of the R. V., and other gods with whom they were afterwards associated] in A. V. xi. 6, 2: *Brūmo rājānam Varuṇam Mitram Vishṇum atho Bhagam | Aṁśam Vivasvantam brūmas te no munchantu aṁśasāḥ* | 3 | *Brūmo devāṁ Savitāram Dhātāram uta Pūshanam | Tvashṭāram agriyam brūmaḥ* | “We invoke King Varuṇa, Mitra, Vishṇu, Bhaga, Anśa, Vivasvat. May they free us from calamity. 3. We invoke the God Savitṛi, Dhātṛi, Pūshan, and Tvashṭṛi the chief,” etc.

The following are two passages of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa in which mention is made of the Ādityas as being twelve in number.

Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 1, 2, 8.—*Sa manasā eva vācham mithunāṁ samabhavat sa dvādaśaś drapsān garbhya abhavat | te dvādaśa Ādityāḥ asṛjyanta tān dikṣu upādadhāt |* “With his mind he associated conjugally with Speech. He became pregnant with twelve drops. They were created the twelve Ādityas. Then he placed in the quarters of the horizon.”

Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. 6, 3, 8 (=Bṛih. Ār. Up. iii. 9, 5, p. 646). *Katame Ādityāḥ iti | dvādaśa māsāḥ saṁvatsarasya ete Ādityāḥ—ete hi idam sarvam ādadunāḥ yanti | te yad idam sarvam ādadunāḥ yanti tasmād Ādityāḥ iti |* “How many Ādityas are there? There are twelve months of the year. These are the Ādityas. For they go on taking (ādadunāḥ) all this. Since they go on taking all this, they are called Ādityas.”

The Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, iii. 9, 21, 1, tells a story of the Ādityas: *Ādityās cha Angirasaś cha suvargo loka 'spardhanta | te 'ngirasaś Ādityebhyo 'mum Ādityam asvaṁ śvetam bhūtaṁ dakṣiṇām anayan | te 'bruvan “yam no 'neṣṭa sa varyo 'bhūd” iti | tasmād asvaṁ savarya ity āhwayanti | tasmād yajno varo diyate | yat Prajāpatiḥ ālabdho 'śvo 'bhavat tasmād asvo nāma | yat śvayad-arur āsit tasmād arvā nāma | yat eadyo vājān samajayat tasmād vāji nāma | yad asurāṇāṁ lokān ādatta tasmād Ādityo nāma |* “The Ādityas and the Angirases strove in heaven. The Angirases brought that Āditya, who had become a white horse, to the Ādityas as a present. The latter said, ‘He whom you have brought to us has become excellent (varya).’ Hence men call to a horse, o savarya. Hence a boon (vara) is given at a sacrifice. Inasmuch as Prajāpati when sacrificed became a horse (asva, which means “pervading,” according to the commentator), he has the name of asva. Inasmuch as he suffered pain from swelling (so the commentator renders śvayad-arur, stating that Prajāpati suffered from a swollen eye), he is called arvan. Inasmuch as he conquered riches [or, in races] (vāja), he got the name vājīn. Inasmuch as he took (ādatta) from the Asuras their worlds, he is called Āditya.”

The Taitt. Āraṇyaka, i. 14, 1, also derives Āditya from the root ā+dā: *Yo 'sau tapann udoti sa sarveshām bhūtānām prāṇān ādāya udoti | mā me prajāyāḥ mā paśūnām mā mama prāṇān ādāya udagāḥ | asau yo*

'*astam eti sa sarveshānāḥ bhūtānām prāṇān ādāya astam eti | mā me prajā-
yāḥ mā paśūnām mā mama prāṇān ādāya astam gāḥ* | "That [Sun]
which rises glowing, rises taking the breath of all creatures. Do not
rise [O Sun], taking the breath of my offspring, or of my cattle, or of
myself. That [Sun] which sets, sets taking the breath of all creatures.
Do not set [O Sun], taking the breath of my offspring, or of my cattle,
or of myself."

The Nirukta, ii. 13, gives various etymologies of the word Āditya:
*Ādityaḥ | kasmād | ādatte rasān | ādatte bhāsam jyotiṣam | ādīpto
bhāsa iti vā | Aditeḥ putraḥ iti vā | alpaprayerogaṁ tu aśya etad ārchā-
bhyaṁnāye | sūkta-bhāk "sūryam āditeyam" Aditeḥ putram | evam
anyāsaṁ api devatānām Ādityaprawādāḥ śrutayo bhavanti | tad yathā
etad | Mitrasya Varuṇasya Aryamano Dakṣaśya Bhagasya Anśasya iti |*

"The Āditya: whence [so called]? He takes up the fluids.¹¹⁴ He
takes up the light of the luminaries; he is illuminated (*ādīptaḥ*) by
light; or, he is the son of Aditi. But this [appellation] is seldom
applied to him in the text of the Rigveda. *Sūrya Āditeya*, Sūrya the
son of Aditi, is mentioned in a hymn.¹¹⁵ In the same way there are
praises of other deities, addressed to them as Ādityas; as in the case
of Mitra, Varuṇa, Aryaman, Dakṣa, Bhaga, Anśa."

In the following texts from the Mahābhārata and Purāṇas, the
Ādityas, though their names are not always uniformly given, are stated
or understood to be twelve in number, except in one case where only
eleven are specified. Viṣṇu is almost always named as one of them,

¹¹⁴ *Sahasra-guṇam uterashṭum ādatte hi rasān raviḥ* | "For the sun takes up the
fluids [from the] earth, to discharge them again a thousand-fold."—Raghuvansa,
i. 18. In the hymn to the Sun, Mahābh. iii. 166 ff., it is similarly said, v. 179:
*Tvam ādāyāṁśubhis tejo nidāghe sarva-dēhinām | sarvaśādhī-rdsānām cha punar
varṣhāsu munchasi* | "Having in the hot season taken up by the rays the substance
of all embodied beings, and the essence of all plants, thou again dischargest them in
the rainy season." And Manu says: *Aṣṭau māsān yathā "dityas toyam harati
rasāmbhiḥ | tathā harat karaṁ rūkṣīrūd nityam arkavratāṁ hi tat* | "As Āditya (the
sun) during eight months draws up water by his rays, so let him (a king) extract
revenue from his country, for that is his continual solar function."—Manu, ix. 305.

¹¹⁵ Dr. Aufrecht conjectures that the word *sūkta-bhāk* should be read *asūkta-bhāt*
"has not a hymn devoted to him;" as he appears to be only mentioned in one verse,
R. V. x. 88, 11 (Nir. vii. 29). Durga, however, as quoted by Roth (Illust. p. 21),
says: *sūkta-bhāg eva chaitad abhidhānam na havirbhāk* | "This appellation has a
hymn devoted to it, but no oblation is ordained [to be offered to the god under this
name]." By "hymn" Durga may only mean part of a hymn.

and as by the time when these works were written, his dignity had become enhanced in general estimation, he is declared to be the greatest of the twelve.

Mahābhārata, i. 2,519, 2,522 ff.—*Maricheḥ Kāśyapaḥ putraḥ Kāśyapāt tu imāḥ prajāḥ | prajānīre mahābhāgāḥ Dakṣa-kanyās trayodaśa | . . . 2,522. Ādityām dvādaśāḍītyāḥ sambhūtāḥ bhuvaneśvarāḥ | ye rājan nāmatas tūme te kīrtayishyāmi Bhārata | Dhātā Mitro'ryamā Sakro Varuṇas tv Aṁśaḥ eva cha | Bhago Vivasvān Pūṣha cha Savitā daśamas tathā | ekādaśas tathā Tvaṣṭā dvādaśo Viṣṇur uchyate | jaghanyajas tu sarveṣhām Ādityānām guṇādṛhiḥ |*

"Kāśyapa was the son of Marichi; and from Kāśyapa these beings were born. There were thirteen eminent daughters of Dakṣa . . . 2,522. I will recount to thee, by name, king of the race of Bharata, the twelve Ādityas, lords of the world, who were produced from Aditi; ¹¹⁶ Dhātri, Mitra, Aryaman, Sakra (Indra), Varuṇa, Anśa, Bhaga, Vivasvat, Pūshan, and Savitṛi the tenth; the eleventh is Tvaṣṭṛi, and the twelfth is called Viṣṇu, who, though the latest born, surpasses all the Ādityas in his attributes."

Mahābhārata, i. 2,598.—*Maricheḥ Kāśyapaḥ putraḥ Kāśyapasya Surāsuraḥ | jānīre nṛipa-sārdūla lokānām prabhavas tu saḥ | . . . 2,600. Dvādaśāḍīteḥ putraḥ Sakra-mukhyāḥ narādhipa | teṣhām avarajo Viṣṇur yatra lokāḥ pratishṭhitāḥ |*

"From Kāśyapa, who was the son of Marichi, were produced, O king, the deities (Suras) and the Asuras; and he was the source from which all beings sprang. . . . 2,600. Aditi had twelve sons, beginning with Sakra. The youngest of them was Viṣṇu, on whom the worlds are supported."

Mahābhārata, xiii. 7,092 f.—*Aṁśo Bhagāscha Mitrascha Varuṇascha jaleśvaraḥ | tathā Dhātā 'ryamā chaiva Jayanto Bhāskaras tathā | Tvaṣṭā Pūṣha tathāivendro dvādaśo Viṣṇur uchyate | ity ete dvādaśāḍītyāḥ Kāśyapayāḥ iti śrutiḥ |*

"Anśa, Bhaga, Mitra, Varuṇa, lord of the waters, Dhātri, Aryaman, Jayanta, Bhāskara, Tvaṣṭṛi, Pūshan, Indra, and Viṣṇu, who is called

¹¹⁶ In the hymn to the sun, Mahābh. iii. 166 ff., it is said that that Luminary, dividing himself twelvefold, became the twelve Ādityas (*krītvā dvādaśadhā 'imānām dvādaśāḍītyasām gataḥ*).

the twelfth: these are the twelve Ādityas, the sons of Kaśyapa, according to tradition (or the Veda, *śruti*)."

Mahābhārata, v. 3,501 ff.—*Akṣayaś chāvyayaś chaiva Brahmā lokapitāmahaḥ | tathaiva bhagavantau tau Nara-Nārāyaṇāv ṛṣiḥ | Ādityānām hi sarveśhām Viṣṇur ekaḥ sanātanaḥ | ajyayāś chāvyayaś chaiva śāsvataḥ prabhur īśvaraḥ | nimitta-maraṇās chānyo chandra-sūrya-mahī-jalam | Vāyur Agnis tathā "kāśaṁ" grahās tāra-gaṇās tathā | te cha kṣayaṁte jagato hitvā lokā-trayaṁ sādā | kṣayaṁ gachhanti vai sarve śṛjyante cha punaḥ punaḥ | muhūrta-maraṇās te anye mānuṣhāḥ mṛga-pakṣhiṇāḥ |* "Brahmā, the parent of the world, is undecaying and imperishable; and so too are the venerable Ṛishis, Nara, and Nārāyaṇa. Viṣṇu alone of all the Ādityas is eternal, invincible, imperishable, everlasting, potent, the lord. Other beings perish on some occasion, [as at the end of a Kalpa],—¹¹⁷ the moon, the sun, the earth, water,¹¹⁸ air, fire, the ether, the planets, and the stars. At the dissolution of the universe, all these invariably abandon the three worlds, and perish, and are created again and again. Other [creatures], men, beasts, and birds, die after a brief interval (*muhūrta*)."

Viṣṇu Purāṇa, 1, 15, 90 ff. (vol. ii. pp. 26 f. of Dr. Hall's edition of Wilson's translation)—*Pūrvamanvantare śreṣṭhāḥ dvādaśāsan surottamāḥ | Tushitāḥ nūma te 'nyonyam ūchur Vivasvate 'ntare | upasthite 'tiyaśasāś Chākṣuṣhasyāntare Manoh | samavāyīkrītāḥ sarve samāgamya paraspāram | Āgachhata drutaṁ devāḥ Āditiṁ sampravīṣya vai | Manvantare prasūyāmas tan naḥ śreyo bhaved iti | evam uktvā tu te sarve Chākṣuṣhasyāntare Manoh | Mārīchāt Kaśyapāj jātās te 'dityā Dakṣa-kanyayā | tatra Viṣṇuscha Sakraścha jajñāte punar eva hi | Aryamā chaiva Dhātācha Tvāṣṭā Pūṣhā tathaiva cha | Vivasvān Savitā chaiva Mitro Varuṇāḥ eva cha | Amśo Bhagaś chātitejāḥ Ādityāḥ dvādaśa smṛitāḥ | Chākṣuṣhasyāntare pūrvam āsan ye Tushitāḥ smṛitāḥ | Vivasvate 'ntare te vai Ādityāḥ dvādaśa smṛitāḥ |*

"In the former Manvantara there were twelve eminent and re-

¹¹⁷ I suppose *nimitta-maraṇās* is to be understood practically in this sense.—See Wilson's Viṣṇu Purāṇa, Dr. Hall's ed. i. 113; v. 186, and note. Nārāyaṇa, in his commentary on the Mahābhārata, explains the phrase thus: *Nimittam pralaya-dinimittam maraṇam nāso yeshāṁ te nimitta-maraṇāḥ |*

¹¹⁸ Water and ether are said in the Rāmāyaṇa to have preceded Brahmā.—See above, p. 33. See also the order of creation described in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, and in Manu, in section ii., chapter i., above.

nowned deities called Tushitas; who, being assembled together, said to each other in the Chākshusha Manvantara, when the Vaivasvata Manvantara was approaching, 'Come quickly, deities, let us enter into Aditi, and be born in the [next] Manvantara: this will be for our welfare.' Having thus spoken in the Chākshusha Manvantara, they were all born from Kaśyapa, son of Marichi, and Aditi, daughter of Daksha. In this way Viṣṇu and Śakra (Indra) were again born, and Aryaman, Dhātṛi, Tvaṣṭṛi, Pūshan, Vivasvat, Savitṛi, Mitra, Varuṇa, Anśa, and the energetic Bhaga: these are known as the twelve Ādityas. Those who formerly in the Chākshusha Manvantara were called the Tushitas, are known as the twelve Ādityas in the Vaivasvata Manvantara."

The same story is repeated in very nearly the same words in the Harivaṃśa, verses 171 ff.

The following is another passage from the Harivaṃśa, verses 11,548 ff.:
*Ādityāṃ jajñire rājānā Ādityūḥ Kaśyapād aha | Indro Viṣṇur Bhagao
 Tvashṭā Varuṇo 'ṁśo 'ryamā Raviḥ | Pūṣhā Mitrascha varado Manuḥ
 Parjanyaḥ eva cha | ity ete dvādaśādityūḥ varishṭhās tridivaukasaḥ |*
 "From Kaśyapa and Aditi were born the Ādityas, Indra, Viṣṇu, Bhaga, Tvaṣṭṛi, Varuṇa, Anśa, Aryaman, Ravi (the Sun), Pūshan, Mitra, the bestower of boons, Manu, and Parjanya,—these are the twelve Ādityas, most eminent celestials."

In the same work, verses 12,456 f., we read: *Aryamā Varuṇo
 Mitraḥ Pūṣhā Dhātā Purandaraḥ | Tvashṭā Bhago 'ṁśaḥ Savitā Par-
 janyaścheti visrutāḥ | Ādityāṃ jajñire devūḥ Kaśyapāl loka-bhūvanāḥ |*
 "The gods, creators of the worlds, known as Aryaman, Varuṇa, Mitra, Pūshan, Dhātṛi, Purandara (Indra), Tvaṣṭṛi, Bhaga, Anśa, Savitṛi, and Parjanya, were sprung from Kaśyapa and Aditi."

Only eleven names occur in this list: that of Viṣṇu is omitted.

The next is another legend on the same subject from the same work. Here quite a different origin is assigned to the Ādityas, who are said to have sprung from the face of Vivasvat or Mārtaṇḍa, the Sun.

Harivaṃśa, 589 ff.—*Tato nirbhāsitaṃ rūpam tejasa saṃhātana vai |
 kāntāt kāntataraṃ drashṭum adhikaṃ śuśubhe tadā | mukhe nirvartitaṃ
 rūpam tasya devasya gopateḥ | tataḥ-prabhṛiti devasya mukham aṣṭi tu
 lohitaṃ | mukha-rāgentu yat pūrvam Mārtaṇḍasya mukha-chyutam |
 Ādityūḥ dvādaśaiveha sambhūtāḥ mukha-sambhāvāḥ | Dhātā 'ryamā cha*

Mitrāścha Varuṇo 'śśo Bhagas tathā | Indro Vivasvān Pūṣhā cha Parjanya daśamas tathā | śśatas Tvashṭā tato Viṣṇur ajaghanyo jaghanyajagh | harehaṁ lobhe tato devo dṛiṣṭvā "dityān eva-deha-jān | "Then his appearance, illuminated with concentrated lustre, shone forth more brilliantly, fairer than the fairest to behold! This appearance was produced in the face of that god, the lord of rays. Henceforward the face of the god was red. From the previous colour of the face which fell from the countenance of Mārtaṇḍa were produced twelve face-born Ādityas: Dhātṛi, Aryaman, Mitra, Varuṇa, Anśa, Bhaga, Indra, Vivasvat, Pūshan, Parjanya the tenth, then Tvashṭṛi, then Viṣṇu not the least, though the last born. The god then rejoiced, beholding the Ādityas, sprung from his own body."

This story is not only in opposition to the ordinary account of the Ādityas being sons of Aditi, but it contradicts itself. Vivasvat is one of the Ādityas, who is produced from Vivasvat; and Tvashṭṛi was already existing, and playing a part in the former part of the legend. (See Langlois's note 7, p. 50 of his French version of the Harivanśa.) The Viṣṇu Purāṇa tells the same story about Vivasvat, but says nothing of the birth of the Ādityas. (See Wilson's translation, Dr. Hall's ed., iii. 20 f.)

Bhāgavata Purāṇa, vi. 6, 24 f.—*Sṛiṇu nāmāni lokānām mātṛiṇāṁ śaṁkarāṇi cha | atha Kaśyapa-patnīnāṁ yat-prasūtam idaṁ jagat | Aditir Ditiṛ ityādi | . . . 36 f. Athātaḥ śṛiyatāṁ vaṁśo yo 'dītor anupūrvaśaḥ | yatra Nārāyaṇo devo svāṁśenāvātarad vibhuḥ | Vivasvān Aryamā Pūṣhā Tvashṭā 'tha Savitā Bhagaḥ | Dhātū Vidhātū Varuṇo Mitraḥ Sakraḥ Urukramaḥ |*

"Hear now the auspicious names of the wives of Kaśyapa, the mothers of the worlds, from whom this universe was produced; Aditi, Diti, etc. . . . 36 f. Hear now, in order, the race of Aditi, in which the all-pervading god, Nārāyaṇa, descended in a part of himself,—Vivasvat, Aryaman, Pūshan, Tvashṭṛi, Savitṛi, Bhaga, Dhātṛi, Vidhātṛi, Varuṇa, Mitra, Sakra, Urukrama (the wide-strider=Viṣṇu)."

SECT. IV.—*Stories regarding Viṣṇu from the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, the Pañchaviṁśa Brāhmaṇa, the Rāmāyaṇa, the Mahābhārata, and the Purāṇas.*

The following story from the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa (in which Viṣṇu is represented as a dwarf, and as having, under the form of

sacrifice, conquered the whole earth), with others of the same tenor, contains the germ of the story of the Dwarf Incarnation :

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, i. 2, 5, 1 ff.—*Devāścha vai Asurāścha ubhaye prajāpatyāḥ pasprīdhire* | *tato devāḥ anuvyam iva āsuh* | *attha ha Asurāḥ monire* 'asmākam eva idaṁ khalu bhuvanam' iti | 2. *Te ha ūchur* 'hanta imām prithivīm vibhajāmahaḥ tām vibhajya upajīvāma' iti | *tām aukṣhṇais charmadhiḥ paschāt prāñśo vibhajamānāḥ abhiyuh* | 3. *Tad vai devāḥ śusruvur* "vibhajante ha vfi imām Asurāḥ prithivīm preta tad eśhyāmo yatra imām Asurāḥ vibhajante | ke tataḥ syāma yad asyai na bhajemahi" iti | *te yajnam eva Viśṇum puraskṛitya iyuh* | 4. *Te ha ūchuḥ* "anu no 'syām prithivyām ābhajata astv eva no 'py asyām bhāgaḥ" iti | *te 'surāḥ asūyantaḥ iva ūchur* 'yāvad eva eṣa Viśṇur abhiśete tāvad vo dadmaḥ' iti | 5. *Vāmano ha Viśṇur āsa* | *tad devāḥ na jihīdīre* "mahad vai no 'dur ye no yajna-sammitam adur" iti | 6. *Te prāñchañ Viśṇum nipādya chhandobhir abhitaḥ paryagrighnan* "gāyatrena tvā chhandasā parigrīhṇāmi" iti *dakṣiṇatas* | "traishṭubhena tvā chhandasā parigrīhṇāmi" iti *paschāt* | "jāgatena tvā chhandasā parigrīhṇāmi" iti *uttarataḥ* | 7. *Tām chhandobhir abhitaḥ parigrīhya agnim purastāt samādhāya tena archantaḥ śrāmyantaḥ cheruḥ* | *tena imāñ sarvāñ prithivīm samavindanta* | *tad yad enena imāñ sarvāñ samavindanta tasmād vedir nāma* | *tasmād āhur* 'yūvati vedis tāvati prithivī' iti | *etayā hi imāñ sarvāñ samavindanta* | *evam ha vai imāñ sarvāñ sapatnānām samvṛṇkte nirbhajaty asyai sapatnān yaḥ evam etad veda* | 8. *So 'yañ Viśṇur glānās chhandobhir itaḥ parigrīhīto 'gniḥ purastād na apakramaṇam āsa* | *sa tataḥ eva ośadhīnām mūlāny upa mumlocha* | 9. *Te ha devāḥ ūchuḥ* "kva nu Viśṇur abhūt kva nu yajno 'bhūd" iti | *te ha ūchuḥ* "chhandobhir itaḥ parigrīhīto 'gniḥ purastād na apakramaṇam asty atra eva anvichhata" iti *tām kṣanantaḥ iva anvīkṣus tām tryangulē 'navindaṁs tasmāt tryangulā vedīḥ syāt* | *tad u ha api Pāñchis tryangulām eva saumyasya adhvareasya vedīm chakre* | 10. *Tad u tathā na kuryād ityādi* |

"The gods and Asuras, who were both sprung from Prajapati, strove together. Then the gods were, as it were, worsted, and the Asuras thought, 'This world is now certainly ours.' 2. Then they spake, 'Come, let us divide this earth, and having divided it, let us subsist thereon.' They accordingly went on dividing it with ox-hides from west to east. 3. The gods heard of it, [and] said, 'The Asuras are dividing this earth; come, we shall go to the spot where they are

dividing it. Who shall we become (i.e. what shall become of us), if we do not share in it?' Placing at their head Vishṇu, the sacrifice, they proceeded [thither], 4. and said, 'Put us with yourselves in possession of this earth; let us also have a share in it.' The Asuras, grudging as it were, answered, 'We give you as much as this Vishṇu can lie upon.'¹¹⁹ 5. Now, Vishṇu was a dwarf. The gods did not reject that offer; [but said among themselves], 'They have given us much, [these Asuras], who have given us what is co-extensive with sacrifice.' 6. Then having placed Vishṇu to the east, they surrounded him with metres; [saying], on the south side, 'I surround thee with the Gāyatrī metre;' on the west, 'I surround thee with the Trishṭubh metre;' on the north, 'I surround thee with the Jagatī metre.' 7. Having thus surrounded him with metres, they placed Agni (fire) on the east, and thus they went on worshipping and toiling. By this means they acquired the whole of this earth; and since by this means they acquired (*samavindanta*) it all, therefore [the place of sacrifice] is called *vedi* (from the root *vid*, 'to acquire'). Hence men say, 'as great as is the altar, so great is the earth;' for by it (the altar) they acquired the whole of this [earth]. Thus he who so understands this, appropriates all this [earth] from rivals, dispossesses from it rivals. 8. Then this Vishṇu, being wearied, surrounded by metres, with Agni to the east, did not advance; but then hid himself among the roots of plants. 9. The gods then exclaimed, 'What has become of Vishṇu? what has become of the sacrifice?' They said, 'Surrounded by metres, with Agni to the east, he does not advance; search for him here.' So digging, as it were, they searched for, and found him at a depth of three fingers; therefore let the altar [have a trench] three fingers deep; therefore, also, Pāṇchi¹²⁰ made an altar of this description for the soma sacrifice. 10. But let no one do so," etc.

The next story from the same work relates how Vishṇu became pre-eminent among the gods, and how he lost his head. Here also he is identified with sacrifice:

¹¹⁹ Compare with this story the similar one quoted above in the note on R. V. vi. 69, 8 (p. 84 f.) from the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, 6, 16.

¹²⁰ *Pāṇchiḥ soma-yāgyasyapi vediṃ tryangula-khātām eva mene* | "Pāṇchi thought that the altar for the soma sacrifice also should have a trench three fingers deep." (Commentary.) Pāṇchi is again mentioned in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, ii. 1, 4, 27 (p. 143), along with Āsuri and Mādhuḥi, where the commentator speaks of them as three munis (Āsuri-prabhṛityaḥ trayo munayah). See Weber's Ind. Stud. i. 192, 434.

Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiv. 1, 1, 1 ff.—Devāḥ ha vai satraṁ nishedur Agnir Indraḥ Somo Makho Viṣṇur viśve-devāḥ anyatra eva āśvibhyāṁ | 2. Tśāṁ Kurukṣhetraṁ devayajanam āsa | tasmād āhuḥ “Kurukṣhetraṁ devānāṁ devayajanam” iti | tasmād yatra kva oha Kurukṣhetrasya nigachati tad eva manyate “idaṁ devayajanam” iti tad hi devānāṁ devayajanam | 3. Te āsata | “śriyaṁ gacchema yaśaḥ syāma annādāḥ syāma” iti tatko eva ime sṣtram āsate “śriyaṁ gacchema yaśaḥ syāma annādāḥ syāma” iti | 4. Te ha ūchur “yo naḥ śramaṇa tapasā śraddhaya yajnena āhutibhir yajnasya udricam pūrvo vagachhāt sa naḥ śreṣṭho ‘sat tad u naḥ sarveṣhāṁ saha” iti “tathā” iti | 5. Tad Viṣṇuḥ prathamah prāpa | sa devānāṁ śreṣṭho ‘bhavat tasmād āhur “Viṣṇur devānāṁ śreṣṭhaḥ” iti | 6. Sa yaḥ sa Viṣṇur yajnaḥ sa | sa yaḥ sa yajno ‘sau sa Ādityaḥ | tad ha idaṁ yaśo Viṣṇur na śāśaka saṁyantum | tad idam apy etarhi na eva sarvaḥ iva yaśaḥ śaknoti saṁyantum | 7. Sa tīrī-dhanvam¹²¹ ādāya apachakrāma | sa dhanur-ārtnyā śiraḥ upastabhya tasthau | taṁ devāḥ anabhidhrishṇuvantaḥ samantam pariṇyavisanta | 8. Tāḥ ha vamryaḥ ūchur | imāḥ vai vamryo yad upadikāḥ | “yo ‘sya jyām apyadyāt kim asmai prayachheta” iti “annādyam asmai prayachhema api dhanvann apo ‘dhigachhet tathā asmai sarvam annādyam prayachhema” iti | 9. Tasya upaparāṣṭitya jyām apijakṣus tasyāṁ chhinnūyāṁ dhanur-ārtnyau viśphurantyaṁ Viṣṇoḥ śiraḥ praohichhidatuḥ | 10. Tad ghrīṇṇ iti papāta | tat patitvā ‘sāv Ādityo ‘bhavat | atha itaraḥ prāṇ eva prāvṛjyata | tad yad ghrīṇṇ ity apatat tasmād gharmah | atha yat prāvṛjyata tasmād pravargyaḥ | 11. Te devāḥ abruvan | “mahān vata no vīro ‘pādī” iti tasmād mahāvīraḥ | tasya yo raso vyaksharat tam pāṇibhiḥ sammamṛjyus tasmāt samrāt | 12. Taṁ devāḥ abhyasṛjyanta¹²² yathā vittīm votsya-mānāḥ evam | tam Indraḥ prathamah prāpa | tam anvangam anunyapadyata | tam paryagrihṇāt tam parigrihya idaṁ yaśo ‘bhavad yad idam Indro yaśaḥ | yaśo ha bhavati ya evaṁ veda | 13. Sa u eva makhaḥ sa Viṣṇuḥ | tataḥ Indro makhavān abhavat | makhavān ha vai tam Makhavān ity āchakṣate parokṣham parokṣa-kāmāḥ hi devāḥ | 14.

¹²¹ This word occurs also in Ś’atap. Br. xi. 1, 5, 10; in Taitt. S. i. 8, 19, 1, and Taitt. Br. ii. 7, 9, 2, in all which places it is explained by the Comm. *tīrībhir iśubhir yuktaṁ* (or *sahitāṁ*) *dhanva* (or *dhanuḥ*).

¹²² This, according to Böhtlingk and Roth, is the correct reading, in place of *abhimṛjyanta*, given in Weber’s edition. See a parallel passage, Ś’atap. Br. iv. 1, 3, 5.

*Tābhyo vamribhyo 'nnādyam prāyachhān | āpo vai sarvam annaṁ tābhir
hi idam abhikṇūyam eva adanti | yad idam kimvadanti | 15. Atha
imaṁ Viṣṇuṁ yajnaṁ tredhā vyabhājanta | . . . tena apaśirhaḍ
yajnena devā archantaḥ brāmyantaś cheruḥ | .*

"The gods, Agni, Indra, Soma, Viṣṇu, Makha, and all the [other] deities, excepting the Aśvins, were present at a sacrifice. 2. Kurukshetra was the place of their divine worship. Hence, men say that Kurukshetra is the country where the gods sacrifice. Consequently, to whatever part of Kurukshetra a man goes, he looks upon it as a place for divine worship, since it was the spot where the gods worshipped. 3. They were [there. They said], 'May we attain prosperity, become famous, and eat food.' And in the very same way these [men] attend a sacrifice [saying], 'May we attain prosperity, become famous, and eat food.' 4. Then [the gods] said, 'Whoever among us, through toil, austerity, faith, sacrifice, and oblations, first comprehends the issue of the sacrifice, let him be the most eminent of us: this [shall be] common to us all.' [To this they consented, saying], 'Be it so.' 5. Viṣṇu first attained that [proposed object]. He became the most eminent of the gods: wherefore men say, 'Viṣṇu is the most eminent of the gods.' 6. He who is this Viṣṇu is sacrifice; he who [is] this sacrifice is the Āditya. Viṣṇu could not control [his love of] this fame.¹²³ And the same is the case now, that every one cannot control [his love of] fame. 7. Taking his bow and three arrows, he departed. He stood, resting his head on the end of his [bended] bow. Being unable to overcome him, the gods sat down all around him. 8. Then the ants said to them (now the ants were the same as *upadikūs*—another name for ants), 'What will you give to him who gnaws the bowstring?' [The gods replied], 'We will give him the enjoyment of food, and he shall find waters even in the desert; so shall we give him every enjoyment of food.' 9. [The ants, then], approaching, gnawed his bowstring. When that was cut, the ends of the bow, starting asunder, cut off the head of Viṣṇu. 10. It fell, making a sound (*ghṛiṇ*). That having fallen, became that Āditya. Then the rest of him became extended towards the east. Since the head fell with the sound of *ghṛiṇ*, hence *gharma*, ['the

¹²³ It seems as if there were a play of words here, the word *yaśaḥ*, "fame," having reference to the words *sa yaḥ sa Viṣṇuḥ*, etc., *sa yaḥ sa yajnaḥ*, etc. "He who [is] this Viṣṇu," etc. "He who [is] this sacrifice," etc.

sacrificial kettle,' received its name]; and since he became extended, (*prāṛijyala*), the *pravargya* [received its appellation]. 11. The gods then said, 'A great hero (*mahān vīraḥ*) of ours has fallen.' Hence arose the name of *mahāvīra* (a sacrificial vessel).¹²⁴ They wiped (*sammamrijuḥ*) with their hands the fluid (blood) which flowed from him. Hence arose the name of *samprāṭ*. 12. The gods rushed towards him (Vishṇu), as men about to obtain property do. Indra first reached him. He came into contact with him limb by limb. He embraced him. Having embraced him, he became this fame, which Indra is. He who so knows this becomes fame. 13. That Vishṇu was indeed Makha.¹²⁵ Hence Indra became Makhavat (the possessor or associate of Makha). He is Makhavat: they call him Maghavat esoterically; for the gods love what is esoteric. 14. They (the gods) gave food to those ants. All food is water; for with water men, as it were, moisten the food which they eat: as the common saying is. 15. Then they divided into three portions this Vishṇu, the sacrifice. . . . With that headless sacrifice (see above), the gods went on worshipping and toiling."

I am indebted to Professor Weber for the next two passages; the first from the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka,¹²⁶ and the second from the Pancha-

¹²⁴ A long account is given of the *gharma*, *pravargya*, and *mahāvīra* in Katyāyana's Śrauta Sūtras, xxvi.

¹²⁵ In regard to this word I quote the explanation of Böhtlingk and Roth, s. v. 2 c: "This is the name of a malign mythical being, as is to be conjectured from the following passages, R. V. x. 171, 2: *tvam Makhasya dadhataḥ śiro ava tvacho dhavaḥ* | ('Thou hast smitten off the head, the skin, of the furious Makha'); ix. 101, 13, *apa śvānam arūḍhasam hata Makhām va Bhrigavaḥ* | ('Drive away the niggardly dog, as the Bhrigus did Makha'). Herewith is to be connected the mention made of Makha's head in sacrificial formulae, Vāj. Sanhitā, 37, 3: *devī dyāvā-prithivī Makhasya vām adya śiro rādhyāsam devayajane prithivyāḥ* | . . . 4. *Devo vamyā bhūtasya prathamajāḥ makhasya vo 'dya śiro rādhyāsam devayajane prithivyāḥ* | ('O divine heaven and earth, may I rightly prepare for you to-day the head of Makha, on the part of the earth where the gods sacrificed. . . 4. O divine ants, firstborn of created things, may I rightly prepare for you the head of Makha on the part of the earth where the gods sacrificed'); ibid. 11, 67; Taitt. S. i. 1, 8, 1; iii. 2, 4, 1, *namo 'gnaye Makhaghne* | *Makhasya mā yaśo 'ryād ity āhavanīyam upatiśhṭate* | *yajno vai makhaḥ* | ('Adoration to Agni, the slayer of Makha. May the fame of Makha come to me. So (saying), he stands by the āhavanīya-fire. Makha is sacrifice'), etc.

¹²⁶ This part of the Taitt. Ār. has now been printed in the Bibliotheca Indica, pp. 590 ff. The commentary on it will be found in pp. 371 ff.

viñśa Brāhmaṇa, which both relate the same story which has just been given from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa.

Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, v. i. 1-7.—1. *Devāḥ vai satraṃ āsata piddhi-parimitaṃ yaśaskāmāḥ* | *te 'bruvan "yan naḥ prathamāṃ yaśaḥ pichhāt sarveśhām naś tat saha aśad"* iti | *teshām kurukṣetraṃ vedir āsit* | *tasyai Khāṇḍavo dakṣiṇārdhaḥ āsit Tūrghaṇḍyaṃ uttarārdhaḥ Parinaj jaghanārdho Maravaḥ utkaraḥ* | 2. *Teshām Makkhāḥ Vaiśhṇavaṃ yaśaḥ ārchhat* | *tad nyakāmāyata* | *tena apākrāmat* | *taṃ devāḥ anvāyan yaśo 'varurutea-mānāḥ* | *tasya anvāgatasya savyād dhanur ajāyata dakṣiṇād ishavaḥ* | *tasmād ishūdhanvaṃ puṇya-janma yajna-janma hi* | 3. *Tam ekam santam bahavo na abhyadhṛishṇuwan* | *tasmād ekam ishūdhanvaṃ¹²⁷ vīram bahavo 'niśūdhanvāḥ na abhidhṛishṇuvanti* | *so 'sṃyayata "ekam mā santam bahavo na abhyadhṛishṇishur"* iti | *tasya śishṇyānasya tejo 'pākrāmat* | *tad devāḥ ośadhishu nyamṛjuḥ* | *te śyāmākāḥ abhavan* | *smayākāḥ vai nāma ete* | 4. *Tat smayākānām smayākatvaṃ* | *tasmād ākṣhetena apigrīhya smetavyaṃ tejaso dhṛityai* | *sa dhanuḥ pratiskabhya atishṭhat* | *tāḥ upadīkāḥ abruwan* | *"varam vṛiṇāmahai* | *atha vaḥ imaṃ randhayāma* | *yatra kva cha khanāma tad apo 'bhitrinādāma"* iti | *tasmād upadīkāḥ yatra kva cha khananti tad apo 'bhitrindanti* | 5. *Vārevritaṃ hy āsām* | *tasya jyām apyādan* | *tasya dhanur vipravamānāṃ śiraḥ udavartayat* | *tad dyāvāprithivī anuprāvartata* | *yat prāvartata tat pravargyasya pravargyatvaṃ* | *yad ghrāṃ ity apatat tad gharmasya gharmatvaṃ* | *mahato vīryam apatat iti tad mahāvīrasya mahāvīratvaṃ* | 6. *Yad asyāḥ samabharaṃ tat samrājāḥ samrāṭtvaṃ* | *taṃ stritaṃ devatāś tredhā vyagrīhṇata* | *Agniḥ prātaḥsavanam Indro mādhyandinaṃ savanaṃ Viśvedevāś trīṭhya-savanam* | *tena apaśīreṇnā yajnena yajamānāḥ na āśiśho 'vārundhata na svargaṃ lokam abhyajayan* | *te devāḥ Āśvināv abruwan* | 7. *"Bhishejau vai sthaḥ* | *idaṃ yajnasya śiraḥ pratidhatam"* iti | *tāv abrūtām "varam vṛiṇāvahai grahaḥ eva nāv atrāpi grīhyatām"* iti | *tābhyām etam āśvinam agrīhṇān* | *tāv etad yajnasya śiraḥ pratyadhātām* | *yat pravargyaḥ* | *tena saśīreṇnā yajnena yajamānāḥ ava āśiśho 'rundhata* | *abhi svargaṃ lokam ajayan* | *yat pravargyam praviṇakti yajnasya eva tach chhiraḥ pratidadhāti* | *tena saśīreṇnā yajnena yajamāno 'va āśiśho rundhe 'bhi svargaṃ lokam jayati* | *tasmād eśha āśvina-pravayāḥ iva yat pravargyaḥ* |

¹²⁷ The Bibl. Ind. reads *ishūdhanvinam*.

“The gods, desirous of glory, were attending a sacrifice complete in every respect. They said, ‘Whatever glory first comes to us, that shall be common to us all.’ Kurukshetra was their altar. Khāṇḍava was its southern, Tūrghna its northern, and Parīṇah its hinder section. The Marus were the earth dug from it. 2. Glory came to Makha Vaishṇava among their number. This glory he eagerly desired; with it he departed. The gods followed him, seeking to obtain [this] glory. From the left [hand] of him while thus followed, a bow was produced, and from his right hand arrows. Hence a bow and arrows have a holy origin, for they are sprung from sacrifice. 3. Though many, they could not overcome him, though he was only one. Therefore many men without bows and arrows cannot overcome one hero who has a bow and arrows. He smiled, ‘Though they are many, they have not overcome me who am only one.’ Strength departed from him as he continued to smile. This the gods put upon the plants. They became *śyāmāka* grain. For they are smilers (*smayākāḥ*). 4. Hence this grain derives its name. Wherefore a person who has been consecrated should smile with [his mouth] shut, that he may retain his strength. He stood leaning on his bow. The ants said [to the gods], ‘Let us choose a boon; and after that we shall subject him to you. Wherever we dig, let us open up water.’ Hence wherever ants dig, they open up water. 5. For this was the boon which they chose. They knawed his (Vishṇu’s) bowstring. His bow, starting asunder, hurled his head upwards. It travelled through heaven and earth. From its so travelling (*prāvartata*), the *pravargya* derives its name. From its falling with the sound of *ghrāṇ*, *gharma* obtained its name. Strength (*virya*) fell from the mighty one (*mahataḥ*): hence the *mahāvira* got its name. 6. As they gathered it (*samabharan*) from this [earth], a *samrāt* obtains his appellation. The gods divided him when prostrate, into three parts; Agni [took] the morning oblation; Indra the midday oblation, and the *Viśvedevas* the third oblation. Sacrificing with this headless sacrifice, they (the gods), neither obtained blessings, nor conquered heaven. 7. The gods said to the Āsvins, ‘Ye two are physicians, replace this head of the sacrifice.’ They said, ‘Let us ask a boon, let our *graha* (libation of Soma) be offered here also.’ [The gods accordingly] recognized this Āsvina [libation] for them. [The Āsvins] replaced this head of the sacrifice, which is

the pravargya. Sacrificing with this sacrifice with a head, they obtained blessings, they conquered heaven.¹²⁸ When one offers the pravargya, then he replaces the head of the sacrifice. Sacrificing with this sacrifice with a head, a man obtains blessings, and conquers heaven. Hence this pravargya is principally efficacious through texts addressed to the Aśvins."

Panchaviṃśa Brāhmaṇa, vii. 5, 6. *Devaḥ vai yāsaskāmāḥ satram ācata Agnir Indro Vāyur Makhaḥ te 'brūvan 'yan no yāsaḥ richhāt tan naḥ saha asad' iti | teshām Makhaṁ yāsaḥ ārechhat | tad ādāya apākrāmat | tad asya pra saha āditsanta tam paryayatanta | sa dhanuḥ pratishṭabhya atishṭhat tasya dhanur-ārtinir ūrdhvā patitvā tiro 'chhinat sa pravargyo 'bhavat | yajno vai Makhaḥ | yat pravargyam pravṛjanti yajnasya eva tach chhiraḥ pratidadhati |*

"Desirous of glory, the gods, Agni, Indra, Vāyu and Makha, were attending a sacrifice. They said, 'Whatever glory comes to us, that shall be common to us.' Glory came to Makha among their number. Taking it, he departed. The others wished to take their share in it. They surrounded him. He stood leaning on his bow. The end of his bow, springing upwards, cut off his head. He became the pravargya. Makha is sacrifice. When men offer the pravargya, they replace the head of Makha."

The Aitareya Brāhmaṇa has these two passages relating to Viṣṇu, 1, 1: *Agnir vai devānām avamo | Viṣṇuḥ paramas | tadantareṇa sarvāḥ anyāḥ devatāḥ*. "Agni is the lowest, Viṣṇu the highest, among the gods; between them both are placed all the other deities." In his *Anc. Sansk. Lit.*, p. 390, note, Prof. Müller remarks that "this passage proves nothing as to the relative dignity of Agni and Viṣṇu." Again, 1, 30, on quoting R. V. 1, 156, 4, the Aitareya says: *Viṣṇur vai devānām dvārapaḥ | sa eva asmai etad dvāraṁ vivṛinoti*. "Viṣṇu is the door-keeper of the gods; he opens for him this door." The Taitt. Br. iii. 1, 5, 7, has the following: *Viṣṇur vai akāmayata punyam ślokaṁ śṛṇvīya na mā pāpī kīrttir āgachhet*. "Viṣṇu desired, 'May I hear a holy verse; may no ill renown reach me.'" The Taitt. S. iii. 4, 5, 1, says: *Rudraḥ paśūnām Tvasṭā rūpāṇām Viṣṇuḥ parvatā-*

¹²⁸ Compare the close of the story about the Aśvins quoted from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, iv. 1, 5, 1 ff., in the fifth volume of this work, pp. 250 ff.

nām Maruto gaṇānām adhipatayaḥ. "Rudra is the lord of beasts, Tvashṭri of forms, Viṣṇu of mountains, the Maruts of hosts."

The following passage from the Rāmāyaṇa gives the legend of the Dwarf incarnation in its later form :

"Rāmāyaṇa (Schlegel's ed.), i. 31, 2 ff.—2. *Iha Rāma mahābāho Viṣṇur deva-namaskṛitah | tapas-ōṣarāṇa-yogārtham uvāsa sa mahātapaḥ* | 3. *Esha pūrvāśramo Rāma vāmyānasya mahātmanah | siddhāśramah iti khyātaḥ siddho yatra mahātapaḥ* | 4. *Abhūbhūya cha devendram purā Vairochanir Baliḥ | trailokya-rājyam bubhuje balotseka-madānvitah* | 5. *Tato Balau tadā yajnaṁ yajamāne bhayūrditāḥ | Indrādayaḥ suragaṇāḥ Viṣṇum ūchur ihāśrame* | 6. "*Balir Vairochanir Viṣṇo yajate 'sau mahābalaḥ | kāma-daḥ sarva-bhūtānām maharaddhir asurādhipaḥ* | 7. *Ye chainam abhivartante yāchitūrah itastataḥ | yachcha yatra yathāvachcha sarvaṁ tobhyaḥ prayachchhati* | 8. *Sa tvāṁ sura-hitārthāya māyā-yogam upāśritah | vāmanatvaṁ gato Viṣṇo kuru kalyāṇam uttamam*" | 9.¹²⁹ [*Etaṁinn antare Rāma Kāsyapo 'gni-sama-prabhuḥ | Adityā sahito Rāma dīpyamānaḥ ivaujasā* | 10. *Devī-sahāyo bhagavān divya-varsha-sahasrakam | vrataṁ samāpya vara-daṁ tushṭāva Madhusūdanam* | 11. "*Tapomayaṁ tapo-rāsiṁ tapo-mūrtiṁ tapo-dhanam | tapasā tvāṁ sutaptena paśyāmi puruṣottamam* | 12. *Sarīre tava paśyāmi jagat sarvaṁ idam prabho | tvam anādir anirdeśyas tvāṁ ahaṁ śaraṇaṁ gataḥ*" | 13. *Tam uvācha Hariḥ prītaḥ Kāsyapaṁ dhūta-kalmasham | varaṁ varāya bhadrāṁ te varūrho 'si mato mama* | 14. *Tach chhṛutvā vachanaṁ tasya Mārīchaḥ Kāsyapo 'bravīt | "putratvaṁ gachchha bhagavann Adityāḥ mama chānagha* | 15. *Bhrātū bhava yavīyāṁs tvāṁ S'akrasyāsura-sādana | śokārtānāṁ tu devānāṁ sākāryaṁ kartum arhasi*" | 16. *Atha Viṣṇur mahātejaḥ Adityāṁ samajāyata | chhatrī bhikṣhuka-rūpeṇa kamaṇḍalu-bikhojjvalaḥ* |] 17. *Evam uktaḥ surair Viṣṇur vāmanaṁ rūpam āsthitah | Vairochanim upāgamya trin yayāchātmanaḥ kramān* |

¹²⁹ The following verses 9–16 seem to be rightly inclosed in brackets by Schlegel, as interpolated. A comparison of verse 8 with verse 17 shows that the latter must originally have followed immediately after the former. It will be seen, however, that in verse 19 of the text of the Bombay edition, as quoted further on, the words at the beginning of verse 17 of Schlegel's edition : *Evam uktaḥ surair Viṣṇuḥ* ("Viṣṇu being thus addressed by the deities"), are omitted, and the appearance of interpolation is avoided. Compare the versions of the story given below from the Mahābhārata and the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, where the dwarf is said to have been the son of Kāsyapa and Aditi. This is also the parentage of Viṣṇu as one of the twelve Ādityas.—See above, pp. 118 ff.

18. *Labdhvā cha trin kramān Viṣṇuḥ kṛtvā rūpam athādbhutam |*
trībhīḥ kramais tadā lokān¹³⁰ ājāhāra tri-vikramah | 19. *Ekena hi padā*
kṛtsnām pṛithivīm so 'dhyatishhata | dvitīyenāvayayaṁ vyoma dyām
trītiyena Rūghava | 20. *Tam chāsuraṁ Balim kṛtvā pātāla-tala-*
vāsinam | trailokya-rājyaṁ Indrāya dadāv uddhṛitya kaṇṭakam |

The readings of this passage, as given in the Bombay edition¹³⁰ i. 29, 2 ff., differ occasionally from those of Sehlegel's. I subjoin them here: 2. *Iha Rāma mahābāho Viṣṇur deva-namaskṛitah | varshāni*
subahūniha tathā yuga-satāni cha | 3 | *tapas-charana-yogārtham uvāsa*
sumahātapaḥ | [verses 3b and 4a correspond,—with only the difference
of *hy atra* for *atra*,—with verse 3 of Sehlegel's edition] 4b | *etasminn*
eva kālē tu rājā Vairochanir Baliḥ | 5 | *nirjitya daivata-gaṇān sendrān*
saha-marud-gaṇān | kūrāyāmāsa tad-rājyaṁ triśhu lokeṣhu viśrutaḥ | 6 |
yajñaṁ chakūra¹³¹ sumahān asurendro mahābalaḥ | *Bales tu yajamānasya*
devāḥ sāgni-purogamāḥ | samāgamyā śrayaṁ chaiva Viṣṇum ūchur
ihāśrame | 7 | “*Balir Vairochanir Viṣṇo yajate yajnam uttamam |*

¹³⁰ See Prof. Weber's account of this edition in the Journal of the German Oriental Society for 1863, vol. 17, pp. 771 ff.

¹³¹ In his note on this passage, the commentator discusses the question how Bali could sacrifice to the gods, since he was at enmity with Indra and the rest of them: *Nanu “asurasya Baler deva-dvisho yūgādyanupapattir yāga-tarpanīya-devatābhāvād*
Indrādīnām tad-deshyativūt | nacha śabda-mātram devatā iti yuktam artha-vāda-
pramāṇyena devatāyāḥ vighrahavattvasya uttara-mīmāṃsāyām siddhāntitattvād” iti
chet | na | karma-deva-ājāna-deva bhedena devānām dvaividhyāt | tatra ye karmaṇā
devatvam prāptās te karma-devāḥ | ājāna-devās tu yajna-mantrārtha-bhūtāḥ mantrena
nitya-sambaddāḥ karma-devobhyah prāchīnāḥ eva | tai-karma-devānām dveshyatas 'py
ājāna-devānām yajne tarpyatve na doshaḥ | vighna-kartūro 'py atra karma-devāḥ eva |
yajñadyadhikārābhāvo 'py ājāna-devānām eva eva-yashtavya-devatāntarābhāvāt |
karma-devānām tv asty eva | atah eva Indrādīnām yajñādi-dṛavaṇām na anupannam |

“But is there not an absurdity in the idea of sacrifice, etc., being celebrated by Bali, the enemy of the gods, from there being no deities who could be gratified by it, since Indra and the rest of them were the objects of his hostility? And it is not correct to say that a god is a mere name, for in the Uttara Mīmāṃsā the corporeality of the deities is established on the authority of the Arthavādas (illustrative passages of the Vedas). [See the passage of Śaṅkara's Commentary on the Brahma or Vedānta Sūtras, i. 3, 28, quoted in the third vol. of this work, pp. 99 ff., especially p. 102 at the foot.] If this objection be urged, then I reply, that the case is not so; for the gods are of two kinds, work-gods, and those who are gods from their birth. (See the fifth vol. of this work, p. 17, f. note 26, and the S'atap. Br. xiv. 7, 1, 34 f.) Of these two kinds, the gods who have become such by works of merit are ‘work-gods.’ But it is those who are gods from their birth that are the objects of the sacrificial formulas, and eternally connected with those formulas; and they are more ancient than the ‘work-gods.’ Even if the ‘work-gods’ be objects of hostility, no exception can be taken to the supposition that the gods by birth may be gratified by sacrifice. And in

asamāpta-vrate tasmin svakāryam abhipadyatām | [verses 8–15a correspond with verses 7–14a of Schlegel's ed., substituting however *tapāt-makam* for *tapo-dhanam*, and *purushopamam* for *purushottamam*] 15b | *Adityāḥ devatānāṃ cha mama chaivānuyāchitam* | 16 | *varaṃ varada uprīto dātum arhasi svrata* | [verses 16b and 17 agree with 14b and 15 of Schlegel's edition] 18. *Ayaṃ Siddhāśramo nāma prasādāt te bhaviṣhyati* | *siddhe karmaṇi deveśa uttiṣṭha bhagavann itaḥ* | 19. *Atha Viṣṇur mahātejāḥ Adityāṃ śamajūyata* | *Vāmanaṃ rūpam āsthāya Vairochanim upāgamat* | 20 | *trīṇ padān atha bhikṣhitvā pratigrihya cha medinīm* | *ākramya lokān lokārthi sarva-loka-hite rataḥ* | 21 | *Mahendra-ya punaḥ prādād niyamyā Balim ojasū* | *trailokyam sa mahātejāś chakre Śakra-vaśam punaḥ* |

I subjoin the text of the same passage according to Signor Gorresio's edition :

Rāmāyaṇa (Gorresio's ed.), i. 32, 2 ff.—*Eṣa pūrvāśramo Rāma vāmanasya mahātmanah | siddhāśramah iti khyātaḥ siddho yatra mahā-yasāḥ* | 3. *Viṣṇur vāmana-rūpena tapyamāno mahat tapaḥ | trailokya-rājye 'pahrite Balinendrasya Rūghava* | [verses 4, 5, 6 correspond word for word with those of Schlegel's edition] 7. *Taṃ tvaṃ vāmana-rūpena gatvā bhikṣhitum arhasi | vikramāṃs trīṇ mahābāho dātā hi niyataṃ sa te* | 8. *Bhikṣhito vikramān etāṃs trīṇ vīrya-bala-darpitaḥ | paribhūya jagan-nāthaṃ tubhyaṃ vāmana-rūpeṇa* | 9. *Ye hy enam abhiyāchante līpa-mānāḥ svam ipsitam | tān kāmair ipsitaiḥ sarvān yojayaty asureśvaraḥ* | 10. *Sa tvaṃ trailokya-rājyaṃ no hṛitam bhūyo jagat-pate | dātum arhasi nirjitya vikramair bhūrīdhis trīdhiḥ* | 11. *Ayaṃ siddhāśramo nāma siddha-karmā bhaviṣhyati | tasmin karmaṇi saṃsiddhe tava satya-parā-krama* | [Gorresio's edition does not contain any verses corresponding to those marked by Schlegel as spurious, viz. lines 9–16 of his edition.] 12. *Evaṃ uktaḥ surair Viṣṇur vāmanaṃ rūpam āsthitaḥ | Vairochanim upāgamya trīṇ ayāchata vikramān* | [The remaining verses are word for word the same as in Schlegel's recension.]

the case before us it is the 'work-gods' who are the disturbers of the sacrifice. Further, it is the gods by birth who are incapable of performing sacrifice, because there are no other deities to whom they could offer it. [See the first vol. of this work, p. 365, note 163] Whereas the 'work-gods' can perform sacrifice. Wherefore the tradition that Indra and the rest performed sacrifice is not absurd." It is strange for readers of the Vedic hymns to be told that Indra is not an object of worship by sacrifice.

The following is a translation of the passage according to Schlegel's edition :

Viśvāmitra speaks : " 2. In this place, O large-armed Rāma, Viṣṇu, the great ascetic, revered by the gods, dwelt for the purpose of practising austerity, and contemplation. 3. This, Rāma, was the former hermitage of the magnanimous dwarf, renowned as the ' Hermitage of the Perfect,' where the great ascetic was perfected. 4. Formerly, Bali, the son of Virochana, after conquering the chief of the gods (Indra) enjoyed the empire of the three worlds, intoxicated with the increase of his power. 5. When Bali was then celebrating a sacrifice, Indra and the other gods, disturbed with apprehension, addressed Viṣṇu in this hermitage. 6. 'That mighty Bali, son of Virochana, O Viṣṇu, is now performing sacrifice,—he who grants the desires of all creatures, the prosperous lord of the Asuras. 7. Whatever supplicants wait upon him from whatever quarter, he bestows on them in a proper manner all whatever, of any sort of thing, [they wish]. 8. Do thou, O Viṣṇu, assuming a magical state for the benefit of the deities, take the shape of a dwarf, and bring about our highest welfare.' [9. At this period, O Rāma, the divine Kaśyapa, luminous as fire, glowing, as it were, with splendour, attended by the goddess Aditi, (10) having completed an act of austerity which had lasted for a thousand years of the gods, celebrated [thus] the praises of the boon-bestowing Madhusūdana : 11. 'Through intense austerity I behold thee, the supreme Spirit, whose essence is austerity, who art a congeries of austerity, the impersonation of austerity, who art rich in austerity. 12. In thy body, lord, I behold this whole universe; thou art unbeginning and ineffable; to thee I have resorted as my refuge.' 13. Then Hari, gratified, spake to Kaśyapa, whose taint of sin had been purged away : 'Ask a boon; may good attend thee; thou art regarded by me as deserving a boon.' 14. Hearing these words of his, Kaśyapa, son of Marīchi, replied : 'Sinless lord, become the son of Aditi and myself. 15. Slayer of the Asuras, become the younger brother of Śakra (Indra). Thou oughtest to succour the gods who are oppressed with grief.' 16. Viṣṇu, of mighty energy, was accordingly born of Aditi, shaded by an umbrella, in the form of a mendicant, resplendent with a drinking gourd, and a lock of hair on the crown of his head.] 17. Thus addressed by the deities, Viṣṇu took the form of a dwarf, and approaching the son of Virochana,

begged three of his own paces. 18. Having obtained three paces, the thrice-stepping Vishṇu assumed a miraculous form, and with three paces took possession of the worlds. For with one step he occupied the whole earth, with a second the eternal atmosphere, and with a third the sky, O Rāghava. Having then assigned to the Asura Bali an abode in Pātāla (the infernal region), he gave the empire of the three worlds to Indra, after removing his enemy."

I subjoin a translation of those parts of the Bombay text which are different from Schlegel's:

2. "In this place, O great-armed Rāma, Vishṇu, the great ascetic, revered by the gods, dwelt very many years and hundreds of yugas, (3) for the purpose of practising austerity and contemplation. [Verses 3b and 4a are almost identical with the reading of the other edition.] 4b. But at this very period the renowned King Bali, son of Virochana, (5) having conquered the hosts of the deities, including Indra and the Maruts, ruled in their stead over the three worlds. 6. This very great and potent lord of the Asuras celebrated a sacrifice. While he was doing so, the gods, headed by Agni, assembled, and addressed Vishṇu in this hermitage. 7. 'Bali, the son of Virochana, O Vishṇu, is celebrating a grand sacrifice. Let his rite remain incomplete; and let our object be attained. [Verses 8-15a correspond very nearly with 7-14a of the other edition.] 15b-16b. O boon-bestowing, holy, deity, be well pleased, and bestow the boon which Aditi, the gods, and I solicit. [Verses 16b and 17 agree with 14b and 15 of the other ed.] 18a. This by thy favour shall be called Siddhāśrama (the hermitage where the work was accomplished). The work being accomplished, depart hence, O king of the gods.' 19. Then the glorious Vishṇu was born of Aditi. Assuming the form of a dwarf, he approached the son of Virochana. 20. Then having begged for three paces of ground, and having occupied the earth, he, desiring the worlds, devoted to the good of all creatures, having stalked over the worlds, (21) restored them to Mahendra (great Indra), having overcome Bali by his might. This glorious being made the three worlds again subject to Śakra (Indra)." (See note ¹³⁵ above.)

I add a translation of those parts of Gorresio's text which differ from Schlegel's:

"2. This, Rāma, is the former hermitage of the magnanimous dwarf,

called the 'Hermitage of the Perfect,'¹²¹ where the illustrious Viṣṇu was perfected, (8) when performing a great act of austerity in the form of a dwarf, [at the time] when the empire of the three worlds had been taken away from Indra by Bali. [Verses 4-6 correspond word for word with those of Schlegel's edition.] 7. 'Now thou shouldst go in the form of a dwarf, and beg three paces, O large-armed. 8. For, proud of his valour and strength, after his victory over the lord of the world (Indra), he, when supplicated, will certainly give these three paces to thee [appearing] in the form of a dwarf. 9. For that lord of the Asuras fulfils the desires of all those persons who supplicate him for their accomplishment. 10. Thou, lord of the world, oughtest to give us back the empire of the three worlds which has been taken away from us, after thou hast conquered it by three vast strides. 11. This which is called Siddhāśrama (the hermitage where the work was fulfilled),¹²¹ shall be [a place] where this work is fulfilled, when this work has been accomplished by thee, O possessor of real might.' Thus addressed by the deities, Viṣṇu assumed the form of a dwarf, and approaching the son of Virochana, begged for three paces." (The rest corresponds with Schlegel's edition, except, as above stated, in the omission of verses 9-16 there given.)

The following are two brief notices of the dwarf incarnation from the Mahābhārata :

Mahābhārata, Śāntiparva, vv. 12943 ff. — *Virochanasya balavān Baliḥ putro mahāsuraḥ | abadhyah sarva-lokānām sa-devāsura-rakṣasām | bhaviṣhyati sa Sakrancha sva-rājyād dhārayiṣhyati (= chyāvayishyati ?) | trailokye 'prahṛite tena vimukhe cha S'achīpatau | Adityān dvādaśādityaḥ sambhaviṣhyāmi Kāśyapāt | tato rājyam pradāsyāmi S'akrāyāmita-tejase | devatāḥ sthāpayiṣhyāmi sveshu sthāneṣhu Nārada | Balinchaiva karishyāmi pātāla-tala-vāsinam | Dānavāncha Balim bṛeṣṭhām abadhyam sarva-daivataiḥ |*

After referring to his Boar, and Man-lion incarnations, Viṣṇu says to Nārada : "The great Asura Bali, the strong son of Virochana, shall be indestructible by all beings, including gods, Asuras, and Rākṣasas. He shall oust Sakra (Indra) from his kingdom. When the three worlds have been taken by Bali, and the lord of Sachi (Indra) has been put to flight, I shall be born in the form of the twelve Ādityas, the

¹²¹ The participle *siddha* means both "perfect" and "accomplished."

son of Kaśyapa and Aditi. I will then restore his empire to Śakra of boundless energy; will reinstate the gods 'in their several positions; will place Bali in Pātāla, the eminent Dānava Bali, indestructible by all the gods."

Mahābhārata, Vanaparva, vv. 484 ff.—¹²³ *Aditor api putratvam otya Yādava-nandana | tvam Viṣṇur iti vikhyātaḥ Indrād avarajo vibhuḥ |* *śiśur bhūtvā divaṁ khancha pṛithivīncha parantapa | tribhir vikramaṇaiḥ Kṛiṣṇa krāntavān asi tejasā | samprāpya divaṁ ākāśam āditya-sadano* *athitāḥ | atyūrohaścha bhūtātman bhāskaraṁ svena tejasā | prādurbhāva-* *sahasreshu teshu teshu tvayā vibho | adharmaruchayaḥ Kṛiṣṇa nihataḥ* *śataśo' surāḥ |* "And thou, Kṛiṣṇa, of the Yādava race, having become the son of Aditi, and being called Viṣṇu, the younger brother of Indra, the all-pervading, becoming a child, O vexer of thy foes, hast by thy energy traversed the sky, the atmosphere, and the earth, in three strides. Having attained to the sky and the ether, and occupied the abode of the Ādityas, thou, O soul of all beings, hast overpassed the sun by thine own lustre. In these thousands of thy manifestations, O all-pervading Kṛiṣṇa, thou hast slain hundreds of Asuras who delighted in iniquity."

The next passage is a short notice of the same incarnation from the Viṣṇu Purāṇa:

Viṣh. Pur. iii. 1 (p. 265 of Wilson's translation; vol. iii., p. 18, of Dr. Hall's ed.).—*Manvantare tu samprāpte tathā Vaivasvate dvija | vāmanaḥ Kaśyapād Viṣṇur Adityāṁ sambabhūva ha | Tribhiḥ kramair imān lokān jīvā yena mahātmanā | Pūrandarāya trilokyaṁ dattaṁ nihata-kaṇṭakam |* "So when the Vaivasvata manvantara had arrived, Viṣṇu was born as a dwarf, the son of Aditi and Kaśyapa. By this great being, after he had conquered these worlds by three paces, the three worlds were given to Purandara (Indra), his enemy being destroyed."

The story of Viṣṇu's incarnation as a dwarf is told in a greatly developed form in the fifteenth and following sections of the eighth Book of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa. As the whole narrative is too long to be quoted here in extenso, I shall give an abstract of the contents of these sections, translating in full some of those portions which appear the most important. The story commences thus:

¹²³ See Lassen's Indian Antiquities, vol. i., p. 489, note, and p. 779 f. and note (pp. 587, and 921 of the second edition).

Bhāgavata Purāṇa, viii. 15, 1.—*Baloḥ pada-trayam bhāmoḥ kasmād
Harir ayāchata | bhūtveśvrah kṛpāṇa-val labdārtho 'pi babandha tam |*
2. *Etad veditum icchāmo mahat kautūhalaṁ hi naḥ | yajñesvarasya
pūrnasya bandhanaṁ dhāpy anāgasaḥ |*

The king asks: "Why did Hari, the lord of creatures, ask, like a poor man, three paces of land from Bali? and why, when he had obtained his object, did he bind him? 2. This we desire to know; and we have a great curiosity;—and also why an innocent being was bound by the perfect lord of sacrifice?" The sage Śuka replies (verses 3 ff.) that after Bali had been deprived of life by Indra, he was restored by the Brāhmins of the race of Bhṛigu, who consecrated him for supreme dominion, and celebrated for him a Viśvajit sacrifice, which had the virtue of enabling him to conquer all his enemies. He then sets out (verse 11), attended by a host of Daityas, to attack the capital of Indra, which is described with all its splendours and attractions. When Bali had invested the city (verse 28), Indra inquires of his spiritual preceptor how it is that his enemy has acquired this tremendous power, which appears altogether irresistible.

The preceptor replies (verses 15, 28 ff.): *Jānāmi Maghavan śatoror
unnater asya kāraṇam | śiṣhyāyopabhṛitaṁ tejo Bhṛigubhir brahma-
vādūbhiḥ |* 29. *Bhavad-vidho bhavān vā'pi varjayitveśvaram Harim |*
nāsyā śaktaḥ puraḥ sthātum kṛtāntasya yathā janāḥ | 30. *Tasmād
nilayam (=adarśanam,¹³³ Comm.) uterijya yūyam sarve trivishṭapam |*
yāta kālam pratikṣhanto yataḥ śatoror viparyayaḥ | 31. *Eṣa vipra-
balodarkaḥ sampraty ūrjita-vikramaḥ | teshā evāvamānena sūnubandho
vinankṣhyati |*

"I know, Maghavan, the cause of the exaltation of this your enemy to be the might imparted to their pupil by the Bhṛigus, the declarers of the Veda. 29. No one such as you, not even you yourself, [nor any one] excepting only Hari the lord, is able to stand before him, as men [are unable to confront] death. 30. Wherefore do ye all, abandoning heaven, disappear, expecting [the operation of] time, from which [shall come] the overthrow of your enemy. 31. He now reaps the fruits of Brahmanical power, and thus his prowess has become augmented. Through contempt of these same Brahmins, he shall perish with all his dependents."

¹³³ The word *nilaya*, however, may also mean "abode," in which case the sense will be "abandoning heaven, your abode, depart," etc.

(The prophecy here uttered in regard to the fall of Bali as a result of his disregard of the Brahmins will hereafter be found to be fulfilled. See below, sect. 20, vv. 14 ff., p. 145.)

Following the advice of their preceptor, Indra and the other gods abandoned heaven, and Bali took possession of the celestial capital, when the Bhṛigus celebrated for him a hundred *asvamedhas* (or horse-sacrifices).

The sixteenth section opens with an account of the distress of Aditi, the mother of the gods, at the discomfiture of her sons by the Daityas. She receives a visit from her husband the Prajāpati Kaśyapa, who makes various conjectures about the cause of her apparent unhappiness, of which (verse 15 f.) he receives an explanation. He then replies :

(Sect. 16, vv. 18 ff.)—*Evam abhyarthito 'dityā Kas tām cāa smayann iva | aho māyā-balaṃ Viṣṇoḥ sneha-baddham idaṃ jagat |* 19. *Kva deho bhautiko 'nātmā kva chātmā prakṛiteḥ paraḥ | kasya ke pati-putrādyaḥ mohaḥ eva hi kāraṇam |* 20. *Upatiṣṭhasva Puruṣhaṃ bhagavantaṃ Janārdanaṃ | sarva-bhūta-guhāvāsaṃ Vāsudevaṃ jagad-gurum |* 21. *Sa vidhāsyati te kāmān Harir dīnānukampanaḥ | amoghā bhagavad-bhaktir netareti matir mama |*

18. "Being thus entreated by Aditi, Ka¹³⁴ (Kaśyapa) answers her, as it were smiling, 'O, the power of Viṣṇu's illusion! this world is bound by affection. 19. Where is this elemental body, which is not soul? and where is soul, which is superior to matter? (i.e. how great is the superiority of soul to the body!)"¹³⁵ Who are the husband, or the sons, or other relatives, of any person?¹³⁶ (i.e. there are no such things

¹³⁴ For an explanation of this word see above, p. 15, note 43. Here it stands for

¹³⁵ Compare for this idiom the Raghuvamśa, i. 2: *Kva sūrya-prabhavo vaṃśaḥ kva chātpa-viśayā matiḥ |* "Where is the race descended from the Sun, and where is my mind of which the (proper) objects are so small?" i.e. the disproportion between the two things is great.

¹³⁶ This sentiment appears to be here intended as orthodox: but similar observations, when made in the Rāmāyaṇa (Schlegel's and Bombay editions), ii. 108, 3 f., are spoken of as *dharma-śūpa*, which the scholiast in the Bombay edition interprets as = *dharma-mūrga-vidāhaṃ lokāyatika-matāvalambanam*, i.e., "opposed to righteousness, and derived from the tenets of the Lokāyātikas." The words there are: *kaḥ kasya puruṣo bandhuḥ kim āpyaṃ kasya kenachit | eko hi jāyate jantur ekaḥ eva vinasīyati |* 4 | *taṃnā mātaḥ pitaḥ cheti Rāma sajjeta yo naraḥ | unmattaḥ tva sa jneyo nāsti kascid hi kaśyachit |* 3. "What person is the relation of any (other)? what affinity has any one with another? For a creature is born alone, and perishes alone. 4. Whosoever,

as real relations); delusion alone creates them. 20. Betake thyself to Puruṣha, the divine Janārdana, who dwells in the heart of all creatures, Vāsudeva, the preceptor of the world. 21. Hari, who compassionates the afflicted, will fulfil thy desires: devotion to the lord, and that alone, is never fruitless; such is my judgment."

Aditi then asks how she is to worship Viṣṇu in such a way as to obtain her desire, and receives from Kaśyapa an account (extending to the end of the section) of the milk ceremonial (*payo-orata*) which she is to perform.

She accordingly celebrates the prescribed rite (sect. 17 ff.), when Hari, the primeval Puruṣha, appears to her in yellow vesture, with four arms, bearing his shell, discus, and club. She implores his succour, and receives an assurance that he has been gratified by her service, which shall not remain unfruitful. He goes on to say:

(Sect. 17, vv. 18 ff.)—*Tvayārohitāś chāham apatyā-guptaye payo-
vratenānugunāṁ samīditaḥ | evāṁśena putratvam upetya te sūtān gop-
tāsmi Mārīcha-tapasy adhishṭhitaḥ |* 19. *Upadhāva patim bhadre pra-
jāpatim akulmasham | mām cha bhāvayati patyāv evāṁrūpam avasthitaḥ |*
20. *Naitat parasmai ākhyeyam prishṭhāyā 'pi kathanchana | sarvaṁ sam-
padyate devi deva-guhyāṁ susaṁvṛitaḥ |* 21. *Sukhaḥ uvācha | etāvad
uktvā bhagavāṁs tatraivāntarādhiyata | Aditir durlabhaṁ labdhvā Harer
janmātmani prabhoḥ | upādhāvat patim bhaktyā parayā kṛta-kṛitya-vat |*
22. *Sa vai samādhi-yogena Kaśyapas tad abudhyata | pravishṭam ātmani
Harer aṁśaṁ hy avitathekshaṇaḥ |* 23. *So 'dityāṁ vīryāṁ ādhatta tapasā
chira-sambhṛitaḥ | samāhita-manāḥ rūjan dāraṇy agniṁ yathā 'nilaḥ |*

" 'Worshipped by thee with the milk ceremonial for the deliverance of thy offspring, and lauded according to my attributes, I shall, with a portion of myself, become thy son, and deliver thy children, presiding over the austerity of Mārīcha (Kaśyapa). 19. Wait, virtuous female, upon thy husband, the sinless Prajāpati, meditating on me, who in

therefore, is attached to any person, (thinking 'this is my) father or mother,' is mad. No one is anything to any other." The word *āpyam* in verse 3, which I have rendered by "affinity," according to the Vedic sense of the term, is explained by the commentator as = *prāpyam*, "to be obtained." The clause, according to him, would thus mean: "What is to be obtained by any one person from any other?" The word may here, however, perhaps have the Vedic sense, although it is unusual, if not elsewhere unknown, in modern Sanskrit. Gorresio's edition, ii. 116, 12, has *kāryam* instead of *āpyam*, thus making the meaning to be, "What has any one person to do with any other?"

this form abide within him. 20. This must not in any way be disclosed by thee to any one, even though thou art asked. The secrets of the gods, O goddess, issue in good [only] when they are kept concealed.' 21. When the deity had said so much, he disappeared on the spot. Aditi, having obtained the [boon], so hard to obtain, that Hari, the lord, should be born of her, waited on her husband with the greatest devotion, like one who had obtained her object. 22. Kāśyapa with certain intuition understood by the power of contemplation that a portion of Hari had entered into him. 23. With contemplative mind, he impregnated Aditi with the generative fluid which he had accumulated by long austerity, as the wind forces fire into wood."

We have already seen that Viṣṇu, in his character as one of the Ādityas, also, was the son of Kāśyapa and Aditi (see above, p. 118 ff.). The connexion with the old legend is therefore preserved here, as well as in the story given in the Bombay edition of the Rāmāyaṇa, above, pp. 132 and 134.

The eighteenth section relates how Hari was born of Aditi, to the great delight of all creatures, and how he then took the form of a dwarf:

(Sect. 18, v. 12).—*Yat tad vapur bhāti-vibhūṣaṇāyudhair avyakta-chid vyaktam adhārayad Hariḥ | bābhūva tenaiva sa vāmano baṭuḥ sam-pāśyator divya-gatir yathā naṭaḥ |* "With that body which Hari, the invisible spirit, had assumed, and which was manifested by splendour, by its ornaments, and by weapons,—with that same body, he, whose ways are supernatural, became, while [his parents] were looking on, a dwarfish Brahmanical student, as an actor [changes his character]."

He afterwards went to attend the āśvamedha sacrifices celebrated for Bali by the Bhṛigus on the banks of the river Narmadā.¹³⁷ Bali welcomes the young Brahman dwarf with respect, offers him a seat, and washes his feet. The narrative then proceeds:

(Sect. 18, v. 28 ff.).—*Tat-pāda-śaukṣm jana-kalmashāpahaṁ sa dharma-vid mūrdhny adhāt sumangalam | yad deva-devo Gīrīśaś chandra-maulir dadhāra mūrdhnā parayā cha bhaktyā |* 29. *Balir uvācha | svāgataṁ te namaḥ tūbhyam brahman kiṁ karavāma te | brahmarṣhiṇāṁ tapaḥ śakṣhād manye tv ārya vapur-dharam | . . .* 32. *Yad yad baṭo vāṇchhasi tat pratīkṣha me tvām arthinam vipra-sūtānūtarkaye | gāṁ*

¹³⁷ It is to be noticed that the scene of this sacrifice is on earth, though Bali, as we were told above, had taken possession of Indra's heaven.

kānchanam guṇavad dhāma mṛikṣam tāthā 'nna-ṣyam uta vā vipra-kanyām | grāmān sampriddhāms turagān gajān vā rathāms tāthā 'rhattama sampratichha | 28. "Acquainted with duty, he placed upon his head the auspicious water with which the Brahman's feet had been washed, which removes the sins of men, and which Gīrīśa (Śiva), the god of gods, who wears the moon for a frontal ornament, bore on his head, with supreme devotion. 29. Bali said: 'Welcome to thee, reverence to thee, Brahman, what can we do for thee? honourable man, I regard thee as the visible, impersonated austerity of Brahman-sages. 32. Ask of me, student, whatever thou desirest; son of a Brahman, I conclude that thou art a suppliant; ask, most venerable youth, a cow, pure gold, an embellished house, food and drink, or a Brahman's daughter, flourishing villages, horses, or elephants, and carriages.' "

In section nineteenth the dwarf answers Bali in a speech complimentary to himself and his ancestors, and craftily, with a hypocritical pretence of moderation not very creditable to a god, ends with the seemingly modest demand of three paces of ground :

(Sect. 19, v. 16 ff.)—*Tasmāt tvatto mahīm iṣṭād vṛiṇe 'ham varadar-shabbhāt | padāni trīṇi daityendra sammitāni padā mama |* 17. *Nānyat te kāmaye rājan vadānyāḥ jagadīśvarāt | naināḥ prāpnoti vai vidvān yāvād-artha-pratigrahaḥ |* 18. *Balir uvācha | Aho Brāhmaṇa-dāyāda vāchaḥ te vṛiddha-sammatāḥ | tvam bālo bālīśa-matiḥ svārtham pra-ty abudho yathā |* 19. *Mām vachobhiḥ samārādhyā lokānām ekam īśvaram | pada-trayaṁ vṛiṇīte yo 'buddhimān dvīpa-dāsusham |* 20. *Na pumān mām upravrajya bhūyo yāchitum arhati | tasmād vṛitti-karīm bhūmiṁ baṭo kāmaṁ pratichha me |* 21. *Śrī-bhagavān uvācha | yāvanto viśayāḥ preṣṭhās trilokyām ajitendriyam | na śaknuvanti te sarve pratipūrayitūṁ nrīpa |* 22. *Tribhīḥ kramair asantusṭo dvīpenāpi na pūryate | nava-varṣa-sametena saptaadvīpa-varechhayā |* 27. *Tasmāt trīṇi padāny eva vṛiṇe tvad varadarashabbhāt | etāvataiva viddho 'ham vittaṁ yāvat prayojanam |* 28. *Sukaḥ uvācha | ity uktaḥ sa hasann āha vānōkṣitam pratigrihyatām | vāmanāya mahīm dātum jagrāha jala-bhājanam |*

"Wherefore I ask from thee, the chief of the bountiful, a small portion of ground, three paces, lord of the Daityas, measured by my step. 17. I desire nothing more from thee, the generous lord of the world. A wise man incurs no sin when he asks [only] as much as he needs.

18. Bali answered: 'Thy words, son of a Brahman, are such as be seem an old man. Thou art a youth, with the mind of a stripling, and like one ignorant regarding his own interest. 19. He is not wise who, having by words revered me, the sole lord of the worlds, asks me, the bestower of continents, for three paces of ground. 20. It is not fit that a man should come to me and make repeated requests: wherefore freely ask me for ground sufficient for thy subsistence.' 21. The deity replied: 'All the desirable objects in the three worlds cannot, O king, satisfy the man whose senses are unsubdued. 22. He who is not contented with three paces of ground will not be satiated even with a continent, and its nine divisions (*varshas*), since he will desire the gift of the seven continents.¹³⁸ . . . 27. Wherefore I desire from thee, who art the chief of the bountiful, only three paces of ground. With so much as suffices for my maintenance I am complete.' 28. Being thus addressed, Bali said, smiling, 'take what thou desirest;' and with the view of giving the land to the dwarf, he took a vessel of water."

Uśanas,¹³⁹ however, Bali's priest and preceptor, recognizing Vishṇu in the dwarf, and knowing the god's designs, here interposes, and warns the monarch against granting the ground solicited:

(Sect. 19, v. 29 ff.)—*Vishṇave kṣhmām pradāsyantam Uśanā asure-śvaram | jñanāś chikīrṣhitāñ Vishṇoḥ śiṣhyam prāha vidūm varāḥ |* 30. *Sukrāchāryaḥ uvācha | Esha Vairochane sākṣhād bhagavān Vishṇur avyayaḥ | Kāsyapād Aditer jāto devānām kārya-sūdhakaḥ |* 31. *Pratiśrutāñ tvayaitasmai yad anarthaṁ ajūnatā | na sādhu manye daityānām mahān upagato 'nayaḥ |* 32. *Esha te sthānam aiśvaryaṁ śriyaṁ tejo yaśaḥ śrutam | dāsyaty ūchhīdya Sakrāya māyā-mānavako Hariḥ |* 33. *Tribhūḥ kramair imān lokān viśva-kūyaḥ kramiṣhyati | sarvasvaṁ Vishṇave dattvā mūḍha vartīshyase katham |* 34. *Kramato gām padaikena dvitīyena divaṁ vibhoḥ | khaṁ cha kāyena mahatā tārīyasya kuto gatiḥ |* 35. *Niṣ-ṭhām te narake manye hy apradātuḥ pratiśrutam | pratiśrutasya yo 'nīśaḥ pratipādayitum bhavān |* 36. *Na 'tad dānam prasāmsanti yena vṛttir vipadyate | dānaṁ yajnas tapaḥ karma loka vṛttimato yataḥ |* 37. *Dharmāya yaśase 'rthāya kāmāya svajanāya cha | panchadhā vibhajan vittaṁ ihāmutra cha modate |* 38. *Atrāpi bahvṛichair gitaṁ śṛiṇu me*

¹³⁸ See the first volume of this work, pp. 489 ff. for an account of these continents and varshas.

¹³⁹ See the second volume of this work, p. 386, note 65.

'sura-sattama | satyam om iti yat proktaṁ yan nety āhāṇṛitaṁ hi tat |
 39. Satyam pushpa-phalaṁ vidyād ātma-vrikshasya jīvataḥ | vriksho
 'jīvati tan na syād anṛitam mūlam ātmanaḥ | 40. Tad yathā vrikshaḥ
 unmūlaḥ śuśhyaty udvartate 'chirāt | evaṁ nashāṇṛitaḥ sadyaḥ ātmā
 śuśhyed na saṁśayaḥ | 41. Parāḡ riktam apūrṇam vai aksharam yat
 tad "om" iti | yat kinchid "om" iti brūyāt tena richyeta vai pumān |
 42. Bhikshave sarvam om kurvan nālaṁ kāmēna chātmane | athaitat
 pūrṇam abhyātmaṁ yach cha nety anṛitaṁ vacchaḥ | 43. Sarvaṁ nety
 anṛitam brūyāt sa duḥkīrtiḥ śvasan mṛitaḥ | strīṣhu narma-vivāhe cha
 vṛitty-ārthe prāṇa-sankatḥ | go-brāhmaṇārthe hīṁsūyām nānṛitaṁ syāj
 jugupsitam |

29. "Uśanas, chief of the wise, knowing Viṣṇu's intention, thus addresses his pupil, the chief of the Asuras, who was about to give the earth to that deity: 30. 'This, O son of Virochana, is manifestly the divine, undecaying Viṣṇu himself, born of Kaśyapa and Aditi, [to be] the fulfiller of the purposes of the gods. 31. That ill-advised promise which thou, unwittingly, hast made to him, is not, I consider, to the advantage of the Daityas;—a great error has been committed. 32. This illusory dwarf, having bereft thee of thy place, dominion, prosperity, splendour, renown, and sacred knowledge, will give them to Śakra. 33. He whose body is the universe, will traverse these worlds in three strides; fool, where shalt thou abide, when thou hast given all thy possessions to Viṣṇu? 34. Where shall there be room for the third pace of the all-pervading being when he has traversed the earth with one pace, the sky with a second, and [occupied] the heaven with his vast body? 35. I think that thy abode shall be in hell, when thou art unable to give all that thou hast promised, since thou shalt not be master (so as to bestow it) of what thou hast engaged to give. 36. Men do not approve that gift by which [the donor's] livelihood is ruined: for [it is understood] in the world that gifts, sacrifices, austerities, ceremonies, are only performed by those who have the means. 37. The man who divides his property into five parts destined severally for purposes of religion, renown, personal interest, pleasure and family support, is happy in this world as well as in the next.¹⁴⁰ 38. Hear from me, most excellent of the

¹⁴⁰ The drift of verses 38 ff., which are founded upon a passage of the Veda quoted by the commentator, is thus explained by him: *Nanu tarhi pratiśrutya "na" iti*

Asuras, what has been sung on this subject by teachers of the Rigveda : to say "yes" is to be true ; to say "no" is to be false. 39. Know that truth is celebrated as the flower and fruit of that tree, one's self, while it is alive ; but this cannot be the case unless the tree lives ; [therefore, when it tends to our preservation], falsehood is the root of one's self. 40.

*katham anṛitam vācyaṃ | tatra āha sūrdhḥaiḥ śhaḍbhiḥ | atrāpi satyānṛita-vyavas-
thāyām bahvṛicḥa-srutyā hi prathamam "om" iti satyāṃ 'na' iti anṛitam" ity ādinā
satyānṛitayor lakṣhaṇa-pūrvakam stuti-nindābhyām satyāṃ vihitam anṛitam cha
niskiddham anantaram cha "parūg vai etad riktam akṣharam" ity ādinā satye doṣhān
anṛite cha guṇān uktvā "tasmāt kāle eva dadyāt kāle na dadyāt tat satyānṛite mith-
unīkaroti" ity upasāmhāreṇa vṛitti-sankāśādisho anṛitam apy anyujālam tam imām
śruty-artham darśayann āha |* "But the objection arises, how, after promising, can a
man say 'no,' and thus be guilty of falsehood ? To this he replies in six and a half
verses. Here, with a view to fixing the rules regarding truth and falsehood, after
having first of all stated the characteristic marks of each, according to these words of
the Rigvedic doctors, "yes" is truth, and "no" is falsehood, etc., and having by
praise and blame shown that truth is enjoined and falsehood forbidden, he cites the
clause, 'this word denotes removal and evacuation,' etc., to indicate the faults of truth
and the virtues of falsehood ; and lastly, after quoting the words, 'he combines truth
and falsehood by saying "let a man give and withhold on the proper occasions,"' he
sums up by deciding that falsehood is permitted when necessary for the sake of sub-
sistence, and in straits, etc. Propounding this doctrine of scripture, he says, etc."

The words of the passage here referred to, from a Bahvṛicḥa-S'ruti (Rigveda
Brāhmaṇa or Upanishad, which is unknown to me), as quoted by the commentator
in his notes on verses 40, 41, and 42 of this passage, are as follows : "Om" iti satyāṃ
"na" iti anṛitam | tad etat pushpam phalaṃ vācḥo yat satyam | sa ha īśvaro yaśasvī
kalyāṇa-kīrtir bhavīti | pushpam hi phalaṃ vācḥaḥ satyāṃ vadati | atha etad mūlām
vācḥo yad anṛitam | tad yathā vṛikṣhaḥ āvirmūlaḥ śuśhyati sa udvartate evam eva
anṛitam vadann āvirmūlam ātmānam karoti sa śuśhyati sa udvartate | tasmāt anṛitam
na vadet dayeta tv enena [anena tv anṛitena "dayeta" sankāśesho ātmānam rakṣhet
iti śruty-arthah | Comm.] parūg vai etad riktam akṣharam yad etad "om" iti | tad
yat kincha "om" ity āha atra eva aśmai tad richyate | sa yat sarvaṃ "om" kuryāt
richyāt ātmānam sa kāmabhyo nālam syāt | Atha etat pūrnam abhyātmaṃ yad
"na" iti | sa yat sarvaṃ "na" iti brūyāt pāpikā 'sa kīrtir jāyeta | sū enam tātra
eva hanyāt | Tasmāt kāle eva dadyāt kāle na dadyāt tat satyānṛite mithunīkaroti |

"Yes" (om) is true, 'no' is false. Truth is the flower, and the fruit, of speech. He
shall be lord, famous, of excellent renown : for he utters truth, the flower, and the fruit,
of speech. Again, falsehood is the root of speech. Just as a tree, the root of which
is exposed, dries up, and falls, so a man, uttering a falsehood, exposes his own roots,
dries up, and falls. Wherefore let no man utter falsehood, but let him protect him-
self by it." [Such is the sense assigned to *dayeta tv enena* by the commentator, who
adds "in straits."] "This word, 'yes,' denotes removal and emptiness. Therefore
by every 'yes' which is uttered, emptiness is occasioned. The man who says always
'yes' will empty himself, and not have sufficient for his wishes. Again, the word
'no' denotes fullness in one's own interest. He who says always 'no' will acquire
an evil reputation, which will straightway destroy him. Wherefore he combines
truth and falsehood by [the rule] let a man give and withhold at the proper times."

Wherefore, as a tree, when uprooted, dries up and falls, so too we ourselves, if we abandon falsehood, shall undoubtedly become dried up.

41. The word "yes" denotes removal, evacuation, and emptiness; whenever, then, any person says "yes," he will be emptied out. 42. By continually saying "yes" to an applicant, a man does not retain enough to satisfy his own desires; whilst a false "no" [preserves our] full [property] for ourselves. 43. The man whose every "no" is false, is infamous, and dead even while he breathes. But falsehood is not blamable when addressed to women, or in jest, or in reference to a marriage, or for subsistence, or when life is in danger, or on behalf of cows and Brāhmans, or when one is exposed to violence."

Bali, however, refuses (sect. 20, vv. 2 ff.) to break his promise, whatever consequences to himself may result. He is thereupon cursed by his preceptor for his disobedience:

(Sect. 20, vv. 14 ff.)—*Evam asraddhitaṁ śiṣhyam anādeśa-karaṁ guruḥ | śaśāpa daiva-prahitaḥ satyasandham manasvinam |* 15. "*Driḍham paṇḍita-mūṇy aṇaḥ stabdho 'sy asmad-upekṣayā | mach-ohhāsanātigo yas tvam achirād bhrāśyase śrīyaḥ*" | 16. *Evam saptaḥ sva-gururūṇ satyād na chalito mahān | vāmanāya dadāv enām architvodaka-pūrvakam |* 17. *Vindhyāvalis tadā gatyā patnī jālaka-mālīnī¹⁴¹ | āninye kalāśaṁ haimam avanejany-apām¹⁴² bhrītam |* 18. *Yajamānaḥ svayam tasya śrīmat-pāda-yugaṁ mudā | avanijyāvahad mūrdhni tad-apo viśva-pāvanīḥ |*

14. "The preceptor, impelled by fate, cursed his disciple, thus devoid of faith and disobedient, yet wise and true to his promise; [saying], 15. 'Though thou regardest thyself as extremely learned, thou art ignorant and stubborn in thy contempt of us: but thou who transgressest my commandment, shalt soon fall from thy prosperous state.' 16. Though thus cursed by his preceptor, this great [monarch], who would not depart from truth, gave this [earth] to the dwarf, after making an obeisance and pouring water [on his hand]. 17. Then his wife Vindhyāvali, wearing a necklace of pearls, approaching, brought a golden vessel filled with water for ablution. 18. Next the offerer of the sacrifice, after himself washing with delight the blessed feet [of the Brahman], bore upon his head the world-purifying water which had been so employed."

This magnanimous act of Bali is applauded by the celestials, and

¹⁴¹ *Jālakaṁ muktūbharaga-viśeṣaḥ* | Comm.

¹⁴² *Avanejanīm apām* | Comm.

rewarded by them with a shower of flowers, and by strains of music. Immediately, however, the body of the dwarf begins to expand :

(Sect. 20, v. 21.)—*Tad vāmanaṁ rūpam avarḍhatādḥbhutaṁ Harer anantasya guṇa-trayātmakam | bhūḥ kṣaṁ diśo dyaur vivarāḥ payodhayaḥ tiryak-nṛi-devāḥ ṛishayo yad asata |* “That dwarfish body of the infinite Hari, consisting of the three qualities, increased miraculously, [that body] in which were comprehended the earth, the air, the points of the compass, the sky, the abysses, the oceans, brutes, men, gods and ṛishis.”

A further account of this vast body, of the effect which the appearance of it produced on the Asuras, and other beings, is given in verses 22-32; and at length the strides of the deity are thus described :

(Sect. 20, v. 33.)—*Kṣhitim padaikena Baler vicukrame nabhaḥ śarīrena diśascha bāhubhiḥ | pādāṁ dvitīyaṁ kramatas trivishṭapaṁ na vai tritīyāya tadīyam anv api | urekramasyāṅghrir upary upary atho maharjanābhyām tapasaḥ puraṁ gataḥ |* “He traversed the earth of Bali with one pace; and [occupied] the air with his body and the points of the compass with his arms. His second pace, as he strode, [filled] the heaven; and not even the minutest fraction of it remained for a third pace. The foot of the wide-striding deity rose upwards and upwards, and then reached beyond the Mahar-, Jana-, and Tapo-lokas.”¹⁴³

The gods assemble (sect. 21) to do homage to Hari on his victory, which they celebrate with great rejoicing, and which is proclaimed by the king of the bears :

(Sect. 21, vv. 8 ff.)—*Jāmbavān rikṣa-rūjas tu bheri-śabdair manojavaḥ | vijayaṁ dikṣu sarvāsu mahotsavam aghoshayat | 9. Mahīm sarvām hṛitām dṛiṣṭvā tri-pada-vyāja-yāchnayā | ūchuḥ eva-bhartur asurāḥ dikṣhitasyātyamarshitāḥ | 10. Na vai ayam brahma-bandhur Viṣṇur māyāvinām varah | dvija-rūpa-pratichhanno deva-kūryaṁ chikīrṣati | 11. Anena yūchamānena śatrunā baṭu-rūpiṇā | sarvasvaṁ no hṛitam bhartur nyastadāṇḍasya varhishḥ | 12. Satya-vratasya satatām dikṣhitasya viśeshataḥ | nānṛitam bhāṣhituṁ śakyam brahmanyasya dayāvataḥ | 13. Tasmād asya badhe dharmo bhartuḥ kṣurūṣhaṇe cha naḥ | ity āyudhāni jagṛihur Baler anucharāsuraḥ | 14. Te sarve vāmanaṁ hantūṁ śula-paṭṭiṣa-pāṇayaḥ | anichhato Baleḥ rājan prādravan jātamanyavaḥ |*

8. “Jāmbavat, king of the bears, swift as thought, proclaimed this

¹⁴³ See Wilson's Vishnu Purāṇa (p. 48, note, and p. 213 = pp. 98, vol. i., and 226, vol. ii., of Dr. Hall's ed.) for an account of these Lokas.

victory, the occasion of great festivity, with sound of kettledrums, in all the regions. 9. Beholding the whole earth taken from their master when consecrated for sacrifice, by an artful request for three paces of ground, the Asuras, greatly incensed, exclaimed: 10. 'This is certainly not a petty Brahman, but Viṣṇu, the chief of magicians; disguised under the form of a twice-born man, he seeks to accomplish the purposes of the gods. 11. By this enemy, in the form of a suppliant student, has been taken all the property of our master, who had laid down his sceptre on the sacrificial grass. 12. Untruth cannot be uttered by one who is always devoted to truth—especially when he is consecrated,—by one who is pious and compassionate. 13. Wherefore it is our duty to slay him (the dwarf), and obey our master:—so saying, the Asuras, followers of Bali, seized their weapons. 14. Against the wish of Bali, they all ran, infuriate, pikes and axes in hand, to slay the dwarf."¹⁴⁴

This attack of the Asuras is, however, derided by the followers of Viṣṇu, who kill some of them, and they are at length restrained by Bali, who points out that time and fate are at present unfavourable to his cause. Bali is then bound in the chains of Varuṇa, and reproached by Viṣṇu for failing to fulfil his promise:

(Sect. 21, v. 26.)—*Atha Tūrṅkhy-suto jñātvā Virāt prabhu-chikrtrṣhitam | babandha Vāruṇaiḥ pāsair Baliṃ sautyē'hani kratau | 27. Hāhākāro mahān āsīd rodasyoḥ sarvato-dīśam | grihyamāṇe 'sura-patau Viṣṇunā prabhaviṣṇunā | 28. Tam baddhām Vāruṇaiḥ pāsair bhagavān āha vāmanah | nashṭa-śriyam sthira-prajnam udāra-yaśasaṃ nriṇa | 29. Padāni trīṇi dattāni bhūmer mahyaṃ tvayā 'sura | dvābhyāṃ krāntā mahi sarvā trītiyam upakalpaya | 30. Yāvat tapaty asau gobhir yāvad Induḥ sahoḍubhiḥ | Yāvad varshati Parjanyaś tāvati bhūr iyaṃ tava | 31. Padaikena mayā krānto bhūrlokaḥ khaṃ dīśas tanoḥ | svarlokaś tu dvītiyena paśyatas te evam ātmanā | 32. Pratiśrutam addātas te niraye vasaḥ iśhyate | viśa tvaṃ nirayaṃ tasmād guruṇā chānumoditah | 33. Vṛthā manorathas tasya dūra-svargaḥ (duresvargaḥ, Bombay ed.) pataty adhaḥ | yo viprāya pratiśrutya na tad arpayate 'rthitām¹⁴⁵ | 34. Vipra-*

¹⁴⁴ It will be observed that here the dwarf is still represented as having that shape, though he had been above described as assuming a superhuman form and filling all the worlds. Yet though he is spoken of as a Brahman dwarf, he is said to have had followers who easily defeated the Asuras of Bali.

¹⁴⁵ The reading given of this line is that of Burnouf's edition. The Bombay edition has instead of it: *pratiśrutasyādānena yo 'rthinaṃ vipralambhate* | "who deceives a suppliant by not giving him what had been promised."

*labdho dadūmīti tvayā 'haṁ chādhyā-mānina | tad-vyālīka-phalam
bhunkshva nirayaṁ katichit samāḥ |* 26. "Then Virāt (Garuḍa), the son of Tārksya, knowing the purpose of the lord, bound Bali with the bonds of Varuṇa¹⁴⁶ at the sacrifice on the day of the Soma libation. 27. A great lamentation arose in all the quarters of the two worlds (heaven and earth), when the Lord of the Asuras was seized by the puissant Viṣṇu. 28. Him bound with the bonds of Varuṇa, whose prosperity was destroyed, but whose understanding was firm, and whose renown was vast, the divine dwarf thus addressed: 29. 'Asura, three paces of ground were given to me by thee: with two paces the entire world has been traversed: find a place for the third. 30. This world of thine extends as far as that [sun] warms with his beams, as far as the moon shines with the stars, as far as Parjanya rains. 31. With one pace I traversed the region of the earth, and [occupied] the air and regions with my body; and whilst thou wast looking on, I [traversed] the sky with a second [pace, filling] thy possessions with myself. 32. As thou hast not given what was promised, it is my pleasure that thou shalt dwell in the infernal regions; enter therefore thither, with the approbation of thy preceptor. 33. That man's desires are frustrated, and he falls downward, far from heaven, who, after promising to a Brahman, does not deliver to him what he had solicited. 34. I have been deluded by thee, thinking thyself wealthy, when thou saidst "I give." Endure the infernal regions for some years as the penalty of that deceit.'"

Bali answers as follows (sect. 22):

(Sect. 22, v. 2).—*Yady uttama-śloka bhavān mameritaṁ vacho vyālīkaṁ
sura-varya manyate | karomy ṛitaṁ tad na bhavet pralambhanam pūdaṁ
tṛitīyaṁ kuru śirśṇi me nijaṁ |* 3. *Bibhemi nāhaṁ nirayāt pada-chyuto
na pāśa-bandhād vyasanād duratyayāt | naivārtha-kṛichhrād bhavato
vinigrahāt asādhu-vādād bhrīṣam udvije yaṭṭhā |*

2. "If, renowned chief of the gods, thou considerest the word which I uttered to be deceitful, I now make it good,—and here there can be no deception,—place thy third step on my head. 3. Fallen from my position, I fear not the infernal regions, nor binding in bonds, nor mis-

¹⁴⁶ See Manu, viii. 82; ix. 308. In R. V. vii. 65, 3, Mitra and Varuṇa are said to be *bhūri-pāśāv anṛitasya setū* | "barriers against falsehood, furnished with many nooses."—See Roth's article on the principal gods of the Arian nations, "Journal of the German Oriental Society," vol. vi. p. 73, and the 4th volume of this work, pp. 57, 65.

fortune difficult to escape, nor loss of wealth, nor thy restraint, so much as I am afflicted by a bad name."

He then goes on to express his sense of his conqueror's superiority, and submission to his fate. He is now visited and consoled by his grandfather Prahrāda. His wife Vindhyāvali next worships Viṣṇu; and then Brahmā intercedes in behalf of the Asura monarch. Viṣṇu, after making some general reflections, replies as follows:

(Sect. 22, v. 28).—*Esha dānava-daityānām agrāṇiḥ kīrti-vardhanaḥ | ajaiśhīd ajayām māyām siddhān api na muhyati | 29. Kāhina-rikthaś chyuताḥ sthānāt kaḥipto baddhaścha śatrubhiḥ | jñātibhiḥcha parityakto yātānām anuyāpitaḥ | 30. Gurunā bhartsitaḥ śapto jahau satyaṁ na svrataḥ | chhalair ukto mayā dharmo [quere dharmam?] nāyam tyajati satyavāk | 31. Esha me prāpitaḥ sthānaṁ duḥkhrāpam amarair api | Sāvārner antaryāyāṁ bhaviteḥdro mad-āśrayaḥ | 32. Tūvat sutalam adhyastām Viśvakarma-vinirmītam | yan nādhayo vyādhayaścha kṛamas tandrā parābhavaḥ | nopasargāḥ nivasatām sambhavanti mame-
chhayaḥ |*

28. "This chief of the Dānavas and Daityas, and enhancer of their renown, has conquered unconquerable Delusion: though dispirited, he is not bewildered. 29. Having lost his prosperity, fallen from his place, cast down and bound by his enemies, abandoned by his relations, involved in suffering, 30. reprehended and cursed by his preceptor, still, faithful to his obligation, he has not abandoned truth. [Though] duty has been inculcated by me in a deceitful fashion, this truthful being does not swerve from it.¹⁴⁷ 31. He has [therefore] been elevated by me to a position to which even the immortals with difficulty attain: he shall be the Indra, supported by me, of the Sāvārṇi Manvantara. 32. Meanwhile let him occupy Sutala, formed by Viśvakarman. where, by my will, neither mental nor bodily pains, nor fatigues, nor weariness, nor discomfiture, nor diseases afflict the inhabitants."

(Sect. 23, v. 2).—Bali replies thus: *Aho prajānāmāya kṛitaḥ samud-yamaḥ prapanna-bhaktārtha-vidhau samāhitaḥ | yal lokapālais tvadanu-graho 'marair alabdha-pūrvo 'pasade 'sure 'rpitaḥ | 3. Sukāḥ uvācha | ity uktvā Harim ānamya Brahmānaṁ sa-Bhavaṁ tataḥ | vivesa Sutalam prīto Balir muktaḥ sahasurair | 2. "O, even the effort made to adore*

¹⁴⁷ If we should read *dharmam* instead of *dharmah*, the sense would be: "Though deceitfully addressed by me, he does not abandon duty."

thee succeeds in effecting the object of the devout man who seeks thee; seeing that thy favour, such as has not been before attained by the immortal guardians of the worlds, has been bestowed on me, a degraded Asura.' 3. Having thus spoken, and bowed down to Hari, to Brahmā, and to Bhāva (Śiva), Bali, being released, entered Sutala with joy, along with the Asuras." Vishṇu now addresses Uśanas, the priest of Bali:

(Sect. 23, v. 13).—*Athāhośanasam rājan Harir Nārāyaṇo 'ntike | āśīnam ritevijām madhye sadasi brahma-vādinām |* 14. *Brahman santanu śishyasya karma-chhidraṁ vitanvataḥ | yat tat karmasu vaishamyam brahma-dṛṣṭaṁ samam bhavet |* 15. *Sukraḥ uvācha | Kutas tat-karma-vaishamyam yasya karmesvaro bhavān | yajñośo yajnapurushaḥ sarva-bhāvena pūjitaḥ |* 16. *Mantratas tantratas chhidraṁ deśa-kūlarha-vas-tutaḥ | sarvaṁ karoti nischhidram anusankirtanam tava |* 17. *Tathāpi vadato bhūman karishyāmy anusāsanam | etach chhreyah param puṁsām yat tavājñānupālanam |* 18. *Sukaḥ uvācha | abhinandya Harer ājñām Uśanā bhagavān iti | yajna-chhidraṁ samādhatta Baler viprarāhibhiḥ saha |* 19. *Evam Baler mahīm rājan bhikṣitvā vāmano Hariḥ | dadau bhrātre Mahendrāya tridivāṁ yat parair hṛitam |* 13. "Hari Nārāyaṇa then approaching Uśanas sitting among the priests, in an assembly of expounders of the Veda, thus addressed him: 14. 'Brahman, rectify the irregularities of thy pupil in performing the ceremonial: whatever fault there is in any rite is removed if it be seen by a Brahman.' 15. Sukra (Uśanas) replied: 'How can there be any irregularity in that coremony of which thou art the lord, the lord of sacrifice, the sacrificial Man, adored in every aspect? 16. Whatever defects there may be in respect of texts, of order, of place, of time, of persons, or of materials,—the mere celebration of thee obliterates them all. 17. Nevertheless, great being, I shall fulfil the injunction which I utterest: this is the highest happiness of men, to obey thee.' 18. Having assented to the order of Hari, the divine Vishṇu, in which the Brahman-rishis, rectified the irregularities of Bali's sacrifice. 19. Having in this manner begged the earth from the dwarf Hari gave [back] to his brother Mahendra and the treasure which had been taken from him by his enemies."

¹⁴⁸ Vishṇu is called Upendra (the inferior or younger Indra), the brother of Mahendra, the great Indra.—See above, p. 133, line 10 from the bottom.

Though the whole tenor of this legend, and, indeed, of the entire Bhāgavata Purāṇa, represents Viṣṇu, of whom the dwarf was an incarnation, as the supreme deity, it is now rather strangely said that Brahmā and the other deities made the dwarf governor of all things:

(Sect. 23, v. 20).—*Prajāpati-patir Brahmā devarshi-pitri-bhūmipaiḥ | Dakṣa-Bṛhgu-Angiro-mukhyaḥ Kumāreṇa Bhavena cha | 21. Kāśya-pasyāditeḥ prityai sarva-bhūta-bhavāya chā | lokānām loka-pālānām akarod vāmanam patim | 22. Vedānām sarva-devānām dharmasya yāsasāḥ śriyaḥ | mangalānām vratānāṃcha kalpaṃ svargāpavargayoḥ | 23. Upendraṃ kalpayāṃchakre patiṃ sarva-vibhūtaye | tadā sarvāṇi bhūtāni bhṛīṣam mumudire nṛipa | 20.* "Brahmā, the lord of the Prajāpatis, together with the gods, ṛishis, pitris, with Dakṣa, Bṛhgu, Angiras, and other lords of the earth, with Kumāra, and Bhava, 21. with a view to the gratification of Kāśyapa and Aditi, and the good of all creatures, made the Dwarf master of the worlds and of the guardians of the worlds. 22, 23. He made Upendra (Viṣṇu) master of the Vedas, of all the gods, of righteousness, renown, prosperity, blessings, and ceremonies, and lord of heaven and final liberation, in order that he might have command of all things. Then all creatures rejoiced exceedingly."

The section concludes with the verse I have already quoted above (p. 72) in glorification of Viṣṇu, followed by a statement of the benefits resulting from hearing the story of the Dwarf incarnation.

This incarnation is also briefly related in the Agni Purāṇa, iv. 5b-11, and is either referred to, or narrated more or less diffusely, in the Harivamśa, verses 2725; 4159; 4166; 12195-12204; and 12900-14390. In the last-mentioned verses the story is told at length, with the various conflicts between the gods and Asuras by which it had been preceded. The incarnation itself and its results are related in vv. 14089-14390. Sections 231-233 of the Matsya Purāṇa are devoted to the same subject.¹⁴⁹ I give an abstract of the 47th section, in which Viṣṇu's incarnations are enumerated.¹⁵⁰ It is here stated that it was in consequence of a curse pronounced by Bṛhgu (as we shall

¹⁴⁹ See Prof. Aufrecht's Catalogue, p. 426. The Matsya Purāṇa has been lithographed and published at Bombay, with a Mahratti explanation; but the portion containing the sections in question has not yet reached me.

¹⁵⁰ In verse 9 it is said that Kāśyapa was a portion of Brahmā, and Aditi of the Earth (*Brahmaṇaḥ Kāśyapas tv aṃśaḥ Pṛithivyās tv Aditis tathā*).

see further on) that Viṣṇu assumed most of these forms (v. 37). There were twelve conflicts between the gods and Asuras (vv. 39-52). It is related (vv. 58 ff.) that on one occasion when Prahrāda had been overcome, and Indra had gained the empire of the three worlds, Sukra, the priest of the Asuras, left them and went to the gods.^{150*} They, however, entreated him not to desert them, when he reassured them by the promise of his support (vv. 60 ff.). They were nevertheless attacked by the gods, and again resorted to Sukra; when their assailants left them. Sukra then referred to their former discomfitures, counselled them to wait for a favourable turn of fortune, and declared his intention to resort to Mahādeva and obtain certain sacred texts which would insure their victory (vv. 65 ff.). They then promised to the gods to desist from hostilities and betake themselves to austerities (vv. 73 ff.). Sukra accordingly went to Mahādeva and asked for texts more powerful than those possessed by Brihaspati, the priest of the gods; when the deity directed him to perform a painful rite, imbibing the smoke of chaff (*kāṇa-dhūma*)¹⁵¹ with his head downward for a thousand years. This he agreed to do (vv. 78 ff.). Hearing of this, and taking advantage of the defenceless state of the Asuras, the gods went to attack them. The Asuras remonstrated, and in the absence of Sukra, resorted to his mother for help, and were reassured by her (vv. 83 ff.). The gods, however, followed, and assailed them, when the goddess (Sukra's mother—her name is not given), by her magical power, rendered Indra helpless, and then the other gods took to flight (vv. 91 ff.). Viṣṇu, however, now interposed, and desired Indra to enter into him (Viṣṇu). This provoked the goddess, who threatened to burn them up. Indra called upon Viṣṇu to slay her before she could carry her threat into effect. Viṣṇu, though hesitating to kill a female, cut off her head with his weapon (vv. 95 ff.). Viṣṇu was hereupon doomed by a curse of Sukra to be born seven times in the world of men; and in consequence of this he appears for

^{150*} Compare Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa, vii. 6, 20: *Uśanū vai Kāvya 'surāṇām purohitāḥ āsit | taṁ devāḥ kāmādughābhīr (kāma-dugdhābhīr gobhiḥ | Comm.) upā-mantrayanta | tasmai etāny auśanāni prāyachhan | kāmādughāḥ vai auśanāni |* "Uśanas Kāvya was the priest of the Asuras. The gods invited him with milch cows. They gave him these Auśana texts. Auśana texts are milch cows."

¹⁵¹ I have to thank Prof. Aufrecht for pointing out an explanation of this phrase given by the commentator on the Kāśī Khaṇḍa of the Skanda Pur. 18, 2, viz. *Kaṇāḥ khaṇḍitās tanḍulatushās tajjanyaṁ dhūmam |*

the good of the world when unrighteousness prevails: ¹⁶² (vv. 102 *taṁ drishṭvā stri-badhāṁ ghorāṁ chukrodha Bhṛīgur īśvaraḥ | tato 'bhisāpto Bhṛīgunā Viṣṇur bhāryā-badhe tadā |* 103 | *yasmāt te jānato dharmam abadhya stri nishādita | tasmāt tvāṁ saptakṛitveha mānusheshu-papatsyasi |* 104 | *tatas tenābhisāpena nashṭe dharmo punaḥ punaḥ | lokasya cha hitārthāya jāyate mānusheshu iha*). Sukra then sprinkled his mother with water, and restored her to life, an act and result which were applauded by all creatures (vv. 105 ff.). Indra now, with the intention of counteracting Sukra's austerities, sent his daughter Jayantī to the saint to wait upon and soothe him by her assiduous and affectionate attentions and services, till the conclusion of his painful performances (vv. 111 ff.). She found him in the act of being thrown down into the pit of fire by the Yakṣha who had prepared it, and drinking in the smoke of the chaff, with his head downward, and though enfeebled, yet tranquilly meditating on the form of Mahādeva (vv. 116 ff. *taṁ drishṭvā tu pibantaṁ sū kaṇadhūmam avāṇmukham | yuṣkeṇa pātyamānaṁ cha kuṇḍa-dhāreṇa pātitaṁ | drishṭvā cha tam pātyamānaṁ devī Kāvyaṁ avasthitaṁ | svarūpa-dhyāna-śūmyantaṁ durbalam bhūtim āsthitaṁ*); lauded him with endearing language, and rubbed his limbs with her gentle touch (v. 118). At the conclusion of his austere rite, continued for a thousand years, Mahādeva applauded him as the only person who had ever performed it; and granted him a variety of boons, including superiority to the gods. Sukra lauded the god in a hymn of 41 stanzas, consisting of an enumeration of his attributes (vv. 119 ff.). Mahādeva, gratified, touched the saint with his hand, granted him a vision of his form, and then disappeared (v. 167). Sukra then noticed Jayantī standing beside him, expressed

¹⁶² I have not elsewhere met with an explanation of Viṣṇu's incarnations so dishonourable to the god. Yet even here he is said to be born for the good of mankind when righteousness has declined, with a view to its restoration—a singular result of a curse! Compare the passage from the Bhagavadgītā given above, p. 53, and vv. 7 and 8 of the 4th sect. of the same work: *Yadā yadā hi dharmasya glānir bhavati Bhārata | abhyutthānam adharmasya tadā 'tinānaṁ erijāmy aham | paritrāṇāya sādhuṇāṁ vināśāya cha duṣkṛitām | dharmā-samsthāpanārthāya sambhavāmi yuge yuge* | "Whenever righteousness declines, and unrighteousness arises, then I create myself. For the deliverance of the good and the destruction of the wicked, I am born in every Yuga." See also the 32nd verse of the hymn to Viṣṇu in the 10th Canto of the Raghuvamśa: *Anavāptam avaptavyaṁ na te kinchana vidyate | lokā-nugrahaḥ evaiḥo hetus te janma-karmaṇoḥ* | "Thou hast nothing unobtained to obtain. Kindness to men is the only cause of thy birth and of thy action."

himself gratified by her devoted attentions, asked her what she wished, and promised to bestow it. She replied that he, in virtue of his transcendent knowledge, should know what she wished. Her desire was, he said, to live in his company for ten years. This he granted, and took her home and married her. They lived together, rendered invisible to all eyes by his magical power, for ten years (vv. 168 ff.). The Asuras, however, learning the success of their preceptor's austerities, came to his abode, but failed to see him. Brihaspati, the preceptor of the gods, knowing that Sukra would be occupied with Jayanti for ten years, at the instigation of Indra, took advantage of this circumstance to assume his form, and summoning the Asuras, passed himself off to them as their spiritual guide, and offered to act as their teacher, an offer which they gladly accepted (vv. 177 ff.). As the fruit of Sukra's ten years' cohabitation with Jayanti, a daughter, Devayāni, was born. Sukra then resolved to visit his pupils, and informed Jayanti of this intention, the fulfilment of which she admitted to be a duty, and said she would not stand in the way of its performance. He accordingly went and found that the Asuras had been deluded by Brihaspati, who had assumed his (Sukra's) form. He told them that he was Sukra; and when they were bewildered by the sight of the two sages identical in appearance, he repeated that he was their genuine preceptor, and that the other was Brihaspati, and demanded that they should forsake the latter, and follow him. They, however, were unable to distinguish between the two; and Brihaspati asseverated that he was the genuine Sukra, and that the other was Brihaspati. The Asuras, considering that the person who had taught them for ten years was their real preceptor, made obeisance to him, and angrily rejected the claim of Sukra to be their Guru. They were in consequence doomed by the curse of the incensed sage (Sukra) to lose their senses and incur defeat (vv. 183 ff.). Satisfied with this result, Brihaspati reassumed his own proper form, and disappeared. Seeing that they had been deluded, the Asuras, headed by Prahāda, followed Sukra, and appeared before him with downcast looks. Though at first angry, he was at length pacified by their entreaties, reassured them by saying that they would regain their senses and gain one victory over the gods, though after that they should have to descend to the infernal regions, the period of their dominion de-

clared by Brahmā having then expired. In the Sāvarni Manvantara, however, they were destined to regain supremacy, and Bali, grandson of Prahrāda, would become lord of the worlds. Another boom was destined for Prahrāda, which Brahmā had forbidden Sukra to reveal (vv. 201 ff.). Elated by this prediction of their future ascendancy, the Asuras desired to anticipate the time of its realization, and challenged the gods to battle. A combat ensued, which lasted for a thousand years, at the end of which the Asuras were victorious. The gods then took counsel together, and invited Saṇḍa and Marka¹⁵³ (who are mentioned in verse 39, and appear to be the pupils of Brihaspati alluded to in v. 221) to abandon the Asuras, and aid them (the gods) in their sacrifice. If they succeeded in obtaining this aid, they were confident they should overcome the Asuras. Saṇḍa and Marka accepted the invitation, and the gods conquered the Asuras; who, being forsaken by these two priests, and undergoing the consequences of Sukra's curse, were expelled by their adversaries from the upper world, and entered the infernal regions [226. *Yajnenopāh-vayāmas tau tato jeshyāmahe 'surān | tadopāmantrayan devāḥ Saṇḍa-markau tu tāv ubhau |* 227. *yajne chāhuya tau proktau "tyajetām asurān dvijau | vayaṁ yuvām bhajishyāmaḥ saha jīvā tu dānavān" |* 228. *evam kṛitābhisandhi tau Saṇḍamarkau surās tathā | tato devāḥ jayam prāpur dānavās cha parājitāḥ |* 229. *Saṇḍamarka-parityaktāḥ dānavāḥ hy abalās tathā | evam daityāḥ purā Kāvya-sāpenābhihatās tadā |* 230. *Kāvya-sāpābhihatās te nirādharās cha sarvaśaḥ | nirasyamānāḥ devaiś cha vivisus te rasātataḥ |*] (vv. 223 ff.). In consequence of Sukra's curse, which operated periodically, Viṣṇu was born time after time, (see above, p. 152), after a decline of righteousness, which he re-established, destroying the Asuras. For Brahmā had decreed that all those Asuras who should be disobedient to Prahrāda¹⁵⁴ should be slain by men (231. *tataḥ-prabhṛiti sāpena Bhṛigor naimittikena tu |* 232. *fejne punaḥ punar Viṣṇur dharme praśithile prabhuḥ | kurvan dharmavyavasthānam asurāṇām praṇāśanam |* 233. *Prahrādasya nidēso tu na sthāsyanty asurās cha ye | manushya-badhyās te sarve Brahmēti vyāharat prabhuḥ |* Viṣṇu's incarnations are then enumerated (verses

¹⁵³ See the fifth volume of this work, p. 230, note.

¹⁵⁴ Regarding Prahrāda, or Prahlāda, see Wilson's Viṣṇu Purāṇa, Dr. Hall's ed., vol. ii, pp. 80-68.

234-245) viz. (1) a portion of him sprung from Dharma, (2) the Narasinha, or Man-lion, and (3) the Dwarf, incarnations, which are called the celestial manifestations, the remaining seven being the human incarnations caused by Sukra's curse (v. 238. *Etās tioraḥ amṛitās tasya divyāḥ sambhūṭayo dvijāḥ | mānushāḥ sapta yānyās* (sic.) *tu śāpajās tāḥ nibodhata*). These seven are (4) the Dattātreyā, (5) Māndhātṛi, (6) Paraśurāma, (7) Rāma, (8) Vedavyāsa, (9) Buddha, (10) Kalki, incarnations. (Eight instead of seven are obtained if, with the Mahratti expounder, we understand the beginning of verse 243 to refer to Kṛishṇa.) The Bhāgavata Purāṇa gives twenty-two incarnations (i. 3, 1 ff.) viz. : Those in the forms of (1) Puruṣa, (2) Varāha or the Boar, (3) Nārada, (4) Nara and Nārāyaṇa, (5) Kapila, (6) Dattātreyā, (7) Yajña or Sacrifice, (8) Rishabhā, (9) Prithu, (10) Matsya or the Fish, (11) Kūrma or, the Tortoise, (12 and 13), Dhanvantari, (14) Narasinha or the Man-lion, (15) Vāmana or the Dwarf, (16) Paraśurāma, (17) Vedavyāsa, (18) Rāma, (19 and 20) Balarāma and Kṛishṇa, (21) Buddha, and (22) Kalki. These last two are represented as future. But the incarnations of Viṣṇu are innumerable, like the rivulets flowing from an inexhaustible lake. Rishis, Manus, gods, sons of Manus, Prajāpatis are all portions of him (verse 26. *Avatārāḥ hy asankheyāḥ Harer sattva-nidher dvijāḥ | yathā 'vidāsinaḥ kulyāḥ sarasaḥ syuḥ sahasraśaḥ |* 27. *riṣayo manavo devāḥ manu-putrāḥ mahaujaśaḥ | kalāḥ sarve Harer eva saprajāpatayas tathā*).

SECT. V.—*Viṣṇu as represented in the Nirukta, Rāmāyaṇa, Mahābhārata, and Purāṇas.*

From the passages adduced in the preceding pages, it is clear that Viṣṇu is not regarded as the supreme god either in the Rig-veda, or in the Brāhmaṇas. In these ancient works he is considered only as one of the gods, and not as superior to the rest. It is also manifest from the passage I have cited from the Nirukta (xii. 19) in p. 64 that neither Yāska himself, nor Śākapūṇi and Aurnavābha, the ancient interpreters of the Veda, whose opinions he quotes, assigned to Viṣṇu any higher rank than they did to the other members of the Indian Pantheon. From another text of the Nirukta (vii. 5) which I have cited in p. 66, it appears that the old expounders of the Veda regarded the deities worshipped in the Veda as mainly represented by three gods

of primary consequence, and that of these Vishṇu is not one. As the passage from which this latter extract was made is of great interest and importance, I shall quote it here at length :

Nir. 7, 4.—*Tad yo 'nādishta-devatāḥ mantrās tesu devatopaparikṣā | yad-devataḥ sa yajno vā yajnāṅgaṁ vā tad-devatāḥ bhavanti | atha anyatra yajnat prajāpatyāḥ iti yājñikāḥ | nārāsaṁsāḥ iti nairuktāḥ | api vā sū kāma-devatā eyāt prūyo-devatā vā | asti hy āchāro bahulam loka deva-devatyam atithi-devatyam pitṛi-devatyam | yājña-daivato mantrāḥ iti | api hy adevatāḥ devatā-vaṭ stūyante | yathā 'śva-prabhṛtiṇy ośadhī-paryantāny athāpy aśtau dvandvāni | sa na manyeta āgantūn iva arthān devatānām pratyakṣa-dṛiṣyam etad bhavati | mahābhāgyād devatāyāḥ ekaḥ ātmā bahudhā stūyate | ekasya ātmano 'nye devāḥ pratyangāni bhavanti | api cha sattvānām prakṛiti-bhūmabhir ṛishayaḥ stuvanti ity āhuḥ | prakṛiti-sarvanāmnyāc cha itaretar-janmāno bhavanti itaretara-prakṛitayaḥ karma-janmānaḥ ātma-janmānaḥ | ātmā eva eṣāṁ ratho bhavaty ātmā 'śvāḥ ātmā 'yudham ātmā iṣhavaḥ ātmā sarvaṁ devasya |*
 5. *Tisraḥ eva devatāḥ iti nairuktāḥ Agniḥ pṛithivī-sthāno Vāyur vā Indro vā 'ntarīkṣa-sthānaḥ Sūryo dyu-sthānaḥ | tāsāṁ mahābhāgyād ekaikasyūḥ api bahūni nāmadheyāni bhavanti | api vā karma-pṛithaktvād yathā hotā 'dhvaryur brahmā udgātā ity apy ekasya sataḥ | api vā pṛithag eva syuḥ | pṛithag hi stutayo bhavanti tathā 'bhīdhānāni | yatho etat—"karma-pṛithaktvād" iti bahavo 'pi vibhajya karmāni kuryuḥ | tatra saṁsthānaikatvaṁ sambhogaiikatvaṁ cha upekṣitavyam | yathā pṛithivyām manushyāḥ paśavo devāḥ iti sthānaikatvam | sambhogaiikatvaṁ cha dṛiṣyate yathā pṛithivyūḥ Parjanya cha Vāyo-Ādityābhyām cha sambhogo 'gninā cha itarasya lokasya | tatra etad nara-rāṣṭram iva |*
 6. *Ātha ākāra-chintanaṁ devatānām | puruṣa-vidhāḥ syur ity ekam | chetanāvad-vad hi stutayo bhavanti tathā 'bhīdhānāni | athāpi pauruṣa-vidhikair angaiḥ saṁstūyante | "ṛishvā te Indra sthavirasya bāhū" (R. V. vi. 47, 8); "yat sangṛihṇāḥ maghavan kṛṣir it te" (R. V. iii. 30, 5) | athāpi pauruṣa-vidhikair dravya-saṁyogaiḥ | "ā dvābhyām haribhyām Indra yāhi" (R. V. ii. 18, 4); "kalyāṇīr jāyā suraṇāṁ grihe te" (R. V. iii. 53, 6) athāpi pauruṣa-vidhikaiḥ karmabhiḥ | "addhi Indra piba cha prasthitasya" (R. V. x. 116, 2); "āsrutkarṇa śrudhi havam" (R. V. i. 10, 9) |*
 7. *Apuruṣa-vidhāḥ syur ity aparam | api tu yad dṛiṣyate 'puruṣa-vidhāṁ tat | yathā 'gnir vāyur ādityaḥ pṛithivī chandramāḥ iti | yatho etat "chetanāvad-vad hi stutayo bhavanti" ity achetanāny*

apy evaṁ stūyante yathā 'kṣha-prabhṛitīṇy ośadhī-paryantāni | yatho
 etat "pauruṣha-vidhikair angaiḥ saṁstūyante" ity aśeṣaṇeṣu apy etad
 bhavati | "abhi krandanti haritebhir āsabhir" iti grāva-stutiḥ | yatho
 etat "pauruṣha-vidhikair dravya-saṁyogair" ity etad api tādrīṣam eva |
 "sukhaṁ rathaṁ yuyuje sindhur āśvinam" iti nādī-stutiḥ | yatho etat
 "pauruṣha-vidhikair karmabhir" ity etad api tādrīṣam eva | "hotuḥ chit
 pūrve havir adyam āśata" iti grāva-stutir eva | api cha ubhaya-vidhāḥ
 syuḥ | api vā puruṣha-vidhānām eva satāṁ karmātmānaḥ ete syuḥ | yathā
 yajno yajamānasya | eṣa cha ākhyāna-samayaḥ | 8. Tisraḥ eva devatāḥ
 ity uktam purastāt | tāsāṁ bhakti-sūhacharyaṁ vyākhyāsyāmaḥ | atha
 etāny Agni-bhaktīny ayaṁ lokaḥ prātaḥ-savanaṁ vāsanto gāyatri trivṛt-
 stomo rathantaraṁ sūma ye cha deva-gaṇāḥ samāmnātāḥ prathame sthāne
 'gnāyī prithivī itā iti strīyaḥ | atha asya karma vahanaṁ cha havishāṁ
 āvahanam cha devatānām yach cha kinchid dārshṭi-vishayikam Agni-
 karma eva tat | atha asya saṁstavikāḥ devāḥ Indraḥ Somo Varuṇaḥ
 Parjanyaḥ ṛitavaḥ | Āgnā-Vaiśṇavaṁ havir na tu ṛik saṁstavikī
 daśatayīṣhu vidyute | atha apy Āgnā-Pauṣṇam havir na tu saṁstavah |
 tatra etāṁ vibhakti-stuṭim ṛicham udāharanti (R. V. x. 17, 3) 9. "Pūṣhā
 tvā itaś chyavayatu pra vidvān anashṭapaśur bhuvanasya gopāḥ | sa tvā
 etebhyaḥ paridadat pitṛibhyo Agnir devebhyaḥ suvidatriyebhyaḥ" |
 "Pūṣhā tvā itaḥ prachyāvayatu vidvān anashṭapaśur bhuvanasya gopāḥ"
 ity eṣa hi sarveṣhāṁ bhūtānām gopūyitā Ādityaḥ | "sa tvā etebhyaḥ
 pari dadat pitṛibhyaḥ" iti sāmśūyikas tritīyaḥ pādaḥ | Pūṣhā purastāt
 tasya anvādeśaḥ ity ekam Agnir upariśṭāt tasya prakīrtanā ity
 aparam | "Agnir devebhyaḥ suvidatriyebhyaḥ" | suvidatram dhanam
 bhavati vindater vā ekopasargād dadāter vā syād dvypasargāt | 10.
 Atha etāni Indra-bhaktīny antarikṣha-loko mādhyandinaṁ savanaṁ
 grīṣmas triṣṭup panchadaśa-stomo bṛihat-sāmā ye cha deva-gaṇāḥ
 samāmnātāḥ madhyame sthāne yāścha strīyaḥ | atha asya karma rasā-
 nupradānaṁ Vṛitra-vadhō yā cha kṛā cha Jalakṛitir Indra-karma eva tat |
 atha asya saṁstavikāḥ devāḥ Agniḥ Somo Varuṇaḥ Pūṣhā Bṛihaspatir
 Brahmanaspatiḥ Parvataḥ Kutsō Viśṇur Vāyuḥ | atha api Mitro
 Varuṇena saṁstūyate | Pūṣhā Rudreṇa cha Somaḥ | Agninā cha Pūṣhā |
 Vātena cha Parjanyaḥ | 11. Atha etāny Āditya-bhaktīny asau lokaḥ
 tritīya-savanaṁ varahāḥ jagatī saptaśaśa-stomo vairūpaṁ sūma ye cha
 deva-gaṇāḥ samāmnātāḥ uttame sthāne yāścha strīyaḥ | atha asya karma
 rasādānaṁ rasāmbhīś cha rasādānaṁ yach cha kinchit pravalhitam

*Āditya-karma eva tat | Chandramasā Vāyunā Samvatsareṇa iti samstavaḥ |
 eteshv eva sthāna-vyūheshv ritu-ahhandah-stoma-prishṭhasya bhakti-śesham
 anukalpayita | śarad-anuśṭub-ekaviṃśa-stomo vairājaṃ sāma iti prithivy-
 āyatanāni | hemantaḥ panktis trinava-stomaḥ sākyaram sāma ity antari-
 kshāyatanāni | śiśiro 'tichhandās trayas-triṃśa-stomo raivatam sāma
 iti dyu-bhaktini |*

4. "We shall now inquire who are the deities in those hymns in which no deity is indicated. They are addressed to the god to whom the sacrifice or part of a sacrifice [in which they are employed] is offered. The hymns which are unconnected with a sacrifice are, according to the ritualists (yājñikāḥ), addressed to Prajāpati; according to the etymologists (nairuktāḥ), they are spoken in praise of men.¹²⁶ Or in such cases the deity may be an optional one, or a class of deities:¹²⁶ for it is a very prevalent practice to [classify rites] as those which have a god, a guest, or a progenitor, respectively, for their deity. In reference to what has been said that hymns are sacrificial, and addressed to a god, [it is to be remarked that] beings other than gods are lauded as gods, as *e.g.* the objects beginning with horses and ending with herbs (see Nighaṇṭu, 5, 3, and Nir. ix. 1-28), and also the eight pairs (see Nighaṇṭu, 5, 3, and Nir. ix. 35 ff.). But let him [the student] not regard any matters relating to the gods as if they were accidental: this may be clearly seen. Owing to the greatness of the deity, the one Soul is lauded in many ways. The different gods are members of the one Soul. And [the learned] say that the rishis address their hymns according to the multiplicities of natures in the [celestial] existences; and [further] from the universality of their nature [these existences] are produced from each other, and possess the natures of each other (compare Nir. xi. 23, quoted above, p. 13); they are produced from works; they are produced from soul. It is soul that is their car, soul their steeds, soul their weapon, soul their arrows, soul is a god's all.

¹²⁶ Professor Roth refers to Nir. ix. 9, where the word *nārūśaṃsa* is thus defined: *Yena narūḥ praśasyante sa nārūśaṃso mantrāḥ |* "A hymn in which men are eulogized is a *nārūśaṃsa* hymn." As an instance of this kind of hymn Yūska quotes R. V. i. 126, 1.

¹²⁶ This is the sense assigned to *grāyo-devatā* by Roth, *Illustrations of Nirukta*, p. 102, see note 1 there: but may not the word mean a being who has something of the character of a god?

5. "There are three deities according to the etymologists (*nairuktāḥ*), viz. Agni, whose place is on earth, Vāyu, or Indra,¹⁸⁷ whose place is in the atmosphere, and Sūrya (the Sun), whose place is in the sky. These [deities] receive many designations in consequence of their greatness, or from the diversity of their functions, as [the appellations of] *hotṛi*, *adhvaryu*, *brahman*, and *udgātṛi*, are applied to one and the same person. Or the gods in question may all be distinct, for the praises addressed to them, and also their appellations, are distinct. As [regards the view that] this [diversity of appellation] arises from difference of function [and not from distinctness of personality, it may be objected that] a plurality of individuals also may each fulfil their separate allotted functions. In this latter case, a community of locality, and of possession, must be remarked. Thus men, beasts, and gods, occupy the earth; here is community of place. Community of possession, too, is seen in such instances as that of the joint occupation of the earth both by *Parjanya*, and by *Vāyu*, and *Āditya*, and of the rest of the world by [*Vāyu*, *Āditya*, and] *Agni*. Here the case is like that of a kingdom and its inhabitants (*i.e.* the one realm is occupied by different classes of persons).

6. "We have now to consider the forms of the gods. One [mode of representation in the hymns makes] them resemble men: for they are praised and addressed as intelligent beings. They are also celebrated with members such as those of men. Thus R. V. vi. 47, 8: 'Huge, O Indra, are the arms of thee who art strong'; iii. 30, 5, 'when thou didst grasp the two worlds, they were but as a handful to thee.' They are also [celebrated] with the accompaniment of material objects such as those belonging to men. Thus it is said, R. V. ii. 18, 4, 'Come, Indra, with thy two tawny steeds'; iii. 53, 6, 'A handsome wife and pleasure are in thy house.' And further, they are celebrated with functions of a singular character to the human. Thus R. V. x. 116, 2, 'Eat, O Indra, and drink from the bowl;' R. V. i. 10, 9, 'Thou whose ears hear us, listen to our invocation.'

7. "Another [mode of representation makes them] unlike men. But further, that which is seen [of them] is unlike what is human, as Fire, Air, Sun, Earth, Moon. As [regards the assertion] that 'they are

¹⁸⁷ Compare Taitt. Sanh., vi. 6, 8, 3: *Indra-Vāyū hi sayujau* | "For Indra and Vāyū are closely united.

praised as intelligent beings,¹²⁸—it is also true that senseless things are in like manner praised, as the objects beginning with dice and ending with herbs (Nigh. 5, 3; Nir. 3, 7 ff.). Again, as [regards the remark] that the gods are ‘celebrated with members such as those of men,’—the same thing is done in the case of senseless objects, as stones are celebrated in the words, ‘They cry with their ruddy mouths’ (R. V. x. 94, 2). Further, the same is the case as [regards the remark] that the gods are [celebrated] ‘with the accompaniment of material objects such as those possessed by men;’ for a river is praised in the words, ‘The Sindhu has yoked his beautiful car drawn by steeds’ (R. V. x. 75, 9). And the same thing applies to the remark that the gods are described with ‘functions similar to those of men;’ for stones are lauded in the words, ‘Even before the priests they have eaten food of melted butter’ (R. V. x. 94, 2). Or the gods may be described under both forms (either as having, or as not having, a human form). Or, again, when they are described as similar to men, this may be merely in their character of actors in a particular function, as sacrifice is only the [temporary] act of the man who offers it. This is the condition of all narrations.¹²⁹

8. “It has been declared above (par. 5) that there are three deities. We shall now declare the various objects which are associated with their provinces. Now these which follow are connected with Agni’s domain: viz. this world, the morning oblation, spring, the gāyatrī metre, the trivṛt stoma, the rathantara sâma, the classes of gods who in the Nighaṇṭu are enumerated in the first sphere, with the goddesses Agnāyī, Pṛithivī, and Ilā. Then Agni’s function is to carry away the oblations, and to bring the gods: and whatever has reference to things visible is the work of Agni. Then the deities who are lauded along with him are Indra, Soma, Varuṇa, Parjanya, and the seasons. There is an oblation made to Agni and Vishṇu in common; but in the ten books [of the R. V.] there is no Ṛich which praises these two gods together. There is also an oblation made to Agni and Pūshan in

¹²⁸ The commentator Durga (as I learn from Prof. Roth’s note, *Illust. of Nir.* p. 104) refers this observation to the *Mahābhārata*, and adduces, as illustrations of the remark in the text, the appearances of the Earth in the form of a woman to request a Brahman to relieve her of her load, and of Agni in the form of a Brahman to ask aid from Vasudeva and Arjuna respecting the Khūṇḍava wood, and in the form of a man, and of fire, to burn the wood in question. See Williams’s *Indian Epic Poetry*, p. 101; and the *Vanaparvan*, verses 8079 ff.

common, but no conjoint laudation. Here the following verse containing separate praise [of these two gods] is quoted, viz. R. V. x. 17, 3: 9. 'May Pūshan, the wise, the preserver of the world, he who loses none of his cattle, convey thee away hence: may he deliver thee to these fathers; and may Agni [entrust thee] to the gracious gods.' The words, 'May Pūshan, the wise, etc.,' refer to the Sun, who is the protector of all creatures. The sense of the third quarter of the verse beginning, 'May he deliver thee, etc.,' is dubious: on the one hand it may be a repetition of the reference to Pūshan, who had been named before;¹⁰⁰ or, on the other hand, it may be a celebration of Agni, who is mentioned afterwards. *Suvidatra* (from which *suvidatriyebhyaḥ* in the fourth clause, "May Agni," etc., comes) means 'wealth,' and is either derived from *vid*, 'to find,' with one preposition (*su*), or from *dā*, 'to give,' with two prepositions (*su* and *vr*).

10. "The following are the objects connected with Indra's domain: viz. the atmosphere, the midday oblation, summer, the trishtubh metre, the panchadaśa stoma, the bṛihat sāma, the classes of gods and the females who are enumerated in the second sphere. Indra's function is to bestow moisture, to slay Vṛitra: and all exertions of force are the work of Indra. The deities lauded along with him are Agni, Soma, Varuṇa, Pūshan, Bṛhaspati, Brahmanaspati, Parvata, Kutsa, Vishṇu, and Vāyu. Further, Mitra is lauded along with Varuṇa, Soma with Pūshan and Rudra, Pūshan with Agni, and Parjanya with Vāta.

11. "The following are the objects connected with Āditya's (the Sun's) domain: heaven, the third oblation, the rainy season, the jagati metre, the saptadaśa stoma, the vairūpa sāma, the classes of gods and the females who are enumerated in the highest sphere. The function of Āditya is to draw up moisture, and to retain it by his rays: and whatever is mysterious is the work of Āditya. He is praised along with the Moon, the Air (Vāyu), and the Year.

"[The student] is to class the remaining seasons, metres, stomas, and prishthas (particular sāma formulas) under [one or other of] the [three] spheres above mentioned. Autumn, the anuṣṭubh metre, the ekaviṃśa stoma, and the vairāja sāma, belong to the sphere of earth. The early winter, the pankti metre, the triṇava stoma, and the śākvara sāma, belong to the atmospheric sphere. The later winter, the ati-

¹⁰⁰ I have translated the clause as referring to Pūshan.

chhandas metre, the trayāstrīṃśa stoma, and the raivata sāma, are connected with the celestial sphere."¹⁶⁰

It will be observed that in the preceding classification of the gods, the principal places are assigned to Agni, Vāyu, or Indra, and Sūrya, who appear therefore to have been regarded in the time of Yāska as the triad of deities in whom the supreme spirit was especially revealed. Vishṇu is only alluded to as one of the divinities who were worshipped conjointly with Indra; and Rudra is only mentioned as worshipped along with Soma. If we may judge from his silence regarding it, the conjunction of Brahmā, Vishṇu and Rudra as the triple manifestation of the deity (trimūrti) would appear to have been unknown to Yāska.

It is true that his object in the passage I have cited, as well as in other parts of his work, is to classify the Vedic deities; and it may be urged that the Puranic mythology (of which the trimūrti of Brahmā, Vishṇu and Śiva is a part) might have grown up along with the Vedic. It may, however, be objected to this view, that if Yāska had been cognizant of any other than the Vedic mythology (at least if he had attached any authority to any other), he would not have failed to make some reference to the latter, and would have endeavoured to blend and reconcile it with the former. As we find no attempt of this kind in his work, we may perhaps conclude, either that the Puranic mythology had no existence in his day, or that he regarded it as undeserving of any attention.

The following passages from the Bṛihaddevatā, in which the views of Yāska are repeated, are derived from Weber's Ind. Stud. i. 113 f.:

Bṛihaddevatā, i. 13.—*Bhavad-bhūta [sya bha] vyasya jangama-sthāvarasya cha | asyaika sūryam evaikam prabhavam pralayaṃ viduḥ | asataś cha sataś chaiva yonir esha Prajāpatiḥ | yad aksharam cha vācyaṃ (?) cha yathaiva Brahma sāsvatam | kṛitvaisha hi tridhā "tmānam eshu lokeshu tiśṭhati | Ibid. i. 14 . . . tioraḥ eva devatāḥ | etāsām eva mātmyā nāmānyatvaṃ vidhīyate | tach cha sthāna-vibhāgena tatra tatreha dṛśiyate |* i. 13: "Some consider Sūrya (the Sun) to be the only cause of the production and destruction of this [universe], present, past, and future, moving and stationary. And this lord of creatures (Prajāpati) is the source of non-entity and entity, which is undecaying and describable (?) like

¹⁶⁰ The above passage is translated by Prof. Roth in his Illustrations of the Nirukta, pp. 101 ff.

the eternal Brahma. He, having made himself threefold, abides in these worlds. i. 14: . . . There are but three deities; and from their greatness, a variety of names is assigned [to each of them]. This is seen in different instances according to the distinction of places."

From the passage cited above (p. 30 f.) from Manu, it appears that the word Nārāyaṇa is there applied to Brahmā, and that no mention whatever is made of Viṣṇu, as concerned in the creation. In fact Viṣṇu is only once mentioned¹⁸¹ by Manu, viz. in the following verse xii. 121:

Manasindum diśaḥ śrotre krānte Viṣṇum bale Haram | vāchy Agnim Mitram utsarge prajāne cha Prajāpatiḥ | "[He may contemplate] in his mind the Moon (Indu), in his hearing the regions, in his stepping Viṣṇu, in his strength Hara, in his voice Agni, in excretion Mitra, and in procreation Prajāpati." Viṣṇu is not spoken of here as in any way superior to the other gods with whom he is associated.

In the text quoted above (p. 33) from the older recension of the Rāmāyaṇa too, it is Brahmā who is spoken of not only as the creator, but also as the god who raised up the earth from the bottom of the ocean.

Again, those texts of the Mahābhārata and Purāṇas (see above, pp. 118 ff.) where Viṣṇu is described as one of the twelve Ādityas, confirm the conclusion that he must have been originally looked upon as a deity of no more elevated rank than the other sons of Aditi; and the circumstance that he is in some of those passages distinguished from the rest of the gods by epithets expressive of some higher characteristics is easily explicable, as I have already remarked, by the supposition that those passages have been composed or modified at a period when his superiority had come to be recognized.

In some of the earlier passages of the Rāmāyaṇa also, where Viṣṇu is introduced, though he is treated as a deity of higher rank than Indra and others (with whom he had been originally, at most, on a footing of equality), yet he is not designated by the same sort of epithets which are applied to him in the Viṣṇu and Bhāgavata Purāṇas, and in some parts of the Mahābhārata, and other portions of the Rāmāyaṇa itself (unless we suppose these to be later interpolations), or identified with the supreme deity, as in these first-named works. In proof of this I adduce the following passage from the Rāmāyaṇa, i. 14, 1 ff. (Schlegel's

¹⁸¹ Lassen, Ind. Ant., 1st ed., i. 777, note; or 2nd ed., p. 918.

edition;=i. 15, 1 ff., Bombay edition, and i. 14, 1 ff. of Gorresio's edition) :

Rāmāyana, i. 14, 1 ff.—*Medhāvī tu tato dhyātvā sa kinchid idam uttaram | labdha-sañjnas*¹⁶² *tatas taṁ tu veda-jno nripam abravīt | 2 | ishṭīm te 'nyām*¹⁶³ *karishyāmi putrīyām putra-kāraṇāt | atharvaśirasi proktair mantrair̥ siddhāṁ vidhānataḥ | 3 |*¹⁶⁴ *tataḥ prachakrame kartum ishṭīm kāma-samṛiddhaye | tasya rājno hitānveshī Vibhāṇḍaka-suto vaśī | 4 | tatra devāḥ sa-gandharvāḥ Siddhāścha munibhiḥ saha | bhāga-pratigrahārthaṁ vai pūrvam eva samāgatāḥ | 5 | Brahmā sureśvaraḥ Sthānuḥ tathā Nārāyaṇaḥ prabhuḥ | Indras̥ cha bhagavān śākshād Maruḍ-gaṇa-vṛitas tathā | 6 | āsvamedhe mahāyājne rājnas tasya mahūtmanaḥ | tatra bhāgarthino devān āgatān so 'bhyayāchata | 7 | ayaṁ rājā Daśarathaḥ putrārthī taptavāṁs tapaḥ | ishṭāvūn āsvamedhena bhavataḥ śraddhaya 'nvitaḥ | 8 | ishṭīm cha putrakāmo 'nyām punaḥ kartum samudyataḥ | tad asya putra-kāmasya prasādaṁ kartum arhatha | 9 | abhiyāche cha vaḥ sarvān asyūrthe 'haṁ kṛitānjaliḥ | bhavayur asya chatvārāḥ putrās trailokya-vīśrutāḥ | 10 | te tathety abruvan devāḥ rishi-putraṁ kṛitānjaliṁ | mūnaniyo 'si no vipra rājā chaiva viśeshataḥ | 11 | prapśyato paramaṁ kāmam etayeshṭyā narādhipaḥ | ity uktvā*

¹⁶² *Labdha-sañjnas samādhy-utthitaḥ* | Comm. in Bombay ed.

¹⁶³ Bombay ed. reads *te 'ham* for *te 'nyām*.

¹⁶⁴ The Bomb. ed. here reads 3. *Tataḥ prākramad ishṭīm tām putrīyām putra-kāraṇāt | juhāv agnas̥ cha tejasvī mantra-dṛishṭena karmāṇā | 4 | tato devāḥ sa-gandharvāḥ siddhāḥ cha paramarshayaḥ | dhāva- [qu. dhāga] pratigrahārthaṁ vai samavetāḥ yathāvidhiḥ | 5 | tūḥ sametya yathānyūyāṁ tasmin sadasi devatāḥ | abruvan loka-kartāram Brahmāṇaṁ vachanaṁ tataḥ | 6 | Bhagavāṁs tvaḥ-prasādena Rāvaṇo nima rākshasaḥ | sarvān no bādhati vīryāt āsitum taṁ na śaknumaḥ |* "He then began that sacrifice for the sake of obtaining a son; and the glorious (rishi) cast an oblation into the fire, accompanied by the prescribed recitation of texts. 4. Then the gods, Gandharvas, Siddhas, and great Rishis were gathered together in due form to receive their portion. 5. Having duly assembled in that abode, the deities spake thus to Brahmā, the creator of the world. 6. 'Lord, owing to thy favour a Rākshasa named Rāvaṇa distresses us all by his power, and we cannot subdue him.'" What follows corresponds in the main with the readings of Schlegel's text.

This text, it will be noticed, differs in several points from Schlegel's [and from Gorresio's] in (a) not stating the gods to have been already present at the preceding sacrifice of the āsvamedha; (b) in not naming Brahmā, Sthānu (Mahādeva), and Nārāyaṇa (Vishṇu) as being of the number; or (c) as having been supplicated by the rishi on behalf of king Daśaratha; and (d) in proceeding at once to represent the gods as invoking Brahmā's aid, as the other two texts do further on. The Bombay text may be the most original, and the verses there omitted may be later additions, as they do not fit in very well into the sequel. Compare note 168 below. This, however, would not prove that the whole section was not a prior interpolation. See further on.

'ntarhitāḥ devās tataḥ Śakra-purogamāḥ | 12 | tāḥ sametya yathānyāyāṃ
 tasmin sadasi devatāḥ | abruvan loka-kartāram Brahmāṇaṃ vachanaṃ
 tataḥ | 13 | tvat-pradiśṭa-varo Brahman Rāvaṇo nāma rākṣasaḥ |
 sarvaṇ no bādḥate darpād maharshimś cha tapo-ratān | 14 | tvayā hy asya
 varo dattaḥ priteṇa bhāgavan purā | deva-dānava-yakṣhāṇāṃ abadyo 'iti
 kāmataḥ | 15 | mānayaṇtāścha te vākyaṃ sarvaṃ asya saḥāmaḥ | sa
 bādḥayati lokāṃś trīṇ vihiṃsan rākṣhasaśvaraḥ | . . . 19. Tad mahād
 no bhayaṃ tasmād rākṣhasād ghora-darśanāt | bādḥārthaṃ tasya bhagavann
 upāyaṃ kartum arhasi | evaṃ uktaḥ suraiḥ sarvaiś chintayitvā tato
 'bravit | hantāyaṃ vihitāś tasya bādhopāyo durātmanaḥ | tena "gandh-
 arva-yakṣhāṇāṃ deva-dānava-rākṣasāṃ | abadhyāḥ syāṃ" iti proktaṃ
 tathety uktaṃ cha tad mayā | avajñāya tu tad rakṣho manuṣhān nāva-
 kiṃtayat | tasmāt sa mānuṣhād bādhyo mṛityur nānyo 'sya vidyate | etach
 chhṛutvā priyaṃ vākyaṃ Brahmaṇā samudāhṛitam | devāḥ Śakra-purogāś
 te harsitāḥ sarvato 'bhavaṇ | etasminn antare Viṣṇur upayāto mahā-
 dyutiḥ | śaṅkha-chakra-gadā-pāṇiḥ pita-vāsūḥ jagat-patiḥ | Vainateyaṃ
 samāruhya bhāskaras toyadaṃ yathā | tapta-haṭaka-keyūro vandyamānaḥ
 suvottamāiḥ | tam abruvan surāḥ sarve samabhiṣṭutya sannatāḥ |
 ārtūnāṃ asi lokānāṃ ārti-hā Madhusūdana | yāchāmaḥ 'tas tvāṃ
 ārtāḥ śaraṇaṃ no bhavāchyuta | brūta kiṃ karavaṇṭi Viṣṇus tāt
 abravīd vachaḥ | iti tasya vachaḥ śrutvā punar ūchur idaṃ surāḥ | rūjā
 Daśaratho nāma taptavān sumahat tapaḥ | iṣṭavāṃś chāśvamedhena
 prajā-kāmaḥ sa chāprajāḥ | asman-niyogāt tvāṃ Viṣṇo tasya putratvaṃ
 āpnuhi | tasya bhāryāsu tieriṣhu Hri-Sri-Kīrti-upamāsu cha | Viṣṇo
 putratvaṃ āgachha kṛitvā "tmāṇāṃ chaturvidhaṃ | tatra tvāṃ mānuṣho
 bhūtva pravṛiddhaṃ lokakaṇṭakam | abadhyāṃ daivatair Viṣṇo samare
 jahi Rāvaṇam | 34. Tvāṃ gatiḥ paramā deva sarveṣhāṃ naḥ
 parantapa | bādḥāya devasatruṇāṃ nṛiṇāṃ loke manaḥ kuru | sa niyuktas
 tathā devaiḥ sākṣhād Nārāyaṇaḥ prabhuḥ | tāt uvācha ityādi |

"Then that sage, skilled in the Veda, having meditated for a little on this answer, having regained his consciousness [which had been suspended during his state of meditation], said to the king: 'I shall perform for thee another sacrifice, celebrated according to rule with the texts enjoined in the Atharva-sīras, to obtain for thee a son.' The self-subdued son of Vibhāṇḍaka, desiring the king's welfare, then began to perform the sacrifice for the attainment of his desire. The gods, with the Gandharvas, Siddhas, and Munis, had previously come

thither to receive their portions [of the sacrifice], both Brahmā, lord of the deities, Sthāyū (Mahādeva), the lord Nārāyaṇa¹⁶⁶ (Vishṇu), and the divine Indra in visible presence, surrounded by the host of Maruts. He (Rishyaśringa thus) supplicated the gods who had come, desiring their shares, to the great aśvamedha sacrifice [described in the preceding section] of that high-souled king: 'This King Daśaratha, desiring a son, has performed austerity, and inspired with faith, has worshipped you with an aśvamedha. Longing for a son, he is also prepared to celebrate another sacrifice. "Ye ought, therefore, to show favour to him, who is anxious for a son; and with joined hands, I entreat you all on his behalf. Let him have four sons, renowned in the three worlds.' The gods said to the rishi's son [standing] with joined hands, 'So be it. Thou, Brahman,' art deserving of honour from us, and so especially is the king. 'The lord of men shall obtain the highest object of his desire by means of this sacrifice.' Having thus spoken, the gods, headed by Sakra (Indra), then disappeared.

"Having duly assembled in that abode,¹⁶⁶ these gods then addressed a word to Brahmā, the creator of the world: 'A Rākshasa named Rāvaṇa, having obtained a boon from thee, O Brahmā, in his pride harasses us all, and the great rishis devoted to austerity. For, O lord, a boon was formerly granted to him freely by thee when well-pleased, viz. 'Thou shalt be indestructible by gods, Dānavas or Yakshas.' Obedient to thy words, we endure everything at his hands. This lord of the Rākshasas vexes the three worlds by his acts of cruelty . . . 19. We are therefore in great fear of this Rākshasa of horrible aspect.

¹⁶⁶ Here it will be observed that Vishṇu, like the other gods, comes for his share.

¹⁶⁶ This verse does not combine well with what precedes. See the last note but one (164). Why should the gods disappear in order to reassemble, so far as appears, in the same place (*tasmin sadasi*)? See the text of the Bombay ed., as quoted in note 164, verses 4 and 5. Gorresio's edition connects the disappearance and reappearance of the gods thus, i. 14, 11b ff.: *ity uktvā 'ntarhitāḥ devās tataḥ Sakra-purogamāḥ* | 12 | *tām dṛishṭvā vidhvad ākashān kriyamāṇām mahāśhinā* | *upetya lokakartāram Prajāpatim idaṁ vachaḥ* | 13 | *ūchuḥ prāṇjalayo bhūtvā Brahmāṇaṁ varadān tatha* | 11b: "Having thus spoken, the gods, headed by Sakra, vanished thence. 12. Beholding that initiatory ceremony being duly performed by the great rishi, they approached with joined hands the lord of creatures, the boon-bestowing Brahmā, and spoke as follows," etc. It may also be noticed that Nārāyaṇa (Vishṇu) is mentioned both in Schlegel's ed. and in Gorresio's (v. 4) as having been one of the gods who were present. If the gods who reappeared were the same as those who disappeared, why was not he among them? But he is said to have arrived afterwards.

Thou, lord, oughtest to imagine some device for his slaughter.' Being thus addressed by all the deities, [Brahmā], after reflection, thus spoke to them: 'O, this device has been imagined [by me] for the slaughter of that malignant being. 'Let me be indestructible by Gandharvas, Yakshas, gods, Dānaṡas and Rākshasas;' such was his request, to which I replied, 'Be it so.' But despising men, the Rākshasa made no mention of them. He must therefore be slain by a man: no other death is possible for him.' Having heard this acceptable word spoken by Brahmā, the gods, headed by Śakra, were altogether delighted. In the mean time the glorious Viṣṇu arrived, bearing in his hand the shell, discus, and club, in yellow garments, lord of the world, mounted on Garuḍa, like the Sun on a cloud, with an armlet of refined gold, adored by the chief of the deities. After lauding him with prostrations, all the gods said: 'Thou, Madhusūdana, art he who removes the affliction of the afflicted worlds. Wherefore we, distressed, beseech thee be our refuge, O Achyuta (Unfalling).' Viṣṇu said to them, 'Tell me what I shall do.' Hearing this answer of his, the gods again said: 'A king named Daśaratha has performed great austerity, and celebrated an aśvamedha sacrifice, desirous of offspring, for he is childless. Do thou, Viṣṇu, according to our appointment, take upon thee his sonship. Making thyself fourfold, do thou become the offspring of his three wives who resemble Hṛī, Śrī, and Kīrti (Modesty, Prosperity, and Renown). Having then become man, do thou slay in battle Rāvaṇa, the powerful enemy of the worlds, who is indestructible by the gods. . . . 34. Thou, god, vexer of thy foes, art the highest refuge of us all; resolve to destroy in the world of men the enemies of the deities.' The manifested lord Nārāyaṇa, being thus appointed by the gods," replies by asking for further explanations in regard to the occasion which demanded his intervention. This explanation the gods give and say, that he alone of all the celestials can kill the wicked one (*tvatto hi nānyas tam pāpaṁ śakto hantum divaukasām*). Viṣṇu, then, "the lord of the gods" (*devēśa*), "the most excellent of the immortals" (*tridāsa-pungava*), "adored by all the worlds" (*sarva-loka-namaskṛita*), reassures the deities, promises to slay Rāvaṇa, and to reign on earth for eleven thousand years.

I have said that the representation given of Viṣṇu in the preceding passage is of a different character from that which we find in writings

of a later age. But it is not certain that any portion of this passage formed part of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, as it originally existed. I extract the following remarks from Lassen's "*Indian Antiquities*," (vol. i. p. 488, 1st edition; i. 586, 2nd edition), in regard to the interpolations which he supposes to have been made in the *Rāmāyaṇa* and *Mahābhārata* :

"It is true that in the Epic poems Rāma and Krishna appear as incarnations of Vishṇu, but they at the same time come before us as human heroes, and these two characters (the divine and the human) are so far from being inseparably blended together, that both of these heroes are for the most part exhibited in no other light than other highly gifted men,—acting according to human motives and taking no advantage of their divine superiority. It is only in certain sections which have been added for the purpose of enforcing their divine character that they take the character of Vishṇu. It is impossible to read either of these two poems with attention, without being reminded of the later interpolation of such sections as ascribe a divine character to the heroes, and of the unskilful manner in which these passages are often introduced, and without observing how loosely they are connected with the rest of the narrative, and how unnecessary they are for its progress."¹⁶⁷

In p. 489 (1st edition, p. 587 2nd edition) note, he remarks more

¹⁶⁷ In the Preface to his *Vishṇu Purāṇa*, p. ix., 4to. ed. (=p. xv. of Dr. Hall's ed.), Professor Wilson had previously made some observations of the same tenor: "But the ascription to individual and personal deities of the attributes of the one universal and spiritual Supreme Being, is an indication of a later date than the Vedas certainly, and apparently also than the *Rāmāyaṇa*, where Rāma, although an incarnation of Vishṇu, commonly appears in his human character alone. There is something of the kind in the *Mahābhārata*, in respect to Krishna, especially in the philosophical episode known as the *Bhagavad Gītā*. In other places the divine nature of Krishna is less decidedly affirmed; in some it is disputed or denied; and in most of the situations in which he is exhibited in action, it is as a prince and warrior, not as a divinity. He exercises no superhuman faculties in the defence of himself, or his friends, or in the defeat and destruction of his foes. The *Mahābhārata*, however, is evidently a work of various periods, and requires to be read throughout carefully and critically before its weight as an authority can be accurately appreciated." Professor Goldstücker, too, observes in the Preface to his *Mānava Kalpa Sūtra*, p. xxxi. "It is of course impossible for me to treat here, as it were incidentally, not merely of the question concerning the age of the *Mahābhārata*, but the relative ages of the various portions of this work, since it must be evident to every one who has read it, that it is, in its present shape, a collection of literary products belonging to widely distant periods of Hindu literature."

particularly: "As regards the Rāmāyaṇa, (Mr. von Schlegel has often observed to me that the chapters in which Rāma is conceived of as an incarnation of Viṣṇu, might be entirely omitted without injuring the connexion of the story. In fact, at the point where the incarnation of Viṣṇu in the four sons of Daśaratha is described (Rām. i. 14 ff.), the proper great sacrifice is already concluded, and the priests have all been presented with gifts at its close, when the new sacrifice is commenced, at which the gods appear, then withdraw, and now for the first time propose to Viṣṇu to become incarnate. If this had been an original portion of the story, the gods would certainly have considered the matter sooner, and the ceremonial of sacrifice would have proceeded without interruption. In the same book, ch. 74, 75, a scene with the earlier [or Paraśu-] Rāma is suddenly interpolated, in order that he may be made to declare the new Rāma to be Viṣṇu."

An examination of the earlier portions of the Rāmāyaṇa seems to confirm the opinion of Lassen that the 14th and following sections which describe the miraculous births of Rāma and his brothers as incarnations of Viṣṇu, are additions interpolated at a later date in the original poem. It appears from various passages which I shall cite from the 8th and following sections, that the aśvamedha or horse-sacrifice, a rite of great importance and dignity, was instituted for the express purpose of procuring progeny for Daśaratha. But if this be so, what necessity was there for celebrating the fresh ceremony, alluded to at the beginning of section 14 as a "putrīyā isṭi," for the same purpose? The passages to which I allude are the following:

Rām. i. 8, 1 ff. (=Bombay ed. i. 8, 1; Gorresio's ed. i. 8, 1).—*Tasya tv evam-prabhāvasya dhārmikasya mahātmanaḥ | sūtārtham tapyamānasya nāśid vaṁśa-karaḥ sutaḥ | tasya chintayato buddhīr utpanneyam mahā-mateḥ | sūtārtham vāji-medhena kimarthaṁ na yajāmy aham | suniśchitām matiṁ kṛitoḥ yashṭavye vasudhādhipaḥ |* "But a son to prolong his race was not born to this king so mighty, and righteous, and great, though he performed intense austerity for that purpose. As this wise man reflected, the idea arose in his mind, 'why do I not celebrate a horse-sacrifice to obtain a son?' Having then formed this fixed opinion that he ought to sacrifice, the king, etc."

Again, in sect. 11, 1 (=Bombay ed. i. 12, 1; Gorresio's ed. i. 11, 1), it is said: *Atha kālē vyatikrānte śiśīro tadananantaram | vasanta-samaye*

*prāpte rājā yashṭum manā dadhe | tataḥ prasāḍya śirasā taṁ vipraṁ
deva-varchasam | yajñāya varayāmāsa santānārthaṁ kulasya vai |*
“Then, when the winter had passed, and the spring had arrived, the king set his mind upon sacrificing. Having then propitiated, by [bowing] his head, that Brahman of divine splendour, he solicited him to [perform] a sacrifice for the prolongation of his race.”

Then, after calling his spiritual advisers, Vāmadeva, Jāvālī, Vasishṭha, etc., he says to them (v. 8=v. 8b Bomb. ed.; v. 11, Gorr.): *Mama tātapyamānasya putrārthaṁ nāsti vai sukham | tad ahaṁ haya-medhena yajeyam iti me matiḥ | tad-arthaṁ yashṭum icchāmi haya-pūrveṇa karmaṇā |* “I get no satisfaction, though I perform intense austerities for a son. It is therefore my resolution to celebrate a sacrifice in which a horse is the first victim.”

We are again told (v. 20):

*Tataḥ sa gatvā tāḥ patnir narendro hṛidayangamāḥ | uvācha dīkṣhām
viśata yakṣhye 'haṁ suta-kāraṇāt |* “Then going to his beloved wives, the king said to them, ‘Enter upon a course of consecration; I am about to sacrifice for a son.’”

And at the beginning of the 12th section (=Bomb. ed. 13th; Gorr. 12th) it is said: *Punaḥ prāpte vasante tu pūrṇaḥ saṁvatsaro 'bhavat | prasavārtham gato yashṭum hayamedhena vīryavān |* “Then, when the spring arrived, a year had elapsed, and the heroic king went to celebrate a horse-sacrifice for the sake of offspring.”

Preparations are then made for the sacrifice (sect. 12), and it is duly celebrated (sect. 13). The queen, Kausālya, “through desire of a son,” remains in close contact with the slaughtered horse for one night (13, 36 [=Bomb. ed. i. 14, 34; Gorr. i. 12, 34]: *Patatrinā tadā sūrdhām sushṭhitena cha chetasā | avasāḍ rajanīm ekām Kauśalyā putra-kāmyayā*), and the other two queens beside her (v. 37).¹⁰⁰

The conclusion of the sacrifice is thus recorded at the end of section 13, vv. 54 ff. (=Bomb. ed. 14, 58b; Gorr. 13, 45).

¹⁰⁰ See Wilson's translation of the R. V., vol. ii., Intro., p. xiii.; the Vājasaneyi Saṁhita, xxiii. 20 ff., and commentary; S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, pp. 990 ff.; Kātyāyana Sūtras, p. 973; and Mahābhārata, xiv. 2646. On the word *patatrin*, “winged,” applied to the horse, the commentator in the Bombay ed., *in loco*, remarks: *Purā atvānām pakṣhāḥ santi iti prasiddhyā evaṁvādaḥ | patatrinā garuḍa-vyena ity anye |* “This is said because it is well known that horses formerly had wings. Others say the meaning of the word is, ‘having the speed of Garuḍa’ (the fabled bird).”

Dakṣiṇāḥ parigrīhyātha supṛita-mānasā dvijāḥ | acur Daśaratham tatra kāmam dhyāyoti vai tadā | tato 'bravīd Rishyaśringam rājā Daśarathas tadā | kulasya vardhanam tat tu kartum arhasi suvrata | tatheti sa cha rājānam uvācha dvija-sattamaḥ | bhaviṣhyanti sūtā rājānē chatvāras te kulodvajaḥ | "Having received the gifts with great gratification, the Brahmans then said to Daśaratha, 'Think of the object you desire.' The king then said to Rishyaśringa, 'Thou oughtest, saint, to effect that increase of my race.' The most excellent of Brahmans replied, 'So be it; king, there shall be to thee four sons, the continuators of thy race.'"

We are then told at the beginning of section 14, as above quoted (p. 165), that Rishyaśringa, after thinking over the preceding reply, offers to celebrate another sacrifice with texts from the Atharva-sīras, in order to procure offspring for the king; and proceeds accordingly to do so, though, in striking contrast to the particular description given of the aśvamedha, no details of this additional ceremony are supplied. We are then told (verse 4) that the gods had previously come to the aśvamedha sacrifice, to obtain their shares of the oblations, and that Rishyaśringa now tells them that the king had performed austerity in order to obtain offspring, that he had also celebrated an aśvamedha sacrifice, and was now about to perform another rite. The necessity for this second sacrifice does not appear; it seems strange that a ceremony of such importance as the aśvamedha should be insufficient; there appears to be no reason why the gods should not have been told at first, on that occasion, that the king was anxious for a son, since that was the very object for which the first sacrifice was offered; and that this communication should have been reserved till the commencement of the second sacrifice.

In section 15 (=Bombay ed. 15, 31 ff. and 16; Gorr. 15) we are told that Viṣṇu, considering how he shall fulfil his promise to the gods, makes himself fourfold, and chooses Daśaratha for his human parent. He then, after respectfully addressing Brahmā, disappears from heaven, and when Daśaratha is offering the second sacrifice for progeny, the god issues forth from the fire in the form of a glorious being, calling himself a son of Prajāpati (*prajāpatyaṁ naram*), and bearing a large vessel full of nectar. This nectar he desires Daśaratha to administer to his wives, who would then bear sons. Viṣṇu then, after receiving the king's homage, disappears.

Daśaratha gives the half of the potion to Kauśalyā, and a fourth each to Sumitrā and Kaikeyī. They all in consequence become pregnant.

Section 16 (=Bombay ed. 17; Gorresio, 20) begins thus: *Putratvaṃ tu gate Viṣṇau rājnas tasya mahātmanaḥ | uvācā devān āhaya Svayambhūr bhagavān idam* | "When Viṣṇu had entered into the relation of sonship to that great king, the divine Svayambhū (Brahmā) summoned the gods, and said to them." These words must either be said by way of anticipation, for the birth of Daśaratha's sons is not related till we come to section 19; or the section must be misplaced, or interpolated. The commentator in the Bombay ed. explains *gate* by *gantum upakrānte*, "had begun to enter." In Gorresio's ed. this section is placed as the 20th. The section proceeds to describe the creation of the monkeys, who were to be the allies of Rāma.

The conclusion of the aśvamedha sacrifice and the departure of the gods are again alluded to at the commencement of sect. 17 (Schlegel's ed.) in these words: 1. *Samāpte tu kratau tasmin vājimedhe mahātmanaḥ | havirbhūgān avāpyeṣṭhūn jagmur devāḥ yathāgatam* | 2 | *riṣayaś cha mahātmānaḥ pratijagmuḥ supūjitāḥ | rājanaś chaiva ye tatra kratāv āsan samāgatāḥ* | 1. "When that horse-sacrifice of the great king had been completed, the gods, having received the desired shares of the oblations, departed as they had come. 2. The great rishis, too, after being duly honoured, and the kings who had come to the sacrifice, returned." Here we have another indication that the sections intervening between the 13th and the 17th form a later interpolation. With the commencement of this 17th section of Schlegel's ed., the opening verses of Gorresio's 16th section, and of the 18th section of the Bombay ed., coincide. The last-mentioned recension, however, from which I proceed to quote some verses, touches very briefly on the dismissal of the kings who had come to the sacrifice, and of Rishyaśṛṅga, and proceeds to the birth of Rāma and his brothers, whilst the other two texts enlarge on the former topics, and do not arrive at the last subject before their 19th section. Sect. 18 of the Bombay ed. begins thus:

1 | *Nivṛtite tu kratau tasmin hayamedhe mahātmanaḥ | pratigrihyā-marāḥ bhūgān pratijagmur yathāgatam* | 2 | *samāpta-ākṣhā-niyamaḥ patni-gaṇa-samanvitaḥ | praviveśa purīm rājā sa-bhṛitya-bala-vāhanaḥ* |

3 | *yathārham pūjitās tena rājñā cha prithivī^hvarāḥ* | *muditāḥ prayayur*
deśān pranamya muni-pungavam | 4 | *śrīmatām gachhatām teshām eva-*
grihāni purāt tataḥ | *balāni rājñām śubhrāni prahrīṣhṭāni chakāśire* | 5 |
gateshu prithivīśeshu rājū Daśarathaḥ punaḥ | *praviveśa purīm śrīmān*
puraskṛitya dvijottamān | 6 | *Sāntayā prayayaḥ sārḍham Rishyaśṛingaḥ*
supūjitaḥ | *anugamyamāno rājñā cha sānuyātrena dhimatā* | 7 | *Evaṁ*
viśṛjya tām sarvān rājā sampūrṇa-mānasaḥ | *uvāsa sukhītaḥ tatra*
putrotpattiṁ vicintayan | 8 | *tato yajne samāpte tu ṛitūnām śhaṭ*
samatyayuh | *tataḥ cha dvādāśe māse ityādi* | 1. "When that horse-
sacrifice of the great king had come to an end, the immortals,
after receiving their shares, returned as they had come. 2. The
ceremony of consecration being concluded, the king with his wives,
servants, army, and chariots, entered into the city. 3. The princes,
too, after being duly honoured by the king, and having made
obeisance to the most excellent muni, departed with joy to their
several countries. 4. The hosts of these glorious monarchs, as they
set out from the city for their homes, shone brilliant and delighted.
5. When they had gone, King Daśaratha again entered the city,
preceded by the Brahmans. 6. Rishyaśṛinga, receiving homage,
set out with (his wife) Sāntā, followed by the wise king and his
attendants. 7. Having dismissed all these (visitors), the king, with
satisfied mind, dwelt in happiness, meditating on the birth of his sons.
8. Then six seasons elapsed after the sacrifice had been completed;
and in the twelfth month," etc. [The sequel of this passage, to-
gether with the parallel verses of Gorresio's edition, will be found
in the Appendix.]

Schlegel's ed., as I have already noticed, does not reach the same
point of the narrative till its 19th section, which begins by relating
the birth of Daśaratha's sons, twelve months after the conclusion of
the sacrifice, by which no doubt the horse sacrifice is intended (*tato*
yajne samāpte tu ṛitūnām śhaṭ samatyayuh | *tataścha dvādāśe māse*
ityādi). After specifying the month, day, and planetary influences
under which Rāma was born, the writer proceeds: . . . *Jagannāthaṁ*
sarva-loka-namaskṛitam | *Kauśalyā 'janayad Rāmaṁ divya-lakṣhaṇa-*
saṁyutam | *Kauśalyā śuśubho tena putrenāmīta-tejasa* | *yathā 'dhipena*
devānām Adītir Vajrapāṇinā | [**bhavāya sa hi lokānām Rāvaṇasya*
badhāya cha | *Vishṇor vīryārdhato yajne Rāmo rājīva-lochanaḥ* | *Bharato*

*nāma Kaikeyāṁ jajne satyaṁ parākramaḥ | sākṣhā Vishṇoḥ chaturbhāgaḥ
sarvair samudito guṇair | atha Lakshmaṇa-Satrughṇau Sumitrā 'janayat
sutau | dṛiḍha-bhakti mahotsāḥau Vishṇor ardha-samanvitan |] pushye
jātas tu Bharato mīna-lagne prasanna-dhīḥ | śarpe jātau tu Soumitrī
kulīre 'bhyadite ravau |*

“Kauśalyā bore Rāma, the lord of the universe, adored by all worlds, distinguished by divine marks. Kauśalyā derived lustre from that son of boundless might, as Aditi did from the Thunderer, the lord of the gods. [*For the lotus-eyed Rāma was produced from the half of Vishṇu's virile power, for the good of the world and the slaughter of Rāvaṇa. Bharata, of genuine valour, was born of Kaikeyī, manifest as the fourth part of Vishṇu, endowed with all virtues. Then Sumitrā brought forth two sons, of strong devotion and great energy, Lakshmaṇa and Satrughna, possessing (each) the half (of the fourth part) of Vishṇu.] Now Bharata, of clear understanding, was born under Pushya (the eighth lunar mansion), under the sign of the fishes; while the sons of Sumitrā were born under the [ninth] lunar mansion of the serpents, when the sun had entered into Cancer.”

If the supposition of Schlegel and Lassen that the 14th, 15th, and 16th sections are interpolated, be correct, it is quite conceivable that the verses of the section before us describing Daśaratha's sons as portions of Vishṇu, which I have marked with an asterisk and included in brackets, may also have been interpolated, as they can be spared without detriment to the connexion; and if they are retained, the births of Bharata, Lakshmaṇa, and Satrughna, are related twice. In that case the epithets “lord of the universe,” and “adored by all worlds,” which occur in the first of the verses I have quoted, may have been afterwards substituted for some of a less magnificent character which stood there before. And, in fact, if Rāma was originally regarded as an incarnation of Vishṇu, it does not appear so suitable to compare his birth to that of Indra (in that case a personage of less dignity than Vishṇu), as is done in one of the verses which I presume to be ancient, and genuine.

The following is a summary of the episode of the apparition of Paraśurāma referred to above by Prof. Lassen in p. 170. When King Daśaratha was returning to his capital, after taking leave of Janaka, the King of Mithilā, whose daughter Sitā had just been married to

Rāma (Rāmāyaṇa, Schleg. i. 74=Bombay Ed. i. 74, and Gorresio's ed. i. 76), he was alarmed by the ill-omened sounds uttered by certain birds, which however were counteracted, as the sage Vasishṭha assured the king, by the auspicious sign of his being perambulated by the wild animals of the forest. The alarming event indicated was the arrival of Paraśurāma, preceded by a hurricane which shook the earth and prostrated the trees, and by thick darkness which veiled the sun. He was fearful to behold, brilliant as fire, and bore his axe and a bow on his shoulder. Being received with honour, which he accepted, he proceeded to say to Rāma, the son of Daśaratha (in section 75), that he had heard of his prowess in breaking the bow produced by Janaka (Rām. i. 67), and had brought another which he asked Rāma to bend, and to fit an arrow on the string; and if he succeeded in doing so, he (Paraśurāma) would offer to engage with him in single combat. Daśaratha is rendered anxious by this speech, and adopts a suppliant tone towards Paraśurāma, but the latter again addresses Rāma, and says that the bow he had broken was Siva's, but the one he himself had now brought was Viṣṇu's. Two celestial bows, he proceeds, were made by Viśvakarman, of which one was given by the gods to Mahādeva, the other to Viṣṇu. The narrative then proceeds (14 ff.):

Tadā tu devatūḥ sarvāḥ prichhanti sma Pitāmahaṃ | Sītikanṭhasya Viṣṇoḥ cha balābala-nirikṣhayā | abhiprāyaṃ tu vijnāya devatānām Pitāmahaḥ | virodhaṃ janayāmāsa tayoh satyavatām carah | virodhe tu mahad yuddham abhavad roma-harṣaṇam | Sītikanṭhasya Viṣṇoḥ cha paraṣpara-jayaishīnoḥ | tadā tu jṛmbhitam saivaṃ dhanur bhīma-parākramam | hunkāreṇa Mahādevaḥ stambhito 'tha trilochanaḥ | devais tadā samūgamya sarasī-sanghaiḥ sa-chūraṇaiḥ | yāchitau praśamaṃ tatra jagmatuḥ tau surottamau | jṛmbhitam tad dhanur dṛṣṭvā saivaṃ Viṣṇu-parākramaiḥ | adhikam menire Viṣṇuṃ devāḥ sarasī-gaṇās tathā | dhanū Rudras tu sankrūddho Vīdeheshu mahāyāsūḥ | Devarātasya rājarsheḥ dadau haste sa-sāyakam | idaṃ tu Vaiṣṇavaṃ Rāma dhanuḥ para-purāṇajayam | Rīchiko Bhārgavo prādūd Viṣṇuḥ sa nyāsam uttamam | "The gods then all made a request to Brahmā, desiring to find out the strength and weakness of Sītikanṭha (Mahādeva) and Viṣṇu. Brahmā, most excellent of the true, learning the purpose of the gods, created enmity between the two. In this state of enmity a great and terrible fight ensued between Sītikanṭha and Viṣṇu, each of whom was eager to

conquer the other. Siva's bow of dreadful power was then relaxed, and the three-eyed Mahādeva was arrested by a muttering. These two eminent deities being entreated by the assembled gods, rishis, and Chāraṇas, then became pacified. Seeing that the bow of Siva had been relaxed by the prowess of Viṣṇu, the gods and rishis esteemed Viṣṇu to be superior.¹⁶⁹ Then the illustrious Rudra, incensed, gave the bow and arrows into the hand of the royal rishi Devarāta [who dwelt] among the Videhas. But this, Rāma, is the bow of Viṣṇu, which vanquishes hostile cities. Viṣṇu gave this excellent deposit to Richika, the descendant of Bhrigu." From him it came to Jamadagni, father of Paraśurāma. After referring to his father's murder by Arjuna,¹⁷⁰ and his own subsequent history, Paraśurāma repeats that he had heard of Rāma's prowess in breaking the other bow, and again asks him to bend Viṣṇu's; and in the event of his succeeding, again offers to fight him. Rāma replies (section 76) that though his warlike qualities are condemned by his rival, he will give him a proof of his powers. He then snatches, in anger, the bow from the hand of Paraśurāma, bends it, fits an arrow on the string; and tells his challenger that he will not shoot at him because he is a Brāhman, and for the sake of his kinsman Viśvāmitra; but will either destroy his superhuman capacity of movement, or deprive him of the blessed abodes he has acquired by austerity. The gods now arrive to be witnesses of the scene. Paraśurāma becomes disheartened and powerless, and humbly entreats that he may not be deprived of his faculty of movement (lest he should be incapacitated from fulfilling his promise to Kaśyapa to leave the earth every night), but consents that his blissful abodes may be destroyed. He then goes on, v. 17 (Schlegel's and Bombay editions=sect. 77, 49 ff. of Gorresio): *Akshayaṃ Madhukantārāṃ jñāmi tvāṃ mahāśvaram (or sureśvaram) | dhanuṣo 'sya parāmarśāt evasti te 'stu parantapa | 18 | ete sura-gaṇāḥ sarve nirīkṣante samāgatāḥ | tvāṃ apratima-karmāṇaṃ apratidoandam āhava | 19 | na cheyam mama Kākutṣtha vṛiddhā bhavitum arhati | tvayā trailokya-nāthena yaḍ ahaṃ vimukhīkṛitaḥ | 17.* "By the bending of

¹⁶⁹ The orthodox commentator (in the Bombay edition) will not allow this to be taken absolutely. He says: *Vastutas tu prakṛita-yuddhe Viṣṇor ādhikya-darśanāt Tripura-badhe Śivasya ādhikya-darśanāt tayoḥ sāmya-grahaṇam iti tūtparyam* | "In reality, as we find that Viṣṇu is the stronger in the fight before us, whilst Śiva is stronger in the slaughter of Tripura, the result is that their equality must be assumed."

¹⁷⁰ See the first volume of this work, second edition, pp. 449 ff.

this bow I recognize thee to be the imperishable slayer of Madhu, the great Lord (or lord of the Gods): hail, vanquisher of thy foes! 18. All these assembled gods behold thee who art unequalled in action, unrivalled in fight. 19. It need be no cause of shame to me that I have been humbled by thee who art the lord of the three worlds." Rāma then shoots the arrow, and destroys Paraśurāma's abodes.

In whatever light the author of these lines may really have looked upon Vishṇu, whether as identical with the supreme Spirit or not, the passage itself contains no epithet or expression which necessitates such an interpretation. At the same time it is to be observed that the Vishṇu Purāṇa (see Wilson's trans. pp. 594 ff. 4to. ed.—pp. 114 ff. vol. v. of Dr. Hall's ed.), the Harivaṃśa (sections 183 and 184), and the Bhāgavata Purāṇa (x., 64th and previous sections), which indubitably regard Vishṇu as the supreme Deity, also relate a combat between him and Mahādeva. There is no doubt, however, that the 119th section of the Yuddha Kāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa, which I now proceed to quote from the text of the edition published some years ago at Bombay, distinctly speaks of Rāma as an incarnation of the supreme Spirit. This Bombay text, though it follows the Devanāgarī recension of Upper India, does not, in this section, differ materially, except in the arrangement of the verses, from that of Gorresio. I should judge, from the nature of the epithets which are here applied to Vishṇu, that this chapter, as it now stands, could not have formed part of the original Rāmāyaṇa. In the preceding portion of the poem it had been related that Sītā, after being recovered by Rāma on the defeat and death of Rāvaṇa, had been suspected of unchastity by her husband, and had in consequence entered the fire. The 119th section then goes on thus:

Yuddha-Kāṇḍa, sect. 119, 1 ff.—*Tato hi durmanāḥ Rāmaḥ śrutvaivam vadatām girāḥ | dadhyau muhūrtaṁ dharmātmā vāshpa-vyākula-lochanaḥ | tato Vaiśravaṇo rājā Yamaś cha pitribhiḥ saha | Sahasrākshaś cha deveśo Varuṇaścha jaleśvaraḥ | śhaḍ-ardha-nayanaḥ śrīmān Mahādevo vṛiṣha-dojaḥ | kartā sarvasya lokasya Brahmā brahma-vidām varaḥ |* [¹⁷¹ *sa cha rājā Daśaratho vimānenāntarikṣa-gaḥ | abhyājaḡāma taṁ deśaṁ deva-rāja-sama-dyutiḥ |*] *ete sarve samāgamy vimānaḥ sūrya-sannibhaiḥ | āgamy nagarīm Lankām abhijagmuś cha Rāghavam | tataḥ sa-hastābharaṇaṁ pragrihya vipulān bhujān | abruvaṇ tridaśa-śreṣṭhāḥ Rāghavam prāṇjalīm*

¹⁷¹ This verse is found in Gorresio's edition only, not in that of Bombay.

*sthitam | kartā sarvasya lokasya śreṣṭhō jñānavidāṁ vibhuk | upekshase
 kathāṁ Sītāṁ patantim havyavāhano | kathāṁ deva-gaṇa-śreṣṭhāṁ
 ātmānaṁ nāvabudhyase | Rīta-dhāmā Vasuḥ pūrvaṁ Vasūnāṁ cha
 Prajāpatiḥ | tvam trayāṇāṁ hi lokānāṁ ādikartā svayam prabhuk |
 Rudrāṇāṁ aśtāmo Rudraḥ Sādhyānāṁ api panchamaḥ | Āsvinau chāpi te
 karnau chandrādityau cha chakshuḥ¹⁷² | ante chādau cha bhūtānāṁ drīṣyase
 tvam purātapa | upekshase cha Vaidēhim mānuṣaḥ prākṛito yathā | ity uktō
 lokapūlais taiḥ svāmī lokasya Rāghavaḥ | abravīt tridaśa-śreṣṭhān Rāmo
 dharma-bhṛitāṁ varaḥ | ātmānaṁ mānuṣhaṁ manye Rāmaṁ Dāsārathāt-
 majam | so 'haṁ yaścha yataś chāhaṁ bhagavāṁs tad bravitu me | iti bruvā-
 ṇāṁ Kākutsthāṁ Brahmā brahma-vidāṁ varaḥ | abravīt śṛīṇu me vākyaṁ
 satyaṁ satya-parākramaḥ | bhavān Nārāyaṇaḥ devaḥ śrīmāṁś chakrāyudhaḥ
 prabhuk | eka-śṛīṅgo varūhas tvam bhūta-bhāvya-sapatna-jit | akṣharam Brahma
 satyaṁ cha madhye chānte cha Rāghava | lokānāṁ tvam paro dharmo
 Vishvaksenaś chaturbhujah | Sārṅga-dhantvā Hṛishīkeśaḥ puruṣaḥ puru-
 shottamaḥ | ajitah khadga-dhṛig Vishṇuḥ Kṛishṇaś chaiva vṛihadbalaḥ |
 Senānīr grāmaṇīḥ satyas tvam buddhis tvam kṣamā damaḥ | prabhavaś
 chāpyayaś cha tvam Upendro Madhusūdanaḥ | Indra-karmā Mahendras
 tvam padmanūbho raṇānta-kṛit | śaranyaṁ śaraṇaṁ cha tvāṁ āhur dvyāḥ
 maharshayaḥ | sahasra-śṛīṅgo vedātmā śata-śīrṣhāḥ maharshabhaḥ | tvam
 trayāṇāṁ hi lokānāṁ ādi-kartā svayam prabhuk | siddhānāṁ api sādhyā-
 nāṁ āśrayaś chāsi pūrvaḥ | tvam yajnas tvam vashaṭkāras tvam
 omkāraḥ parāt paraḥ | prabhavaṁ nidhanaṁ vā te na viduḥ ko bhavān
 iti | drīṣyase sarva-bhūteshu brāhmaṇeshu cha goṣhu cha | dīkṣhu sarvāṣu
 gagane parvateshu nadīshu cha | sahasra-charaṇaḥ śrīmān śata-śīrṣhāḥ
 sahasra-dṛik | tvam dhārayasi bhūtāni vasudhāṁ cha sa-parvatām | ante
 prithivyāḥ salile drīṣyase tvam mahoragaḥ | trin lokān dhārayan Rāma
 deva-gandharva-dānavān | ahaṁ te hṛidayāṁ Rāma jihvā devī Sarasvatī |
 devāḥ romāṇi gātreshu Brahmaṇā nirmītāḥ prabho | nimeshas te smṛitā
 rātrīr unmesho divasas tathā | saṁskārās te 'bhavan veddīḥ natid aśi
 tvayā vind | jagat sarvaṁ śurīraṁ te sthāiryāṁ te vasudhā-talam | Agnīḥ
 kopāḥ prasādas te Somaḥ śrīvatsalakṣhaṇa | tvayā lokās trayāḥ krāntīḥ
 purā svair vikramaish tribhūḥ | Mahendras cha kṛito rājā Balim baddhva
 suddarūṇam | [¹⁷³ yat paraṁ śrūyate jyotir yat paraṁ śrūyate tamaḥ | yat
 param paratāś chaiva paramūlmeti kathyase | paramākhyam paraṁ yach
 cha tvam eva parigīyase | sthity-utpatti-vināśānāṁ tvāṁ āhuḥ paramāṁ]*

¹⁷² These two verses occur in Gorresio's edition only, not in that of Bombay.

*gatiṁ |] Sītā Lakṣmī bhavān Viṣṇur devaḥ Kṛiṣṇaḥ prajāpatiḥ |
badhārthaṁ Rāvaṇasyeṣa pravaiṣṭo mānuṣhīm tanum ityādi |*

"Then the righteous Rāma, dejected, on hearing the words of those who thus spoke, meditated for a moment, with his eyes disturbed by tears. Then King Kuvera, and Yama with the Pitṛis, and Indra, lord of the gods, and Varuṇa, lord of the waters, and the glorious three-eyed Mahādeva, whose ensign is a bull, and Brahmā, the creator of the whole world, the most eminent of the knowers of the Veda; [*and that King Daśaratha, moving in the air on a celestial car, arrived in that region, equal in lustre to the king of the gods]; these all having come on cars brilliant as the sun, and arrived in the city of Lankā, came near to Rāghava (Rāma). Then these most eminent gods, holding the large arms of Rāma, adorned with armlets, addressed him as he stood with joined hands: 'How dost thou, the maker of the whole universe, the most eminent of the wise, the pervading, disregard Sītā's throwing herself into the fire? How dost thou not perceive thyself to be the chief of the host of the gods? [Thou wast] formerly the Vasu Rītadhāman, and the Prajāpati of the Vasus. Thou art the primal maker of the three worlds, the self-dependent lord, the eighth Rudra of the Rudras, and the fifth of the Sādhyas. The Aśvins are thine ears, the Moon and Sun thine eyes. Thou, vexer of thy foes, art seen in the end and at the beginning of created things. And yet thou disregarded Sītā like a common man.' Being thus addressed by these guardians of the world, Rāma, the lord of the world, chief of the supporters of righteousness, said to the most eminent gods, 'I regard myself as a man,'¹⁷³ Rāma, son of Daśaratha; do you, divine being, tell me who and whence I am.' Brahmā, chief of the knowers of the

¹⁷³ In the parts of the Mahābhārata where Kṛiṣṇa is identified with the supreme Deity, he is always represented as perfectly conscious of his true character. The commentator explains away this eleventh verse in the following manner: *Attha Brahmānugrahād eva Brahma-vidyānumukhyasya śruty-ōdī-siddhatayā tad-anumukhyasya "ātmanāṁ nāvabūdhyaḥ" iti Brahmaṇaiva kṛitatvāt taj-jīṇāsor eva svīyānāṁ eva-svarūpa-bodhanāya Brahmōṇaṁ gurum ajnaḥ eva upāsād ity āha "ātmanam" iti |* "As it is established by the Veda, etc., that the aspiration after the science of Brahma comes only from the grace of Brahmā, and since Brahmā had just prompted that aspiration by the words 'how dost thou not perceive thyself?' Rāma, assuming the appearance of a desire to know, with the view of explaining his nature to his (worshippers), applies to Brahmā, as an ignorant student to his teacher, and says, 'I regard myself,' etc."

Veda, replied to Kakuts̥ha (Rāma) thus speaking: 'Hear my true word, O being of genuine power. Thou art the god, the glorious lord, Nārāyaṇa, armed with the discus. Thou art the one-horned boar, the conqueror of thy foes, past and future, the true, imperishable Brahma, both in the middle and end. Thou art the supreme righteousness of the worlds, Viahvaksena, the four-armed; the bearer of the bow, Sārṅga, Hṛishīkeśa (lord of the senses), Puruṣa (the male), the highest of Puruṣas, the unconquered, sword-wielding, Viṣṇu, and Kṛishṇa¹⁷⁴ of mighty force, the general, the leader, the true. Thou art intelligence, thou art patience, and self-restraint. Thou art the source of being and cause of destruction, Upendra (the younger Indra), and Madhusūdana. Thou art Mahendra (the elder Indra) fulfilling the function of Indra, he from whose navel springs a lotus, the ender of battles. The great divine rishis call thee the refuge, the resort of suppliants. Thou art the thousand-horned, composed of the Veda, the hundred-headed, the mighty. Thou art the primal maker of the three worlds, the self-dependent lord, and the refuge of the Siddhas and Sādhyas, O thou primevally born. Thou art sacrifice, thou art the vashaṭkāra, and the omkāra, higher than the highest. Men know not who thou art, the source of being, or the destroyer. Thou art seen in all creatures, in Brahmans and in cows, in all the regions, in the mountains and rivers, thousand-footed, glorious, hundred-headed, thousand-eyed. Thou sustainest creatures, and the earth with its mountains; thou art seen, Rāma, at the extremity of the earth, in the waters, a mighty serpent supporting the three worlds, gods, Gandharvas, and Dānavas. I am thy heart, Rāma, the goddess Sarasvatī is thy tongue. The gods have been made by Brahmā the hairs on thy limbs. The night is called the closing, and the day the opening, of thine eyes. The Vedas are thy thoughts.¹⁷⁵ This [universe] exists not without thee. The whole world is thy body; the earth is thy stability. Agni is thine anger, Soma is thy pleasure, O thou whose mark is the Śrīvatsa. By thee

¹⁷⁴ If this means, as it seems to do, Kṛishṇa, the son of Devakī, it must, if not an anachronism, be intended as prophetic. The commentator, both here and further on, makes it mean merely the "black-coloured" (*kṛishṇas tad-varṇaḥ*).

¹⁷⁵ The commentator explains *saṁskārāḥ* thus: *Saṁskriyante bodhyante ebhīr lokāḥ iti saṁskārāḥ praeritti-nivṛitti-vyavasthā-bodhakāḥ* | "*Saṁskāras* are the things by which people are instructed, the things which prescribe the rules of acting and forbearing to act." But this cannot well be the sense here.

the three worlds were traversed of yore with thy three paces, and Mahendra was made king after thou hadst bound the terrible Bali. [*That which is known as the chiefest light, that which is known as the chiefest darkness, that which is higher than the highest,—thou art called the highest Soul. It is thou who art hymned as that which is called the highest, and [is] the highest. Men call thee the highest source of continuance, production, and destruction.] *Sitā* is *Lakshmi*,¹⁷⁶ and thou art *Vishṇu*, the divine *Kṛishṇa*, the lord of creatures, who hast entered a mortal body for the slaughter of *Rāvaṇa*," etc.

In the same way as *Vishṇu* is associated with *Rāma* in the *Rāmāyaṇa*, so is he connected with *Kṛishṇa* in the *Mahābhārata*, the *Vishṇu*, *Bhāgavata*, and *Brahma-vaivartta*, *Purāṇas*, and other *Vaiṣṇava* works of a later date. In the two first-named *Purāṇas*, though *Kṛishṇa* is sometimes spoken of as a partial incarnation of *Vishṇu* (see the passage from the *Bhāgavata Purāṇa*, x. 33, 27, quoted above, p. 50, and another from the *Vishṇu Purāṇa*, which will be adduced below), he is generally regarded as a perfect manifestation of that deity, who, again, is identified with the supreme Spirit. In the *Mahābhārata*—which, as we have seen, contains a vast collection of heterogeneous materials originating in different ages, and embodying the opinions of various sects—we shall find that *Kṛishṇa* is diversely represented in different parts of the work. I have already (p. 169) quoted some remarks of Professors Wilson and Lassen on this subject. According to these authors *Kṛishṇa*, in so far as he is introduced as an actor in the events of the poem, is generally made to play a merely human part, and to manifest no super-human power in succouring friends, or overcoming enemies; while, as Professor Wilson remarks, his divine character is frequently disputed. In the *Chhândogya Upanishad* he is spoken of simply as the son of *Devakī*. In various parts of the *Mahābhārata* he is described as rendering homage to *Mahādeva*, and as receiving from him boons of various kinds. In many passages he is identified with the rishi *Nārāyaṇa*, while his friend *Arjuna* appears as one with the rishi *Nara*, the inseparable companion of the former. In these various passages, however, *Kṛishṇa* is by no means regarded in general as an ordinary mortal. He receives various divine weapons from *Mahādeva*; in his

¹⁷⁶ In regard to *Lakshmi* and *S'itā*, see the fifth volume of this work, pp. 348 f.

character as the rishi Nāṣyaṇa, he lives through successive ages, and displays superhuman faculties. Even while acting as the ally of the Pāṇḍus, he destroys Śiśupāla supernaturally with his discus. And in numerous passages he is identified in the clearest manner with Viṣṇu, who again, as I have said, is commonly assumed to be one with the supreme Spirit. I shall now proceed to adduce a variety of passages illustrative of these various assertions.

I. The following short passage from the Chhāndogya Upanishad (pp. 220 ff. of the Bibl. Ind.) is, I believe, the oldest text yet known in which Kṛiṣṇa the son of Devakī is mentioned. It is extremely unfortunate that it is so brief; that it leaves us without any particulars of a personage about whom we should have been glad to possess the fullest details, who in after-times became so famous as to obtain the honour of deification,—except the meagre information that he was the son of Devakī, the pupil of a teacher named Ghora,¹⁷⁷ and that he was so enthusiastically devoted to the pursuit of mystical lore as to become indifferent to everything else :

Tad ha etad Ghorah Āngirasaḥ Kṛiṣṇāya Devakī-putrāya uktvā uvācha apipāsaḥ eva sa babhūva so 'nta-velāyām etat-trayam pratipadyeta "akṣhitam asy achyutam asi prāṇa-saṁsitam asi" iti | "Ghora, the descendant of Angiras, having declared this [the preceding mystical lore] to Kṛiṣṇa the son of Devakī, said to him that [which, when he heard], he became free from thirst [i.e. desire], viz. : 'let a man at the time of his death have recourse to these three texts, 'Thou art the undecaying, thou art the imperishable, thou art the subtle principle of breath.' "

I quote some of the commentator's remarks on this important text :

Tad ha etad yajnā-darśanaṁ Ghorā nāmataḥ Āngiraso gotrataḥ Kṛiṣṇāya Devakī-putrāya śiṣyāya uktvā uvācha | tad "etat trayam" ityādi vyavahitena sambandhaḥ | sa cha etad darśanaṁ śrutvā apipāsaḥ eva anyābhyo vidyābho babhūva | itthaṁ cha viśiṣṭā iyaṁ vidyā yat Kṛiṣṇasya Devakī-putrasya anyāṁ vidyāṁ prati trid-vichheda-karī iti puruṣa-yajna-vidyāṁ stauti | Ghorah Āngirasaḥ Kṛiṣṇāya uktvā imāṁ vidyāṁ kim uvācha iti tad āha | sa evaṁ yathokta-yajna-vid anta-velāyām maraṇa-kāle etan-mantra-trayam pratipadyeta japed ity arthaḥ |

¹⁷⁷ I am not aware whether Ghora is mentioned in connexion with Kṛiṣṇa in any other work.

. . . . *prāṇa-saṁśītaṁ prāṇasya saṁśītaṁ śaṅkyaṁ tanukṛitancha sukh-
maṁ tattvaṁ asi* | "A person, Ghora by name, and an Āngi-
rasa by family, having declared this doctrine of sacrifice to Kṛishṇa
the son of Devakī, his pupil, then said, etc. The connexion of the last
word 'said,' is with the words which occur some way below, 'these
three,' etc. And having heard this doctrine, he became free from desire
for any other kinds of knowledge. In this manner he praises this
knowledge of the Puruṣa-sacrifice by saying that it was so distinguished
that it destroyed all thirst in Kṛishṇa, the son of Devakī, for any other
knowledge. He now tells us what Ghora Āngirasa said after declaring
this knowledge to Kṛishṇa. It was this: 'Let him who knows the
aforesaid sacrifice, at the time of his death have recourse to, mutter,
these three texts; *prāṇa-saṁśītaṁ* means, 'thou art the very
minute, and subtile principle of breath.'"

II. I shall next quote some passages of the Mahābhārata in which
Kṛishṇa is represented as rendering homage to Mahādeva, and conse-
quently, to all appearance, as acknowledging his own inferiority to
that deity. It is related in the Vana-parvan (vv. 1513-1656), in a
passage which I shall quote further on, that Arjuna goes to supplicate
Mahādeva for celestial weapons, and obtains from him the Pāśupata.

At a later stage of the poem (Droṇa-parvan, v. 2838) Arjuna is
advised by Kṛishṇa to apply again to Mahādeva for the same Pāśupata
weapon, as if the author (if indeed he is the same by whom the earlier
passage was written) had forgotten that he had already got it. Arjuna,
it appears, had vowed (vv. 2681 ff.) to slay Jayadratha on the follow-
ing day, though all the inferior deities should stand forward as his
protectors. Subsequently, however, he becomes dejected, reflecting that
the enemy's leaders would do their utmost to preserve Jayadratha, and
that he would thus be unable to fulfil his promise (vv. 2830 ff.).
Kṛishṇa hereupon advises Arjuna to supplicate Mahādeva for the Pāśu-
pata weapon with which that god himself had formerly destroyed all the
Daityas, and with which he (Arjuna) would be able to slay Jayadratha
on the morrow (vv. 2838 ff.). Arjuna and Kṛishṇa then arrive with
the speed of the wind, at the mountain on the summit of which
Mahādeva abode, where they obtain a vision of that deity, with Pār-
vatī and his attendant Bhūtas (demons). On seeing him Vāsudeva
(Kṛishṇa) bows down to the earth :

Mahābhārata, Droṇa-parvan, vv. 2862 ff.—*Vāsudevas tu taṁ drishṭvā jagāma śirasā kahitīm | Pārthena saha dharmātmā grīṇan brahma sanātanam | lokādīm viśva-karmāṇam ajam iśānam avyayam | manasaḥ paramām yoniṁ khaṁ vāyūṁ jyotiṣhām nidhim | sraśṭūrāṁ vāridhārāṇām bhuvaśoḥ prakṛitīm parām | deva-dānava-yakṣhūṇām mānavānāṇoḥ sādhanam | yogānāṇaḥ param brahma triptam brahma-vidām nidhim | charācharasya sraśṭāram pratihartūrām eva cha | kāla-kopam mahāt-mānaṁ śakra-sūrya-guṇodayam | vavande taṁ tadā Kṛiṣṇo vāṇ-mano buddhi-karmabhiḥ | yam prapadyanti vidvāṁsaḥ sūkṣmādhyātma-padaisṅgaḥ | tam ajam kāraṇātmānaṁ jagmatuḥ śaraṇam Bhavam | Arjunaś chāpya taṁ devam bhūyo bhūyo 'py avandata | jñātvā taṁ sarva-bhūtādīm bhūta-Navya-bhavodbhavam | tatas tāv āgatau drishṭvā Nara-Nārāyaṇāv ubhau | svasanna-manāḥ Sarvaḥ provācha pṛaḥasann iva | āgataṁ vām nara-śreṣṭhāv uttiṣṭhetām gata-klamau | kincha vām iṣitaṁ vīrau manasaḥ kṣhipram uchyatām | yena kār्यeṇa samprāptau yuwaṁ tat sādha-yāmi kim | vriyatām ātmanaḥ śreyas tat sarvam pradādāmi vām |*

“The righteous Vāsudeva (Kṛiṣṇa) then, together with the son of Prithā (Arjuna), reciting the eternal Veda, bowed his head to the ground, beholding him, the source of the worlds, the maker of the universe, the unborn, the imperishable lord, the supreme source of mind, the sky, the wind, the abode of the luminaries, the creator of the oceans, the supreme substance of the earth, the framer of gods, Dānavas, Yakshas, and men, the supreme Brahma of meditative systems, the satisfied, the treasure of those who know Brahma, the creator of the world, and also its destroyer, the great impersonated destructive Wrath, the original of the attributes of Indra and Sūrya. Kṛiṣṇa then revered him with voice, mind, understanding, and act.¹⁷⁸ Those two [heroes] had recourse to Bhavā (Mahādeva) as their refuge,—to him whom the wise, desiring the subtle spiritual abode, attain,—to him the unborn cause. Arjuna, too, again and again revered that deity, knowing him to be the beginning of all beings, the source of the past, the future, and the present. Beholding those two, Nara and Nārāyaṇa,

¹⁷⁸ In a passage from the S'āntiparvan, vv. 13152 ff., which I shall quote further on, Kṛiṣṇa explains away the worship which here and elsewhere he is said to have rendered to Mahādeva, by saying that it was done for the sake of example to others, and was in reality offered to himself, Mahādeva being one of his manifestations, and, in fact, one with him. But no hint is given of this here.

arrived, Śarva (Mahādeva), then greatly glatified, said, as if smiling : 'Welcome, most eminent of men, rise up freed from fatigue, and tell me quickly, heroes, what your mind desires. Shall I accomplish for you the object for which you have come? Choose what is most for your welfare. I will give you all.' "

Kṛishṇa and Arjuna then recite a hymn in honour of Mahādeva, in the course of which he is designated as the "soul of all things, the creator of all things, and the pervader of all things" (*viśvātmā viśva-śrjṣ viśvam āvṛitya tiśṭhate*). Arjuna now, after reverencing both Kṛishṇa and Mahādeva, asks the latter for the celestial weapon. They are thereupon sent by Mahādeva to a lake where he says he had formerly deposited his bow and arrows. They there saw two serpents, one of which was vomiting flames, and approached them, bowing to Mahādeva and uttering the Satarudriya.¹⁷⁹ Through the power of Mahādeva, the serpents change their shape and become a bow and arrow (v. 2899), which Kṛishṇa and Arjuna bring to Mahādeva. Eventually Arjuna receives as a boon from Mahādeva the Pāsupata weapon, with the power of fulfilling his engagement to slay Jayadratha (vv. 2906 ff.); after which they both return to their camp.

In the Sautika-parvan, 312 f., Mahādeva, smiling, as it were (*hasann iva*), says to Āsvatthāman : *Satya-sauchārjava-tyāgais tapasā niyamena cha | kṣāntiā matyū cha dhṛityū cha buddhyū cha vachasā tathā |* 313. *Yathāvad aham ārūddhaḥ Kṛishṇenākliṣṭa-karmaṇā | tasmād iśṭatamaḥ Kṛishṇād anyo mama na vidyate |* "I have been duly worshipped by Kṛishṇa, the energetic in action, with truth, purity, honesty, liberality, austerity, ceremonies, patience, wisdom, self-control, understanding and words: wherefore no one is dearer to me than Kṛishṇa." (See Prof. Monier Williams's analysis of this book in his "Indian Epic Poetry," pp. 121 ff.)

In a later part of the same book (vv. 765 ff.) Kṛishṇa thus celebrates the greatness of Mahādeva : *Nūnaṁ sa deva-devānām īśvareśvaram avayam | jagāma śaranam Drauṇir ekas tenābadhīd bahūn |* 766 | *prasanno hi Mahādevo dadyād amaratām api | vīryam cha giriśo dadyād yonendram api śatayet |* 767 | *vedāham hi Mahādevam tattvena Bharat-arshabha | yāni chāsya purāṇāni karmāṇi vivīdhāni cha |* 768 | *adīr*

¹⁷⁹ A long hymn from the Yajur-veda, which will be quoted further on in the chapter on Rudra.

esha hi bhūtānām madhyam anīś cha Bhārata | vicheshṭate jagach chedaṁ sarvam asyaiva karmaṇā | 765. "Āśvatthāman resorted to the imperishable lord of lords of the gods of gods as his refuge; and through him he, though but one, slew many. 766. For Mahādeva, if pleased, can bestow even immortality, and prowess whereby any one may overcome even Indra himself. 767. I perfectly know Mahādeva, and his various works of old. 768. For he is the beginning, middle, and end of (all) creatures; and this entire world moves through his agency." See Williams's "Indian Epic Poetry," p. 123.

The Anuśāsana-parvan also contains several sections in which the praises of Mahādeva are celebrated at considerable length, and in which he is declared to have been worshipped by Kṛishṇa. At v. 588 of that book Yudhisṭhira asks Bhīṣma to declare the names of that deity, when the latter replies as follows (vv. 590 ff.):

Āśakto 'haṁ guṇān vaktum Mahādevasya dhimataḥ | yo hi sarva-gato devo na cha sarvatra dṛśyate | Brahma-Viṣṇu-sureśūnām śraśṭā cha prabhur eva cha | Brahmādayaḥ Piśāchāntāḥ yaṁ hi devāḥ upāsate | prakṛitān paratvena puruṣasya cha yaḥ paraḥ | chintyate yo yoga-vidbhīr iṣibhiḥ tattva-darśibhiḥ | akṣharam paramam Brahma asachcha sad-asachcha yat | prakṛitim puruṣanchaiva kṣobhayitvā eva-tejasū | Brahmānam asṛjāt tasmād deva-devaḥ prajāpatiḥ | ko hi śakto guṇān vaktum deva-devasya dhimataḥ | garbha-janma-jarā-yukto martyo mṛityu-saman-vitāḥ | ko hi śakto Bhavaṁ jñātum mad-vidhaḥ Paramesvaram | rite Nārāyaṇāt putra śankha-chakra-gadā-dharāt | esha vidvān guṇa-śreṣṭhō Viṣṇuḥ parama-durjayaḥ | divya-chakṣur mahātejāḥ vikṣhyate [vikṣhate?] yoga-chakṣuṣhā | Rudra-bhaktiā tu Kṛishṇena jagad vyāptam mahātmanā | tam prasādyā tadā devaṁ Badāryām kilā Bhārata | arihāt¹⁸⁰ priḡataratvaṁ cha sarva-lōkeshu vai tadā | prāptavān eva rājendra suvarṇākṣhād Mahēśvarāt | pūrṇaṁ varṣa-sahasraṁ tu taptavān esha Mādhavaḥ | prasādyā varadaṁ devaṁ charāchhara-gurum Sīvam | yuge yuge tu Kṛishṇena toshito vai Mahēśvaraḥ | bhaktiā paramayā chaiva prītaśchaiva mahātmanaḥ | aiśvaryaṁ yādṛīṣaṁ tasya jagad-yoner mahātmanaḥ | tad ayaṁ dṛiṣṭavān sākṣhāt putrārthē Harir ahyutaḥ | tasmāt parataranachaiva nānyam paśyāmi Bhārata | vyākhyātum deva-devasya śakto namāny aśeshataḥ | esha śakto mahābāhur vaktum bhagavato guṇān | vibhūtinchachaiva kārtsnyena satyām mahēśvarīm nṛipa¹

¹⁸⁰ The MS. of the Mahābhārata in the library of the Roy. As. Soc reads *annāt*.

"I am unable to declare the attributes of the wise Mahādeva, who is an all-pervading god, yet is nowhere seen, who is the creator and the lord of Brahmā, Viṣṇu,¹⁸¹ and Indra, whom the gods, from Brahmā to the Piśāchas, worship, who transcends material natures as well as spirit (Puruṣa), who is meditated upon by rishis versed in contemplation (*yoga*), and possessing an insight into truth, who is the supreme, imperishable Brahma, that which is both non-existent, and at once existent and non-existent. Having agitated matter and spirit by his power, this god of gods and lord of creatures (Prajāpati) thence created Brahmā. What human being like me, who has been subject to gestation in the womb, and to birth, and is liable to decay and death, can declare the attributes of Bhava, the supreme lord,—[who can do this] except Nārāyaṇa, the bearer of the shell, the discus, and the club? This Viṣṇu, wise, eminent in qualities, very hard to overcome, with divine insight, of mighty power, beholds¹⁸² [him] with the eye of contemplation: Through his devotion to Rudra, the world is pervaded by the mighty Kṛishṇa. Having then propitiated that deity (Mahādeva) at Badari, he (Kṛishṇa) obtained from the golden-eyed Maheśvara the quality of being in all worlds more dear than wealth. This Mādhava (Kṛishṇa) performed austerity for a full thousand years, propitiating Siva, the god who bestows boons, and the preceptor of the world. But in every mundane period (*yuga*) Maheśvara has been propitiated by Kṛishṇa, and has been gratified by the eminent devotion of that great personage. This unshaken Hari (Kṛishṇa), [when seeking] for offspring, has beheld distinctly of what character is the glory of that great parent of the world. Than him I behold none higher. This large-armed [Kṛishṇa] is able to recount fully the names of the god of gods, to describe the qualities of the divine [being], and the real might of Maheśvara in all its extent."

Bhīṣma then calls upon Kṛishṇa, whom he designates as Viṣṇu,

¹⁸¹ Professor Aufrecht (Catalogue, p. 54a, note) quotes the following verse from the 55th chapter of the Vāyu Purāṇa, as spoken by Mahādeva: *Ayam me dakṣhiṇo bāhur Brahmā loka-pitṛmaḥaḥ | vāmo bāhuś cha me Viṣṇur nityaṁ yuddheṣhu nirjitaḥ* | "Brahmā, the parent of the universe, is my right arm, and Viṣṇu is my left arm, always overcome in battles." Must not the correct reading here be *yuddheṣhu anirjitaḥ*, "unconquered in battles" ?

¹⁸² The printed text reads *vikahyate*, "is beheld," but the sense seems to require *vikahate*, "beholds."

and as the divine teacher of gods and Asuras (*surāsura-guro deva Viṣṇo*), to celebrate Mahādeva's greatness. Kṛiṣṇa accordingly says (vv. 610 ff.):

Na gatiḥ karmaṇāṃ śakyā vettum īśasya tattvataḥ | Hiranyagarbha-pramukhāḥ devāḥ sēdrāḥ maharshayaḥ | na vidūr yasya bhavanam Ādityāḥ sūkṣma-darśinaḥ | sa katham nara-mātrena śakyo jñātuṃ satāṃ gatiḥ | tasyāham asura-ghnasya kāmśchid bhagavato guṇān | bhavatāṃ kīrtayishyāmi vrataśāya [vrataśasya ?] yathātatham | "The course of the deeds of Īśa (Mahādeva) cannot be really known. He whose essence neither the gods headed by Hiranyagarbha, nor the great rishis with Indra, nor the Ādityas, the perceivers of the minutest objects, understand,—how can he, the refuge of saints, be known by any mere man? I shall declare to you exactly some of the attributes of that divine slayer of the Asuras, of the lord of religious ceremonies."

Kṛiṣṇa then relates how he had formerly seen Mahādeva. It appears that his wife Jāmbavatī (v. 616), daughter of the king of the monkeys¹⁸³ (*kapindra-putrī*, v. 629), had come to him desirous of a son; she says (vv. 619 f.):

Na hi te 'prāpyam astīha trishu lokeshu kinchana | lokān spijes tvam aparūn icchān Yadu-kulodvaha | tvayā dvādaśa-varṣāṇi vratibhūtena śuśhyatā | āradhya paśubhartāraṃ Rukmiṇyāṃ janitāḥ sutāḥ | "For there is nothing in these three worlds unattainable by thee (Kṛiṣṇa). Thou, scion of the race of Yadu, couldst create other worlds.¹⁸⁴ By thee, after twelve years' fasting and mortification,¹⁸⁵ and worship of the nourisher of beasts (Mahādeva), sons were begotten on Rukmiṇī (another of his wives)."

Kṛiṣṇa promises to bring about the accomplishment of Jāmbavatī's wishes. The story proceeds that he was then conveyed by the celestial bird Garuḍa to the Himālaya (v. 632), where he sees the delightful hermitage of the saint Upamanyu, which is described at length (vv. 634-652).¹⁸⁶ Kṛiṣṇa enters, and is reverentially saluted by Upamanyu

¹⁸³ He is, however, called king of the bears in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa—See Wilson's translation, p. 427 f. (vol. iv., pp. 76 and 79 of Dr. Hall's ed.)

¹⁸⁴ Compare what is said of Viśvāmitra in the first volume of this work, p. 404.

¹⁸⁵ This twelve years' austerity performed before for the sake of progeny is alluded to further on in the Anuśāsana-parvan, v. 6397, and the birth of a son is mentioned, v. 6389. As Kṛiṣṇa is represented in that passage in a higher character than he is in the one before us, it will be more appropriately quoted further on.

¹⁸⁶ One of the features of the hermitage is thus depicted in v. 651: *Kṛīḍanti sar-*

(v. 655), who tells him that after propitiating Mahādeva by austerities, he shall obtain a son equal to himself (v. 658).¹⁵⁷ The saint then goes on to celebrate the greatness of Mahādeva, who, he said, had given boons to various beings, and to Vishṇu his discus (vv. 662 ff.):

*Hiraṇyakaśipuṛ yo 'bhūd dānavo Meru-kampanaḥ | tena sarvāmaraiś-
varyaṃ Sarvāt prāptaṃ samārbudam | tasyaiva putra-pravaro Man-
daro nāma viśrutaḥ | Mahādeva-varāc chakraṃ varahārbudam ayod-
hayat | Viśṇoś chakrancha tad ghoram vajram Ākhaṇḍalasya oha | śirṇam
purā 'bhavat tāta Grahasyāṅgeshu Keśava | yat tad bhagavatā pūrvaṃ
dattaṃ chakraṃ tavānagha | jalāntara-ghoraṃ hatvā daityancha bala-
garvitam | utpāditam Vṛishāṅkena dīptaṃ jvalana-sannibham | dattam
bhagavatā tubhyaṃ durdharshaṃ tejasū 'bbhutam | na śakyaṃ draśṭum
anyena varjayitvā Pinākinam | Sudarśanam bhavaty evam Bhavenoktaṃ
tadā tu tat | Sudarśanaṃ tadā tasya loke nāma pratishṭhitam | taj
jirṇam abhavat tāta Grahasyāṅgeshu Keśava | Grahasyātibalasyāṅge
varadattasya dhimataḥ | na śāstrāṇi vahanty ange chakraṃ vajra-śatāny
api | ardamūnāścha vibudhā Grahena subaliyasū | Siva-datta-varān
jaghnur asurendrān Surāḥ bhrīṣam |*

"Hiraṇyakaśipu, the Dānava, the shaker of mount Meru, obtained from Sarva (Mahādeva) the sovereignty of all the immortals for a hundred million years. He had an eminent and renowned son, called Mandara, who by the grace of Mahādeva fought with Indra for a hundred million years. Formerly both the dreadful discus of Viśṇu and the thunderbolt of Ākhaṇḍala¹⁵⁸ (Indra) were shattered against the limbs of Graha (Rāhu). That discus, resplendent and fiery, which was formerly given to thee by the god after slaying the marine monster, and the Daitya, proud of his strength, was produced

*pair nakulāḥ mṛigair vyāghrāścha mitra-vat | prabhāvād dīpta-tapaśāṃ sannikarohūd
mahātmanām |* "Weasels sport in a friendly fashion with serpents," [the two kinds of creatures being deadly foes], "and tigers with deer, through the power of those saints of brilliant austerity, from the proximity of those mighty ones."—Compare Isaiah xi. 6 ff.: "The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid," etc.

¹⁵⁷ In v. 655 the appellation *punḍarikākṣha*, "lotus-eyed," and in v. 659, that of *adhokṣhaja*, are applied to Kṛiṣṇa.

¹⁵⁸ This word occurs in Rīgveda, viii. 17, 12, and the words are quoted in the Nirukta, iii. 10: *Ākhaṇḍala pra hūyase* | "O Ākhaṇḍala, or destroyer, thou art invoked." It is rendered "shatterer," "destroyer," in Bohtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, s.v.

by Mahādeva.¹⁸⁹ Bestowed upon thee by the god, resistless, and wonderful in its potency, it could not be looked upon by any other than Pinākin (the bearer of the bow, i.e. Mahādeva). It then received from Bhava (Mahādeva) the name of Sudarśana, and by that name it is celebrated in the world. That discus was shattered against the limbs of Graha. On the body of the wise and very powerful Graha, who had received a boon, no weapons, not even the discus, or a thousand thunderbolts, produce any effect. The gods being harassed by the most mighty Graha, slew on many occasions the Asuras who had received boons from Śiva."

After telling that many other persons had obtained boons by worshipping Mahādeva, the saint Upamanyu relates a story about himself, how his mother, after smelling him on the head (*murdhany āghrāya*) had fully declared to him the greatness of this deity (vv. 724 ff.). In addition to the more general attributes assigned to the god, the following are some characteristics of a more special description (some of them sufficiently horrible or disgusting), as detailed with admiration by this female devotee. He assumes many forms of gods (as Brahmā, Viṣṇu, Indra, Rudra), and of men, of goblins, demons, barbarians, tame and wild beasts, birds, reptiles, fishes, with many varieties of human disguises, etc. (v. 731 ff.). He is the soul of all the worlds, all-pervading, residing in the heart of all creatures, knowing all desires (v. 742 f.). He carries a discus, a trident, a club, a sword, an axe (v. 745). He has a girdle of serpents, earrings of serpents, a sacrificial cord of serpents, and an outer garment of serpents' skins (v. 746). He laughs, sings, dances charmingly, and plays various musical instruments (v. 747). He leaps, gapes, weeps, makes others weep; speaks like a madman or a drunkard, as well as in sweet tones (v. 748). He laughs terrifically (v. 749). He is both visible and invisible, on the altar, on the sacrificial post, in the fire, a boy, an old man, a youth (v. 751). He dallies with the daughters and the wives of the rishis, with erect hair, obscene appearance,¹⁹⁰ naked, with excited look (v. 752: *kriḍate*

¹⁸⁹ In an account of Kṛiṣṇa's exploits in the Drona-parvan, however, it is said (v. 402) that the chakra was obtained by worshipping Agni: *Khūṇḍave Pārtha-saḥitas toṣhayitvā Hutāśanam | Agneyam astraṁ dūrdharaṣaṁ chakraṁ lebhṣe mahābalaḥ |* In the same passage (v. 401) he is said to have obtained his shell (*śankha*) by conquering Panchajanya in the infernal regions.

¹⁹⁰ Literally, *ingenti membro virili prāditus*. Compare Sautika-parvan, v. 289.

riśhi-kanyābhir riśhi-patnībhir eva cha | ūrdha-keśo mahāśepho nagno vikrīta-lochanah |). He is one-faced, two-faced, three-faced, many-faced.

Such is the deity, of whom, after hearing this description, Upamanyu becomes a constant devotee, and whom he gratifies by long austerities, standing for a thousand years on the tip of his left toe, during the first hundred years of which period he lives on fruits, the second hundred on withered leaves, the third hundred on water, and the remaining seven hundred on air (v. 758 ff.). Mahādeva at length appears to him in the form of Indra, and offers him his choice of a boon. Upamanyu, however, is indifferent about Indra, and declares that he cares nothing about any other god than Mahādeva, and will accept no boon, however great, at the hand of any other, adding many passionate expressions of devotion to this deity. And a further occasion being offered by a question of Indra, the saint again proceeds to expatiate in a passage of some length on the attributes of his favourite god (vv. 784–829), of which I shall only quote the following lines (v. 822 ff.):

Hetubhir vā kim anyais tair Īśaḥ kṛāṇa-kāraṇam | na sūtruma yad anyasya lingam abhyarchyate suraiḥ | kasyānyasya suraiḥ sarvair lingam muktṛā Maheśvaram | archyate 'rhitā-pūrvam vā brāhi yady asti te śrutih | yasya Brahmā cha Viṣṇuś cha tvaṁ chāpi saha daivataih | archayethūḥ sadā lingam tasmāch chhreshṭhatamo hi saḥ | na padmāṅkūḥ na cakrāṅkūḥ na vajrāṅkūḥ yataḥ prajāḥ | lingāṅkū cha bhagāṅkū cha tasmād Māheśvarī prajā | Devyūḥ kṛāṇa-rūpa-bhāva-janitūḥ sarvāḥ bhagāṅkūḥ striyo lingenāpi Harasya sarva-purushāḥ pratyakṣa-chih-nikṛitāḥ | yo 'nyat kṛāṇam īśvarāt pravadata devyā cha yad nāṅkitam trailokyē sacharāchare sa tu pumān vāhyo bhaved dumatih | puṁlingam sarvam Īśanam strī-lingam viddhi chāpy Umām | dvābhyām tanubhyām vyūptam hi charācharam idaṁ jagat | “Is Īśa (Mahādeva) the Cause of causes for any other reasons? We have not heard that the linga (male organ) of any other person is worshipped by the gods. Declare, if thou hast heard, what other being's linga except that of Maheśvara is now worshipped, or has formerly been worshipped, by the gods? He whose linga Brahmā and Viṣṇu, and thou (Indra), with the deities, continually worship, is therefore the most eminent. Since children bear neither the mark of the lotus (Brahmā's), nor of the discus (Viṣṇu's), nor of the thunderbolt (Indra's), but are marked with the male and the

female organs,—therefore offspring is derived from Maheśvara. All women produced from the nature of Devī as their cause, are marked with the female organ, and all males are manifestly marked with the linga of Hara. He who asserts any other cause than Īśvara (Mahādeva) or [affirms] that there is any [female] not marked by Devī in the three worlds, including all things movable or immovable, let that fool be thrust out. Know everything which is male to be Īśana, and all that is female to be Umā; for this whole world, movable and immovable, is pervaded by [these] two bodies.”

The saint is at length gratified by the appearance of Mahādeva himself with his spouse Pārvatī (vv. 837–841 f.); and a long description of the vision is given. Brahmā and Vishṇu stand on Mahādeva's right and left, and celebrate his praises (v. 869 f.):

Savya-dēśe tu devasya Brahmā loka-pitāmāhaḥ | divyaṁ vimānam āsthāya
haṁsa-yuktam manojavam | vāma-pārśva-gataś chāpi tathā Nārāyaṇaḥ
sthitaḥ | Vainateyaṁ samāruhya śankha-chakra-gadā-dharaḥ |
 875 f. *Astuvan vivīdhaiḥ stotrair Mahādevaṁ surāś tadā | Brahmā*
Bhavaṁ tadā 'stauṣhīd rathantaram udṛayan | jyeshṭha-sāmnā cha deve-
śaṁ jagau Nārāyaṇaś tadā | grīṇan brahma paraṁ Śakraḥ śatarudriyam
uttamam | Brahmā Nārāyaṇaś chaiva devarājaścha Kauśikaḥ | āśobhanta
mahātmānaś trayas trayāḥ ivāgnayaḥ | 869. “On the left (right?) of the
 god was Brahmā, patriarch of the world, standing on a celestial car,
 drawn by swans, and fleet as thought. On the left was Nārāyaṇa
 (Vishṇu) mounted on Garuḍa, bearing a shell, discus and club. . . .
 875. The gods then lauded Mahādeva with various hymns. Brahmā
 celebrated him, reciting the Rathantara, while Nārāyaṇa hymned the
 god of gods with the Jyeshṭha sāman, and Indra, uttering that most
 eminent prayer, the excellent Satarudriya. Brahmā, Nārāyaṇa, and
 the king of the gods (Indra), the son of Kuśika,¹⁹¹ the three mighty
 deities, shone like the three fires.”

Upamanyu himself then lauds Mahādeva (vv. 880–923). At the conclusion of his hymn a shower of flowers falls from the sky on his head, accompanied by celestial odours, and music (v. 925 f.), and Mahādeva addresses him, offering to bestow everything he wishes. Upamanyu

¹⁹¹ The epithet of Kauśika is given to Indra in R. V. i. 10, 11. See the first vol. of this work, pp. 347 f.

sheds tears of joy, falls on his knees, makes repeated prostrations, and after acknowledging with gratitude the god's condescension in granting him this vision, proceeds to say (vv. 839 ff.):

Sa esha bhagavān devaḥ sarva-sattvādīr avyayaḥ | sarva-tattva-vidhāna-jñaḥ pradhāna-puruṣaḥ paraḥ | yo 'ṣṛjaḍ dakṣiṇād angād Brahmāṇaṁ loka-sambhavam | vāma-pūrśvat taṭhā Viṣṇuṁ loka-rakṣārtham Īśvaraḥ | yugānte chaiva samprāpte Rudraṁ Īśo 'ṣṛjāt prabhur ity ādi | "This is the glorious god, the beginning of all existences, undecaying, who knows the formation of all principles, who is Pradhāna and Puruṣa (or the principal Puruṣa), the supreme; who, the lord, created from his right side Brahmā, the originator of the worlds, and from his left side Viṣṇu, for the preservation of the universe; and when the end of the age (*yuga*) had arrived, the mighty lord created Rudra," etc.

Upamanyu concludes by asking these boons, viz. that his devotion to the god may be perpetual, that he may know the past, the present, and the future, that he may always eat food cooked with milk (*kṣhīraudana*) with his relations, and that they may ever enjoy the near presence (*sānnidhya*) of Mahādeva in their hermitage (vv. 945 ff.). The god bestows all these and many other blessings, and disappears (vv. 949 ff.).

Having heard all this account from Upamanyu, Kṛiṣṇa expresses a desire that the god may vouchsafe to him a similar vision and the like favour. Upamanyu promises that Mahādeva shall appear to Kṛiṣṇa in six months, and bestow on him twenty-four boons, and pays him the compliment of saying that any of the gods would consider it as a highly laudable act to have an interview with such a pious, innocent, and devout person as he (Kṛiṣṇa) is (vv. 964 ff.). Kṛiṣṇa is then consecrated by the Brahman (973 ff.). Equipped with a staff, shaved, clothed with rags, anointed with ghee, and provided with a girdle, living for one month on fruits, for four more on water, standing on one foot, with his arms aloft, he at length obtained a glorious vision of Mahādeva and his wife (v. 978), whom all the gods were worshipping, and among them Indra, Viṣṇu (the delight of his mother Aditi), and Brahmā, all uttering the rathantara sāma (*S'atakratūḥ cha bhagavān Viṣṇuḥ ohūditi-nandanāḥ | Brahmā rathantaram sāma trayanti Bhavāntike*). Kṛiṣṇa then describes the effect of this vision on himself (vv. 997 ff.):

Purastād dhiṣṭhitaḥ S'arvo mamāsīt tridāśeśvaraḥ | purastād dhiṣṭhi-

*taṁ dṛṣhṭvā mameśānancha Bhārata | sa-Prajāpati-Sakrāntaṁ jagad
mām abhyudaikshata | ikṣhituṁ cha Mahādevaṁ na me śaktir abhūt tadā |
tato mām abraṇīd devaḥ “paśya Kṛṣṇa vadaṣva cha | tayā [tvayā ?]
hy ūrādhitāś chāhaṁ śataśo 'tha sahasraśaḥ | tvat-samo nāsti me kaśchit
triṣṭu lokeshu vai priyaḥ” | śirasā vandite deve devī prītā hy Umā 'bhavat |
tato 'ham abruvam Sthānuṁ stutam Brahmādibhiḥ suraiḥ |* “Before me
stood Sarva, the lord of the gods. Beholding Īśāna standing before me,
the world from Prajāpati to Sakra (Indra) gazed upon me. I had no
power to look on Mahādeva. The god then said to me, ‘Behold,
Kṛṣṇa, and speak. I have been adored by thee hundreds and
thousands of times. There is no one in the three worlds so dear to me
as thou.’ The god having been revered by obeisance, the goddess
Umā was gratified. I then said to Sthānu (Mahādeva), who had been
praised by Brahmā and the rest of the gods,” etc.

Kṛṣṇa proceeds to laud Mahādeva (vv. 1002–1018) as the supreme
Deity. Mahādeva then says (v. 1023): *Vidmaḥ Kṛṣṇa parām bhaktim
asmāsu tava śatruhaṇ | vṛiyatūṁ ātmanaḥ śreyasḥ prītir hi tvayī me parā |
vṛiṇīṣhvāṣṭau varān Kṛṣṇa dātūsmi tava sattama | brūhi Yādava-
śārdūla yān iekhaśi sudurlabhān |* “We know, Kṛṣṇa, slayer of foes,
thy eminent devotion to us. Choose what is most advantageous to thee,
for my love for thee is extreme. Choose eight boons; I will give them
to thee, most excellent being. Specify, chief of the Yadus, those boons
which are most difficult to obtain which thou desirest.” Kṛṣṇa
then asks these eight boons: (1) steadfastness in righteousness, (2)
the destruction of his foes in battle, (3) eminent renown, (4) the
greatest strength, (5) abstraction (*yoga*), (6) amiability (*priyatvam*),
(7) close proximity to Mahādeva, and (8) a hundred hundreds of sons,—
all of which were accordingly granted by Mahādeva. Umā next offers
him his choice of eight more boons, and he selects (1) the goodwill of
the Brahmans, (2) the favour of his father, (3) a hundred sons, (4)
eminent enjoyment, (5) the affection of his tribe, (6) the favour of his
mother, (7) tranquillity of mind, and (8) ability. These boons are
granted by the goddess, who superadds sixteen thousand wives whose
affection he should retain, and several other blessings. Mahādeva and
his spouse then disappear, and Kṛṣṇa relates to Upamanyu all that
has happened (v. 1034). That sage then goes on to tell him a story
about a rishi called Tanḍi, who had formerly worshipped Mahādeva,

in the Kṛita age, and praised him in a long hymn (which is given vv. 1049-1103) as the supreme Deity whom even Brahmā, Indra, and Vishṇu did not perfectly know, vv. 1052 (*Brahmā Satakratur Viṣṇur viśvedevāḥ maharshayaḥ | na vidus tvām tu tattvena kuto votayāmaḥ vayam*). These words appear to have been especially gratifying to the god (vv. 1105 ff.). Tanḍi had then come to Upamanyu's hermitage, and recited to him the eleven thousand mystical names of Mahādeva, which Upamanyu repeated to Kṛishṇa (vv. 1144 ff.). This hymn, existing in the heart of Brahmā, was, we are told (vv. 1287 ff.), declared by that deity to Indra, by him to Mṛityu (Death), by him to the Rudras, and from them it came to Tanḍi, etc.

A little further on (vv. 1358 ff.) we are told that Upamanyu expressed himself thus to Kṛishṇa :

Aśubhaiḥ pāpakarmāṇo yo narāḥ kaluṣhikṛitāḥ | Īśānaṁ na prapadyante tamo-rājasa-vṛittayaḥ | Īśvaraṁ samprapadyante doijāḥ bhāvita-bhāvanāḥ | sarvathā vartamāno 'pi yo bhaktāḥ paramēśvare | sadṛśo 'raṇyavāsūnām muninām bhāvītātmanām | Brahmaiva Keśavateaṁ cha Sakratvaṁ vā suraiḥ saha | trilokyasyādhipatyam vā tuṣṭo Rudraḥ prayachhati ityādi | "Those sinful men who are soiled by unhallowed (deeds) do not seek Īśāna, living under the dark and passionate qualities. Brahmins who have meditated on the cause [of all things] seek Īśvara. The man who is devoted to Maheśvara—whatever mode of life he follows—is equal to those contemplative munis who dwell in the forests. Rudra, when he is gratified, bestows the rank of Brahmā, or of Keśava (Keśava is a name of Kṛishṇa), or of Indra, or the supreme lordship of the three worlds, including the deities."

In a later part of the Anuśāsana-parvan, 7'02 ff., Kṛishṇa relates to Yudhiṣṭhira the benefits which had resulted to himself from his patient submission to the caprices and freaks of the irritable Brahman Duvāsas (an incarnation of Śiva, as it is stated below; see page 204), who, among other tricks, had yoked Kṛishṇa's wife Rukmiṇī to his car, and had wounded her with a goad, while drawing him on the road, and as a reward of Kṛishṇa's patient endurance of all this annoyance, had offered him his choice of boons, and had promised to Rukmiṇī that she should be eminently renowned in the world, and the most distinguished of the sixteen thousand wives of Kṛishṇa, whom she should worship. The Brahman then disappeared, and Kṛishṇa per-

formed an Upāṣu rite, i.e. muttered prayers, with his wife. Then entering his house he found that all the articles which Durvāsas had broken or burned, were replaced.

Yudhishtira then says to Kṛishṇa (vv. 7458 ff.): *Durvāsasaḥ prasādāt te yat tadā Madhusūdana | avāptam iha vijnānaṁ tan me vyākhyātum arhasi | mahābhāgyanācha yat tasya nāmāni cha mahātmanaḥ | tattvato jñātum ichhāmi sarvaṁ matimatām vara | Vāsudevaḥ uvācha | Hanta te kirtayishyāmi namaskṛitya Kapardine | yad avāptam mayā rājan bṛeyo yach chārjitaṁ yasaḥ | prayataḥ prātar utthāya yad adhiye viśāmpate | prānjaliḥ śatarudriyaṁ tan me nigadataḥ śṛiṇu | Prajāpatis tat asṛje tapaso 'nte mahātapaḥ | S'ankaras tv asṛjāt tāta prajāḥ sthāvara-jangamāḥ | nāsti kinohi param bhūtam Mahādevād viśāmpate | iha trisho api lokeshu bhūtānaṁ pravaro hi saḥ | na chāivotsahate sthātum kinchid agre mahātmanaḥ | na hi bhūtaṁ samam^o tena trishu lokeshu vidyate | gandhenāpi hi sangrāme tasya kruddhasya śatravaḥ | viśanjñāḥ hata-bhūyishṭhāḥ vepante cha patanti cha | ghoranācha nīnadaṁ tasya Parjanya-nīnadopamam | śrutvā viśīryed hṛidayaṁ devānām api saṁyuge | yāmīśha ghoreṇa rūpeṇa paśyet kruddhaḥ pināka-dhṛik | na surāḥ nāsuraḥ loka na gandharvāḥ na pannaḡāḥ | kupite sukham edhante tasminn api guhāgatāḥ | Prajāpates tu Dakṣasya yajato vilate kratau | vīryādha kupito yajnaṁ nirbhayaḥ tv abhavat tadā | dhanushā vāṇam uterjija saghoṣhaṁ vinandācha | tena śarma kutāḥ sāntiṁ viśhūdaṁ lebhire surāḥ | viddhe cha sahasā yajno kupite cha Maheśvare | tena jyā-tala-ghoṣheṇa sarve lokāḥ samākulāḥ | babhūvur avasāḥ Pārtha viśheduḥ cha surāsuraḥ | āpaś chukshubhire chaiva chakampe cha vasundharā | vyadravan giriryaś chāpi dyauḥ paphāla cha sarvaśaḥ | andhena tamasā lokāḥ prāvṛitāḥ na chakāśire | prajāśhṭā jyo-tishhām bhāś cha saha sūryeṇa Bhārata | bhṛīśam bhītāś tataḥ sāntiṁ chakruḥ svastyayanāni cha | 'rīshayaḥ sarva-bhūtānām ātmanaś cha hitaishhīṇāḥ | tataḥ so 'bhyadravad devān Rudro raudra-parākramaḥ | Bhagasya nayano kruddhaḥ prahareṇa vyāsātayat | Pushāṇaṁ chābhi-dudrāva pādēna cha rushānvitāḥ | puroḡāśam bhakshayato dāśanāmīś cha vyaśātayat | tataḥ prajāemur devāś te vepamānāś tu S'ankaram | punaś cha sandadhe Rudro dīptaṁ sunīśitaṁ saram | Rudrasya vikramaṁ drishhṭvā bhītāḥ devāḥ saharshibhiḥ | tataḥ prasādayāmasuḥ sarve te vibudhottamāḥ | jepuś cha śatarudriyaṁ devāḥ kṛitvā 'njaliṁ tadā | samatayamānaś tridāśaiḥ prasāda Maheśvaraḥ | Rudrasya bhāḡaṁ yajno cha viśishhṭaṁ te tv akalpayan | bhayēna tridāśāḥ rājan śaraṇaṁ cha pre-*

pedire | tena chaiva hi duṣṭeṇa (tushṭeṇa ?) sa yajno sandhito 'bhavat | yad
 yach chūpahṛitaṁ tatra tat tathaiva sa jīvayat | *Asurāṇāṁ purāṇy āsāṁ*
triṇi vīryavatāṁ divi | āyasaṁ rājataṁ chaiva sauvarṇam api chūparam |
nāsakat tāni Maghavā ḥṣettuṁ sarvāyudhair api | atha sarve Mahārudraṁ
jagmuḥ śaraṇam arditāḥ | tataḥ āchur mahātmāno devāḥ sarve samāgatāḥ |
Rudra raudrāḥ bhaviṣhyanti paśanaḥ sarva-karmaṣu | jahi daityān saha
purair lokāṁse trāyasva mānada | sa tathoktas tathety uktvā kṛtvā Viś-
ṇuṁ śarottamam | śalyam Agniṁ tathā kṛtvā punkhaṁ Vaiśavataṁ
Yamam | vedān kṛtvā dhanuḥ sarvān jyāṁ cha sāvitṛm uttamām | Brah-
māṇaṁ sārathiṁ kṛtvā viniyujya cha sarvaśaḥ | triparvaṇā trisālyeṇa
kāle tāni bibheda saḥ | śaraṇāditya-varṇeṇa kālāgni-sama-tejasā | te 'surāḥ
sa-purāḥ tatra dagdhāḥ Rudreṇa Bhārata | taṁ chaivāṅka-gūtaṁ dṛiṣṭvā
bālam pañchasikhaṁ punaḥ | Umā jijnāsamānā vai "ko 'yam" ity abravīt
tadā | asūyataḥ cha Śakraṣya vajreṇa prahariṣyataḥ | sa vajraṁ stambha-
yūmāsa tam bāhum pariḥopamam | na sambubudhīre chaiva devāḥ tam
bhuvaneśvaram | sa-prajāpatayaḥ sarve tasmin sumahatiśvare | tato dhyā-
tvā tu bhagavān Brahmā tam amitayjasam | ayaṁ śreṣṭhaḥ iti jñātvā
vavande tam Umā-patim | tataḥ prasādayāmāsur Umāṁ Rudraṁ cha te
surāḥ | bābhūva sa tadā bāhur balahantur yathā purā | sa chāpi brāh-
maṇo bhūtvā Durrāsūḥ nāma vīryavān | Dvāravatyām mama puro chiraṁ
kālam upāvasat | viprakārān prayunkte sma subahūn mama veśmani |
tān udāratayā chāhaṁ chakṣhame chūti-duḥśahān | sa vai Rudraḥ sa cha
Śivaḥ so 'gniḥ Śarvaḥ sa sarva-jit | sa vai chendras cha Vāyuḥ cha so
'śvinau sa cha Vidyutah | sa chandramāḥ sa cheśānaḥ sa Sūryo Varuṇaḥ
cha saḥ | sa kālaḥ so 'ntako mṛityuḥ sa tamo rūtry ahāni cha | māśār-
dha-māsūḥ ṛitavaḥ sandhye saṁvatsaraś cha saḥ | sa dhāta sa vidhātā
cha viśvakarmā sa sarva-vit | nakehatrāṇi grahāś chaiva diśo 'tha vidīśāś
tathā | viśva-mūrtir ameyātmā bhagavān amara-dyutiḥ | ekaḍhā cha
dviḍhā chaiva bahudhā cha sa eva hi | tathā sahasradhā chaiva tathā
śata-sahasraśaḥ | idṛiśaḥ sa Mahādevo bhūmaḥ¹⁹² sa bhagavān ajaḥ | na
hi śakyāḥ guṇāḥ vaktum api varsha-satair api | Yudhiṣṭhira mahābāho
mahābhāgyam mahātmanaḥ | Rudrāya (?) bahurūpāya bahu-nāmn-
nibodha me | Vadanty Agniṁ Mahādevaṁ tathā Sthāṇum Mahēsvaram |
ekākṣham tryambakaṁ chaiva viśva-rūpaṁ Śivaṁ tathā | doḥ taṇū tasya

¹⁹² See Böttlingk and Roth, s. v. *bhūman*, vol. v., p. 1660, where several passages of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa are referred to in which a kindred word, *bhūman*, is applied as an epithet to Krishna. See also page 347 of the same vol.

*devasya brāhmaṇāḥ vedajñāḥ viduḥ | ghorāṁ anyāṁ śivāṁ anyāṁ to
tanū bahudhā punaḥ | ugrā ghorā tanūr yā sā so 'gnir vidyut sa bhā-
skarāḥ | śivā saumyā cha yā tv asya dharmas tv āpo 'tha chandramāḥ |
ātmano 'rdhāṁ tu tasyāgniḥ somo 'rdham punar uchyate | brahma-
charyāṁ charaty ekā śivā yā 'sya tanus tathā | yā 'sya ghoratāmā
mūrtir jagat saṁharate tadā¹⁹² | īśvaratvād mahatvāch cha Mahādevaḥ
iti smṛitaḥ | yad nirdahati yat tikṣṇo yad ugro yat pratāpavān |
māṁsaśonita-majjādo yat tato Rudraḥ uchyate | devānāṁ sumahān yach
cha yach chāsya viśayo mahān | yach cha viśvam mahat pāti Mahādevas
tataḥ smṛitaḥ | dhūmra-rūpaṁ cha yat tasya dhūrjatiḥ ata uchyate |
samedhayati yad nityaṁ sarvān vai sarva-karmabhiḥ | manushyān śivam
anvichhaṁs tasmād eva Śivaḥ smṛitaḥ | ityādi*

Anuśāsana-parvan, v. 7458 ff.—Yudhishtīra says to Kṛishṇa: “Thou oughtest, Madhusūdāna, to expound to me that knowledge which thou then obtainedst by the favour of Durvāsas. I wish, most eminent of the wise, to know exactly all the grandeur of that great Being, and his names. Vāsudeva replies: Yes, I shall declare to thee, after bowing down before the god with the spirally-braided hair (Mahādeva), the happiness which was obtained by me, and the glory which was acquired. Hear from me, O king, the Satarudrīya, which, when risen in the morning, I intently repeat with joined hands. The great devotee, Prajāpati, created that [prayer¹⁹³] at the end of his austerity. Sankara has created [all] beings, stationary and moving. There is nothing, O king, which exists superior to Mahādeva; for he is the most excellent of beings in all these three worlds. And nothing can stand before this great deity: for there is no being like him in the three worlds. In battle, when he is even in the slightest degree (*lit.* ‘even by a scent’) incensed, his enemies tremble and fall senseless, and mostly slain. And the heart even of the gods would be withered in battle, on hearing his dreadful voice, resembling the sound of Parjanya (i.e. of the thunder clouds). And neither gods, nor Asuras, nor Gandharvas, nor Pannagas, nor any one whom the Holder of the bow (Mahādeva), incensed, looks upon with his direful aspect, can enjoy tranquillity when

¹⁹² With this and the preceding lines compare Drops., 9632 ff.

¹⁹³ It is part of the White Yajur Veda (Vājasaneyi Sanhita). See further on, chapter iii., section second. It is not reproduced in the passage before us. Compare vol. iii. of this work, on the mode in which the Veda is conceived to have been produced.

he is angry, even though they hide themselves. When the Prajāpati Daksha was sacrificing, and his ceremonial was arranged, Mahādeva in his wrath pierced the sacrifice, and was then devoid of fear, and discharging an arrow with his bow, he uttered a loud shout. The gods received from this no pleasure or tranquillity, but rather dejection. And forthwith, the sacrifice being pierced, and Mahesvara being incensed, all the worlds were disturbed at the sound of his bowstring; both gods and Asuras became helpless and cast down; the waters were troubled, and the earth shook; the mountains were dissolved; the sky was rent in all directions; enveloped in thick darkness, the worlds did not shine, and the light of the luminaries and of the sun was quenched. Being greatly alarmed, the rishis then sought to appease Mahādeva, and recited texts to avert his anger, seeking their own welfare, and that of all creatures. Rudra of dreadful power then ran up to the gods, and, in his rage, knocked out the eyes of Bhaga with a blow, and, incensed, assaulted Pūshan with his foot, and knocked out his teeth, as he was eating the puroḍāśa offering.¹⁹⁴ The gods

¹⁹⁴ For the older story about Bhaga and Pūshan, see Indische Studien, ii. 306 f.; and Taittiriya Sanhitā, ii. 6, 8, 3 f., partially quoted in the fifth vol. of this work, p. 476, note on p. 178, line 6. The entire passage is as follows: *Devāḥ vai yajñād Rudram antar āyan | sa yajnam avidhyat | taṁ devāḥ abhisamagachchanta "kalpatām naḥ idam" iti | te 'bruvan "vishṭam vai naḥ idam bhaviṣhyati yad imaṁ rūdhayish-yāmaḥ" iti | tat vishṭakṛitāḥ vishṭakṛittvam | tasya āiddhaṁ nirakṛintaṁ (4) yavena sammitam | tasmād yava-mātram avadyet | yaj jyāyo 'vadyed ropayet tad yajnasya | yad upa cha strīṇyūd abhi cha ghārayed ubhayataḥ saṁivāyi kuryāt | avadāya abhigharayati | dvīḥ sampadyate | deipād yajamānaḥ | pratishṭhityai | yat tīraschīnam alihared anabhividdhaṁ yajnasya abhividhyet | agreṇa pariharati tīrthena eva pariharati | tat Pūshne paryaharan tat (5) Pūshā prāḍya dato 'runat | tasmāt Pūshā prapishṭa-bhāgaḥ | adantako hi | taṁ devāḥ abruvan "ei vai ayam ārdhi | aprāḍītriyo vai ayam abhūd" iti | tad Brihaspataye paryaharan | so 'bīheda Brihaspatir "itthaṁ vāya sya ūrtim āriṣhyati" iti | sa etam mantram apaśyat | "The gods excluded Rudra" [in the form of Vṣiṣṭakṛit Agni, Comm.] "from the sacrifice. He pierced the sacrifice [with an arrow]. The gods came together to him, [and said,] 'Let this [rite] of ours be [again] rectified.' They [i.e. certain wise gods, according to the Commentator] said, 'If we propitiate him, this [rite] of ours will be well sacrificed (vishṭa).' It is from this that the Vṣiṣṭakṛit insures the due performance of the rite." [According to Professor Weber, Ind. Stud., ix. 217, the vṣiṣṭakṛit is the portion of the sacrifice destined for Agni Vṣiṣṭakṛit.] "They cut off the part which had been pierced to the extent of a barleycorn. 4. Wherefore let the adhvaryu priest cut off [the prāḍītra portion] only to the extent of a barleycorn. If he cut off more than this, he will break that off from the sacrifice. If he should both spread [ghee] underneath and sprinkle [ghee] above, he would cause the oblation to become swollen on both sides. He is therefore, after cutting off [the prāḍītra], only to*

trembling then made obeisance to Śankara, and he again fitted on the string the glittering, well-whetted arrow. Beholding the prowess of Rudra, the gods, with the rishis, terrified, propitiated him, and with

sprinkle [ghee] above it. To do this twice is proper [for the sacrificer has two feet], in order that it may succeed. If he hands [the brāhman's share] to him across [the altar], he will pierce that part of the sacrifice which is uninjured; whereas if he reaches it to him in front, he does so in the proper direction. They handed that [portion] to Pūshan. Eating it, he broke his teeth. Wherefore Pūshan has a portion of ground meal offered to him; for he is toothless. The gods said of him, 'he has come to grief; he has become unfit for the prāsitra.' They handed it to Brihaspati. He was afraid, saying, 'In this way shall one incur misfortune.' He saw this text," etc.

I am indebted to Professor Weber for a German translation of this passage, which has enabled me to correct and improve my own. He remarks that the reason why the prāsitra broke Pūshan's teeth was, that it was 'Rudriya' (see the passage from the Śatap. Br., i. 7, 4, 15 f., adduced at the end of a following quotation), i.e. the portion of the oblation struck by Rudra's shot. This effect of it must be obviated by the use of a text. Professor Weber thinks that *arunak* (followed by *tasmāt*), in the above passage, must stand for *arunak* (though the root *ruj* is nowhere else conjugated in the seventh conjugation), and compares Taitt. S., vii. 4, 9, 1, *asṛid dvābhyām* for *asṛig* (see Ind. Stud., viii. 54, note); Kauś. 39, *nyat* for *nyak*; *sammad-ayā* for *samyag-ājñā*, Dhammap. verse 57; *saṃsṛiddhiḥ* from *saṃsṛip*, Taitt. Br., i. 8, 1, 1; *nadbhyaḥ* from *nay*, R. V., x. 60, 6; *adbhiḥ*, *adbhyaḥ* from *ap*; *samyat te*, Taitt. S., i. 2, 7, 1 (compare Weber's Indische Streifen, i. 127, note 5).

The Ś'atap. Br. i. 7, 4, 5, refers to the same story in the sequel of a passage which has already been given above, p. 45. The continuation is as follows: 5 | *Te ha ūchur* "upajānīta yathā idam na amuyā asat kanyo ha ūchur yathā idam ayād" iti | 6 | *te ha ūchur* "Bhagāya enad dakṣhiṇataḥ āsīnāya pariharata | tad Bhagaḥ prāsishyati tad yathā āhutam eva bhaviṣhyati" iti | tad Bhagāya dakṣhiṇataḥ āsīnāya paryājahruḥ | tad Bhago 'veśhāṇohakre | tasya akṣhiṇī nīradādāha | tathā in nūnam tad āsa | tasmād āhur "andho Bhagaḥ" iti | 7 | *te ha ūchur* "no no atra āsamat | Pūshne mat pariharata" iti | tat Pūshne paryājahruḥ | tat Pūshā prāsa | tasya dato nīrajaghāna | tathā in nūnam tad āsa | tasmād āhur "adantakuḥ Pūshā" iti | tasmād yam Pūshne charuṁ kurvanti prāpishṣūnām eva kurovanti yathā adantakuḥ evam | 5 "They said, 'Take care that this may not be lost; but that it may be less than the oblation.' 6. They said, 'Present it to Bhaga, sitting on the right side; he will eat it; that shall be as if it were offered.' They presented it to Bhaga sitting on the right side; he looked at it; it burned his eyes. That truly happened so. Therefore they say, 'Bhaga is blind.' 7. They said, 'Let it not be so tranquilized. Present it to Pūshan.' Pūshan ate it; it knocked out his teeth. That verily so happened. Wherefore they say, 'Pūshan is toothless.' Hence the cooked oblation they present to Pūshan is of ground materials."

In the sequel of this passage it is said, i. 7, 4, 9: *Sa yat prāsītram avadyati yad eva atra āviddhaṁ yajnasya yad Rudriyaṁ tad eva etad nirmimite* (bahiḥ karoti nish-karakati, Comm.) | "The prāsitra which he cuts off, the part of the sacrifice which was pierced, which is connected with Rudra,—that he separates." And further on, i. 7, 4, 15: *Sat prāsīmati* | "Agniḥ teḍā āyena prāsīnūmi" iti | *na vai Agnūḥ kinchama pīnati* | *tathā u ha enam etad na kinati* | 16 | *tad na dadbhīḥ khādet* | "na id me idam Rudriyaṁ dato hinasaḥ" iti | *tasmād na dadbhīḥ khādet* | 15. "He eats that,

joined hands, muttered the Satarudriya. Being thus lauded by the gods, Mahēśvara became pleased; and they apportioned to him a distinguished share in the sacrifice, and, through fear, resorted to him as

[saying], 'I eat thee with Agni's mouth.' Nothing destroys Agni. So this does not destroy him. 16. Let no one eat it with his teeth, [thinking], 'Lest this, which is connected with Rudra, destroy my teeth.' Wherefore let no one eat it with his teeth."

The following is a passage from the preceding section of the same Brāhmaṇa; i. 7, 3, 1: *Yajñena vai devāḥ divam upodakrūman | atha yo 'yañ devaḥ paśūnām tēkṣe sa iha ahīyata | tasmād vāstavyaḥ ity āhuḥ | vāstau hi tad ahīyata 2 | sa yena eva devāḥ divam upodakrūman tena u eva archantaḥ śrūmyantāś cheruḥ | atha yo 'yañ devaḥ paśūnām tēkṣe yaḥ iha ahīyata (3) sa aikṣhata "aha asya ha antaryanty u mā yajñād" iti | so 'nūchchakrūma | sa āyatayā uttarataḥ upotpede | sa eṣha vishṭakṛiṭaḥ kūlaḥ | 4 | te devāḥ abruvan "mā visrakṣhīr" iti | "te vai mā yajñād mā 'ntargata āhutiṃ me kalpayata" iti | "tathā" iti | sa samabṛihat sa na āsyat sa na kanchana ghīnat | 5 | te devāḥ abruvan "yāvanti no havīmāhi grīhītāny abhūvan sarviśhām tēshām hutam upajānīta yathā 'smāi āhutiṃ kalpayāma" iti | 6 | te 'dhvaryum abruvan "yathāpūrvam havīmāsy adhighūrāya | ekasmai avadūnāya pūnar āpyāyaya | ayitayāmani kuru tataḥ ekaiḥkam avadūnam avadya" iti | 7 | so 'dhvaryur yathāpūrvam havīmāsy abhyaghūrāyad ekasmai avadūnāya pūnar āpyāyayad ayitayāmāny akarat tataḥ ekaiḥkam avadūnam avādyat | 1. "By sacrifice the gods ascended to the sky. Now the god who rules over cattle was excluded here. Hence men call him Vāstavya; for he was excluded [by remaining] on the sacrificial ground (vāstu). 2. The gods went on worshipping and toiling with that whereby they had ascended to the sky. Now the god who rules over cattle, and was here excluded, (3) perceived that the other gods were excluding him from the sacrifice. He followed them, and rose up on the north with . . . This is the time of the Svishṭakṛit. 4. The gods said to him, 'Do not disturb (the sacrifice).' [He rejoined,] 'Do not exclude me from the sacrifice; give me an oblation.' They agreed. He kept together, and did not scatter, the materials of the sacrifice, or injure anything. 5. The gods said, 'Take notice of all the offerings which have been presented, that we may form an oblation for him.' 6. They said to the Adhvaryu, 'Sprinkle the oblations in order with butter; and again replenish each fragment. Make them fresh; then cut off each part.' 7. The Adhvaryu accordingly sprinkled the oblations in order with butter, replenished each fragment, made them fresh, and divided all the parts from each other."*

The Bhāgavata Purāṇa, referred to by Böhlingk and Roth, s. v. Bhaga and Pūshan, has the following verses on these gods: iv. 5, 20 | *Bhagasya netre bhagavān pātītasya rūshā bhuvī | ūjjahāra sadassīho 'kṣhṇā yaḥ śapantam asūruchat | 21 | Pūshnāś chāpūtayad dantūn Kālingasya yathā Balaḥ | S'āpyamāne garināni yo 'hasād darīṣayan dataḥ |* "The god (Mahādeva) in the assembly plucked out the eyes of Bhaga, whom in his rage he had felled to the ground, because with his eye he had made a sign to [Dakṣa] who was cursing [Mahādeva]. 21. And he knocked out the teeth of Pūshan (as Bala had done to the king of Kalinga), because, when the great god was being cursed, he had laughed, showing his teeth." vi. 8, 41 | *Pūshā 'napatyāḥ piśhādō bhagna-danto 'bhavat purā | yo 'sau Dakṣhāya kupitām jahāsa vīṛita-dvijāḥ |* "Pūshan formerly became childless, an eater of ground food, toothless, because he had laughed with his teeth disclosed at [Mahādeva], who was incensed against Dakṣa."

their refuge. He then became pleased and rectified the sacrifice, and whatever was removed he restored to life as it had been before.

"There were in the sky three cities of the valourous Asuras, one of iron, another of silver, and a third of gold,¹⁹⁵ which Maghavan (Indra) could not demolish, with all his weapons. Then all the great gods, distressed, went to the great Rudra as their refuge, and said to him, after they were assembled: 'Rudra, there shall be victims devoted to thee in all the sacrifices. Bestower of honour, destroy the Daityas with their cities, and deliver the worlds.' He, being thus addressed, said, 'So be it;' and making Vishnu his arrow, Agni its barb, Yama, the son of Vivasvat, its feather, all the Vedas his bow, and the excellent Sāvitrī (the Gāyatrī) his bowstring, and having appointed Brahmā his charioteer,¹⁹⁶ he in due time pierced through these cities with a three-jointed three-barbed arrow, of the colour of the sun, and in fierceness like the fire which burns up the world. These Asuras with their cities were there burnt up by Rudra.¹⁹⁷ Again, beholding him a child in the lap, with five locks,¹⁹⁸ Umā, desiring to know,¹⁹⁹ said, 'Who is

¹⁹⁵ See the second vol. of this work, pp. 378 ff., and the *Karna-parvan* of the *M.Bh.* vv. 1402 ff. below.

¹⁹⁶ See the story from the *Karna-parvan*, cited below, vv. 1515 ff.

¹⁹⁷ For the older forms of this story, see the second vol. of this work, pp. 380-384.

¹⁹⁸ Like an ascetic, according to Böhtlingk and Roth, *s. v. panchasikha*.

¹⁹⁹ Or, is the proper reading *jñāsamānān*, and the sense this: "Umā said to [the gods] who were inquiring, 'Who is this?'" There is a parallel passage in the *Drona-parvan*, v. 9575, which throws some light on the one before us: *Purūṣi dagdhavantaṁ taṁ devī yātā pravikṣitum | bālam ankagatāṁ kṛitvā svayam panchasikham punaḥ | Umā jñāsamānā vai "ko' yam" ity abravīt surān | asūyatas' cha S'akraśya vajreṇa prahariṣyataḥ | bāhuṁ savajraṁ tān tasya kruddhasyāstambhayat prabhuḥ | prahasya bhagavavāṁse tūrṇam sarva-lokeśvaro vibhuḥ | tataḥ saṁstambhita-bhujāḥ N'akro deva-ganair vṛitāḥ | jagāma sa-suras tūrṇam Brahmāṇam prabhuṁ avyayaṁ | te tam prajāmya śirasā prochuḥ prāṇjalayas tadā | kimapy ankagatam Brahman Pārvatīyāḥ bhūtam adbhutam | bāla-rūpa-dharaṇi dṛiṣṭvā nāsmābhīr abhivādītaḥ | taṁnāt tvāṁ praśṅtum icchāmo nirjitāḥ yena vai vayaṁ | ayudhyatāḥ hi bālena līlayā sa-purandaraḥ |* "The goddess (Umā) went to see him when he had burnt the cities, having again placed the child with five locks in her lap. She told the gods, who inquired [should we read, *jñāsamānān*? though none of the printed copies read so] 'Who is this?' And the divine lord, master of all the worlds, all-pervading, with a smile, instantly paralyzed the arm and thunderbolt of Indra, who showed ill-will, and in his anger was about to smite with the thunderbolt. Indra, his arm having been paralyzed, immediately went with the gods to Brahmā, the imperishable lord; and bowing with their heads, with joined hands, they said: 'O Brahmā, we have seen in the lap of Pārvatī, a wonderful being bearing the form of a child; and we have not saluted him. Wherefore we desire to ask thee who is the child by whom we, including Indra, have been conquered, as if in play, and without any fight.'"

this?' And when Indra, envious, was about to smite him (the child) with the thunderbolt, he stayed the thunderbolt, and paralyzed that arm resembling a club. None of the gods, including Prajāpati, understood the lord of the worlds, [existing] in that most mighty deity [in the form of an infant]. 'Then the divine Brahmā, meditating on that being of boundless glory, and knowing that he was supreme, adored the lord of Umā. Then these gods propitiated Umā and Rudra; and the arm of the slayer of hosts became as before. And again, Mahādeva, becoming a powerful Brahman, by name Durvāsa, dwelt a long time in my city Dvāravatī. He practised very many perversities in my house, which, though difficult to support, I, through generosity, endured. He is Rudra, he is Siva, he is Agni, he is Sarva, the all-conquering; he is Indra, he is Vāyu, he is the Āsṛins, he is the lightning, he is the moon, he is Īśāna, he is Sūrya, he is Varuṇa, he is time, he is Death the ender, he is darkness, and night, and the days, he is the months, and the half months, and the seasons, the morning and evening twilight, and the year. He is Dhātṛi, and Vidhātṛi, Viśvakarman, the all-knowing, the constellations, the planets, the regions [or quarters], and intermediate regions or [points of the compass]; universal-formed, immeasurable in essence, divine, of undecaying splendour. He is simple, twofold, manifold, a thousand-fold, and a hundred-thousand-fold. Such is Mahādeva, the vast, the divine unborn being; his qualities cannot be declared in a hundred years." Kṛishṇa proceeds uninterruptedly at the beginning of a new section: "Large-armed Yudhishtira, understand from me the greatness of the glorious, multiform, many-named Rudra. They call Mahādeva Agni, Sthānu, Mahēśvara, One-eyed, Tryambaka, the universal-formed, and Siva. Brahmans versed in the Veda know two bodies of this god, one awful, one auspicious;²⁰⁰ and these two bodies again have many forms. The dire and awful body is fire, lightning, the sun. The auspicious and beautiful body is virtue, water, and the moon. The half of his essence is fire, and the moon is called the [other] half. The one, which is his auspicious body, practises chastity: while the other, which is his most dreadful body, destroys the world. From his being lord (īśvara) and great (mahat), he is called Mahēśvara. Since he consumes, since

²⁰⁰ In Vaj. S., v. 8, Agni is said to have three bodies. See the second volume of this work, p. 381, note.

he is fiery, fierce, glorious, an eater of flesh, blood, and marrow,—he is called Rudra. As he is the greatest of the gods, as his domain is wide, and as he preserves the vast universe,—he is called Mahādeva. From his smoky colour, he is called Dhūrjati. Since he constantly prospers all men in all their acts, seeking their welfare (śiva), he is therefore called Śiva,” etc., etc.

In the Bhīṣma-parvan (vv. 793 ff.) Kṛishṇa is introduced as recommending Arjuna to worship the goddess Durgā :

Sanjayaḥ uvācha | Dhārtarāṣṭraṃ balaṃ drishṭvā yuddhāya samupasthitam | Arjunasya hitārthāya Kṛishṇo vacanam abravīt | Śrībhagavān uvācha | Suchir bhūtvā mahābāho saṅgrāmābhīmukhe sthitaḥ | parājayāya kṣatrūnāṃ Durgā-stotram uṭṭraya | Sanjayaḥ uvācha | evam ukto 'rjunah sankhye Vāsudevona dhīmata | 'avatīrya rathāt Pārthaḥ stotram āha kṛitānjaliḥ |

“Beholding the host of Dhṛitarāṣṭra come near to the conflict, Kṛishṇa, in the interest of Arjuna, addressed to him these words: ‘Having purified thyself, O large-armed hero, standing in front of the battle, utter a hymn to Durgā for the overthrow of thine enemies.’ Arjuna, being thus addressed in battle by the wise Vāsudeva, descending from his chariot, uttered a hymn with joined hands.”

III. In the passage which I have quoted above (p. 169, note 167) from Professor Wilson, it is remarked that in some places of the Mahābhārata the divine nature of Kṛishṇa is disputed or denied. An instance of this denial is to be found in the following passage of the Sabhā-parvan, in which Śiśupāla, prince of the Chedis, is introduced as objecting to the divine honours which had been paid to Kṛishṇa, and as ultimately suffering the penalty of his proud and contemptuous impiety at the hands of the incarnate deity.

Yudhishthira having resolved to perform the Rājasūya sacrifice (Sabhā-parvan, v. 1211), is joined by Kṛishṇa, who is designated as Hari, the rishi, the ancient, identified with the Veda, invisible to those who know him, the highest of things moving and stationary, the source and destroyer of all things, the lord of the past, the future, and the present (v. 1213: *Athaivam bruvatām evaṃ teshāṃ abhyāyayau Hariḥ | rishiḥ purāṇo vodātma 'drīṣyaś chaiva vijānatām | jagatas tasthushāṃ śreṣṭhaḥ prabhavaś chāpyayaś (chāpyayaś?) cha ha | bhūta-bhavya-bhavan-nāthaḥ Kośavaḥ keti-sūdanaḥ*). Numerous kings assembled to

witness the celebration (vv. 1260 ff.). On this occasion Bhīṣma proposed that, apart from the customary presents bestowed on all the kings, Kṛishṇa should be singled out as the most eminent of the chiefs to receive gifts indicative of his superiority (vv. 1333 ff.).

Sabhā-parvan, 1333 ff.:—*Esha hy eśāṁ samastānām tejo-bala-parā-kramaiḥ | madhye tapann ivābhāti jyotiṣhām iva bhāskaraḥ | asūryam iva sūryeṇa nirvātaḥ iva vayunā*²⁰¹ | *bhāsitaṁ hlāḍitaṁ chaiva Kṛishṇeṇa sado hi naḥ | tasmai Bhīṣmābhyānujñātaḥ Sahadevaḥ pratāpavān | upajāhre 'tha vidhivā Vārshṇeyāyārghyam uttamam | pratiyagrāha tat Kṛishṇaḥ śāstra-dikṣheṇa karmaṇā | Śiśupālas tu tām pūjāṁ Vāsudeve na chakṣhame* | “For he, by his energy, force and valour, appears shining in the midst of all these princes, like the sun among the luminaries. This assembly of ours is enlightened and gladdened by Kṛishṇa, as a sunless place is by the sun, and a windless spot is by the wind. Commissioned by Bhīṣma, the majestic Sahadeva then presented in due form to Vārshṇeya (Kṛishṇa) a most excellent offering, which the latter received with the act prescribed by the śāstra. But Śiśupāla could not endure that honour shown to Vāsudeva.”

Śiśupāla then proceeds to state at length a variety of objections to what had been done (vv. 1338 ff.). He urges that Kṛishṇa was a “transgressor of the injunctions of law (*smṛiti*), a contemptible and ill-instructed person” (v. 1340: *Ayam cha smṛity-atikrānto hy apageyo 'lpa-darśanaḥ*); that he was not a king, or a person venerable from age, his father Vasudeva being still alive (v. 1343: *Athavā manyase Kṛishṇaṁ sthāviraṁ Kuru-pungava | Vasudeve sthite vṛiddhe katham arhati tat-sutaḥ* |); that in other respects he was inferior to other chiefs present, and that he had unjustly killed Jarāsandha (v. 1360, compare verses 1174 ff.); and taunts him with being greatly elated with the undeserved honour that had been paid him, like a dog devouring in a secret place the leavings of an oblation which he has discovered (v. 1364: *Ayuktām ātmanaḥ pūjāṁ tvam punar bahu manyase | haviṣaḥ prūpya nisyandam prāṣitā śveṇa nirjane* |).²⁰² Having

²⁰¹ This line had previously occurred as part of verse 1218 of the same Parvan.

²⁰² Similarly we read in Śiśupāla's speech on the same occasion as given in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, x. 74, 34 *Gopālaḥ kula-paṁsanah | yathā kākāḥ puroḍāśam aparyāṁ katham arhati* | “How does this cowherd, the vilest of his race, deserve homage, any more than a crow deserves to eat an oblation?” The commentator thus gives what he calls the “real sense” of these words: “*Gopālaḥ*”

thus vented his indignation, Śiśupāla leaves the assembly, followed by Yudhishṭhira, who endeavours to soothe him. Bhīshma then defends Krishṇa's claims to the honour which he had received (vv. 1377 ff.):

Na hi kevalam asmākam ayam archyatamo 'chyutaḥ | trayāṇām api lokānām archanīyo mahābhujah | Krishṇena hi jitāḥ yuddhe bahavaḥ kshatriyarshabhāḥ | jagat sarvaṁ cha Vārshṇeya nikhilena pratisthāitam | tasmāt satsv api vṛiddheshu Krishṇam archāmi notarūn | . . . 1382. Nū kevalaṁ vayaṁ kāmūch Chedi-rāja Janārdanam | na sambandham puraskṛitya kritārthaṁ vā kathanchana | archāmahe 'rchitaṁ sabbhir bhuvi bhūta-sukhāvaham | Yaśaḥ śauryaṁ jayaṁ chāsya vijnāyārcham prayujmahe | na cha kaśchid ikṣmābhīḥ subālo 'py aparikṣitaḥ | gunair vṛiddhān atikramya Hariḥ archyatamo mataḥ | jñāna-vṛiddho devjātinaṁ kshatriyūṇām balādhikaḥ | "1377: This unfalling being (Achyuta) is not only deserving of the utmost worship from us, but, large of arm, he is also to be worshipped by the three worlds. For many eminent Kshatriyas have been conquered by Krishṇa: and the whole world rests upon Vārshṇeya. Wherefore, even though there be aged men [present], I worship Krishṇa, and not the others. . . . 1382: It is not therefore from interested motives, king of the Chedis, nor in consequence of our connexion, nor for the sake of anything he has done for us, that we worship Janārdana, who is worshipped by the good on earth, and who promotes the happiness of creatures. But knowing his renown, heroism, and victories, we offer him our worship. Nor is there here any mere youth whom we have never tried. Hari, surpassing the aged in his virtues, is regarded by us as most worthy

iti veda-prithivy-ādi-pūlkaḥ ity arthaḥ | kutsilāṁ veda-viparītāṁ lapanti iti kulapāḥ pākhaṇḍāḥ | tān aṁśate samāghātayati itṛ tathā saḥ | "akākaḥ" kaṁ cha akāṁ cha kūke (=ka+āke) sukha-dukṣhe te na vidyeto yasya saḥ | "akākaḥ" āptakūmaḥ ity arthaḥ | sa yathā āptakūmo deva-yogyam puroḍāsa-mūtraṁ na arhati api tu sarvasvam api tathā 'yaṁ iri-krishṇo brahmarshi-yogyam samarpana-mūtraṁ katham arhati | kintu ātma-samarpanam apy arhati ity arthaḥ | "Gopāla" means the protector of the Veda, the earth, etc. 'Kulapāḥ' are those who speak what is evil, contrary to the Veda, heretics. 'Kulapāṁsana' (Ku+lapa+āṁsana) is thus one who destroys (aṁśate) such persons. 'Akākaḥ' (the commentator chooses here to suppose that there is an elided a between yathā and kūkaḥ) is one to whom ('kūke') pleasure and pain (ka+a+ka) do not attach; one who has gained all he desires. Just as such an one merits not merely an oblation suitable for a deity, but all wealth also, so Krishṇa does not deserve merely the offering suitable for a Brāhman-rishi, but also the offering up of one's self."

of worship. In knowledge he excels Brahmans, and in force Kshatriyas." . . .

1386: *Pūjyatāyāncha Govinde hetū dvāv api saṁsthītau | veda-vedānga-
vijñānam balaṁ chāpy adhikaṁ tathā | nṛṇāṁ lokaḥ hi ko 'nyo 'sti viśiṣh-
ṭaḥ Keśavād ṛite | dānāṁ dāksyaṁ śrutaṁ śauryaṁ hrīḥ kīrtir buddhir
uttamā | sannatīḥ śrīr dhṛitis tushṭiḥ puṣhṭiścha niyatā 'chryute | tam
imaṁ loka-saṁpannam ūchāryam pīlaraṁ gurum | arghyam architam
archārhaṁ sarve saṁkshantum arhatḥ | ṛitvīg gurur vivāhyaś cha snātako
nṛpatīḥ priyaḥ | sarvaṁ etad Hṛishīkeśas tasmād abhyarchito 'chyutaḥ |
Kṛishṇaḥ eva hi lokānām utpattir api chāpyayaḥ | Kṛishṇasya hi kṛite
viśvam idam bhūtaṁ charācharam | osha prakṛitir avyaktā kartā chaiva
sanātanaḥ | paraś cha sarva-bhūtebhyaś tasmād pūjyatamo 'chyutaḥ |
Buddhir mano mahad vāyus tejo 'mbhaḥ kham mahi cha yā | chatur-
vidhaṁ cha yad bhūtam sarvaṁ Kṛishṇe pratishṭhitam |*

1396: *Sa-derakenhu lokeshu bhagavān Keśavo mukham | ayaṁ tu
purusho bālaḥ S'isupālo na budhyate | sarvatra sarvadā Kṛishṇaṁ
tasmād evam prabhūshato | yo hi dharmāṁ vichinuyād utkṛishṭam
matimān naraḥ | so vai paśyed yāthā dharmāṁ na tathā Chedi-rūd ayaṁ |
sa-riddha-bāleshv athavā pāṛthiveshu mahātmasu | ko nārhaṁ manyate
Kṛishṇaṁ ko vā py enaṁ na pūjayet | alhainām dushkṛitām pūjām S'isū-
pālo vyatasyati | dushkṛitāyām yathānyāyām tathā 'yaṁ kartum arhati |*

"There are two reasons why Govinda is worthy of honour: his knowledge of the Vedas and Vedāngas, and his superior strength. For who in the world of men is distinguished except Keśava? Generosity, ability, sacred learning, heroism, modesty, eminent renown, intelligence, humility, splendour, endurance, cheerfulness and joyousness, exist continually in Achyuta. You ought all to tolerate this teacher arisen in the world (or successful in the world), this father, preceptor, venerable, honoured, deserving of honour. Priest, preceptor, marriageable man, householder, king, beloved,—Hṛishīkesa is all this, and therefore he has been honoured. It is Kṛishṇa who is the origin and the destruction of the worlds: all this universe, movable and immovable, has come into being through (or for the sake of) Kṛishṇa.²⁰³ He is un-

²⁰³ The grounds urged for honouring Kṛishṇa in this and the following verses are of a different character from those in the preceding lines, which do not ascribe to him any qualities of a superhuman character; whilst the succeeding ones do. It is quite possible that the whole of this description of his qualities may not be of one age, but may contain interpolations subsequently introduced.

distinguishable matter (prakṛiti), and he is the eternal maker, transcending all beings: hence Achyuta is most worthy of honour. Intellect, mind, the great one (mahat), air, fire, water, sky, and earth—whatever fourfold being exists—all depends upon Krishna. . . . 1396. The divine Kṛṣṇa is chief among the worlds including the gods. But this foolish man, Sīsupāla, does not know that Krishna [is] everywhere and always—and hence he speaks thus. For this king of the Chedis does not regard righteousness in the same way as an intelligent man who can distinguish eminent righteousness. Who is there, whether among old or young, or among mighty kings, who will not regard Krishna as honourable, or who will not reverence him? Sīsupāla treats this honour as unduly paid. But it having been unduly paid, he should act as is befitting."

Sīsupāla afterwards renews his vilifications of Krishna, in a long harangue, of which the following is a specimen (vv. 1433 ff.):

1433. *Sīsupālaḥ uvācha | vibhishikābhīr bahvibhir bhīshayan sarva-*
pārthivān | na vyapatrapase kasmād vṛiddhaḥ san kula-pūṃsanaḥ | yuk-
taṁ etat tṛitīyāyāṁ prakṛitau vartatā tvayā | vaktuṁ dharmād apētūr-
thaṁ tvaṁ hi sarva-kurāṭtama[ḥ] | nāvi naur iva sambaddhā yathā 'ndho
vā 'ndham anvīyāt | tathā bhūtāḥ hi Kauravyāḥ yeshām Bhīshma tvam
agranīḥ | Putanā-ghāta-pūrvāni karmāṇy asya viśeshataḥ | tvayā kīrta-
yatā 'smākam bhūyaḥ pravayathitam manaḥ | avaliptasya mūrkhasya Kṛṣṇa-
vaṁ stotum icchataḥ | katham Bhīshma na te jīhvā śatadheyaṁ vidīry-
yate | yatra kutsā prayoktavyā Bhīshma bālatarair naraiḥ | tam imāṁ
jñāna-vṛiddhaḥ san gopam saṁstotum icchasi | yady anena hatā bālye
śakunīś chitram atra kīm | tau vā 'śva-vṛishabhau Bhīshma yau na
yuddha-vīśāradau | chetanā-rahitaṁ kākṣhaṁ yady anena nipātitaṁ |
pūdena śakaṭam Bhīshma tatra kīm kṛitaṁ adbhutam | valmīka-mātraḥ
saptāhaṁ yady anena dhṛsto 'chalaḥ | tadā Govardhana Bhīshma na tach
chitram matam mama | bhuktam etena bahv annaṁ kṛīdatā naga-mūrdhani |
iti te Bhīshma śṛiṇvānāḥ param viśmayam āgatāḥ | yasya chānena dhar-
ma-jna bhuktam annam bālīyasaḥ | sa chānena hataḥ Kāṁsaḥ ity etan na
mahādbhutam | na te śrutam idam Bhīshma nūnaṁ kathayatāṁ satām |
yad vakshye tvām adharmajnaṁ vākyaṁ Kuru-kulādharma | strīshu goshu
na śastrāṇi pātayed brāhmaṇeṣhu cha | yasya chānnāni bhunjīta yasya
cha syāt pratīśrayaḥ | iti santo 'nuśāṁsanti sajjanaṁ dharmīṇaḥ sadā |
Bhīshma lokaḥ hi tat sarvaṁ vitathaṁ tvayi dṛśyate | jñāna-vṛiddhaṁ cha

*vriddhañ cha bhāyāñśaṁ Keśavam mama | ajānataḥ ivākhyaiḥ sañśetuvan
Kauravādhamā | go-ghnaḥ stri-ghnaḥ cha saṁ Bhīṣhma tvad-vākyād yadi
pūjyate | evam-bhūtaś cha yo Bhīṣhma kathaṁ sañśetavam arhati | . . .
1451. Nūnam prakṛitir eṣā te jaghanyā nātra sañśayaḥ | atāḥ pūpiyati
chaishām Pāṇḍavānāṁ apiśhyate | yeshām archyatamaḥ Kṛiṣṇaś tvaṁ
cha yeshām pradarsakaḥ | dharmavāñśe tvam adharma-jñaḥ satām mārgād
avaplutaḥ | ityādi |*

S'isupāla answers Bhīṣhma: "How is it that thou, disgracing thy race, art not ashamed, old man as thou art, to terrify all the kings with many alarms? It is very fitting [forsooth] that thou who art now existing in the third condition,²⁰⁴ shouldst utter things contrary to righteousness, seeing thou art the most eminent of all the Kurus! For as a boat is tied to a boat, or as one blind man follows another, so is it with the Kurus of whom thou, Bhīṣhma, art the leader. Our minds have frequently been vexed by thee when detailing his (Kṛiṣṇa's) slaughter of Pūtana²⁰⁵ and other feats. How is it, Bhīṣhma, that thy tongue, thou proud fool, is not split into a hundred pieces, when thou seekest to magnify Keśava? Thou who art ripe in knowledge, art eager to eulogize the cowherd who ought to be vilified even by the silliest of men! If in his childhood he slew Sakuni,²⁰⁶ or the horse and bull, who had no skill in fighting, what is the wonder? If a waggon, an inanimate piece of wood, was upset by him with his foot,²⁰⁷ what wonderful thing did he do? If the mountain Govardhana, a mere ant-hill, was held up by him for seven days,²⁰⁸ I do not regard that as anything remarkable. Hearing that when playing on the hill-

²⁰⁴ The commentator explains this phrase as follows: *Dve prakṛitī pariṇāminyaṁ māyā tasyaṁ chit-prativimbas 'cha | tritīyā prakṛitir ity etad-ubhayādhyāsādhiśh-
ṣhānaṁ nirvīḍeṣhaṁ vastu | tatra vartatā vartamānena* etc. "Two conditions are changeable, viz. (1) illusion (*māyā*) and (2) the reflected image of thought (*chit-prativimba*) in it. The third condition is the basis of the erroneous ascription of the other two, substance without distinction," etc. I am indebted to Dr. R. Rost for an important suggestion regarding the combination of two of the words in this sentence. Dr. Rost informs me that in the text one MS. reads *kurūttamaḥ* and another *sarvaṁ kurūttama*.

²⁰⁵ A female demon slain by Kṛiṣṇa.—See Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, p. 506 (vol. iv., p. 276, of Dr. Hall's ed.).

²⁰⁶ See the Udyoga-parvan 4409, where Pūtana and S'akuni (there spelt with a long ī) are mentioned together as having been slain by Kṛiṣṇa in childhood.

²⁰⁷ See Vishṇu Purāṇa, p. 508 (vol. iv., p. 279, of Dr. Hall's ed.).

²⁰⁸ See Vishṇu Purāṇa, p. 526 (vol. iv., p. 315, of Dr. Hall's ed.).

top, he had eaten a great quantity of food, these people were very much astonished. And it is no great miracle, O Bhishma, thou judge of duty, that he slew Kansa, the powerful king whose food he had eaten. Hast thou not heard virtuous men declaring this which I shall tell thee, who art ignorant of duty, Bhishma, thou basest of the tribe of Kurus? 'Let no one smite with his weapons women,²⁰⁰ cattle, or Brahmins, or him whose food he eats, or on whom he is dependent.' Such is the instruction which good and virtuous men always give to a virtuous [pupil]. All this, Bhishma, is seen by all to be falsified in thee. Thou, basest of the Kurus, eulogizing, speakest of Keśava as old in knowledge, and mature, and superior, as if I did not know him. If he, being a slayer of cattle, and of women, is, according to thy word, to be revered,—how, Bhishma, can such a person merit encomium? . . . 1451. Certainly this nature of thine is base, of this there is no doubt; and hence [the nature] of these Pāṇḍavas also is shown to be most wicked,—[these Pāṇḍavas] to whom Kṛishṇa is an object of the highest honour, and of whom thou art the virtuous preceptor,—thou, who art ignorant of duty, and hast gone astray from the path of good men!"

This speech excites the wrath of Bhīmasena (v. 1482), who, however, is restrained by Bhīshma from assaulting Sīsupāla, though the latter is anxious to fight him. Bhīshma then goes on (1494 ff.) to give Bhīmasena an account of Sīsupāla's infancy and early history. He had, it seems, been born with three eyes and four arms; and his parents, alarmed at his portentous appearance, were disposed to cast him out, but were prevented by a voice from the sky, which declared to them that the time fated for his death had not yet arrived. In answer to his mother's inquiry, the voice informed her that her son was doomed to die by the hands of the person who should take him into his lap, and by so doing should occasion his two superfluous arms to drop off, and his third eye to disappear. A part of this prediction was fulfilled when Kṛishṇa came and took him into his lap, and the infant got rid of his superfluous members.²¹⁰ On seeing this, his

²⁰⁰ See above, pp. 152 f.

²¹⁰ On this story of Sīsupāla Lassen remarks (*Indian Antiquities*, i. p. 674 first ed.; p. 822 second ed.): "Sīsupāla in this case represents Ś'iva, and the conflict of the Ś'iva-worship with that of Viṣṇu for he was born with three eyes and four arms, and the legend attributes the falling off of his two superfluous arms and the dis-

mother begged a boon from Kṛishṇa, viz. that he would forgive Sísupāla's offences. Kṛishṇa promises to pardon a hundred. Bhīshma then proceeds (v. 1518 ff.):

*Evaṃ eṣa nṛipaḥ pāpaḥ Sísupālaḥ sumanda-dhīḥ | tvāṃ samāhvayate
vira Govinda-vara-darpiṭaḥ | Naishā Chedi-pater buddhir yaya tvā 'hva-
yate 'chyutam | nūnam eṣa jagad-bhartuḥ Kṛishṇasyaiva viniśchayaḥ |
ko hi mām Bhīmasenādya kṣhitāv arhati pārthivaḥ | kṣheptuṃ kāla-pari-
tātmā yathaiṣa kula-pāṃsanaḥ | eṣa hy aṣya mahābāhus tejo 'ṃśas cha
Harer dhruvam | tam eva punar ādātum icchaty uta tathā vībhukḥ |
yenaisha Kuru-sārdūla sardūlaḥ iva Chedi-rāt | garjaty atīva durbuddhiḥ
sarvān asmān achintayan |*

"Thus this wicked king Sísupāla, slow of understanding, proud of the boon conferred by Govinda, challenges thee, O hero. This does not show wisdom in the lord of the Chedis, that he challenges thee who art Achyuta. For this is the fixed opinion of Kṛishṇa, the sustainer of the world, 'What king on earth, O Bhīmasena, ought to-day to revile me, deprived by destiny of his reason, like this degrader of his race?' For this large-armed (Sísupāla) is certainly [an emanation of] the strength, and a portion, of Hari, which the pervading [deity] wishes to draw back again [into himself]; in consequence of which, O chief of the Kurus, this foolish king of the Chedis growls loudly, like a tiger, disregarding us all."

Sísupāla here breaks in angrily (v. 1524 ff.), and asks why Kṛishṇa should be so praised to the exclusion of all other warlike kings. Bhīshma replies (1551), that he values not a straw all the other chiefs who were present. On hearing this, some of them became greatly incensed; and some cried out that Bhīshma should be killed or burned. Bhīshma replied that they might slay or burn him if they pleased, but that Kṛishṇa, the object of his reverence, would survive, and that

appearance of his frontal eye to the look and embrace of Kṛishṇa. This story is of especial importance for the purpose of determining the periods to which the different parts of the Mahābhārata belong. Kṛishṇa's deification belongs to the period after Buddha. In the attack upon Jarāsandha he is still exhibited principally as a hero, acts upon human motives, and performs actions unworthy of a god: but there are evident beginnings of his deification." The same author adds in a note on the same page (p. 823, second ed.) "Sísupāla is probably an earlier name of S'iva, who is called 'Paśupati,' or lord, protector, of beasts. 'S'isū' denotes the young of men and beasts, and 'pāla' protector. He had a second name 'Sunitha' (Sabhāp. v. 1410), which no doubt was the proper one."

any one who was desirous to incur speedy destruction should challenge him to fight. Śisupāla herupon challenges Kṛishṇa; and the narrative proceeds:

(Verses 1561 ff.): *Tataḥ brūvaiva Bhīshmasya Chedi-rāḍ uru-vikra-
maḥ | yuyutsur Vāsudevena Vāsudevam uvācha ha | āhvaye tvāṁ raṇaṁ
gachha mayā sārḍhaṁ Janārdana | yūvad adya nihanmi tvāṁ sahitaṁ
sarva-Pāṇḍavaḥ | saha tvayā hi me badhyāḥ sarvathā Kṛishṇa Pāṇḍavāḥ |
nripatīn samatikramya yair arājā tvam architāḥ | ye tvāṁ dūsam arājā-
nam bālyād archanti durmatim | anarham arha-vat Kṛishṇa badhyās
te iti me matiḥ | ity uktvā rāja-sārḍūla [s?] tathau garjann amaraṣaṇaḥ |
evam ukte tataḥ Kṛishṇo mṛidu-pūrvam idaṁ vachaḥ | uvācha pāṛthivān
sarvān sa samakshaṁ cha Pāṇḍavān | esha naḥ śatrur atyantam pāṛthivāḥ
Sātvaṭi-sutaḥ | Sātvaṭānāṁ nṛiśaṁsātmā na hito 'napakāriṇām | Prāg-
jyotiṣha-puram yātūn asmān jnātva nṛiśaṁsa-krit | adahad Dvārakām
esha svasṛiyāḥ san narādhipāḥ | kṛīdato Bhoja-rājasya esha Raivatake
giranu | hatvā baddhvā oha tūn sarvān upāyāt eva-puram purū | āśvamedhe
hayam medhyam uterishṭaṁ rakṣibhir vṛitam | pitur me yajna-vighnārtham
aharat pāpa-niṣchayaḥ | Sauvirān pratiyātāncha Babhror esha tapasvi-
naḥ | bhāryām abhyaharad mohād akūma [m?] tām ito gatām | esha māyū-
praticihannaḥ Kārūṣārthe tapasvinīm | jahāra Bhadrām Vaisālīm mā-
tulasya nṛiśaṁsa-vat | pīṭri-svasuḥ kṛite duḥkhaṁ sumahad marṣhayāmy
aham | diṣṭyā hidaṁ sarva-rājñāṁ sannidhāv adya vartate | paśyanti
hi bhavanto 'dya mayy ativa vyatikramam | kṛitāni tu parokṣham me yāni
tāni nibodhata | imaṁ tv asya na śakṣyāmi kṣantum adya vyatikramam |
avalepād badhārhasya samagre rāja-maṇḍale | Rukminyām asya mūḍhasya
prārthanā "sid mumārshataḥ | na oha tām prāptavān mūḍhaḥ śūdraḥ
vedaśrūṭim iva | evam-ādi tataḥ sarve sahitas te narādhipāḥ | Vāsudeva-
vachaḥ brūtvā Chedi-rājāṁ vyagarhayan | tasya tad-vachanaṁ brūtvā
Śisupālaḥ pratāpavān | jahāsa evanavaddhāsaṁ vākyaṁ chedam uvācha
ha | mat-pūrvām Rukminīm Kṛishṇa saṁsatsu parikirtlayan | viśeshataḥ
pāṛthiveshu vṛiddāṁ na kurushe katham | manyamāno hi kaḥ satsu puruṣaḥ
parikirtayet | anya-pūrvām striyaṁ jātu tvad-anyo Madhusūdana |
kṣhama vā yadi te śraddhā mā vā Kṛishṇa mama kṣhama | kruddhād vā
'pi prasannād vā kiṁ me tvatto bhaviṣhyati | tathā bruvataḥ evāsya
bhagavān Madhusūdanaḥ | manasa 'chintayach chakraṁ daitya-garva-
niśūdanam | etāsminn eva kāle tu chakre hasta-gate sati | uvācha bhaga-
vān uchchhair vākyaṁ vākya-viśāradaḥ | śṛiṇvantu me mahīpālāḥ yenaṣitat*

*kṣhamitam mayā | aparūḍha-bataṁ kṣhāmyam mātur asyaiva yāchane |
dattam mayā yāchitaṁ oha tad vai pārṇatāṁ hi pārthivāḥ | adhunā ba-
dhayishyāmi paśyatāṁ vo mahākṣhitam | evam uktvā Yadu-śreṣṭhāḥ
Chedirājaśya tat-kehanūt | vyapāharach chhiraḥ kruddhaḥ ohakreṇāmītra-
kareṣaṇaḥ | sa papāta mahābāhur vajrāhataḥ ivāchalaḥ |*

“The king of the Chedis, mighty in valour, desirous to fight with Vāsudeva, after he had heard Bhīshma, then addressed the former: ‘I challenge thee, approach to combat with me, Janārdana, till I slay thee with all the Pāṇḍavas. For together with thee, Kṛishṇa, I must utterly destroy the Pāṇḍavas, who, passing over kings, have honoured thee who art no king. They who, through folly, honour thee, a fool, who art a slave, and no king, and who art unworthy, as if thou wert worthy, [they, I say,] ought in my opinion to be slain.’ Having so spoken, the tiger of kings stood growling and indignant. Kṛishṇa then addressed these mild words to all the kings and the Pāṇḍavas, in their presence: ‘This son of Sātvatī, O princes, is the bitter enemy, truculent and ill-disposed, of us the Sātvatas, who have done him no wrong. This malignant man, a sister’s son, knowing that we had set out for the city of the Prūgyotishas, burned Dvārakā. While the king of the Bhojas was formerly amusing himself on the Revata mountain, he slew and captured them all, and then returned home. Bent upon wickedness, to interrupt my father’s sacrifice, he carried off the horse intended as a victim, which had been let loose, attended by keepers. He in his infatuation carried off the wife of the devotee Bābhru, who had set out to return to [the country of] the Sauvīras, who had gone hence, and who had no passion [for him]. Under a magical disguise, he, like a cruel wretch, carried off for the Kārusha the devout Bhadrā, daughter of Viśāla, [the daughter] of my maternal uncle. For the sake of my father’s sister (Śiśupāla’s mother), I submit to great vexation. Fortunately, this occurs to-day in presence of all the princes, for ye all behold the great transgression committed against me. As for the offences which have been done out of your sight, learn them from me. I shall not to-day be able to endure this transgression of this infatuated man, who, for his presumption, deserves to be slain in the full assembly of princes. He who is doomed to die, sought to gain Rukmiṇī, but the fool did not obtain her, as a Śūdra is excluded from the veda.’ Hearing these and such other words of Vāsudeva,

all the princes together then reviled the king of the Chedis. But the mighty Sisupāla, hearing these words, laughed a sonorous laugh, and thus spake: 'How is it, that thou art not ashamed, Krishna, thus in the assembly, and especially before the princes, to make mention of Rukmiṇī, who was betrothed to me?'²¹¹ For 'what man but thou, Madhusūdana, after reflection, would mention among respectable persons a woman who had been betrothed to another? Forgive me, Krishna, if thou hast generosity, or refuse to forgive me. What shall happen to me from thee whether thou art well-pleased or angry?' As he thus spake, the divine Madhusūdana in his mind thought upon the discus, the humbler of the pride of the Daityas. The discus having come into his hand at that very time, the divine being, skilled in words, uttered aloud this word: 'Let the kings listen to me by whom this forgiveness has been practised. At the request of his mother, a hundred offences were to be pardoned. That request was granted by me, and it has been fulfilled, O kings. I shall now slay him, while you kings look on.' Having thus spoken, the chief of the Yadus, the vexer of his foes, incensed, instantly struck off the head of the king of the Chedis with his discus. The great-armed (warrior) fell like a mountain smitten by a thunder-bolt."²¹²

²¹¹ Rukmiṇī had been betrothed to Sisupāla, as we are told in the Vishṇu Purāṇa, v. 26, 1 ff. (Wilson, p. 573, first ed.; p. 69, vol. v. of Dr. Hall's ed.): *Bhīṣmakah Kuṇḍine rājā Vidarbha-vishaye 'bhavat | Rukmī tasyābhavat putro Rukmiṇī oha varāṅganā | Rukmiṇīm chakame Kṛishṇaḥ sū oha tām chāru-hāsinī | na dadau yūchate chāinām Rukmī dvesheṇa ohakṛiṇe | dadau oha S'isupātāya Jarāsandha-prachoditah | Bhīṣmako Rukmiṇā sārddhaṁ Rukmiṇīm uru-vikramaḥ |* "Bhīṣmaka was king in Kuṇḍina, in the country of the Vidarbhas. Rukmin was his son, and the beautiful Rukmiṇī (his daughter). Krishna loved Rukmiṇī, and the sweetly-smiling maid (loved) him, but Rukmin did not give her to the wielder of the discus, when he asked her; but urged by Jarāsandha, Bhīṣmaka, mighty in valour, together with Rukmin, gave her to Sisupāla." Krishna comes to witness the nuptials of his rival, and carries off the princess on the eve of the wedding. The story is told at greater length in the Harivaṁśa, sect. 117, vv. 6579 ff.; and in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, x. sections 43 ff.

²¹² See the sequel, vv. 1585-1588. The Vishṇu Purāṇa (Wilson's translation, p. 437, first ed.; vol. iv. p. 104, of Dr. Hall's ed.) tells that Sisupāla had been in a former birth the Daitya Hiranyakaśipu, who was killed by Vishṇu in his man-lion incarnation. He afterwards became Rāvaṇa, who was slain by Rāma. In his character as Sisupāla he evinced an intense hatred towards Vishṇu, "a portion of the supreme being, who had descended to lighten the burthens of the earth," (V. P. iv. 14, 14: *S'isupālatvena bhagavato bhū-bhārāvātārāṇāya avatirṇātmāsya Puṇḍarikāṇayanākhyasya upari dveshānubandham atitarām ohakāra |*) and was in consequence slain by him;

Duryodhana, the son of Dhṛitarāshṭra, and the principal leader of the Kurus, is represented as manifesting a similar disbelief of Kṛishṇa's divine character, or at least as maintaining a proud and contumacious resistance to his claims. In the Udyoga-parvan (vv. 2527 ff.), Sanjaya unfolds the divine nature of Kṛishṇa, "who," he says, "being distinct in nature, and self-subdued, is able, by a thought, to subject to himself the earth, the air, and the heaven" (*prithivīnchāntarikshancha dyāṁ chaiva Purushottamaḥ | manasaiva visishṭātmā nayaty ātma-vaśaṁ vaśi*) | He then goes on to say, vv. 2529 ff. :

*Ekato vā jagat kṛiteṇaṁ ekato vā Janārdanaḥ | sārato jagataḥ kṛiteṇād
atirikto Janārdanaḥ | bhasma kuryād jagad idam manasaiva Janārdanaḥ |
na oha kṛiteṇaṁ jagach chhaktam bhasmīkartuṁ Janārdanaṁ | yataḥ
satyaṁ yato dharmo yato hrīr ārjayaṁ yataḥ | tato bhavati Govindo
yataḥ Kṛishṇas tato jayaḥ | prithivīm chāntarikshancha divancha Purush-
ottamaḥ | vishesṭhayati bhūtātmā kṛidann iva Janārdanaḥ | sa kṛitvā
Pāṇḍavān satraṁ lokaṁ sammohayann iva | adharma-niratān mūḍhān
dagdhum ichhati te sūtān | kūla-chakraṁ jagach-chakraṁ yuga-chakrancha
Keśavaḥ | ātma-yogena bhagavān parivartayate 'niṣam | kūlasya cha
hi mṛityoścha jangama-sthāvarasya cha | īśato bhagavān ekaḥ satyam etad
bravīmi te | īśann api mahāyogī sarvasya jagato Hariḥ | karmāny āra-
bhate kartuṁ kinūśaḥ iva vārdhanaḥ | tena vanchayate lokān mūyāyogena
Keśavaḥ | ye tam eva prapadyante tena muhyanti mānavāḥ | Dhṛita-
rāshṭraḥ uvācha | kathāṁ tvāṁ Mādhavaṁ vettha sarva-loka-maheśvaram |
katham eṇaṁ na vedāhaṁ tad mamāchakṣhva Sanjaya | Sanjayaḥ uvācha |
śṛīṇu rājan na te vidyā mama vidyā na hīyate | vidyā-hīno tamo-dhvaṣto
nābhijānāti Keśavam | vidyayā tāta jānāmi triyugam Madhusūdanaṁ |
kartāram akṛitāṁ devam bhūtānāṁ prabhavāpyayam | Dhṛitarāshṭraḥ*

but as his thoughts were "constantly engrossed by the Supreme being," S'isupāla became united with him after death; for the lord gives "to those to whom he is favourable whatever they desire," and "bestows a heavenly and exalted station even upon those whom he slays in his displeasure." This is further explained in the next section, where we are told that Kṛishṇa as an object of hatred was ever-present to S'isupāla's thoughts, and that he was constantly uttering his names, and though this was done disrespectfully and in malediction, yet he at last beheld the deity in his true character when he was being slain by him, and that then all his passion and hatred ceased, and his sins were consumed by his divine adversary, with whom he became united. The attempt of S'isupāla's brother, king of the S'ālvas (whose capital was Saubha), to revenge his death, his assault on Dvārakā, his desire to slay Kṛishṇa, and the destruction which he thereby drew upon himself, are narrated in the Vana-parvan, vv. 615-890.

*uvācha | Gāvalgaṇe 'tra kṛ bhaktir yā te nityaṁ Jānārdana | yathā tvam
 abhijānāsi triyugam Mādhūsūdanaṁ | Sanjayaḥ uvācha | māyāṁ na
 sava bhadrāṁ te na vṛthā dharmam āchare | śuddha-bhāvaṁ gato bhaktiyā
 śāstrād vedmi Janārdanaṁ | Dhṛitarāshṭraḥ uvācha | Duryodhana Hṛishī-
 keśam prapadyasva Janārdanaṁ | āpto naḥ Sanjayas tāta śaraṇaṁ gachha
 Keśavam | Duryodhanaḥ uvācha | Bhagavān Devaki-putro lokātmā oheḍ
 nihanishyati | pravadann Arjuna sakhyāṁ nāhaṁ gachhe 'dya Keśavam |
 2529. "On the one side the whole world, on the other Janārdana,—in
 his essence Janārdana exceeds the whole world. He could by a thought
 reduce this world to ashes; but the whole world could not reduce him to
 ashes. Since he is truth, righteousness, modesty, rectitude,—therefore
 is he Govinda; since he is Kṛishṇa, he is therefore victory. The chief
 of males (or spirits), Janārdana, the soul of beings, imparts activity to
 the earth, air, and sky, as if in sport. He having made for the Pāṇḍavas
 a sacrifice, deluding, as it were, the world, wishes to burn up thy
 (Dhṛitarāshṭra's) infatuated and unrighteous sons. The divine Keśava
 by his own abstraction (*yoga*) makes the circles of time, of the world,
 and of the ages (*yugas*), continually to revolve. This divine being
 alone is lord of time, of death, and of things movable and im-
 movable,—this I tell thee as a truth. Hari, the great contemplator,
 though the lord of the whole world, undertakes to perform works, like
 a poor peasant seeking gain. He deceives the world by this display of
 delusion whereby the men who seek him are bewildered. Dhṛitarāshṭra
 said: How dost thou know Mādhava, the great lord of the whole
 world? and how is it that I do not know him?—tell me that, Sanjaya.
 Sanjaya answered: Hear, O king, thou hast not knowledge; but to me
 knowledge is not wanting. He who is devoid of knowledge, and sunk
 in darkness, does not recognize Keśava. By knowledge I recognize
 Mādhūsūdana, who exists in the three ages (*yugas*), the maker, the
 unmade, the god, the source of beings, and the cause of their de-
 struction. Dhṛitarāshṭra asks: O Gāvalgaṇi (Sanjaya), what is this
 devotion of thine to Janārdana, whereby thou recognizest him to exist
 in the three Yugas? Sanjaya answers: I do not pursue a delusion,
 bless thee, nor do I vainly practise righteousness. Having by devotion
 attained to purity, I know Janārdana from the scripture (*śāstra*).
 Dhṛitarāshṭra said: Duryodhana, do thou seek Hṛishīkeśa, Janārdana:
 Sanjaya is to us an authoritative teacher: resort to Keśava as thy*

refuge. Duryodhana said: If the divine son of Devakī should destroy the worlds, I should not, declaring friendship for Arjuna, resort to-day to Keśava."

Duryodhana is hereupon reproved by his father and mother for his pride, self-will, and ambition, and is told by the latter that "when he has received his death-blow from Bhīmasena, he will remember the words of his father (*nihato Bhīmasenenā smartāsi vāchanam pituḥ*)."

After some further conversation, Dhṛitarāshṭra asks to be further instructed about Kṛishṇa, when Sanjaya proceeds as follows (vv. 2560 ff.):

*Sanjayaḥ uvācha | śrutam me Vāsudevasya nāma-nirvāchanam śubham |
yūvat tatrūbhijāne 'ham aprameyo hi Keśavaḥ | vasanāt sarva-bhūtānāṃ
vasutvād deva-yonitāḥ | Vāsudevas tato vedyo vṛihatvād Viṣṇur uchyate |
maunād dhyānāḥ cha yogāchcha viddhi Bhārata Mādhavam | sarva-tattva-
mayatvāch cha Mādhuhā Mādhvasūdanaḥ | kṛishir bhā-vāchakaḥ śabdo
naścha nirvṛiti-vāchakaḥ | Viṣṇus tad-bhāva-yogāchcha Kṛishṇo bhavati
Sātvataḥ | puṇḍarikam paraṃ dhāma nityam akṣhayam avyayam | tad-
bhāvāt Puṇḍarikākṣho dasyu-trāsaj Janārdanaḥ | yataḥ sātत्वād na
chyavate yach cha sātत्वād na hiyate | sātत्वataḥ Sāttvatas tasmād āreṣa-
bhūd Vṛishabhekṣanaḥ | na jāyate janitrū 'yam Ajas tasmād anikajit |
devānāṃ eva-prakāśatvād damād Dāmodaro vibhuḥ | harṣhāt sukhāt su-
khaishvaryaūd Hṛishikēśatvam āsnute | bāhubhyāṃ rodasī bibhṛad mahā-
bāhur iti smṛitāḥ | adho na kṣtiyate jātu yasmat tasmād ādhokṣajaḥ |
narāṇāṃ ayanāch chāpi tato Nārāyaṇaḥ smṛitāḥ | pūranāt sadanāch
chāpi tato 'sau Puruṣhottamaḥ | asataś cha sataś chaiva sarvasya prabha-
vāpyayāt | sarvasya cha sadā jñānāt Sarvam etam praachakṣate | satyo
pratishṭhitāḥ Kṛishṇaḥ satyam atra pratishṭhitam | satyāt satyancha
Govindas tasmāt Satyo 'pi nāmataḥ | Viṣṇur vikramaṇād devo jayanāj
Jiṣṇur uchyate | śūśvatatvād Anantaścha Govinda-vedanād gavām | atatt-
vaṃ kurute tattvaṃ tena mohayate prajāḥ | evaṃvidho dharma-nityo bhaga-
vān Mādhvasūdanaḥ | āgantā hi mahābāhur anṛiśaṃśyārtham achyutaḥ |*

"Sanjaya says: Thou hast heard from me the auspicious explanation of Vāsudeva's names, as far as I understand the subject; for Keśava is immeasurable. He is to be known as Vāsudeva from his dwelling (*vasanāt*) in all beings, from his issuing as a Vasu from a divine womb. From his greatness (*vṛihatvāt*) he is called Viṣṇu. From his silence, (*maunāt*) contemplation, and abstraction, do thou know him to be Mādhava. From his possessing the nature of all principles, he is

Madhuhan, and Madhusūdāna. The word *kṛishi* denotes 'earth,' and *na* denotes 'cessation'; Viṣṇu, from containing the nature of these things, is Kṛishṇa, the Sāttvata. Puṇḍarīka means the highest abode, eternal, unchangeable, undecaying: from his having that character he is Puṇḍarīkāksha. From terrifying the Dasyus he is Janārdana. Inasmuch as he does not fall from, or fail in, existence (*sattva*), therefore, from his existence, he is Sāttvata, and from his excellence (*ārshabhat*) he is Vṛishabhekshaṇa. As he is not generated by a father, he is Aja (the unborn), the victorious in battle. From the self-illumination of the gods, and from self-restraint (*dama*), the mighty being is Dāmodara. He obtains his character as Hṛishikeśa from joy (*harsa*), pleasure, and the ease with which he rules. Sustaining the two worlds with his arms, he is called Mahābāhu (*great-armed*). Since he never sinks downwards (*adho na kṣiyate*), he is Adhokshaja. From movement among men (*narāṇām*²¹³ *ayanāt*) he is called Nārāyaṇa. From filling (*pūraṇāt*) and from abiding (*sadanāt*) he is Purushottama. Since he is the source and the destruction of everything (*sarvasya*) both non-existent and existent, and since he always knows all, they call him Sarva. Kṛishṇa is based on truth (*satya*), and truth is based on him, and Govinda is truer than truth, therefore he is also called Satya. The god is called Viṣṇu from striding (*vikramaṇāt*), Jishṇu from conquering (*jayanāt*), Ananta from his eternity, and Govinda from the possession of cattle²¹⁴ (*vedanūd gavām*). He makes the reality an unreality, and so deludes creatures. Of such a character, constant

²¹³ Perhaps the true reading is *nārāṇām*, "waters," as in the text of Manu, cited above, p. 31.

²¹⁴ Another explanation of this name is given in S'ānti-parvan, v. 13228 f.: *Nash-tām cha dharāṇīm pūrvaṁ vindaṁ vai guhāgatām | Govindaḥ iti tenāhaṁ devair vāgbhir abhisikṣataḥ |* "And since I discovered the earth which had formerly been destroyed, and had sunk into the abyss, I was therefore lauded by the gods with praises as Govinda." And in the following verse, occurring in the description of the ocean, in the Ādi-parvan, v. 1216, the word Govinda is thus interpreted: *Gāṁ vindatā bhagavatā Govindenāmitayasā | varāha-rūpiṇā chāntar vikṣobhita-jalāvīlam |* "[That ocean] which was rendered turbid when its waters were agitated within by the divine Govinda of illimitable power, who in the form of a boar found the earth [beneath its surface]." I notice in the same passage another verse (1215), which seems to show that, at the period when it was written, the Hindūs were acquainted with the cause of the tides, or at least with the influence of the moon upon the ocean: *Chandra-viddhi-kṣaya-vaśād udvrittormi-samākulam* " [The ocean] tossed with waves which rise in obedience to the waxing and waning of the moon."

in righteousness, is the divine Madhusūdana. For the great-armed Achyuta (or unfalling deity) will come for the sake of innocence."

The following is another illustration of Duryodhana's enmity to Kṛishṇa, and of his scepticism in regard to the supernatural character of that personage, at the same time that it shows the writer's faith in the divine nature of his hero. It is related in the Udyoga-parvan that Kṛishṇa went to the Kurus, with the intention of mediating between them and the Pāṇḍus. While he was with them, Duryodhana plotted to confine him (v. 4368), but Vidura warns the plotter that his attempt would be vain, owing to the divine power of Kṛishṇa. On the conclusion of Vidura's speech, Kṛishṇa addresses himself to Duryodhanāḥ (4418 ff.):

*Vidureṇaivam uktas tu Keśavaḥ śatru-pāga-hā | Duryodhanaṁ Dhār-
tarāshṭram abhyabhāshata vīryavān | eko 'ham iti yad mohād manyase
mām Suyodhana | poribhūya sudurbuddhe grahītum mām chakīrshasi |
ihaiva Pāṇḍavūḥ sarve tathāivāndhaka-vṛishṇayaḥ | ihādityāścha Rudrāś
cha Vasavaś cha saharshibhiḥ | evam uktvā jahāsochchasi Keśavaḥ para-
vira-hā | tasya saṁsmayataḥ Saurer vidyud-rūpāḥ mahātmanaḥ | angush-
ṭha-mūtrās tridasāḥ mumukhuḥ pāvaka-archishāḥ | asya Brahmā lalāṭa-śtho
Rudro vakshasi chābhavat | loka-pālāḥ bhujeshv āsann Agnir āsyād ajā-
yata | Ādityāś chaiva Sādhyāś cha Vasavo 'thāśvināv api | Marutaś cha
sahendreṇa Viśve devāś tathāiva cha | babhūvus chaika²¹⁵-rūpāṇi Yaksha-
Gandharva-Rakshasām | prādūrāstaṁ tathā dorbhīyāṁ Sankarshana-
Dhananjayau | dakṣiṇe 'thārjuno dhanvī haṭi Rāmaś cha savyataḥ |
Bhīmo Yudhishṭhiraś chaiva Mādri-putrau cha prishṭhataḥ | Andhakāḥ
Vṛishṇayaś chaiva Pradyumna-pramukhāś tataḥ | agre babhūvūḥ Kṛish-
ṇasya samudyata-mahāyudhāḥ | śankha-chakra-gadā-śakti-śārṅga-lāngala-
nandakāḥ | adriśyantodyatāṇy eva sarva-praharaṇāṇi cha | nānū-bāhushu
Kṛishṇasya dīpyamānāni sarvaśaḥ | ityādi.*

"Being thus addressed, the heroic Keśava, slayer of hostile bands, thus addressed Duryodhana, son of Dhṛitarāshṭra: 'Since, Suyodhana, thou, in thy delusion, regardest me as if I were alone, and, O fool, seekest to overcome and confine me, [know that], here are all the Pāṇḍavas, the Andhakas, and the Vṛishṇis, as well as the Ādityas, Rudras, and Vasus, together with the rishis.' Having thus spoken, Keśava, slayer of hostile heroes, laughed aloud. As the mighty de-

²¹⁵ Quere, may not *chaiva* be the proper reading?

scendant of Sūra [Krishna] smiled, the gods, wearing the appearance of lightning, of the size of a thumb, and luminous as fire, issued forth from him. Brahmā occupied his forehead, Rudra was produced on his chest, the guardians of the world appeared on his arms, and Agni sprang from his mouth. The Ādityas, too, and the Sādhyas, Vasus, Āśvins, Maruts, and all the gods along with Indra were produced, and also the forms of the Yakshas, Gandharvas, and Rākshasas. Sankarshana and Dhananjaya also were manifested from his arms, Arjuna armed with a bow from his right, and Rāma holding a plough from his left, Yudhishthira and Bhīma, the sons of Mādri, from his back. Next Andhakas and Vṛishnis, headed by Pradyumna, arose on his front, with their weapons ready. A shell, discus, club, spear, bow, plough,* and sword, were seen prepared, and all weapons, gleaming in every form on the different arms of Krishna."

In the next passage, taken from the Karṇa-parvan also, Duryodhana, and other warriors on his side, put themselves on the same level as Krishna (except in one place, vv. 1625 ff.). It is there related (vv. 1265 ff.) that Karṇa promised to Duryodhana to encounter and slay Arjuna, or be slain by him. Karṇa says, however, that in some respects he is inferior to Arjuna; as, for instance, in not having such a charioteer as Arjuna had in Govinda (Krishna) (v. 1302: *Sārathis tasya Govindo mama tādriṇ na vidyate*); while in other respects he regards himself as having the advantage (v. 1304). As, then, Krishna, creator of the world, preserves the car of Arjuna (*Krishnas cha vrashtā jagato ratham tam abhirakshati*²¹⁶), if, in like manner, Salya, king of the Madras, the ornament of the battle-field, who is equal to Sauri (Krishna) and, as well as Dāsārha, (Krishna) who knows a horse's heart, is skilled in horses, will act as his charioteer, Karṇa thinks the victory of Duryodhana's side will be certain (v. 1308: *Ayam tu sadriṣaḥ Sauraḥ Salyaḥ samiti-sobhanaḥ | sārathyaṁ yadi me kuryād dhruvas te vijayo bhavet | . . .* 1311: *Evam abhyadhikaḥ Pārthāt bhaviṣhyāmi gunair aham | Salyo 'py abhyadhikaḥ Krishnād Arjunād api chāpy aham | yathā 'śva-hridayaṁ veda Dāsārhaḥ para-*

²¹⁶ If the words *vrashtā jagataḥ*, "creator of the world," are not an interpolation, it is not easy to perceive how Karṇa could have regarded Krishna as his equal, as he would never have thought of calling Salya, or any other of his brother warriors, the creator of the world.

vira-hā | tathā S'alyo 'pi jānīte haya-jnānaṁ mahārathaḥ |) Duryodhana then goes to Salya, and asks him to act as charioteer to Karna, saying that he (Salya) was equal to Kṛishṇa, that there was no other person who could drive Karna but himself; and that Brahmā had fulfilled the same office to Mahādeva (v. 1328 f.: *Sārathyaṁ rathināṁ śreṣṭhīḥa prajāyāt kartum arhasi | tvayi yantari Rūdheyo vidviṣho me vijeshyate | abhishūṇāṁ hi Karnasya grahitā 'nyo na vidyate | rīte hi tvām mahābhāga Vāsudeva-samāṁ yudhi | sa pāhi sarvathā Karnam yathā Brahmā Mahesvaram |*). Salya, however, is very much offended (v. 1354 f.) that a person of his dignity should be asked to undertake the office of charioteer, and boasts that he is superior to Karna, and could alone destroy their enemies. He points to his thick arms, which would smite like a thunderbolt, and asserts that he could by his own strength cleave asunder the earth, scatter the mountains, and dry up the seas (v. 1361: *Paśya pīṇau mama bhujau vajra-saṁhananopamau |* . . 1363: *Dārayeyam mahīm kṛtsnām vikireyaṁ cha parvatām | S'oshayeyam samudrūṁś cha tejasā svena pāṛthiva |*). He will not brook to undertake the inferior office of driving a person who is his own inferior²¹⁷ (v. 1365: *Kusmād yunakṣhi sārathyo nīchasyādhirathe raṇe | na mām adhūri rājendra niyoktuṁ tvam ihārhasi | na hi pāpīyasaḥ śreyān bhātuvā pṛeshyatvam utsahe |*). He threatens, in consequence of the insult thus offered to him, to go home (v. 1375); and accordingly rises and goes, but is followed by Duryodhana, who endeavours to soothe him by saying that he did not regard Karna as superior to him (v. 1379: *Na Karṇo 'bhyadikas trattaḥ*), but considered Karna to be superior to Arjuna; while the world regarded him (Salya) as superior to Kṛishṇa, whom he excelled in strength, as well as in knowledge of horses and their dispositions, (v. 1384: *Manye chābhyadhikam S'alya guṇaiḥ Karṇam Dhananjayaṭ | bhavantaṁ Vāsudevāch cha loko 'yam iti manyate | Karṇo hy abhyadhikāḥ Pāṛthād astrair eva nararashabha | bhavān abhyadhikāḥ Kṛishṇād āsua-jnāno bale tathā | yathā 'svahrīdayaṁ veda Vāsudevo mahāmanāḥ | dviguṇam tvām tathā veti Madrarājesvarātmanja |*). Salya is flattered by his being reckoned superior to Kṛishṇa, and agrees to act as charioteer to Karna, vv. 1387 ff.: *Yad mām bravishi Gāndhāre*

²¹⁷ He regarded Karna as what he was generally supposed to be, a Sūta, or charioteer, by caste (*sūta-putrasya*, v. 1374).

*madhye sainyasya Kaurava | viśiṣṭaṁ Devakīputrāt prītimān aśmy ahaṁ
tvayi | eṣa śārathyaṁ ātiṣṭhe Rādheyasya yāśasvinaḥ | yudhyataḥ
Pāṇḍavāgryeṇa yathā tvam vira manyase | samayaś cha hi me vira
kaśchid Vaiskartanam prati | utarijeyam yathā-braddham ahaṁ vācho 'ya
sannidhau | Sanjayaḥ uvācha | tatheti rājan putras te saha Karna
Bhārata | abravīd Madra-rājasya matam Bhārata-sattama | "I am
pleased with thee, Kaurava, since in the midst of the army thou
declarest me to be superior to the son of Devakī. I undertake to be
charioteer to the renowned Karṇa when he fights with the chief of the
Pāṇḍavas, as thou, hero, thinkest [I ought to do]. And now that I
have entered into a certain agreement with Karṇa, let me candidly
excuse to him the words I have used." Sanjaya proceeded: "Thy son
(i.e. Duryodhana) having assented, declared to Karṇa the resolution of
the king of the Madras (Salya)."*

Though he had thus gained his point, by persuading Salya to act as charioteer to Karṇa, Duryodhana is nevertheless represented as proceeding, in the next three sections, the 33rd-35th, vv. 1391 ff., (which, for reasons to be afterwards assigned, I regard as probably interpolated,) to repeat to Salya an ancient story, telling how Brahmā had formerly done duty as charioteer to Mahādeva in a war between the gods and Asuras. In this war the gods, it is related, were at first the victors (1394). The three sons of the Asura Tāraka thereupon performed severe austerities, which induced Brahmā to grant them a boon (1397). They asked that they might become indestructible by any being whatever, which, however, Brahmā declined to grant, as immortality, he said, was not an universal attribute (1399). They then asked that they should occupy three castles, and from thence move about the earth at will, and that after a thousand years these three castles should become united, and that they themselves should only be destructible by the deity who should be able to overthrow the castles with a single arrow (1402 ff.: *Vayam purāṇi trīṇy eva samāsthāya mahīm imām | vicharishyāmo loke 'smin . . . tato varsha-sahasre tu samashyāmaḥ parasparam | ekibhāvaṁ gamishyanti purāṇy etāni chānagha | samāgatāni chaitāni yo hanyād bhagavaṁś tadā | ekamunā deva-varaḥ sa no mṛityur bhaviṣhyati*). Brahmā granted this boon, and the Asura Maya built them three castles, one of gold, in heaven; a second of silver, in the air; and a third of black iron, on

earth²¹⁸ (1406 ff.), which the three Asura kings above mentioned severally occupied, and where innumerable hosts of formidable demons were collected. Maya, by his magical power, gave them everything that any of them wished (1415): and Hari, the son of Tārakāksha, obtained as a boon from Brahmā that there should be a pond within their castle, into which, when any Asuras slain in battle were thrown, they should be resuscitated and become stronger than ever (1418 ff.). Armed with all these powers, the Asuras harassed the worlds, putting to flight the celestial hosts, and destroying the gardens of the gods, and the hermitages of the rishis (1421 ff.). Indra attacked the castles of the Asuras with his thunderbolts, but without effect (1427). He then went with the other gods to consult Brahmā about the means of overthrowing the titans (1429 ff.). Brahmā replied that the castles could only be destroyed by a single arrow, and that this could only be effected by Mahādeva (1434), to whom they should apply. The deities, then, headed by Brahmā himself, went to supplicate Mahādeva, who gives security amid alarms, the soul of all things, by whom the universe is pervaded, who, through particular austerities, knows the "yoga" and the "sāṅkhya" of himself, (or of spirit,) and whose spirit is always in subjection,—(they went to supplicate him) practising rites of austerity, repeating the eternal Veda, and uttering awful or fierce hymns, (1437 ff.: *Tapo-niyamam āsthāya grīnanto brahma śāśvatam | . . . tushuvur vāgbhir ugrābhīr bhayeshv abhaya-dam nṛipa | sarvātmanām mahātmanām yenāptam sarvam ātmanā | tapo-viśeshair vividhair yogaṁ yo veda chātmanaḥ | yaḥ sāṅkhyam ātmano vetti yasya chātma vāśe sadā |*). They beheld Mahādeva, to whom a variety of other honorific epithets are applied, such as "the essence of all beings, the unborn, the lord of the world" (1442: *sarva-bhūtamayaṁ dṛiṣṭvā tam ajaṁ jagataḥ patim*). Mahādeva received them smiling, and invites them to state their wishes (1444). They then recite a number of his epithets (1445 ff.), and Brahmā replies on their behalf (1455 ff.) that he himself, who had obtained from Mahādeva his rank of Prajāpati, had bestowed a boon on the Dānavas, that they had in consequence transgressed all bounds, and that now there was no one but Mahādeva who could destroy them,—which he was therefore²¹⁹ implored to do. Mahādeva answers (1459) that he himself alone could not

²¹⁸ See above p. 203; and the 2nd vol. of this work, pp. 378 ff.

destroy them, as they were strong, but that, with the aid of half his strength, they themselves would be able to conquer their enemies. They answered that they could not sustain half of his strength (*vibh-artum tava tejo 'rdham na śakṣyāmaḥ*), but proposed that he should undertake the work, aided by half of their strength. To this Mahādeva consented, and became stronger than all the gods, and was thenceforward called Mahādeva, or "the great god," (*ardham ādāya sarveśhām tejasā 'bhyadhiko 'bhavat | sa tu devo balenāsīt sarvebhyo balavattaraḥ | Mahādevaḥ iti khyātas tataḥ prabhṛiti Sankaraḥ*). Mahādeva then (1468) desired the gods to provide him with a bow and arrows, and a chariot. The gods promised to provide a chariot which should be composed of all the forms of the universe (1469: *mūrtiḥ sarvāḥ samādhāya trailokyasya tatas tataḥ | ratham te kalpayishyāmaḥ*). The composition of the car, formed by Viśvakarman and the gods, is then described at great length (vv. 1471-1492). Vishṇu, Soma, and Agni became different parts of Mahādeva's bow and arrow; the earth became his chariot, the mountain Mandara its axle; and the great river, the regions, the constellations, the Kṛita age, the serpent Vāsuki, the Himālaya and Vindhya mountains, plants, the sun and moon, day and night, various goddesses, duty, truth, the vashaṭkāra, the gāyatrī, etc., formed portions of the car, or of its appurtenances. Mahādeva's weapons and equipments are then specified (1495 ff.). At verse 1503 it is repeated that "Vishṇu, Agni, and Soma formed his arrow; for all the world," it is added, "is formed of Agni and Soma, and is said to be composed of Vishṇu, and Vishṇu is the soul of Mahādeva of boundless power."²¹⁹ Hence they could not abide the bow, or the contact of the bowstring of Hara. In that arrow the terrible god, dark-blue, and dusky in hue, clad in an antelope's skin, hurled forth the fire of wrath, of fierce fury, intolerable, and sprung from the rage of Bhṛigu and Angiras. . . . 1507. He is the constant preserver of virtuous, and destroyer of wicked, men. The divine Sthāṇu (Mahādeva) shines forth distinguished by these inherent qualities, which are destructive, fearful in power, fearful in form, and rapid as thought. This whole universe, movable and immovable, existing contained in his members, shone forth, wonderful to behold." (*Iśuś chāpy abhavad Viśhnur Jvalanaḥ Somaḥ eva cha | Agnī-Somaḥ jagat kṛitsnaḥ Vaiśhnavaḥ chochyate jagat | Viśhnuś chātma bhagavato*

²¹⁹ Can these words be a Vaiṣṇava addition to the passage?

*Bhavasāyāmita-tejasaḥ | tasmād dhanur jyā-saṁsparśaṁ na viśhehur
Harasya te | tasmin śare tigma-manyum mumochāsahyam Īśvaraḥ |
Bhṛigu-Angiro-manyu-bhavaṁ krodhāgnim ati-dussaham | sa nīla-lohito
dhūmraḥ kṛttivāsāḥ bhayankaraḥ | . . . 1507: Nityaṁ trātā cha
hantā oha dharmādharmāśritān narān | pramāṭhibhir bhīma-balair bhīma-
rūpair manojavaiḥ | vibhāti bhagavān Sthānūś tair evātma-guṇair vṛitaiḥ |
tasyāṅgāni samāśṛitya sthitaṁ viśvam idaṁ jagat | jangamājangamaṁ
rājan śuśubhe 'dbhuta-darśanam |)*

Taking the arrow produced from Soma, Viṣṇu, and Agni, Mahādeva mounted the car which had been made for him (1510 ff.). He then smilingly asked (1515) who was to be his charioteer. The gods answered that any one whom he should appoint would undertake that office. He then said that the god who was greater than he (*matlaḥ śreṣṭhataro hi yaḥ*) should be made his charioteer. The gods next went to Brahmā, and asked him to appoint one (1520), expressing an opinion that he himself was the only person who was fit for the office (1526). Brahmā consented (1530 ff.). Mahādeva is again represented as mounting the car, with the arrow produced from Viṣṇu, Soma, and Agni in his hand (1535). He then sets out,²²⁰ and arrives at the triple castle of the Asuras (1551), when some of the Asuras are destroyed by the roaring of his bull (1553), and others come forth to battle. Mahādeva becomes insensate with rage. The three worlds tremble. The chariot begins to sink from the agitation of Soma, Agni, and Viṣṇu in the arrow, when it is being fitted on the string, and from the movement of Brahmā and Mahādeva. Viṣṇu then issues from a portion of the arrow (1556), takes the form of a bull, and raises up the chariot. Mahādeva again fits his arrow on the string (1562), and discharges it against the triple castle (1567), which falls to the ground, while the Asuras are burnt up and thrown by Mahādeva into the western ocean. The gods praise Mahādeva and depart (1572).

Duryodhana now (1575 ff.) makes his application of this legend by exhorting Salva to follow Brahmā's example, and act as charioteer to

²²⁰ In vv. 1545 ff. it is said that the rishis praised Mahādeva, and increased his strength (*ṛishayaś latra devoṣāṁ stuvanto bahubhiḥ stavaiḥ | tejaś chāsmat varāha-yanto rājann āsan punaḥ punaḥ*). This is a pure Vedic touch, the same power of imparting strength to the gods by their praises being occasionally asserted of the bards in the Rīg-veda. See the fifth volume of this work, p. 91. In most of the texts there cited, however, it is perhaps only meant that the gods were gratified by the praises addressed to them.

Karna. Salya, he adds, is superior to Krishna, Karna, and Arjuna, and as Karna resembled Mahadeva in fighting, so Salya resembled Brahma in guiding [a chariot], etc. To supply additional motives for compliance, he then (1581 ff.) goes on to tell Salya another story about Parasurama performing austerity to propitiate Mahadeva and obtain celestial arms. Mahadeva appears to him, and tells him he shall obtain arms when he has qualified himself by purification to receive them. Parasurama renews his austerities and religious ceremonies (1591), and is at length appointed by Mahadeva to slay the Daityas who had been harassing the gods (1599). He successfully accomplishes this task (1806), and receives celestial arms from Mahadeva. Parasurama had, as Duryodhana goes on to say, taught the divine science of archery to Karna (1613), which proves that Karna is free from sin; and Karna is not, as Duryodhana believes, a Suta or charioteer by birth, but a son of one of the gods, born in a Kshatriya family. For how could a doe give birth to a tiger resembling the sun (*katham aditya-sadrisam mrigī ryāghraṁ janishyati* | 1617)? Duryodhana then recurs to the legend of Brahma becoming Mahadeva's charioteer, and renews his exhortation to Salya to perform the same office to Karna. Salya appears now to waver in his determination, formerly expressed, to comply with Duryodhana's request, as he replies (1625) that he himself had often heard this story before; and that Krishna also had no doubt heard of it, as he knows the future and the past, and that he had for that reason consented to be the charioteer of Arjuna. And, Salya adds, if Karna should slay Arjuna, Krishna would himself fight, and armed with the shell, discus, and club, burn up the whole of Duryodhana's army, and no prince would be able to stand before him among his opponents when he was incensed, (v. 1629 ff.: *Yadi hanyācch cha Kaunteyaṁ Suta-putraḥ kathanchana | drishtvā Pārthaṁ hi nihataṁ svayaṁ yotsyati Keśavaḥ | śankha-chakra-gadā-pāṇīr dhakshyate tava vāhinīm | na chāpi tasya kruddhasya Vāreṇyasya mahātmanaḥ | sthāsyaṁ pratyantikeṣu kaśchid atra nripas tava*). Duryodhana in reply expatiates on the eminent prowess of Karna, and of Salya himself: (1643) *Tvam salya-bhūtaḥ śatrūṇāṁ avishahyaḥ parākramaḥ | tatas tvam uchyase rājan Salyaḥ ity ari-sūdana | tava bāhu-balam prāpya na śekuḥ sarva-Sātataḥ | tava bāhu-balād rājan kintu Kriṣṇo balādhikaḥ | yathā hi Kriṣṇena balaṁ dhāryaṁ vai Phālgune hate | tathā Karnā-*

tyayibhāve tvayā dhāryam mahad balam | kimarthaṁ samare sainyam
Vānudevo nyavārayet (sic) | *kimarthaṁ cha bhavān sainyam na hanishyati*
Mārisha [“Thou art a spear (*sālya*) to [pierce] thine enemies, irre-
 sistible in valour: hence, O king, destroyer of thy foes, thou art called
Sālya.²²¹ Feeling the power of thy arm, all the Sātvatas could not
 [resist]. But [it is said that] Kṛishṇa is superior in force to the
 strength of thy arm. Just as great strength is to be exhibited by
 Kṛishṇa, if Arjuna were killed; so is great strength to be put forth by
 thee, if Kārṇa were slain. Why should Kṛishṇa withstand [our] army?
 and why shouldst not thou slay the [enemy's] host?” Sālya then
 answers (1648 ff.) in nearly the same words²²² which had formerly
 been assigned to him in vv. 1387-9: “I am pleased with thee, bestower
 of honour, since before the army thou declarest me to be superior to
 the son of Devakī. I undertake to be charioteer to the renowned
 Kārṇa,” etc. This repetition of the same speech of Sālya at the close
 of the episode regarding Mahādeva's conquest of the Asuras with
 Brahmā for his charioteer, and Paraśurāma's acquisition of celestial
 weapons, renders it probable, as I have already said, that this episode
 has been subsequently interpolated. As Sālya had already consented,
 in vv. 1387 ff., to do duty as Kārṇa's charioteer, it was quite unneces-
 sary to detail at great length the legend of Brahmā and Mahādeva,
 which had been already briefly alluded to in verse 1330, and which is
 merely followed by a renewed expression of Sālya's willingness to
 comply with the request of Kārṇa and Duryodhana.

IV. In various parts of the Mahābhārata Kṛishṇa and Arjuna are
 singularly represented as having formerly existed in the persons of two
 rishis, Nārāyaṇa and Nara,²²³ who always lived and acted together. A

²²¹ In verse 1381 the same thing had been said in nearly the same words: *S'alya-
 bhūtas te śatrūṣāṁ gasmāt tvam yudhi mānada | tasmāt S'alyo hi te nāma kathyate*
prithivī-tale | The repetition of this idea is an additional argument in proof of the
 probable interpolation of the passage between v. 1389 and v. 1648.

²²² The only difference of reading in the two passages is, that in the first line
 of the later passage the words *agre sainyasya mānada*, “before the army, conferrer
 of honour,” are substituted for *madhye sainyasya Kaurava*, “in the midst of the
 army, (i) Kaurava.”

²²³ In the Vāmana-purāṇa, sect. 6, quoted in Prof. Aufrecht's Catalogue, p. 455, it
 is stated that Dharma with a divine body was the heart-born son of Brahmā, that
 his (Dharma's) wife was Ahimsā, and that she bore to him Hari and Kṛishṇa, and
 Nara and Nārāyaṇa, of whom the two former were devoted to the practice of the Yoga

similar close union exists between the two heroes in the various transactions narrated in the great epic. Their earlier connexion will appear from the following passages,²²⁴ in which, however, these two rishis are always represented as possessed of supernatural or divine powers.

It is related in the Vana-parvan (vv. 461 ff.) that Kṛishṇa, having gone with other friends of the Pāṇḍus to visit them after they had retired into the forest, expressed great indignation at the way in which they had been treated by Duryodhana and his party. Arjuna (one of the Pāṇḍus), with the view of pacifying Kṛishṇa, recounts (vv. 471 ff.) his marvellous deeds in former births, his austerities, his slaughter of the Daityas and Dānavas (478), his various forms (480), his three strides as the son of Aditi (484),²²⁵ and his destruction of various enemies (487 ff.); and then proceeds thus (vv. 496 ff.) :

*Yugānte sarva-bhūtāni sankshipya Madhusūdana | ātmanavātmāsāt
kṛtvā jagad āsīḥ parantapa | yugādau tava Vārshneya nābhi-padmaḥ
ajāyata | Brahmā charāchara-gurur yasyedaṁ sakalāṁ jagat | taṁ han-
tum udyatau ghorau Dānavau Madhu-kaiṭabhaū | tayoṛ vyatikramam
dṛishṭvā kruddhasya bhavato Hareḥ | lalūṭāj jātavān Sambhuḥ śāla-
pāṇis trilochanaḥ | iṭṭhaṁ tāv api deveṣau tvach-ohharira-samudbhavau |
tvaṇ-niyoga-karāv etāv iti me Nārado 'bravīt | tathā Nārāyaṇa purā
kratubhir bhūri-dakṣiṇaiḥ | iṣṭavāṁs tvam mahāsatraṁ Kṛishṇa Chait-
rarathe vane | naivam pūrve nāpare vā karishyanti kṛitāni vā | yūni
karmāni deva tvam bālaḥ eva mahābalaḥ | kṛitavān Puṇḍarikākṣa Bala-
deva-sahāyavān | Kailāsa-bhavane chāpi brāhmaṇair nyavasāḥ saha | Vaiśam-
pāyanaḥ uvācha | evam uktvā mahātmānam ātmā Kṛishṇasya Pāṇḍavaḥ |
tūshṇīm āsīt tataḥ Pārtham ity uvācha Janārdanaḥ | mamaiva tvam
tavaivāhaṁ ye madīyās tavaiva te | yas tvāṁ doṣṣṭi sa mām doṣṣṭi yas
trām anu sa mām anu | Naras tvam asi durdharsha Harir Nārāyaṇo hy
aham | kālē lokam imam prāptau Nara-Nārāyaṇāv ṛishi | ananyaḥ
Pārtha mattas tvāṁ tvattat chāhaṁ tathaiva cha | nāvayor antaram śak-
yaṁ veditum Bharatarshabha |*

“ At the end of the mundane period (yuga), thou, O Madhusūdana,

(Hṛidbhavo Brahmano yo 'sau Dharmo divyavapuḥ sadā | tasya bhūryā tv Ahimsā tu
tasyām ajanayat eṣau | Hariṁ Kṛishṇam cha devashe Nara-Nārāyaṇau tathā |
yogābhīyāsa-ratau nityam Hari-Kṛishṇau babhūvatuḥ).

²²⁴ See also the extract from the Droṇa-parvan, translated above, p. 185.

²²⁵ See above, p. 136.

vexer of thy foes, having caused all created things to collapse, and by thyself made them subject to thyself, wast the world. At the commencement of the yuga, O Vārshneya (Kṛishṇa), Brahmā, the chief of things movable and immovable, whose [is] all this world, sprang from the lotus issuing from thy navel. Two horrible Dānavas, Madhu and Kaiṭabha, were ready to slay him. From the forehead of Hari, who became incensed when he saw their transgression, was produced Sambhu (Mahādeva), wielding the trident, and three-eyed. Thus even those two lords of the gods (Brahmā and Mahādeva) are sprung from thy (Kṛishṇa's) body, and they execute thy commands,—this Nārada declared to me. So, too, O Kṛishṇa, Nārāyaṇa, thou didst formerly celebrate a great sacrifice in the Chaitraratha forest, with oblations and many gifts. The ancients [have] not [done], nor shall those who are to come do, the deeds which thou didst, Puṇḍarikāksha, even when a child, mighty in power, accompanied by Baladeva. And thou didst dwell with the 'Brāhmins in the abode of Kailāsa.' Having thus addressed that great being, the Pāṇḍava (Arjuna, who was) the soul of Kṛishṇa, became silent. Then Janārdana (Kṛishṇa) thus addressed the son of Prithā: 'Thou art mine, and I am thine;²²⁶ those who are mine are thine also. He who hates thee hates me; he who loves (*lit.* follows, or favours) thee loves me. Thou, invincible hero, art Nara, and I am Hari Nārāyaṇa: in due time we came into this world, the rishis Nara and Nārāyaṇa. Thou, son of Prithā, are not different from me, nor, in like manner, I from thee; no distinction can be conceived between us.'"

Again, it is related in the Vana-parvan that, with the view of obtaining celestial weapons, Arjuna, at the suggestion of Indra (vv. 1513 ff.), went northward, to the top of the Himālaya, to see Mahādeva (vv. 1526 ff.) Arrived there, he performs austerity. The rishis, not knowing his object, are alarmed, and go to tell Mahādeva (vv. 1543 ff.), who assures them that there is no cause for apprehension, as Arjuna cherishes no ambitious designs. Mahādeva then takes his bow and arrows, and assuming the form of a Kirāta (barbarous mountaineer), approaches Arjuna (vv. 1551 ff.). At that moment a

²²⁶ The mutual attachment of Nara and Nārāyaṇa, or Arjuna and Kṛishṇa, may therefore be quoted as an Indian parallel to the renowned friendships which are already proverbial in the western world, viz. those of David and Jonathan, Pylades and Orestes, Damon and Pythias.

Dānava, in the form of a boar, is meditating an attack upon Arjuna, who prepares to shoot him with his arrows. The Kirāta desires Arjuna to allow him to shoot the Dānava, as he had been the first to take aim ; but Arjuna will not consent ; and they both shoot together, and kill the boar. Arjuna addresses the Kirāta, and complains that he had acted in an unsportsmanlike manner (*na hy eṣo mṛigayā-dharmo yas trayā 'dya kṛito mayi*), and that he should therefore kill him. The Kirāta replies that he had aimed first, and had killed the Dānava, and would kill Arjuna also. Mahādeva, in the form of the Kirāta, and Arjuna then fight together (vv. 1582 ff.) with a succession of weapons, arrows, swords, trees, stones, etc., till at length Arjuna is squeezed by his opponent, and falls exhausted (v. 1613). He, however, revives, and worships his enemy, falling at his feet. Mahādeva expresses admiration of Arjuna's prowess, and promises to give him an irresistible weapon which he is fit to wield. The narrative then proceeds (vv. 1622 ff.): *Tato devam Mahādevaṁ Girīsaṁ śūlapāṇinam | dadarśa Phālgunas tatra saha devyā mahādyyutim | sa jānubhyāṁ mahīm gatvā śirasā pranipatyā cha | prasādayāmāsa Haraṁ Pārthaḥ para-puran-jayaḥ | Arjunaḥ uvācha |* “*Kapardīn sarvadeveṣa Bhaga-netra-nipātana | deva-deva Mahādeva nīla-grīva jaṭū-dhara | kārāṇānāṇcha paramaṁ jāne tvāṁ Tryambakaṁ vibhum | devānāṇcha gatiṁ deva tvat-prasūtam idaṁ jagat | ajeyas tvam tribhīr lokaiḥ sa-devasura-mānuṣhaiḥ | Sīvūya Viṣṇu-rūpāya Viṣṇave Sīva-rūpiṇe | Dakṣhayaḥna-vinūṣāya Hari-Rudrāya vai namaḥ | lalāṭākeṣhāya Sarvāya mīlhushe śulā-pāṇaye | pināka-goptre sūryāya mārjātīyāya vedhase | prasādaye tvāṁ bhagavan sarva-bhūta-maheśvara | gaṇeṣaṁ jagataḥ sambhuṁ loka-kārana-kāraṇam | pradhāna-puruṣhātītam paraṁ sūkṣmataram Haraṁ |*

“Then Phālguna (Arjuna) beheld the god Mahādeva, Girīsa, bearer of the trident, resplendent, together with his goddess. Falling on the ground on his knees, and bowing his head, the son of Prithā, conqueror of hostile cities, propitiated Hara (Mahādeva) in these words: ‘God with the spirally-braided hair, lord of all the gods, extinguisher of Bhaga’s eyes, god of gods, Mahādeva (the great god), blue-necked, wearer of matted hair, I know thee to be of causes the supreme, Tryambaka, the mighty, the refuge of the gods. From thee this world has been produced. Thou art invincible by the three worlds, including the gods, Asuras, and men. Adoration be to Sīva in the

form of Viṣṇu, to Viṣṇu in the form of Śiva, to the destroyer of Dakṣha's sacrifice, to Hari-Rudra, to him with the frontal eye, to Śarva, the beneficent, the wielder of the trident, the bearer of the bow, the sun, the Mārjalya,²²⁷ the disposer. I propitiate thee, divine lord of all creatures, lord of troops, benefactor of the world, cause of the causes of the world (i.e. ultimate creator of the immediate creators), who transcendest Pradhāna and Puruṣa (matter and spirit), the supreme, most subtle, Hara.'"

Mahādeva then embraces Arjuna, and says to him :

1637 ff.—*Devadevaḥ uvācha | Naras tvam pūrva-dēho vai Nārāyaṇa-sahāyavān | Badaryām taptavān ugrām tapo varshāyutān bahūn | tvayī vā pāramam tejo Viṣṇau vā puruṣhottame | yuvābhyām puruṣhāgryābhyām tejasū dhūryate jagat | Sakrābhisheke sumahad dhanur jalada-niḥśvanam | pragrihya dānavāḥ śūstās tvayā Kṛṣṇeṇa cha prabho ityādi* | "Thou wast Nara in a former body, and with Nārāyaṇa for thy companion, didst perform dreadful austerity at Badari for many myriads of years. Either in thee is the highest power, or in Viṣṇu the supreme Puruṣa. By you twain, the chief of men (or Puruṣas), through your power, the world is upheld. At the inauguration of Śakra (Indra), the Dānavas were chastized by thee and Kṛṣṇa, when thou hadst grasped a great bow resounding like the clouds."

Mahādeva then offers Arjuna the choice of a boon. Arjuna asks the Pāsupata weapon (v. 1643), which Mahādeva gives him (v. 1650), though he cautions him against discharging it rashly, as it might destroy the whole world. Arjuna accordingly receives the weapon (v. 1656).

Again, in the Udyoga-parvan (vv. 1917 ff.) it is related that Bhīṣma informed Duryodhana that on one occasion the gods of different classes came to Brahmā, and the narrative then proceeds (vv. 1920 ff.):

Namaskṛītyopajagmus te loka-vṛiddham Pitāmaham | parivārya cha vikṣeṣam paryāsata divaukasaḥ | teshām manas cha tejaschāpy ādadānāv itaujasū | pūrva-devau vyatikrāntau Nara-Nārāyaṇāv riṣiḥ | Vṛihaspatīḥ

²²⁷ This word is explained in Böhlingk and Roth's Lexicon as a spot to the right of the altar, where the sacrificial vessels are cleansed. It is mentioned in Śāyana's commentary on R. V. i. 1, 4: and (as Prof. Aufrecht has pointed out to me) it occurs in the Vāj. Sanh. v. 32, where the commentator defines it as the place where the (sacrificial) vessels are washed (*mārjalyaḥ | tatra hi pūtrāni prakṣhālyānte*).

tu paprachha Brahmāṇaṁ kāv imāv iti | bhavantaṁ nopatishṭhete tau naḥ
 saṁsa Pitāmaha | Brahmā uvācha | yāv etau prithivīm dyāncha bhāsa-
 yantau tapasvinau | jvalantau rochamanau cha vyāpyāsītau (-nav?) mahā-
 balau | Nara-Nārāyaṇāv etau lokāl lokāṁ samāgṛhitau | ūrjītau svena
 tapasā mahāsattva-parākramau | etau hi karmaṇā lokāṁ nandayāṁśatur
 dhruvam | dvīdhā-bhūtau mahā-prajṇau viddhi brahman parantapau |
 asurāṇāṁ vināśāya deva-gaṇḍharva-pūjītau | Vaiśampāyanaḥ uvācha |
 jagūma Sakras tach ohhrutvā yatra tau tepatas tapaḥ | sārḍhaṁ deva-
 gaṇaiḥ sarvair Vṛihaspati-purogamaiḥ | tadā devāsūre yuddhe bhaye jāto
 divaukasām | ayāchata mahātmānau Nara-Nārāyaṇau varam | tāv abru-
 tāṁ vṛiṇīshveti tadā Bharata-sattama | athaitāv abravīch ohhakraḥ
 sahyāṁ naḥ kriyatām iti | tatas tau Sakram abrutām karishyāvo yad
 ichhāsi | tūbhyāncha sahitaḥ Sakro vijigye daitya-dānavān | Naraḥ Indrasya
 sangrāme hatvā śatrūn parantapaḥ | Paulomān Kalakanjāṁścha sahasrāṇi
 satāni cha | esha bhrānte rathe tishṭhan bhallenāpāharach ohhiraḥ |
 Jambhasya grasamāṇasya tadā hy Arjunam āhave | esha pāre samudrasya
 Hiraṇyapuram ūrujat | jītvā shasṭīṁ sahasrāṇi Nivṛtakavachān raṇe |
 esha devān sahendrena jītvā para-purāṇajāyāḥ | atarpayad mahābūhur
 Arjuno Jātavedasam | Nārāyaṇas tathaivātra bhūyaśo 'nyān jaghāna ha |
 evam etau mahā-vīryau tau paśyata samāgatau | Vāsudevārjunau vīrau
 samavetau mahārathau | Nara-Nārāyaṇau devau pūrva-devāv iti brūtīḥ |
 ujeṣṇau mānuṣhe loko sendrair api surāsuraīḥ | esha Nārāyaṇaḥ Kṛishṇaḥ
 Phālgunaś cha Naraḥ smṛitaḥ | Nārāyaṇo Naraś chaiva sattvam ekam
 dvīdhū-kṛītam | etau hi karmaṇā lokān āśnuvāte 'kṣhayān dhruvān | tatra
 tatraiva jāyete yuddha-kāle punaḥ punaḥ | tasmāt karmaiva kartavyam
 iti hovācha Nāradaḥ | etad hi sarvaṁ āchashṭa Vṛishṇi-chakrasya veda-
 vit | śankha-chakra-gadā-hastam yadā drakshyasi Keśavam | paryūda-
 dānaṁ chāśtrāṇi bhīma-dhanvānam Arjunam | sanātānau mahātmānau
 kṛishṇāv eka-rathe sthitau | Duryodhana tadā tāta smartāsi vachanam
 mama |

“Doing obeisance, the gods approached the Progenitor, the chief (or ancient) of the worlds; and encompassing, they sat around the lord of all. The two ancient and surpassing gods, the rishis Nara and Nārāyaṇa, deprived them, as it were, of thought and of strength by their splendour. Vṛihaspati inquired of Brahmā, ‘Tell us, O Progenitor, who these two are who do not approach thee.’ Brahmā said: ‘These devotees of mighty strength, burning and shining, who sit pervading

and illuminating the earth and the sky, these are Nara and Nārāyaṇa, who have travelled from world to world, strong by their own austerity, of great dignity and valour. These two have perpetually gladdened the world by their deeds. Know, O Priest, that these, destroyers of their foes, of great intelligence, adored of gods and Gandharvas, have become twain for the destruction of the Asuras.' Having heard this, Indra, accompanied by all the hosts of gods, headed by Vṛihaspati, went to the place where these two devotees were performing austerity. Alarm having been at that time excited among the celestials by a war between the gods and Asuras, he (Indra) begged of the great Nara and Nārāyaṇa a boon. They replied, 'Choose.' Then Indra said, 'Let us be delivered.' They answered Indra, 'We will do what thou desirest.' And with their assistance Indra conquered the Daityas and Dānavas. Nara, the vexer of foes, having slain in battle the enemies of Indra, thousands and hundreds of Paulomas and Kālakanjas,—he, standing in a whirling chariot, cut off the head of Jambha,²²⁸ who was swallowing up Arjuna in battle. He demolished Hiranyapura (or the city of gold), on the other side of the ocean, having slain in battle sixty thousand Nivātakavachas. The large-armed Arjuna, conqueror of hostile cities, having, along with Indra, overcome the gods, satiated Jātavedas (Agni,) [with his oblations]. In like manner Nārāyaṇa slew many others. Thus behold those twain arrived—those twain who are of so great strength, Vāsudeva and Arjuna, united together, riders on great cars, Nara and Nārāyaṇa, the deities, the ancient deities, as it is reported, invincible in the world of mortals even by Indra and the other gods and Asuras. This Nārāyaṇa is Kṛishṇa, and Nara is called Phālguna (Arjuna). Nārāyaṇa and Nara are one being, divided into twain. These two through their works pervade the undecaying and perpetual worlds. They are born at different places at the time of battle again and again. Wherefore Nārada said that works are to be performed. All this he (Nārada) who knew the Veda said to the army of the Vṛishṇis. When thou shalt see Keśava (Kṛishṇa) with his shell, discus and club, and Arjuna with the dreadful bow, assuming his arms, these two eternal and glorious beings, of dark complexion, mounted on one car,—then, dear Duryodhana, thou shalt remember my words." (Compare the same warning given in p. 218.)

²²⁸ The name of a demon. It will occur again below.

It is narrated in another part of the same Udyoga-parvan (vv. 3459-3488) that, in order to persuade the Kurus to adopt moderate counsels by showing the great power of Arjuna and Kṛishṇa, Paraśu-rāma told them another story about the two rishis Nara and Nārāyaṇa. There was formerly, he says, an universal sovereign named Dambhodbhava, who had an overweening conceit of his own prowess. Being told by his independent Brāhmins that there were two ascetics whom he could not match, viz. Nara and Nārāyaṇa, he proceeded with his army to the mountain Gandhamādana, where he found the emaciated saints, and challenged them to fight. They tried to put him off by saying that they were divested of all earthly passions, and lived in an atmosphere of peace. Dambhodbhava, however, insisted on fighting, when Nara took a handful of straws, and defied him. With these arms he neutralized all the arrows of Dambhodbhava's host, and as the straws whitened all the air, and penetrated into the eyes, ears, and noses of the assailants, Dambhodbhava was soon forced to fall at Nara's feet, and sue for peace. Being admonished by his conqueror to be more humble in future, he departed homeward, and ever after led a righteous life.

The next passage on the same subject is from the Droṇa-parvan, vv. 419 ff.:

*Arjunaḥ Keśavasyātmā Kṛishṇo 'py ātmā Kīrīṭinaḥ | Arjune vijayo
nityaṁ Kṛishṇe kīrtiścha śāsvatī | sarvesho api cha lokeshu Bibhatsur
aparājitaḥ | prādhānyenaiva bhūyishṭham ameyāḥ Keśave guṇāḥ | mohād
Duryodhano Kṛishṇaṁ yo na vettiha Keśavam | mohito darva-yogena
mrityu-pāśa-puraskṛitaḥ | na veda Kṛishṇaṁ Dāsārhaṁ Arjunaṁ chaiva
Pāṇḍavam | pūrva-devau mahātmanau Nara-Nārāyaṇāv ubhau | ekāt-
mānau dvīdhā-bhūtau dṛiśyete mānushair bhūvi | manasā 'pi hi durdhar-
shau senām etāṁ yaśasvinau | nāśayētām ihoḥhantau mānushatoūcha cha
noḥhataḥ |*

“Arjuna is the soul of Keśava (Kṛishṇa), and Kṛishṇa too is the soul of Kīrīṭin (Arjuna). Victory abides perpetually with Arjuna, and eternal renown with Kṛishṇa. And even in all worlds Arjuna is unconquered. Through his pre-eminence there are infinite virtues in abundance in Keśava. [The reason why] Duryodhana, through infatuation, does not know Kṛishṇa, is that, deluded by destiny, and involved in the bonds of death, he does not recognize Kṛishṇa the

Dāsārha, and Arjuna the Pāṇḍava. The former gods, the two mighty ones, Nara and Nārāyaṇa, though, in reality, one in nature, are by men on earth seen separated into two. These illustrious [beings], who are invincible even in imagination, could, if they desired, destroy this army, but from their humanity they do not desire it."

Again, in the Bhishma-parvan, vv. 2932 ff., Bhishma exhorts Duryodhana to come to terms with the Pāṇḍavas, who, he says, are invincible, in consequence of Kṛishṇa's protection. To illustrate Kṛishṇa's divine greatness, Bhishma goes on to tell a story of his being celebrated by Brahmā in a hymn (2944 ff.), and entreated to become incarnate in the tribe of the Yadus, for the establishment of righteousness, the destruction of the Daityas, and the preservation of the world (2964 f.). Viṣṇu assents to Brahmā's request, and disappears. Being then asked by the attendant gods and rishis who it was that he had just worshipped, Brahmā replies as follows (2978 ff.):

*Yat tat param bhavishyancha bhavitū yachha yat param | bhūtātma
yah prabhuṣ chaiva Brahma yach cha param padam | tenāsmi kṛita-saṁ-
vādaḥ prasannena surarshabhāḥ | jagato 'nugrahārthāya yāchito me
jagat-patiḥ | "mānuṣaṁ lokam ātiśṭha Vāsudevaḥ iti śrutaḥ | asuraṇām
badhārthāya sambhavasva mahitale | sangrāme nihatāḥ ye te daitya-dānava-
rākshasāḥ | te ime nṛishu sambhūtāḥ ghora-rūpāḥ mahābalaḥ | teshāṁ
badhārtham bhagavān Nareṇa sahito bali | mānuṣīm yonim āsthāya cha-
rishyasi mahi-tale" | Nara-Nārāyaṇau tau tu purāṇau ṛishi-sattamau |
ajeyau hi raṇe yau tau sametair amarair api | sahitaṁ mānuṣhe loka
sambhūtāv amita-dyuti | mūdhās te tau na jānanti Nara-Nārāyaṇāv
ṛishi | yasyāham ātmajo Brahmā sarvasya jagataḥ patiḥ | Vāsudevo
'muneyo vaḥ sarva-loka-maheśvaraḥ | tathā manushyo 'yam iti kadāchit
sura-sattamāḥ | nāvajneyo mahāvīryaḥ śankha-śakra-gadā-dharaḥ | etat
paramakaṁ guhyam etat paramakam padam | etat paramakam Brahma
etāt paramakaṁ yaśaḥ | etad aksharam avyaktam etach chhāśvatam eva
cha | etat Puruṣa-sanjño vai giyate jñāyate na cha | etat paramakaṁ
tejaḥ etat paramakaṁ sukham | etat paramakaṁ satyaṁ kīrtitaṁ Viśva-
karmaṇā | tasmāt surāsuraib sarvaiḥ sendraiḥ chāmita-vikramaḥ | navaj-
neyo Vāsudevo mānuṣho 'yam iti prabho | yaś cha mānuṣa-mātro 'yam
iti brūyāt sa manda-dhiḥ | Hṛishikeśam avajñānāt tam āhuḥ puruṣādha-
mam | taṁ yoginaṁ mahātmānam pravṛiṣṭam mānuṣhīm tanum | yo
'vamanyed Vāsudevaṁ tam āhuḥ tūmasaṁ janāḥ | devaṁ charācharātmā-*

*nam śrīvatsāṅkaṁ suvarohasam | padma-nābhaṁ na jñāti tam āhu-
tāmasaṁ janāḥ | kirīṭa-kaustubha-dharam mitrāṇām abhayankaram |
avajānan mahātmānaṁ ghore tamasi majjati | . . . 3002 : Vārīto 'si
purā tāta munibhir bhāvitātmabhiḥ | mā gachha jaṁbyugaṁ tena Vāsu-
devena dhanvinā | Pāṇḍavaib sārddham iti yat tat tvam mohād na budh-
yase | manye tvāṁ Rākshasaṁ krūraṁ tathā chāsi tamo-vṛitāḥ | tasmād
dvishasi Govindam Pāṇḍavancha Dhananjayam | Nara-Nārāyaṇav devau
ko 'nyo dvishyād hi mānavaḥ |*

“That being who is supreme, who is to be, who shall continue to be supreme, who is the soul of beings, and the lord, and who is Brahma, the supreme existence,—it is with him, propitious, that I have been conversing, O eminent deities. The lord of the world was entreated by me [in these words] to show favour to the world: ‘Do thou, celebrated as Vāsudeva, appear in the world of men: be born on earth for the slaughter of the Asuras. The Daityas, Dānavas, and Rākshasas who have been slain by thee in battle, they are these who have been born among men, horrible in form and great in might. To slay them, thou, the divine and mighty being, accompanied by Nara, having entered a human womb, wilt act upon earth.’ Those ancient and most excellent of rishis, Nara and Nārāyaṇa, who are invincible in battle even by the united immortals, and who are of boundless splendour, have been born together in the world of men. Those fools do not know these rishis, Nara and Nārāyaṇa. He of whom I, Brahmā, the master of the whole world, am the son, that Vāsudeva, the lord of all the worlds, is to be propitiated by you. Never, O most excellent deities, is the potent bearer of the shell, the discus, and the club, to be slighted as a mere man. This Being is the highest mystery, this the highest existence, this the highest Brahmā, this the highest renown. This Being is the undecaying, the undiscernible, the eternal. This Being which is called Puruṣa is hymned and is not known. This Being is celebrated by Viśvakarman as the highest power, as the highest joy, and as the highest truth. Wherefore Vāsudeva of boundless might is not to be contemned by the deities, including Indra, or by the Asuras, as a [mere] man. Whoever says that he is a mere man is dull of comprehension: from his contempt of Hrishikeśa they call such a person the lowest of men. Whoever despises Vāsudevā, that great contemplator who has entered a human body,—men call that person

one full of darkness. Whoever is ignorant of the glorious god whose self is the world, whose mark is the śrīvatsa, from whose navel sprang the lotus,—men call that person a man full of darkness. Despising that great being who wears the diadem and jewel (*kaustubha*), who relieves his friends from fear, a man is plunged in horrible darkness."²²⁹

Bhīshma then says to Duryodhana (v. 3302): "Thou wast formerly, my son, prohibited by the contemplative munis [who said]: 'Engage not in battle with that archer Vāsudeva and the Pāṇḍavas.' Since thou, through infatuation, regardest not this [prohibition], I look upon thee as a cruel Rākshasa, and thou art enveloped in darkness. It is for this reason that thou hatest Govinda (Kṛishṇa) and the Pāṇḍava Dhananjaya (Arjuna). For what other man could hate the gods Nara and Nārāyaṇa?"

The next passage is from the Śānti-parvan, where Kṛishṇa, after describing many of his own other forms and functions, is introduced as saying (vv. 13265 ff.):

*Purā 'ham ālmajāḥ Pārtha prathitaḥ kāraṇāntare | Dharmasya Kuru-
śārdūla tato 'haṁ Dharmajāḥ smṛitaḥ | Nara-Nārāyaṇau pūrvam tapas
tepatuḥ aryayam | dharma-yūnaṁ samārūḍhau parvate Gandhamādane |
tat-kāla-samaye chaiva Dakṣa-yajno babhūva ha | na chaivākālpayad
bhāgaṁ Dakṣo Rudrasya Bhārata | tato Dadhīchi-vachanād Dakṣa-
yajnam apāharat | sasarja śulāṁ kopena prajvalantam mukur mukurḥ |
tach chhūlam bhasmasāt kṛtvā Dakṣa-yajnaṁ sa-vistaram | āvayoḥ
sahasā "gachhad Vadary-āśramam antikāt | vegena mahatā Pārtha patad
Nārāyaṇorasi | tatas tat-tejasā "viśṭāḥ keśāḥ Nārāyaṇasya ha | ba-
bhūvur munjavarnās tu tato 'ham munja-keśavān | tachcha śulāṁ vinirddh-
ūtaṁ hūmkāreṇa mahātmanā | jagūma Sankara-karaṁ Nārāyaṇa-
samāhatam | atha Rudraḥ upādāvat tāv riśīḥ lupasā 'nvitau | tataḥ
enam samudbhūtaṁ kaṇṭhe jagrāha pūṇinā | Nārāyaṇaḥ sa viśvātmā
tenāsya śiti-kaṇṭhatā | atha Rudra-vighātārtham iśhikāṁ Naraḥ uddh-
arat | mantraiś cha saṁyuyojāsu so 'bhavat paraśur mahān | kehiptas cha
sahasā tena khaṇḍanam prāptavāṁs tadā | tato 'haṁ ['yam?] Khaṇḍa-
paraśuḥ smṛitaḥ paraśukhaṇḍanāt | . . . 13278. tayoḥ saṁlagnayor
yuddhe Rudra-Nārāyaṇātmanoḥ | udvignāḥ sahasā kṛtsnāḥ sarva-lokāś
tadā 'bhavan | nāgrīhṇāt Pāvakaḥ subhram makhoṣhu suhutaṁ haviḥ |*

²²⁹ This passage seems to have a polemical aspect, as if aimed at some contemporaries of the author, who did not assign so high a dignity to Kṛishṇa.

*vedāḥ na pratibhānti sma ṛishikṇām bhāvitātmanām | devān rajas tamas
 chaiva samāvivīṣitus tadā | vasudhā sanchakampe cha nabhas cha vipa-
 phūla ha | nishprabhāni cha tejāṁsi Brahmā chaivāsana-ohyutaḥ | agāḥ
 chhoṣhuṁ samudras cha Himavāṁs cha vyaśṛyataḥ | tasmīn eva samut-
 panne nimitto Pāṇḍunandana | Brahmā vṛito deva-gaṇair ṛishibhiḥ cha
 mahātmaabhiḥ | ājagāmāsubhaṁ deśaṁ yatra yuddham avarata | so
 'njali-pragraho bhūtvā chatur-vaktro nirukta-gaḥ | uvācha vachanaṁ
 Rudraṁ "lokānām astu vai śivam | nyasyāyudhāni viśveśa jagato hita-
 kāmyayā | yad aksharam athāvyaktam īśaṁ lokasya bhāvanam | kūṣa-
 sthaṁ kartṛi nirdvandvam akarteti cha yaṁ viduḥ | vyakti-bhāva-gata-
 syāsya ekā mūrtir iyaṁ śubhā | Naro Nārāyaṇas chaiva jātau Dharma-
 kulodvahanau | tapasā mahatā yuktau deva-sreṣṭhau mahā-vratau | aham
 prasāda-jas tasya kutaschit karanāntare | tvāṁ chaiva krodha-jas tāta
 pūrva-sarge sanātanaḥ | mayā chu sārthaṁ varadaṁ vibudhaiḥ cha
 maharshibhiḥ | prasādayāsu lokānāṁ śāntir bhavatu mā chiram" |
 Brahmanā tv evam uktas tu Rudraḥ krodhāgnim utsṛijan | prasādayā-
 mūsa tato devaṁ Nārāyaṇam prabhum | śaranyāṁ cha jagāmādyāṁ
 varenyaṁ varadam prabhum | tato 'tha varado devo jita-krodho jiteṇ-
 driyaḥ | prītimān abhavat tatra Rudrena saha sangataḥ | ṛishibhir Bra-
 hmanā chaiva vibudhaiḥ cha supūjitaḥ | uvācha devam īśanam īśaḥ sa
 jagato Hariḥ | "yas tvāṁ vetti sa mām vetti yas tvām anu sa mām anu |
 nāvayor antaram kinchid mā te bhūd buddhir anyathā | adya-prabhṛti
 śrīratsaḥ sūlānto me bhavatu ayam | mama pāny-ankitaḥ chāpi śrīkanṭhas
 tram bhaviṣyasi" | evaṁ lakṣhaṇam utpādyā paraspara-kṛitaṁ tadā |
 sakhyāṁ chaivātulaṁ kṛitvā Rudrena sahitāḥ ṛishiḥ | tapas tepatur avya-
 grau viṛijya tridivaukasah | eṣa te kathitaḥ Pārtha Nārāyaṇa-jayo
 mṛidhe | nāmāni chaiva guhyāni niruktāni cha Bhārata | ṛishibhiḥ kathi-
 tāniha yāni sankīrtitāni te | evam bahu-vidhaiḥ rūpāis charāmīha
 vasundharām | Brahma-lokancha Kaunteya golokancha sanātanam | mayā
 tvāṁ rakṣito yuddhe mahāntam prāptavān jayam | yas tu te so 'grato
 yāti yuddhe sampraty upasthite | taṁ viddhi Rudraṁ Kaunteya deva-
 devam kapardinam | kālāḥ sa eva kathitaḥ krodhajeti mayā tava |
 nihātās tena vai pūrvaṁ hatavān asi yān ripūn | aprameya-prabhāvaṁ
 taṁ deva-devam Umā-patim | namaṣva devam prayato viśveśam Haram
 akshayam | ityādi |*

13265. "Formerly, son of Pṛithā, most excellent of the Kurus, I was
 celebrated on another occasion as the son of Dharma: and hence I was

called Dharmaja. In former times Nara and Nārāyaṇa, mounted on the chariot of righteousness, performed an undecaying penance, on the mountain Gandhamādana. At that conjuncture of time, the sacrifice of Dakṣha took place. Dakṣha did not then divide any share for Rudra, who in consequence, at the suggestion of Dadhichi, swept away the sacrifice of Dakṣha, and in his anger launched the trident blazing forth repeatedly. That trident, after reducing to ashes the sacrifice of Dakṣha with all its appurtenances, suddenly approached our hermitage at Badari, and fell with great impetus on the breast of Nārāyaṇa. The hair of Nārāyaṇa, penetrated by its glow, became of the colour of grass (*munju*): from which I am called Munjakeśavat. The trident being repelled by the great being with a yell went back into the hand of Sankara, when struck by Nārāyaṇa. Rudra then ran up to those austere rishis, when Nārāyaṇa, the soul of all things, with his hand seized him by the throat, when he had thus sprung up: hence his (Siva's) name of Śitikaṇṭha. Nara next raised a straw for the slaughter of Rudra, and applied to it sacred texts, whereby it speedily became a huge axe. Hastily hurled by him, the axe (*paraśu*) became shattered into fragments (*khaṇḍana*), from which shattering of the axe, he is called Khaṇḍaparaśu." Arjuna here interposes to ask who was victorious in this conflict;²²⁰ when Kṛishṇa proceeds: 13278. "When Rudra and Nārāyaṇa had become engaged in battle, all the worlds were instantly distressed; the fire did not receive the shining butter offered in the sacrifice; the vedas were not revealed to the contemplative rishis; [the qualities of] passion and darkness invaded the gods: the earth trembled, the sky became split; the luminaries lost their light; Brahmā fell from his seat; the ocean became dried up, and the Himavat wasted. When this prodigy had arisen, Brahmā, surrounded by the host of gods, and the magnanimous rishis, came to that disastrous place where the battle was raging. The four-faced god (Brahmā), the penetrator of mysteries, with joined hands, addressed these words to Rudra: 'Let the welfare of the worlds be [consulted]; put down thy weapons, lord of all, from goodwill to the universe. This is one auspicious form of him, now in the state of manifestation,—of him whom [sages] know as the undecaying, undiscernible [essence], the lord, the creator of the world, the supreme, the doer, unaffected by pleasure or pain, and not the doer,—[this I say is

²²⁰ See above, pp. 176 f.

one form of him, viz.], Nara and Nārāyaṇa, born in the race of Dharma, distinguished by intense austerity, eminent gods, great devotees. I was once on another occasion born as the offspring of his good pleasure, and in a former creation thou didst spring from his anger,²³¹ an everlasting [being]. Together with me and the gods and rishis, do thou speedily propitiate this bestower of boons; let the worlds have tranquillity without delay.' Being thus addressed by Brahmā, Rudra, abandoning the fire of anger, then propitiated the god Nārāyaṇa, the lord; and the god sought as his refuge the primeval, most excellent, boon-bestowing lord. Then the boon-bestowing god, who had conquered anger and overcome his senses, meeting Rudra, became gratified. Being worshipped by the rishis, by Brahmā, and by the gods, Hari, the lord of the world, addressed the god Īśāna (Mahādeva): 'He who knows thee knows me; he who loves (*lit.* favours) thee loves me.'²³² There is no distinction between us: do not thou entertain any other idea. From this day forward let this śrīvatsa of mine be the mark of the trident: and thou shalt be the śrikanṭha marked upon my hand.' Having thus created a mark devised by each for the other, and having joined an incomparable friendship with Rudra, the two rishis practised austerity undisturbed, after dismissing the gods. This, son of Pṛithā, which I have told thee, was the victory of Nārāyaṇa in battle: and [my] mysterious and unexplained names, too,—those which are celebrated by the rishis, have been declared to thee. In this manner do I frequent this earth and the world of Brahmā, and the everlasting Goloka, in manifold forms. By me thou hast been preserved in battle, and hast gained a great victory. But know, son of Kuntī, that he who goes before thee in the conflict which has now arrived, is Rudra, the god of gods, with spirally-braided hair. He, Time, has been declared by me to thee to be the offspring of my anger. The enemies whom thou formerly slewest were slain by him. Devoutly reverence him the god of gods, the lord of Umā, of boundless power, Hara, the undecaying lord of all."

Again, in the Sānti-parvan, Vaiśampāyana tells Janamejaya how Nārada, after returning from Sveta Dvīpa, saw the two saints, Nara and Nārāyaṇa (v. 13337):

²³¹ See verses 13140 and 13145 of the S'anti-parvan, quoted below.

²³² A similar expression has already occurred above, p. 230.

*Nipapāta cha khāt tūrṇaṁ viśālāṁ Vadarim anu | tataḥ sa dadṛśe
 devau purāṇāv riṣhi-sattamāu | tapas charantau sumahad ātma-niṣṭhau
 mahā-vratau | tejasā 'bhyadhikau sūryāt sarva-loka-virochanāt | śrīvatsa-
 lakṣhaṇau pūjau jaṭā-maṇḍala-dhārināu | jāla-pāda-bhujau tau tu pāda-
 yos chakra-lakṣhaṇau | vyūḍhoraskau dīrgha-bhujau tathā mushka-chatu-
 shkināu | śhaṣṭi-dantāv aṣṭa-dāśaṣṭrau meghaughā-saḍṛśa-svanau |
 svāsyau prithulalāṭau cha subhṛū su-hanu-nāsikau | ātapatreṇa saḍṛśe
 śirasī devayos tayoh | evaṁ-lakṣhaṇa-sampannau mahā-puruṣa-saṁjñitau |
 tau dṛiṣṭvā Nārado hṛiṣṭas tābhyaṁ cha pratipūjitah | svāgatenābhi-
 bhāṣhyātha pṛiṣṭas chānāmayaṁ tathā | babhūvāntargata-matir ni-
 rikṣhya puruṣhottamau |*

"He descended rapidly from the sky to the spacious Badari. There he saw the ancient gods, the two most excellent rishis, performing severe penance, self-sustained, great devotees, in splendour surpassing the sun which illuminates all the worlds, bearing the śrīvatsa mark, adorable, wearing a circle of matted hair, web-footed and web-armed, with the mark of the discus on their feet, broad-chested, long-armed, with four testicles, sixty teeth and eight grinders, with voices sonorous as a host of clouds, with beautiful countenances, broad foreheads, handsome eyebrows, chins, and noses. The heads of those two gods resembled umbrellas. Beholding them, distinguished by such marks, and named the two great males, Nārada rejoicing, and saluted by them in return, welcomed, and questioned in regard to his health, became absorbed in reflection, beholding those highest of persons." He then recollected to have previously seen them in the Sveta Dvīpa. Nara and Nārāyaṇa next ask him if he had seen in the Sveta Dvīpa the supreme Spirit, their own highest substance (*āvayoh prakṛtiḥ parā*). He replies that he had; and that now when he beheld them he beheld Him, as they were distinguished by all the same marks, in a manifested form, as Hari possessed in an invisible manner; and that he had on that occasion beheld them at the side of the deity (vv. 13351 ff. : *Adyāpi chainam paśyāmi yuvām paśyan sanātanaṁ | yair lakṣhaṇair upetaḥ sa Harir avyakta-rūpa-dhṛik | tair lakṣhaṇair upetau hi vyakta-rūpa-dharaṁ yuvām | dṛiṣṭvau yuvām mayā tatra tasya devasya pārsvataḥ*). Some further conversation ensues; and it is then related (v. 13397 f.) that Nārada remained a thousand years of the gods in their hermitage, worshipping the deity, and Nara and Nārāyaṇa.

V. In the following passage (which is commented upon by Lassen in his *Indian Antiquities*, 1st ed., i. 621 f., and note, p. 622; 2nd ed., pp. 768 ff.²³⁵) Kṛishṇa is represented as possessed of extraordinary prowess and superhuman powers; but he is not, unless it be in one or two places, represented as the supreme deity.

To show how little prospect the Kurus had of vanquishing the Paṇḍus, aided as the latter were by Kṛishṇa, Dhṛitarashṭra gives an account of the exploits of the Yādava chief:

²³⁵ His remarks are as follows:—"The history of Kṛishṇa in the Mahābhārata does not describe his juvenile life with the cowherds, and his numerous adventures with their wives, which at a later period were especially noticed and celebrated. On the other hand, victories over many kings and tribes are attributed to him, which possess no historical value, and are only important in so far as they represent him as a hero, and indicate that the Yādavas waged frequent wars with the tribes of ancient India. In a short enumeration of his feats (the passage quoted in the text) he is named Govinda, or the proprietor of cows, and it said of him that he grew up among the herds. None of the stories regarding him and the cowherds' wives are here mentioned; but another is introduced which describes him as a protector of the herds, inasmuch as he strangled with his arms a Dānava which in the form of a bull slaughtered the cattle. His proper and oldest name as the son of Nanda was probably Govinda. There must also have been stories about him in which he was represented as a leader of cowherds, for according to the Mahābhārata he supplied to Duryodhana (by whom he had been solicited to assist him in the great battle) thousands of cowherds, who are called the gopas of Nārāyaṇa. These take no share in the battle, and are very seldom mentioned.—See Udyoga-parvan, v. 130 ff.; and Droṇa-parvan, vv. 3255 ff., where the Nārāyaṇas, the cowherds, are spoken of along with the Kāmbojas, etc., as having been conquered by Karna, etc. (*Nārāyaṇas' cha gopulāḥ Kāmbojanincha ye gaṇāḥ | Karṇena vijitāḥ |*)

The Nārāyaṇas are also mentioned in the Droṇap. 762 and 759 (see Böhtlingk and Roth, s. v.).

Kṛishṇa, when applied to by Duryodhana, as well as by Arjuna, for aid in the impending conflict, promises succour to them both, but allows Arjuna the first choice:

Udyoga-parvan, vv. 147 ff.—*Mat-saṁhanana-tulyānāṁ * gopānāṁ arbudam mahat | Nārāyaṇāḥ iti khyātāḥ sarvāḥ saṅgrāma-yodhināḥ | te vā yudhā durādharahāḥ bhavanu ekasya sainikāḥ | ayudhyamānāḥ saṅgrāme nyastāstasro 'ham ekataḥ | ābhyāṁ anyatarāṁ Pūrtha yat te hṛidyatarāṁ malam | tad vṛiṇītām bhavān agro pravāryas tvam hi dharmataḥ |* "Let one of you either take those invincible soldiers, the great hundred millions of herdsmen called Nārāyaṇas, whose bodies are equal to my own, and who are all fighting men; or let him take, on the other hand, myself who do not engage in battle, and have laid aside my weapons. Do thou, son of Prithā, first choose the one of these two things which is most acceptable to thee; for thou art justly entitled to the preference."

Arjuna selects Kṛishṇa himself, "the unborn Nārāyaṇa, destroyer of his foes, who had been at his will born among men" (*Nārāyaṇam amitraghaṇm kamāj jñtam ajam nṛiṣu*), though he was not to fight. Duryodhana chose the army of warriors.

* The word *saṁhanana* occurs also in the Droṇa-parvan, v. 147.

Droṇa-parvan, 382.—*Dhṛitarāshṭraḥ uvācha | śṛiṇu divyāni karmāṇi*
Vāsudevasya Sanjaya | kṛitavān yāni Govindo yathā nānyaḥ pumān
kvachit | saṁvardhatā gopa-kule bālenaiva mahātmanā | vikhyāpitam
balam bāhvoḥ trishu lokeshu Sanjaya | Uchchhaiḥśravas-tulya-balaṁ vāyu-
vega-samaṁ jave | jaghāna Haya-rājānaṁ Yamunā-vana-vāsinam | Dāna-
vaṁ ghora-karmāṇaṁ gavām mṛityum ivottthitam | vṛiṣha-rūpa-dharam
bālye bhujābhyāṁ nijaghāna ha | Pralambhaṁ Narakaṁ Jambham
Piṣhaṁ vā 'pi mahāsuram | Muraṁ chāmara-sankāsam abadhīḥ pushka-
rekshaṇaḥ | tathā Kāmso mahātejāḥ Jarāsandhena pālitaḥ | vikramaṇaiva
Kṛiṣṇena saganāḥ pātito raṇe | Sunāmā raṇa-vikrāntaḥ samagrāksha-
hīnī-patīḥ | Bhoja-rājasya madhya-stho bhṛtā Kāmasya vīryavān |
Baladava-dvītyena Kṛiṣṇenāmitra-ghātinā | tarasvī samare dagdhaḥ sa-
saīnyaḥ S'ūrusena-rāṭ | Durvāsūḥ nāma vipraṁśis tathā parama-
kopanaḥ | ārādhitāḥ sadareṇa sa chāsmāi pradadau varān | tathā Gāndhāra-
rājasya sūtān vīraḥ svayamvare | nirjitya pṛithivī-pālān āvāhat pushka-
rekshaṇaḥ | amṛiṣhyamānūḥ rājāno yasya jātyāḥ hayāḥ iva | rathe vai-
vāhike yuktāḥ pratodena kṛita-vraṇāḥ | Jarāsandham mahābāhum upā-
yena Janārdanaḥ | pareṇa ghātayāmāsa samagrākshauihīnī-patim | Chedi-
rajāncha vikrāntaṁ rāja-senā-patim balī | arghe vivadamānancha jaghāna
paśu-rat tadā | Saubhaṁ dāitya-puraṁ svasthaṁ S'ūlva-guptaṁ durā-
sadam | samudra-kukshau vikramya pātayāmāsa Mādhravaḥ |
 400: *Praviśya makarāvāsaṁ yādobhir abhisamvṛitam | jigāya Varu-*
naṁ sankhye salilāntargatam purā | yudhi Panchajanyaṁ hatvā pātāla-
tala-vāsinam | panchajanyaṁ Hṛiṣhikeśo divyāṁ śankham avāptavān |
Khāṇḍave Pārtha-sakitas toshayitvā Hutāśanam | āgneyam astraṁ dur-
dharaṣhaṁ cakraṁ lebbe mahābalaḥ | Vainateyaṁ samāruhya trāsayitvā
'marāvatiṁ | Mahendra-bhavanād vīraḥ pārijātam upānayat | tachcha
marshitavān Sakro jānāṁs tasya parākramāt | rājnāṁ chāpy ajitāṁ
kanchit Kṛiṣṇeneha na sūsruma | yachcha tad mahad āścharyaṁ sabhāyām
mama Sanjaya | kṛitavān Puṇḍarikākshaḥ kas tad-anya śhārhati | labdha-
bhaktiā prasanno 'ham adrākshaṁ Kṛiṣṇam īśvaram | tad me suviditāṁ
sarvam pratyakṣham iva chāgamam | nūntaṁ vikrama-yuktasya buddhya
yuktasya vā punaḥ | karmaṇā śakyaḥ gantuṁ Hṛiṣhikeśasya Sanjaya |
tathā Gadaś cha S'ambascha Pradyumno 'tha Vidūrathaḥ |
 410: *Eṭe 'nye balavantaś cha Vṛiṣṇī-vīraḥ prahāriṇaḥ | kathanchit*
Pāṇḍavānikāṁ śraṇṇyuh samare sthitāḥ | ākūlāḥ Vṛiṣṇī-vīreṇa Kṛiṣṇena
mahātmānā | tataḥ samśayitāṁ sarvam bhaved iti matir mama | nāgāyuta-

*balo viraḥ Kailāsa-sikharopamaḥ | vana-mālī haṭi Rāmas tatra yatra Janārdanaḥ | yam āhuḥ sarva-pitaraṁ Vāsudevaṁ dvijātayaḥ | api vā hy eṣa Pāṇḍunām yotsyate 'rthāya Sanjaya | sa yadā tāta sannahyot Pāṇḍa-vārthāya Sanjaya | na tadā pratisaṁyoddhā bhavitā, tasya kṣehana | yadi sma Kuravaḥ sarvo jayeyur nāma Pāṇḍavān | Vārshneya 'rthāya teshām vai gṛhṇīyāt śastraṁ uttamam | tataḥ sarvān naravyāghro haṭvā nara-patīn raṇe | Kauravāṁś cha mahābāhuḥ Kuntyaś dadyāt sa medinīm | yasya yantā Hṛīṣhīkeśo yoddhā yasya Dhananjayaḥ | rathasya tasya kaḥ sankhye pratyāniko bhaved rathaḥ | na kenachid upāyena Kurūṇām drīṣyate jayaḥ | tasmād me sarvaṁ āchakṣhva yathā yuddham avartata |*²⁴⁴

“Dhṛitarāṣṭra says: Hear, Sanjaya, the divine acts of Kṛishṇa, which Govinda performed, such as no other person [ever did]. While he was growing up as a high-souled boy in the tribe of cowherds, the force of his arms was rendered famous by him in the three worlds. He slew the king of the Hayas [horses], dwelling in the woods of the Yamunā, equal to Uccaiḥśravas (the horse of Indra) in strength, and to the wind in speed. In his childhood he destroyed with his arms the Dānava, a doer of direful deeds, who arose, as it were, the Death of cattle, bearing the form of a bull. The lotus-eyed [hero] slew Pralambha, Naraka, Jambha and Piṭha, the great Asura, and Mura, resembling the immortals. So, too, Kansa, of great force, supported by Jarā-sandha, was, with his hosts, overthrown in battle by Kṛishṇa, through his valour. Sunāman, valiant in fight, the lord of a complete army, the brother of Kansa, who interposed for the king of the Bhojas, the bold and heroic prince of the Sūrasenas, was, with his army, burnt up in battle by Kṛishṇa, destroyer of his enemies, seconded by Balarāma. And a Brāhman rishi called Duvāsas, extremely irascible, was worshipped by him (Kṛishṇa), together with his wife, and bestowed on him boons.²⁴⁵ So, too, the lotus-eyed hero, having conquered the princes, carried off the daughter of the king of the Gāndhāras at the Swa-yamvara:²⁴⁶ and the princes, being unable to endure him, were

²⁴⁴ Towards the close of Dhṛitarāṣṭra's speech the following verse of a proverbial character occurs:—v. 429: *Pakvānām hi badhe Sūta vajrāyante triṇāny api* | “When men are ripe for destruction, even straws smite like thunderbolts.”

²⁴⁵ See the Anuśāsana-parvan, vv. 7402 ff., referred to above, p. 196.

²⁴⁶ Lassen, Ind. Alt. i., 622, first edition (p. 769, second edition), note, thinks this story has probably some foundation in fact, and adds that Nagnajit, king of the Gāndhāras, is mentioned in the Ait. Br., vii. 34. See Colebrooke's *Essays*, i. 46, and the second volume of this work, p. 353.

yoked like highbred horses to the bridal car, and wounded with the goad. Janārdana, by a clever device, caused Jarāsandha, the large-armed, lord of a complete army, to be slain.²³⁷ This hero also slaughtered like a beast the king of the Chedis (see above, p. 215), the valiant lord of a royal army, who quarrelled regarding the offering [made to Kṛishṇa]. Assailing Saubha, the self-supporting (*i.e.* flying) city of the Daityas, on the shore of the ocean, protected by the Śālva (king), and difficult to destroy, Mādhava overthrew it." [Then follows a list of numerous tribes, Angas, Bangas, etc., etc., conquered by Kṛishṇa.] v. 400: "Entering of old the ocean, filled with marine monsters, he overcame in battle Varuṇa, who had sunk within the waters. Having slain in battle Panchajanya dwelling in Pātāla, Hṛishīkeśa obtained the divine shell Pāṇchajanya. Having, along with Pārtha (the son of Prithā, Arjuna), propitiated Agni in Khāṇḍava, this mighty being acquired the irresistible fiery weapon, the discus.²³⁸ Mounted on Garuḍa, and terrifying Amarāvati (the city of Indra), this hero brought back the pārijāta from the abode of the elder Indra.²³⁹ And to this Śakra submitted, knowing his prowess. And we have not heard of any of the kings who has not been conquered by Kṛishṇa. Then who but Puṇḍarikāksha could have performed that very wonderful act which he did in my assembly? Through the faith which I had attained, I beheld Kṛishṇa, the lord, with delight; of all that I was well assured, and I obtained as it were a distinct vision. No one can by act attain to the limit of Hṛishīkeśa who is distinguished by valour as well as by wisdom. And Gada also, and Sāmba, and Pradyumna, and Vidūratha, [here follows a list of other warriors] these, and other powerful martial heroes of the Vṛishṇi tribe, summoned by the great Vṛishṇi hero, Keśava, will join in some way the host of the Pāṇḍavas, and stand up in the battle. Hence, in my opinion, everything will be doubtful. Wherever Janārdana is, there is also the hero Rāma, in strength equal to ten thousand elephants, resembling the summit of Kailāsa, wearing a garland of wild flowers, and carrying a plough. Or Vāsudeva, he whom the Brahmans call the universal father, will fight for

²³⁷ See the story as told in the Sabhā-parvan, vv. 848 ff.

²³⁸ Compare note 189, p. 191; and see Ādi-parvan, v. 8196, where the story is told.

²³⁹ See Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, pp. 585 ff. (vol. v., pp. 97 ff., of Dr. Hall's ed.).

the Pāṇḍavas. When he shall arm [for battle] on their behalf, no one shall then stand up to encounter him. Even if all the Kurus were to overcome the Pāṇḍavas, Vārshneya (Kṛishṇa) would on behalf of the latter seize his pre-eminent weapon; and having then slain all the princes and the Kauravas in battle, this great-armed and tiger-like man (*lit.* man-tiger) would bestow the earth on Kuntī. What chariot can stand in the conflict against that chariot of which Hrishikēśa is the driver, and on which Dhananjaya (Arjuna) fights? By no contrivance does the victory of the Kurus appear [to be possible]. Give me therefore a full account of the way in which the battle proceeded."

Then follow the verses which have been already quoted above in p. 235, *Arjunaḥ Keśavasyātmā*, "Arjuna is the soul of Keśava," etc.

Another account of Kṛishṇa's exploits is given in the Udyoga-parvan. It is there related that Sanjaya had been sent on an embassy to the Pāṇḍus, and that on his return he reported to the chiefs of the Kurus the defiant answer which Arjuna had given. The latter chief prophesied that Duryodhana would certainly repent having engaged in conflict with himself and Kṛishṇa (vv. 1863 ff.) He then enlarges as follows on the prowess of Kṛishṇa (vv. 1875 ff.):

Pūrvāhṇe mām kṛita-japyam kadāchid viprah provāchodakānte manojnam | kartavyam te dushkaram karma Pārtha yodhavyam te śatrubhiḥ Savyasāchin | Indro vā te harimān vajra-hastah purastād yātu samare 'rin vinighnan | Sugrīva-yuktena rathena vā te paśchāt Kṛishṇo rakshatu Vāsudevah | vavre chūham vajra-hastād Mahendrūd asmin yuddhe Vāsudevam sahāyam | sa me labdho dasyu-badhūya Kṛishṇo manye chaitad vihtaṁ daivatair me | sa bāhubhyūṁ sāgarān uttīrshed mahodadhīm salilasyāprameyam | tejāsvinam Kṛishṇam atyanta-śuraṁ yuddhena yo Vāsudevam jigīshet | giriṁ sa ichhet tu talena bhettum śilochayam svetam atipramānam | tasyaiva pāṇiḥ sa-nakho viśtryed na chāpi kinchit sa gīres tu kuryāt | agniṁ samiddham samayed bhujābhyām chandrancha sūryancha nivārayeta | hared devānām amṛitam prasahya yuddhena yo Vāsudevam jigīshet | yo Rukmiṇīm eka-rathena Bhojān utsādyā rājnah samare prasahya | uvāha bhāryūṁ yāsasā jvalantiṁ yasyūṁ jajne Rauhineyo mahātmā | ayaṁ Gāndhārīṁ tarasā sampramathya jīvā putrān Nagnajitah samagrān | baddham mumocha vinadamam prasahya Sudarśanam vai devatānām lalāmam | ayaṁ kapāṭhena jaghāna Pāṇḍyaṁ tathā

*Kalingān Dantakūre mamarda | anena dagdhā varsha-pūgān anāthā
 Vārāṇasī nagarī sambabhūva | ayaṁ sma yuddhe manyate 'nyair ajeyaṁ
 tam Ekalavyaṁ nāma Nishāda-rājam | vegeneva śailam abhihatya Jambhāḥ
 śete sa Kṛishṇena hatāḥ parāsur | tathograsenasya eutaṁ suduḥṣṭam
 Vṛishṇy-Andhakānām madhya-gataṁ sabhū-stham | apātayaḍ Baladeva-
 dvitīyo hatvā dadau chograsenāya rājyam | ayaṁ Saubhāṁ yodhayāmāsa
 evastham vibhishanaṁ māyayā Sālva-rājam | Saubha-dvāri pratya-
 grihāt śataghnīm dordhyaṁ kaḥ enaṁ visaheta martyaḥ | Prāgjyotiṣhaṁ
 nāma babhūva durgam puraṁ ghoram Asurānām asahyam | mahābalo
 Narakas tatra Bhaumo jahārādityāḥ maṇi-kuṇḍale śubhe | na taṁ devāḥ
 saha Śakreṇa śekuḥ samāgataḥ yudhi mṛityor abhitāḥ | dṛiṣṭvā cha taṁ
 vikramaṁ Keśavasya balaṁ tathaivāstram avāraṇtyam | jñanto 'sya
 prakṛitiṁ Keśavasya nyayojayan dasyu-badhāya Kṛishṇam | sa tat karma
 pratīśūtrācā duḥkaram aśvavyavān siddhiṣhu Vāsudevaḥ | nirmochana
 śaḥ sahasrāṇi hatvā sanchhidya pāsān sahasā kṣhurāntān | Muraṁ
 hatvā vinihatyaugha-rakeḥo nirmochanaṁ chāpi jagāma vīraḥ | tatraiva
 tenāya babhūva yuddham mahābalenātibalasya Viṣṇoḥ | śete sa Kṛishṇena
 hataḥ parāsur vāteneva mathitāḥ karṇikāraḥ | āhṛitya Kṛishṇo maṇi-
 kuṇḍale te hatvā cha Bhaumaṁ Narakam Murancha | śrīyā vṛito yaśasā
 chaiva vidvān pratyājagamāpratima-prabhūvaḥ | asmai varūn adadaṁs
 tatra devāḥ dṛiṣṭvā bhīmaṁ karma kṛitaṁ raṇe tat | "śramas cha te
 yudhyamānasya na syād ākāśe chāpsu cha te kramaḥ syāt | śastrāṇi
 gātre na cha te kramerann" ity eva Kṛishṇas cha tataḥ kṛitārthaḥ |
 evaṁ-rūpe Vāsudeve 'prameye mahābalo guṇa-sampat sadaiva | tam asa-
 hyaṁ Viṣṇum ananta-vīryam āśaṁsate Dhārtarāṣṭro vijetum |*

"Once, in the forenoon, when I had muttered my prayers, and concluded my ablutions, a Brahman addressed to me these pleasant words: 'Son of Prithā, thou hast a difficult work to do; thou hast to fight with thine enemies, O Savyasāchin (a name of Arjuna). Shall Indra with his steeds, and wielding the thunderbolt, go before thee in battle, smiting thy foes, or shall Kṛishṇa, the son of Vasudeva, with his car, to which Sugrīva (one of Kṛishṇa's horses) is yoked, protect thee from behind?' I elected to have in the combat Vāsudeva for an ally, rather than Mahendra, wielding the thunderbolt. Kṛishṇa was obtained by me as a helper in slaying the Dasyus, and I think that this was effected for me by the gods.* That man will try to stretch over the ocean, the immeasurable receptacle of waters, with his arms, who thinks to conquer

in battle the glorious and eminently heroic Kṛishṇa. If any one should attempt to split with his hand the white mountain (viz. Kailāsa), a vast pile of rocks, his hand and nails would be worn away, and he could produce no effect upon the mountain. That man would extinguish blazing fire with his arms, would stop the moon and sun, would daringly plunder the ambrosia of the gods, who should think to conquer Vāsudeva in battle,—[Vāsudeva] who having boldly destroyed in battle the Bhoja kings, carried off on the same car with himself Rukmiṇī his bride, shining in renown, of whom the great Rāukmīṇeya was born. He (Kṛishṇa) having by his prowess destroyed the Gāndhāras, having conquered all the sons of Nagnajit, forcibly released [king] Sudarśana, renowned even among the gods, who had been bound [by the sons of Nagnajit], and was making an outcry.²⁴⁰ He slew Pāṇḍya with the fragment of a door, and crushed the Kalingas in Dantakūra. Through him the city of Benares, which had been burnt, and remained for many years defenceless, sprang into existence. He regarded Ekalavya the king of the Nishāḍas as invincible by others in battle, [but slew him], having smitten him furiously with a rock. Jambha sleeps, bereft of life by Kṛishṇa.²⁴¹ Seconded by Baladeva, he also prostrated [Sunāman] the wicked son of Ugrasena standing in the midst of the assembly of the Vṛishṇis and Andhakas, and having slain him, gave the kingdom to Ugrasena. He conquered the self-supporting (i.e. flying) [city of] Saubha, and the king of the Śālvas, terrible from his magical powers, and arrested with his arms at the gate of Saubha the weapon Śataghni :²⁴² what mortal can assail him? There was an im-

²⁴⁰ One of the commentators says that Sudarśana was a certain king, and explains *devatānām latāmam* by *devatānām madhye prastam*, "approved among the gods." Another commentator says *latāmam* = *śiromāṇim*, "a head-jewel or ornament." The Bhāgavata Purāṇa, x. 34, 8 ff., tells a story of a Vidyādhara also named Sudarśana, who in consequence of a curse had been changed into a serpent, but who renewed his former shape on being touched by Kṛishṇa's foot.

²⁴¹ The construction and sense of this verse are not very clear.

²⁴² A weapon generally supposed to be a species of firearms, or a rocket, but also described as a stone set round with iron spikes.—Wilson's Dictionary. See also Williams's Sanskrit English Dictionary, s.v., and the end of note 189, page 191, above. A double account is given of the destruction of the flying (*kāmagā*) city of Saubha and of its king in the Vana-parvan. The story is first of all briefly given in vv. 615-635; and afterwards very diffusely in vv. 636-689. Kṛishṇa splits the city with his discus Sudarśana (v. 883), and kills the king of the Śālvas himself (v. 885).—See Lassen's Indian Antiquities, p. 615, first ed., p. 761, second ed.

pregnable, formidable, and unassailable castle of the Asuras, called Prāgjyotiṣa. Thither the powerful Naraka son of the Earth had carried off the beautiful jewelled earrings of Aditi.²⁴³ The assembled gods aided by Indra, fearless of death, could not [overcome] him in battle. But perceiving the valour, the strength, and the irresistible weapons of Keśava, and knowing his nature, they appointed him (Kṛishṇa) to slay the Dasyu. Vāsudeva, possessing divine power in his magical endowments (*aiśvaryavān siddhiṣhu*), undertook that difficult task. Having in the city Nirmochana slain six thousand [Asuras], and having violently cut asunder the nooses sharp as razors,²⁴⁴ having slain Mura and the Rākshasa Ogha, he proceeded to Nirmochana.²⁴⁵ There Viṣṇu of surpassing strength had a fight with the powerful foe; who, smitten by Kṛishṇa, sleeps lifeless, like a karnikāra²⁴⁶ tree overthrown by the wind. Having captured the jewelled earrings and slain Naraka, son of the Earth, and Mura, the wise Kṛishṇa of incomparable power, returned surrounded by splendour and renown. Then the gods having seen that terrible work which he had achieved in battle, conferred upon him these boons: 'Let no fatigue oppress thee when thou art fighting; let thy step traverse the sky and the waters; and let no weapons make any impression on thy body.' With these boons Kṛishṇa was satisfied. In Vāsudeva, who is of such a character, immeasurable, and of mighty strength, there is always an abundance of virtues. It is this irresistible Viṣṇu, of infinite power, whom the son of Dhṛitarāṣṭra hopes to overcome."

²⁴³ The story of this demon is told in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa.—See Wilson's translation, pp. 581 ff., or vol. v., pp. 87 ff. of Dr. Hall's ed.

²⁴⁴ These nooses are also mentioned in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa (see Wilson's translation, as in the last note) and in the Harivamśa, v. 6833. See Langlois's note to his French translation, p. 521, in which he refers to the Asiatic Researches, vol. xiii., p. 278 ff. In that article an account is given of the Phāusigars or Thugs, who murder their victims by throwing a noose. The writer refers in illustration to the Rāmāyaṇa, i. 29, 9 (Schlegel's edition), where three kinds of nooses are mentioned, the *dharma-pāśa*, the *kāla-pāśa*, and the *Varuṇa-pāśa*. In the Vana-parvan, 879, the epithet *kahurūta*, sharp as a razor, is applied to Kṛishṇa's discus.

²⁴⁵ See verse 4407 of this same parvan; *Nirmochane śhaṭṣahasāṅṅ pāśair baddhāṅ mahānūrāḥ* | This line evidently contains an allusion to the same story as is referred to in the text; and from a comparison of both passages I infer that Nirmochana is the name of a place. Bohtlingk and Roth s. v. do not recognize this signification.

²⁴⁶ *Pterospermum acerifolium*.

It will be noticed that Krishna is here represented as receiving various boons from the gods. It would appear, therefore, as if the author of this passage could not consistently have regarded him as one with the supreme deity.

The following passage from the Vana-parvan describes Krishna as a great devotee, as a performer of sacrifices, as a destroyer of hostile men and demons (referring to some of the legends already alluded to); and also in some places identifies him with the supreme spirit. Krishna, we are told, had gone with some of his clansmen to visit the Pāṇḍavas in the forest; and as he showed himself greatly incensed at the conduct of the Kurus, Arjuna, to appease him, related (needlessly, one would think, if he was regarded as the Supreme Deity) his exploits in former births (vv. 471 ff.): *Arjunaḥ uvācha | Daśa-varsha-sahasrāṇi yatra Sāyangriho muniḥ | vyacharas tvam purā Kṛishṇa parvate Gandhamādane | daśa-varsha-sahasrāṇi daśa-varsha-śatāni cha | pushkareṣu avasaḥ Kṛishṇa tvam apo bhakshayan purā | ūrḍhva-bāhur viśālāyām Vadaryam Madhusūdana | atishṭhaḥ eka-pādena vāyu-bhakshaḥ śatam samāḥ | avakṛishṭottarāsangaḥ kṛiṣo dhamani-santataḥ | āsiḥ Kṛishṇa Sarasvatyām satre dvādaśa-vārshike | Prabhāsam apy athāsādyā tirtham puṇya-janochitam | tathā Kṛishṇa mahātejāḥ divyaṁ varsha-sahasrikam (sic) | atishṭhas tvam yathaikena pādena niyama-sthitaḥ | loka-pravṛitti-hetoḥ tvam iti Vyāso mamūbravīt | kṣetra-jñaḥ sarva-bhūtānāṁ ādir antaḥ cha Keśava | nidhānam tapasām Kṛishṇa yajnas traṁ cha sanātanaḥ | nihatya Narakam Bhaumam ūḥṛitya maṇi-kuṇḍale | prathamotpāditaṁ Kṛishṇa medhyam āsvam avasṛijah | kṛitvā tat karma lokānāṁ ṛishabhaḥ sarva-loka-jit | abadhie tvām raṇe sarvān sametān daitya-dānavān | tataḥ sarveśvaratvaṁ cha sampradāya Sachī-pateḥ | mānusheshu mahābāho prādurbhūto 'si Keśava | sa tvām Nārāyaṇo bhūtvā Harir āsiḥ parantapa | Brahmā Somaś cha Sūryaś cha Dharmo Dhātū Yamo 'nalaḥ | Vāyur Vaisṛavaṇo Rudraḥ kālāḥ kham prithivī diśaḥ | ajaś chaśāchāra-guruḥ vrashtā tvam puruṣottama | parāyayaṁ devam ūrḍhvaṁ kratubhir Madhusūdana | ayajo bhūri-tejāḥ vai Kṛishṇa Chaitrarathe vane | śatām śata-sahasrāṇi svarṇasya Janārdana | ekaikasmīṁś tadā yajne paripūrṇāni bhāgasah | . . . Sāditaḥ Mauravāḥ pāsāḥ Nisunda-Narakau hatāu | kṛitaḥ kṣemaḥ puṇaḥ panthāḥ puram Prāgyjotisham prati | Jārāthyām Āhṛitiḥ Krāthaḥ Śiśupālo janaiḥ saha | Jarāsandhaś cha Saivyaś cha Śatadhanvā cha nirjitaḥ | tathā Parjanya-*

*ghoṣheṇa rathenādītya-varcṣasā | avāpsīr mahiṣīm bhojyām raṇe nirjītya Rukmīṇam | Indrayumno hataḥ kopād Yavanas cha Kaserumān | hataḥ Saubha-patiḥ Śālvas tvayā Saubhaṁ eha pātitaṁ | Irāvatyām hato Bhojaḥ Kārtavīrya-samo yudhi | Gopatis Tālaketuṣ cha tvā viṇihātāv ubhau | tāṁ cha Bhogavatīm punyām Rishikāṁ tāṁ Janārdana | Dvārakām ātmasāt kṛtvā samudraṁ gamayishyasi | na krodho na cha mātsaryam nānṛitam Madhusūdana | tvayi tiṣṭhātī Dāsārha na nrīṣaṁ-
syaṁ kuto 'nrījuḥ | āśīnaṁ chaitya-madhye tvām āpyamānaṁ sva-tejasā | āgamyā rishayaḥ sarve 'yāchantūbhayaṁ Achyuta |*

Vana-parvan, 471. "Formerly, Kṛishṇa, thou didst roam for ten thousand years on the mountain Gandhamādan, where the muni Sāyangriha was. Formerly thou didst dwell ten thousand and ten hundred years in ponds, subsisting upon water. Thou didst stand on the spacious Badari a hundred years with thy arms aloft, on one foot, subsisting on air, with thy outer garment thrown off, emaciated, with thy veins swollen. Going also to Prabhāsa, a sacred spot fit for holy men, thou stoodest glorious, Kṛishṇa, for a thousand years of the gods, on one foot, practising self-restraint, for the benefit of the world,—this Vyāsa declared to me. Thou, Keśava, art the spirit residing in men's bodies, the beginning and the end of all existences, the receptacle of austerities, and the eternal sacrifice. Having slain Naraka, the son of the Earth, and having carried off the jewelled earrings, thou didst let loose the first-produced sacrificial horse. Having performed that rite, chief of the worlds, and conqueror of all worlds, thou didst slay in battle all the assembled Daityas and Dānavas. And then, having conferred the lordship of the universe on Indra, thou, O great-armed, didst become manifested among mankind. Thou, being Nārāyaṇa, wert Hari, O vexer of thy foes. Thou, O Puruṣottama (or chief of Spirits, or Males), art Brahmā, Soma, Sūrya, Dharma, Dhātṛi, Yama, Anala (Fire), Vāyu, Kuvera, Rudra, Time, Sky, Earth, the Regions, the unborn, the lord of the world, the creator. Thou, Madhusūdana, Kṛishṇa, of great glory, didst with sacrifices worship the supreme, high, god in the forest of Chaitraratha. A hundred times a hundred thousands of gold were then severally told out in full tale at each sacrifice." [Here follow the verses quoted above, p. 136, beginning *Aditer api putratvam*, and ending *nihatāḥ śataśo 'surāḥ*]. The nooses of Muru were destroyed; Nisunda and

Naraka were slain; the way to the city Prāgjyotiṣha was again rendered safe. On the Jāruthi Āhvṛiti, Krātha, Sisupāla with his men, Jarāsandha, Śaivya and Śatadhanvan²⁴⁷ were conquered. So, too, having vanquished Rukmin in battle with thy car, resounding like Parjanya, and gleaming like the sun, thou didst obtain thy queen to be the object of thy love. (See above, p. 215.) Indradymna was slain by thee in thy wrath, and the Yavana Kaserumat, and Śālva, the lord of Saubha; and Saubha was thrown down. Bhoja, equal to Kārtavīrya²⁴⁸ in battle, was slain by thee on the Irāvati, as well as both Gopati and Tālaketu. And having subdued to thyself Dvārakā, thou wilt cause the holy Bhogavatī and the Rīṣikā to flow to the ocean. Neither anger, nor envy, nor falsehood, nor cruelty, abides in thee, Dāsārha (Krishna): how then canst thou be deceitful? The rishis came to thee, [Achyuta,] whilst thou wast sitting in the midst of the Chaitya (sacrificial ground), resplendent with thy own brightness, and begged of thee security. [Then follow some lines which have been quoted above, p. 229, beginning *Yugānte sarva-bhūtāni sankṣipyā*, etc.]

VI. Although, as we have already seen from various passages of the Mahābhārata and Purāṇas, Krishna is generally identified with Vishṇu, and Vishṇu with Brahma, or the supreme deity, yet in a text quoted above (p. 49) from the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, x. 33, 27, Krishna is spoken of as only a partial incarnation of the godhead. The same is the case in another passage in the first section of the same tenth book of the Bhāgavata. The king there says to Suka that he has heard from him the history of the kings of the solar and lunar races, and among them of Yadu. He then asks the sage to relate the achievements of Vishṇu, the creator and soul of all things, who became partially incarnate (*tatrāṁśenūvatīrṇasya Viṣṇor vīryāṇi śaṁsa naḥ | avatīrya Yadōr vaṁśe bhagavān bhūta-bhāvanaḥ | kṛitavān yāni viśvātmā tāni no vada vistarāt*). Suka in reply goes on to relate that the earth being afflicted by Daityas in the shape of proud princes, had, in the form of a cow, preferred her complaint to Brahmā, who had consequently gone with the other gods to supplicate the help of Vishṇu. Brahmā hears a voice in the sky :

²⁴⁷ See Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, pp. 428 ff. (vol. iv. pp. 80 ff. of Dr. Hall's ed.)

²⁴⁸ See the first volume of this work, pp. 460 ff.

Bhāgavata Purāṇa, x. i. 21 ff.—*Giraṁ samādhanu gagane samīritāṁ
nīṣamya Vedhās tridāsān uvācha ha | gām pauruṣhīm me śṛiṇutāmaraḥ
punar vidhīyatām āsu tathaiva māchiram | puraiva puṁsā (Īṣvareṇa,
Comm.) 'vadhṛito dhaṛa-jvaro bhavadbhir aṁśair Yaduśūpajanyatām |
sa yāvad uryyāḥ bharam īṣvareśvaraḥ sva-kāla-śaktiā kṣhapayamś chared
bhuvi | Vasudeva-grihe sūkṣhād bhagavān Puruṣhaḥ paraḥ | janishyate
tat-priyārthaṁ sambhavantu sura-striyaḥ | Vāsudeva-kalā 'nantaḥ sa-
haṣra-vadanah svarāt | agrato bhavitā devo Hareḥ priya-chikīrṣhaya |
Viṣṇor māyā bhagavati yayā sammohitaṁ jagat | ādiṣṭa prabhūṇā
'mśena kāryārthe sambhaviṣhyati |*

“Having, while in a state of contemplation, heard a voice uttered in the sky, Vedhas (Brahmā) said to the gods: ‘Hear from me, immortals, the voice of Puruṣha, and then speedily act so [as it enjoins]. The distress of the earth was already understood by Puruṣha. Do you, in portions of yourselves, be born among the Yadus, whilst he, the god of gods, walks upon the earth, removing her burthen by his destructive power. The supreme divine Puruṣha shall be born in his own person (sūkṣhāt) in the house of Vasudeva. To please him, let the wives of the gods be born. The infinite, thousand-faced, self-resplendent deity shall first become a portion of Vāsudeva, in order to gratify Hari. The divine Delusion of Viṣṇu, by which the world is deceived, being commanded by the lord, shall be born in a portion of herself to effect the desired objects.”

In the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, also, the incarnation of Viṣṇu is spoken of as that of a part, or even a part of a part. At the commencement of the fifth book of that work the following lines occur :

*Nripānām kathitaḥ sarvo bhavatā vaṁśa-vistaraḥ | Vaṁśānucharitaṁ
chaiva yathāvad anuvarṇitam | Aṁśavatāro brahmarṣhe yo 'yaṁ Yadu-
kulodbhavaḥ | Viṣṇos taṁ vistareṇāhaṁ śrotum ichohhāmy aśeṣhataḥ |
Chakāra yāni karmāṇi bhagavān Puruṣhottamaḥ | Aṁśāṁśenāvātīryor-
vyāṁ tatra tāni mune vada | Parīśaraḥ uvācha | Maitreya śrūyatām
etat yat priṣṭho 'ham iha tvayā | Viṣṇor aṁśāṁśa-sambhūti-charitaṁ
jagato hitam |*

“You have related to me the complete genealogy of the kings, and also the entire history of the races. I now wish, divine sage, to hear in full detail the particulars of the incarnation of a portion of Viṣṇu which took place in the tribe of the Yadus. Tell me, Muni, what acts

the divine Purushottama performed when he descended to the earth in a portion of a portion [of himself]. Parāśara replies: 'Hear, Maitreya, that which you have asked me, the history, beneficial to the world, of the birth of a portion of a portion of Vishṇu.'"

The sage proceeds to relate (see Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, pp. 493-497; pp. 249 ff. of the 4th vol. of Dr. Hall's ed.) how the earth had complained to Brahmā and the other gods that the Asura Kālanemi had revived in Kansa, and other demons also had been born as princes; so that she had to bear upon her surface many hosts of strong and haughty Daitya chiefs wearing celestial forms; and that she could not support the load. (V.P. v. 1. 12. *Etasminn eva kāle tu bhūri-bhārā-vapīḍitā | jagāma dharaṇī Merāu samāje tridivaukasām |* 25 | *akshauhīṇyo hi bahulāḥ divya-mūrti-dhritāṃ surāḥ | mahābalānāṃ dṛiptānāṃ daityendrāṇāṃ mamopari | * tad-bhūri-bhāra-pīḍartā na śaknomy amareśvarāḥ | vibhartum ātmanā 'tmānam iti vijnāpayāmi vaḥ | kriyatāṃ tat mahābhāgāḥ mama bhārāvātāraṇam | yathā rasātalaṃ nūhaṃ gachheyam ativihvalā*).²⁴⁰ Brahmā proposed that they should

²⁴⁰ The Greek writers, too, speak of the earth being burthened, but from a different cause, viz. with the load of men, and that Jupiter brought about the Trojan war for her relief. In the *Helena* of Euripides, vv. 38 ff., it is said: Πόλεμον γὰρ εἰσήνεγκεν Ἑλλήνων χθονὶ καὶ Φρυγί δυστήνοισιν, ὥς ὕλαν βροτῶν Πλήθους τε κουφίσειε μητέρα χθόνα, Γνωτὸν τε θείῃ τὸν κρείτιστον Ἑλλάδος. "For he brought on a war between the land of the Greeks and the unhappy Phrygians, that he might relieve mother Earth of the crowd and multitude of mortals, and make known the bravest man in Greece."

Similarly in the *Orestes* of the same author, vv. 1639 ff., it is said: Ἐπεὶ θεοὶ τῷ τῆσδε καλλιστεύματι Ἑλλήνας εἰς ἓν καὶ Φρύγας συνήγαγον, θανάτους ᾿ ἔθηκαν, ὥς ἀπαντοίῃεν χθονὸς Τρίβισμα θνητῶν ἀφθόνου πληρώματος. "Since the gods by means of her beauty brought the Greeks and Phrygians into conflict, and occasioned deaths, in order that they might remove from the Earth the grievance of being superabundantly replenished with mortals."

And in the *Scholia Minora* on the *Iliad*, i. 5 (quoted in Heyne's *Homer*, Oxford, 1821), we read: Ἄλλοι δὲ ἀπὸ ἱστορίας τινὸς εἰπον εἰρηκέναι τὸν Ὀμηρον φασὶ γὰρ τὴν γῆν βαρουμένην ὑπὸ ἀνθρώπων πολυπληθείας, μηδεμίας ἀνθρώπων βύσσης εὐσεβείας, αἰτῆσαι τὸν Δία κουφισθῆναι τοῦ ἔχθους. Τὸν δὲ Δία, πρῶτον μὲν ἐνθὺς ποιῆσαι τὸν Θηβαϊκὸν πόλεμον, δι' οὗ πολλοὺς πάνυ ἀπωλέσεν. ὕστερον δὲ πάλιν συμβούλῃ τῷ Μῶμῃ ἐχρήσατο, ἣν Διὸς βουλὴν Ὀμηρὸς φησιν. ἐπειδὴ οἶδός τε ἦν κεραυνοῖς ἢ κατακλυσμοῖς πάντας διαφθεῖραι, τοῦτο τοῦ Μῶμου κωλύσαντος, ὑποθεμένου δὲ αὐτῇ γράμας δύο, τὴν Θέτιδος θνητογαμίαν, καὶ θυγατρὸς καλὴν γίνυναι, ἐξ ὧν ἡμιφωτότερον πόλεμος Ἑλλήσι τε καὶ βαρβάροις ἐγένετο, οὕτω συμβῆναι κουφισθῆναι τὴν γῆν, πολλῶν ἀναιρεθέντων. ἡ δὲ ἱστορία παρὰ Στράβωνι τῷ τὰ Κύπρια πεποιηκότι, εἰπόντι οὕτως: Ἦν ὅτε μυρία φύλα κατὰ χθόνα πλαζόμενα Βαθυστέρου

resort to Vishṇu, "who is the spirit of all, and of whom the universe consists," and "who constantly, for the sake of earth, descends in a very small portion of his essence, to establish righteousness below" (v. 32. *sarvadaiva jagaty-arthe sa sarvātmā jaganmayah | svalpāṁśenā-avatīryorvyāṁ dharmasya kurute sthitiṁ*). The gods accordingly went to the milky sea, and lauded Vishṇu in a long hymn. Vishṇu was gratified by their praises, desired them to state their wishes, and assured them that these should be accomplished. Brahmā renewed his praises; and we are then told what happened when they were concluded:

58. *Evam sañstūyamānas tu bhagavān paramesvaraḥ | Ujjahārātmanaḥ keśau sita-kṛṣṇau mahāmune | Uvācha cha surān etau mat-keśau vasudhā-tale | Avatīrya bhuvō bhāra-kleśa-hūniṁ karishyataḥ | Surāścha sakalāḥ śāṁsair avatīrya mahātale²⁵⁰ | Kurvantu yuddham unmattaiḥ pūrvoṭpannair mahāsuraiḥ | Tataḥ kṣayam aśeshās te Daiteyāḥ dharaṇī-tale | Prayāsyanti na sandeho mad-drik-pāta-vichūṇitāḥ | Vasudevasya yā patnī Devakī devatopamā | Tasyāyam aśṭamo garbho²⁵¹ mat-keśo bhavitā surāḥ | Avatīrya cha tatrāyam²⁵² Kaṁsam ghātayitū bhuvī |*

πλάτος αἴης. Ζεὺς δὲ ἰδὼν ἐλήψε, καὶ ἐν πυκιναῖς πρᾶπτεσσι ζώνθετο κουφίσαι ἀνθρώπων παμβότορα γαῖαν, ῥαίσας πολέμου μεγάλην ἔριν Ἰλιδκοιοῖ. Ὅσρα κενόσκειεν θανάτῳ βάρος· οἱ δ' ἐν Τροίῃ Ἥρωες κτείνοντο. Διὸς δὲ τελέετο βουλή.

"Others have declared that Homer used the expression (Διὸς δὲ τελέετο βουλή) 'And the counsel of Zeus was fulfilled' in consequence of a certain history. For they relate that the Earth, being weighed down by the multitude of men, among whom there was no piety, prayed to Zeus to be relieved of the burthen; and that he had first caused the Theban war, whereby he destroyed very many. Afterwards he employed Momus as his counsellor, (an act) which Homer calls 'Zeus's consultation.' When he could have destroyed the whole of mankind by his thunderbolts or by deluges, but was dissuaded from doing so by Momus, who suggested two plans, the marriage of Thetis to a mortal, and the generation of a beautiful daughter, in consequence of which two events a war was occasioned between the Greeks and Barbarians,—it thus came to pass that the Earth was lightened, many being slain. The history is found in Stasinus, who composed the Cypria, and who speaks as follows: 'There was a time when myriads of races wandered over the Earth, on the breadth of the deep-bosomed land. But Zeus, beholding, pitied her, and in his wise mind resolved to relieve the all-nurturing Earth of [the load of] men, by exciting the great strife of the Ilian war, in order that by slaughter he might clear away the burthen: and the heroes were slain in the Troad. And the counsel of Zeus was fulfilled.'" See also above, p. 215, note 212; and Drogan., 2051 f.

²⁵⁰ Another MS. reads *mahātalam*.

²⁵¹ Another MS. reads *eka garbho 'shṭamas tasyāḥ*.

²⁵² Another MS. reads *tatrāham*.

*Kālanemiṁ samudbhūtam ityuktvā 'ntardadho Hariḥ | Adṛityāya tatas
tasmai prazipaty mahāmuno | Meru-prishtham suraḥ jagmur avatoru
cha bhūtale |*

"Being thus lauded, the divine Parameśvara plucked out two of his own hairs, a white and a black, and said to the deities, 'These two hairs of mine, descending to the earth, shall remove her burthen and sufferings. And let all the deities, descending in portions of themselves to the earth, fight against those mad Asuras who were formerly born. Then all these sons of Diti (the Asuras) shall no doubt perish, being annihilated by the glances of my eyes. This my hair, gods, shall become the eighth child of Devakī, the wife of Vasudeva who (Devakī) resembles the goddesses. And this [hair] descending there, shall destroy Kausa, the Kālanemi who has been born.' Having thus spoken, Hari disappeared. Having then bowed down to him the unseen, the gods went to the top of Meru, and descended on the earth."

The following are the remarks which Ratnagarbha, one of the commentators on the Vishṇu Purāṇa, makes on the first of the preceding passages (p. 254), and which have reference to the sequel also :

"*Chakāra*" iti | *tatra Kṛishṇāvatāre ati-pariokhinna-manushyākāra-
līlā-vigraheṇāvīrbhāvād aṁśaṁśena ity uktam upaohārāt | na tu śakti-
hrāseṇa Kṛishṇādy-avatāreṣu api viśva-rūpa-darśana-sarvaisvarya-
ukteḥ | Nanu aṁśino 'mśoddhāreṇa śakty-ādi-hrāsaḥ tathā 'mśasyāpi tad-
apekṣhya alpa-śaktitvādikaṁ dhānya-rāśy-ādi-vibhāgaḥ iva prasajyeta iti
ched na | prakāśa-svarūpe tad-abhāvāt | pradīpasya hi tan-mūlaka-dīpānta-
rasya vā upādhi-bhede 'pi śakty-ādi-sāmya-darśanāt "pūrṇam adaḥ
pūrṇam idam pūrṇāt pūrṇaṁ udachyate | pūrṇasya pūrṇam ādya
pūrṇam evāvāśishyate"* itī śruteḥ | "*param Brahma narakṛiti gūḍham
param Brahma manushya-lingaṁ Kṛishṇas tu bhagavān svayam*" ityādi
vākyobhyaś cha | *yas tu "mat-keśau vasudhā-tale"* ity-ādāv "*ayam
Kāmeṣaṁ ghātayitā*" ity atra keśa-vyapadeśaḥ sa Brahmanāḥ paripūr-
ṇasya bhū-bhāra-haraṇa-rūpaṁ kāryam aty-alpa-yantra-sādhyaṁ iti
khyāpayituṁ na tu keśayor Rāma-Kṛishṇatvaṁ vaktum | jaḍayor keśayor
tad-dehakahotrājnatvābhāvena tat-kāryaṁ kartum aśaktatvāt | keśātma-
kāyayodbhava-Rāma-Kṛishṇa-dehāv āditya [āviśya ?] bhagavān eva tat
tat karishyati iti ched om iti brāmaḥ phalato 'viśeṣāt "*kṛishṇāśṭamyaṁ
aham nīti*" iti svayam evoktatodeḥ cha ity alaṁ vistarēṇa |

"Purushottama is here figuratively said to have become incarnate with a portion of a portion of himself, because in the Kṛishṇa incarnation he was manifested in a merely sportive body in the very circumscribed form of a man, and not because of any diminution of his power, since even in the Kṛishṇa and other incarnations he is said to have shown himself in every possible form, and to have possessed all divine power, and so forth. But is it not the case that if a portion is taken from a whole composed of parts, there is a decrease of power, etc. [in that whole], and that thus an inferiority of power will attach to the portion relatively to the whole, just as when a heap of grain, or any other such whole, is divided? I answer, No; since such a diminution does not occur in him whose nature is light; for though there is a seeming difference in the individuality of one lamp, and of another lamp derived from it, yet an equality of power is perceived in each; agreeably to the text from the Veda (the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiv. 8, 1, p. 1094= Bṛih. Āraṇyaka Upan. beginning of adhyāya 7, p. 948 of ed. in Bibliotheca Ind.), 'That is full, and this is full; a full arises out of a full: if a full be taken from a full, a full remains';²³³ and also agreeably to such texts as this, 'The supreme Brahma with the form, and with the characteristics, of a man, is a great mystery; but Kṛishṇa is the lord himself.' And the employment of the term 'hairs' in the words, 'My hairs shall descend to the earth,' and 'This hair shall slay Kansa,' etc., is intended to signify that the task of removing the earth's burthen was such as Brahma in all his plenitude could effect by a very slight instrumentality, and not to assert that the two hairs were identical with [Bala]rāma and Kṛishṇa: for two insensible hairs, not being conscious spirits animating the bodies of those two persons, could not fulfil their task. If it be said that the lord occupying the bodies of Balarāma and Kṛishṇa, which were produced by the magical operation of the hairs, will do so and so, we reply, 'Yes, for there is no difference in the result, and because he himself said, 'I [shall be born] on the

²³³ See Dr. Roer's translation of this verse, with his explanatory note at p. 247 of the Bibliotheca Indica, vol. ii., part iii. The Commentary on the verse in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, p. 1157 of Weber's edition, may also be consulted. The Atharva-veda has the following verse, x. 8, 29: *Pūrṇat pūrṇam udaśhati pūrṇam pūrṇena sikhate | uśo tad adya vidyūma yatas tat parishichyate* | "He takes a full from a full: the full is sprinkled with the full: and may we to-day know that from which that is sprinkled."

eighth night of the dark fortnight of the moon.' But there is no occasion for further prolixity."²⁴

The passage which follows is from another commentary on the same text :²⁵

Ujjahāra | utpāṣitavān | ayam bhūvaḥ | mama duṣhkaraṁ oheḍ yush-mābhiḥ sāhāyyaṁ kāryaṁ syāt | na tv etad asti bhū-bhārāpaharaṇādaṁ mahaty api kārye mat-keśa-mātrasyaiva samarīhatvād iti | na tu keśa-mātrāvatāraḥ iti mantavyam | "mad-dṛik-pāta-vichārṇitah" "kṛish-ṇāshṭamyām aham utpatsyāmi" ityādishu sākshāt svavatāratvoktēḥ | śita-kṛishṇa-keśoddhāraṇaṁ cha śobhārtham eva | "Ujjahāra means that he 'plucked out' the hairs. The sense is as follows : 'It would be a difficult matter if aid had to be rendered to me by you : but the same is not the case in regard to the task, though a great one, of removing the load of the earth, etc., since my hairs alone are equal to it.' But it is not to be supposed that there was nothing beyond an incarnation of the mere hairs ; for his own incarnation is distinctly asserted in the words 'annihilated by the glance of my eye,' 'I shall be born on the eighth night of the dark fortnight of the moon,' etc., etc. The mention of his plucking out white and black hairs is for the purpose of ornament."²⁶

The same story about the production of Balarāma and Kṛishṇa from two hairs is also told in the Mahābhārata, Ādi-parvan, 7306 ff. :

Tair eva sārdaṁ tu tataḥ sa devo jagāma Nārāyaṇam aprameyam | anantam avyaktam ajam purāṇaṁ sanātanaṁ viśvam ananta-rūpam | sa chāpi tad vyadadhāt sarvam eva tataḥ sarve sambabhūvur dharanyām | sa chāpi keśau Harir udravarha śuklam ekam aparāṁ chāpi kṛishṇam | tau chāpi keśau nivīṣetām Yadūnāṁ kule striyaṁ Devakīm Rohiṇīm cha | taylor eko Baladevo babhūva yo 'sau śvetas tasya devasya keśaḥ | Kṛishṇo dvitīyaḥ Keśavaḥ sambabhūva keśo yo 'sau varṇataḥ kṛishṇaḥ uktah |

"Along with them (viz. four preceding Indras and a fifth deity sprung from Indra) the god (Indra) went to Nārāyaṇa, immeasurable, infinite, undiscernible, unborn, primeval, everlasting, universal, endless

²⁴ The preceding copy of the text, and commentary on the text, from the Vishṇu Purāṇa, have been kindly copied, and carefully collated, for me by Professor Monier Williams.

²⁵ I am indebted to Professor Goldstücker for copying this passage for me.

²⁶ See Professor Wilson's notes on these passages of the Vishṇu Purāṇa, viz. in p. 492, and in p. 497 (pp. 247 and 268, vol. v., of Dr. Hall's ed.).

in his forms; and he fulfilled all [that they desired]. Then they were all born on earth. Hari also plucked out two hairs, one white and the other black. These two hairs entered into two women of the tribe of the Yadus, Devakī and Rohiṇī. One of them, the white hair of the god, became Baladeva; while the second hair (*keśa*), which was called black (*krishṇa*) in colour, became Kṛishṇa, Keśava."

The following remarks are made on this passage by Nīlakaṇṭha, one of the commentators on the Mahābhārata:

*Atra keśāv eva reto-rūpau Pāṇḍavānām iva Bāma-Kṛishṇayor api prakaraṇa-sangaty-arthaṁ sākshād deva-retasaḥ utpattir avaktavyat-vāt*²⁵⁷ | *ataḥ eva Devakyām Rohiṇyāṁcha sākshāt keśa-praveśaḥ uchyate na tu Vasudeve* | *tathā sati tu "devānāṁ reto varshaṁ varshasya retaḥ ośadhayaḥ" ityādi-srauta-pranādyā 'smad-ādi-vat tayer api vyavahānena deva-prabhavatvaṁ syāt* | *tathā cha "etan nānā-vatārāṇāṁ nidhānaṁ vijam avyayam" iti bhagavataḥ sākshād matsyādy-avatāra-vijatvam uchyamānaṁ virudhyeta* | *apiha keśa-retasor deha-jatve samāne 'pi retaḥ-prabhavatve 'rvākerotastvena manushyatvam putratvaṁ cha syāt* | *tathā cha "Kṛishṇas tu bhagavān svayam" iti śrīmad-bhāgavatoktiḥ sangachhate* | *na cha keśoddhāraṇāt Kṛishṇasyāpy aṁśatvam pratiyate iti vāchyam* | *keśasya dehāvayavatvābhāvāt* | *tasmād Namuchi-badhe kartavye yathā apām phens vajrasya praveśaḥ evaṁ Devakī-Rohiṇyor jājhare praveśe kartavye keśadevayena dvāra-bhūtena bhagavataḥ kārtaṇyena eva āvirbhūvaḥ eśajavyaḥ iti yuktaṁ* |

"Here the two hairs are of the nature of seed productive of Balarāma and Kṛishṇa, just as in the case of the Pāṇḍavas, [and this expression is employed] for the sake of conformity to what had preceded, since it is manifest that one cannot speak of production from the seed of a god. For this reason it is distinctly said that the hairs entered into Devakī and Rohiṇī [the mothers], and not into Vasudeva [the father]. But such being the case, according to the process of derivation described in the Veda, that 'rain is the seed of the gods, and plants are the seed of rain,' etc., these two persons also (Balarāma and Kṛishṇa) will be mediately the offspring of the deity, just as is the case with ourselves and other beings. And thus—since 'this substance of the different incarnations is an undecaying seed,'²⁵⁸—it would be opposed to that

²⁵⁷ The MS. in the E. I. Office Library reads *avasya-avaktavyatvāt* |

²⁵⁸ I put these words between inverted commas, as they appear to be a metrical quotation, though I am not aware whence it is derived.

declaration to predicate of the deity that he is literally the seed of the fish, and other incarnations. Further, although hairs and seed spring equally from the body, yet in the case of production from seed, humanity and sonship will arise after the manner of the inferior animals. And thus the saying of the Bhāgavata, that 'Kṛishṇa is the Lord himself,' is not contradicted. And it must not be said that from a hair being plucked out, Kṛishṇa also is shown to be only a portion [of the deity]; for a hair is not a part of the body. Wherefore, just as, when [the demon] Namuchi was to be slain, the thunderbolt [of Indra] entered into the foam of the waters,²⁵⁰ so when an entrance

²⁵⁰ I am indebted to Dr. Anfrecht for pointing out to me the legend to which reference is here made, viz. that mentioned in R.V. viii. 14, 13: *Apām phenena Namucheḥ śiraḥ Indrodavartayaḥ | visvāḥ yad ajayaḥ sप्रिदहाḥ* | "Thou, Indra, didst strike off the head of Namuchi with the foam of the waters, when thou didst vanquish all opponents." On this Sāyana tells the following story: *Purā kila Indro 'surān jīvā Namuchim asuraṁ grahitūṁ na śatāka | sa cha yudhyamānas tenāsurena jagrihe | sa cha grihitam Indram evam avochat "tvām visṛjāmi rātrāṁ ahni cha śush-khēṇārdreṇa ohāyudhena yadi mām na himsīr"* iti | *sa Indras tena visṛjitaḥ samn ahorātrayoḥ sandhau śushkhārdra-vilakṣaṇena phenena tasya śiras chichheda | ayam artho 'pyam pratipadyate |* He Indra apām phenena vajrībhūtena Namucher Asurasya śiraḥ udavartayaḥ | "Formerly Indra having conquered the Asuras, was unable to seize the Asura Namuchi; and fighting, was seized by the Asura. The latter said to Indra, whom he had seized: 'I release thee if thou wilt not smite me by night, or by day, with a dry or a wet weapon.' Indra, being released by him, cut off his head at the junction of day and night with foam, which is different both from dry and wet. This purport is set forth in this verse." See also S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, xii 7, 3, 1 ff., quoted in the fifth volume of this work, p. 94; and also Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, i. 7, 1, 6 f.: *Indro Vṛtraṁ hatvā asurān parābhūtya Namuchim āsurāṁ na alabhata | tam S'achyā 'grihāt | tau samalabhetām | so 'smād abhisunatato 'bhavat | so 'bravīt "sandhām sandadhāvahai | atha tvā vaḥ (ava ?) prakṣyāmi | na mā śush-keṇa na ārdreṇa hanaḥ na divā na naktam"* iti | *sa etam apām phenam asinchat | na vai eha śushko na ārdraḥ | vyushṭā āsīd anudītaḥ sūryaḥ | na vai tad divā na naktam | tasya etasmin loke apām phenena śiraḥ udavartayat |* "Indra, after having slain Vṛtra and defeated the Asuras, could not catch Namuchi, who was one of that race. He (Namuchi) captured him (Indra) with S'achi [or by force]. These two laid hold of each other. The one (Namuchi) was stronger than the other (Indra). He (Namuchi) said: 'Let us make an agreement; then I shall let thee go. Promise that thou wilt smite me neither with dry nor wet, neither by day nor by night.' He (Indra) anointed (the thunderbolt) with this foam of the waters, which was neither dry nor wet. It was twilight,—the sun not risen; neither day nor night. He smote off his head with the foam of the waters." The story is also told in the Indra-vijaya (published by Holtzmann), vv. 185 ff.; Mahābhārata, Udyoga-parvan, vv. 320 ff.

This story of Indra destroying Namuchi with foam is again told in the Mahābhārata, S'alya-parvan (vv. 2434 ff.): *Namuchir Vānavād bhītaḥ sūrya-raśmīm samāviṣaḥ | tinendrah sakhyam akarot samayanchedam abravīt | "na chārdreṇa na śushkeṇa na*

was to be made into the wombs of Devaki and Rohini, the manifestation of the deity in all his plenitude is to be understood as effected through the medium of the two hairs."

I add an interesting passage from the Vishnu Purāṇa, i. 22, 36 ff., where Vishnu is first of all placed on a level with Brahmā and Siva; but afterwards declared to be the highest form of Brahma:

36. *Dvo rūpe Brahmanas tasya mūrtaṁ ohāmārtam eva cha | ksharā-kshara-svarūpe te sarva-bhūtesho avasthite |* 37. *aksharam paramam Brahma ksharam sarvam idam jagat |* 38. *eka-dēsa-sthitasyaḡner jyotnā vistāriṇi yathā | parasya Brahmanāḥ śaktis tathedam akhilam jagat |* 39. *tatrāthāsanna-dūratvād bahutva-svalpatāmayaḥ | jyotnā-bhedo 'sti tachoḥṣhaktes tadvad Maitreya vidyate |* 40. *Brahma-Vishṇu-S'ivāḥ brahman pradhānāḥ Brahma-śaktayaḥ | tatas̄ oha devāḥ Maitreya nyandāḥ Yakṣādāyas tataḥ |* 41. *Tato manushyāḥ pāsavo mṛiga-pakṣi-sarīripāḥ | nyūnāḥ nyūnatarās̄ chaiva vriksha-gulmādayas tataḥ | tad etad akshayaṁ nityam jagad muni-varākhilam | āvirbhāva-tirobhāva-janma-śāsa-vikalpavat |* 42. *Sarva-śaktimayo Viṣṇuḥ svarāpam Brahmanāḥ param | mūrtaṁ yad yogibhiḥ pūrvaṁ yogārambheshu chintyate |* 43. *sāmbano mahāyogaḥ savijo yatra saṁsthitaḥ | manasy aavyāhate samyag yunjatām jāyate mune |* 44. *sa paraḥ sarva-śaktinām Brahmanāḥ samanantaraḥ | mūrta-brahma mahābhūga sarva-brahmamayo Hariḥ |* 45. *tatra sarvam idam protam otaṁ chaivākhilam jagat | tato jagat jagat tasmin sa jagach̄ chākhilam mune |* 46. *ksharāksharamayo Viṣṇur bibharty akhilam īśvaraḥ | puruṣavyākṛitamayam bhūṣaṇāstra-svarūpavat |*

rūtrau nāpi chāhani | badhishtyāmy aśura-dreshṭha sakhe satyena te śape" | evaṁ sa kṛitvā samayaṁ dṛishṭvā nihāram īśvaraḥ | chichchedāsyā śīre rājann apāṁ phenena Vāsavaḥ | taoh̄ chhiro Namuchē chhinnaṁ pṛishṭhataḥ Śakram anvīyāt | bho mītra-hana pāpeti druvāṇām Śakram antīkūt | evaṁ sa śīradā tona chodiyamānāḥ punaḥ punaḥ | Pītāmahāya santaptaḥ etam arthaṁ nyavedayat | tam abravīt loka-gurur aruṇāyām yathāvidhi | iṣṭvopasprīsa devendāra tīrthe pāpa-ḥṣayāpāhe | "Namuchi being afraid of Indra, entered into a ray of the sun. Indra formed a friendship with him, and uttered this agreement: 'I shall neither slay thee with wet nor with dry, neither in the night nor in the day; I swear in truth to thee, my friend, thou most eminent of Asuras.' Having made this agreement, the lord Vāsava (Indra), beholding a fog, [when it was neither night nor day], cut off his head with the foam of the waters [which was neither wet nor dry]. That head of Namuchi, after being cut off, followed close after Indra, calling out, 'O wicked slayer of thy friend.' Being thus again and again pressed by the head, and being distressed, he [Indra] represented the matter to Pītāmaha (Brahmā). The lord (or teacher) of the world (Brahmā) said to him: 'Having sacrificed, touch [the waters] in the Aruṇa, that sacred spot, which removes sin and fear,' etc.

"Of that Brahma there are two conditions, one possessed of form, the other formless. These decaying and undecaying states exist in all creatures. The undecaying is the highest Brahma; the decaying is this entire universe. Just as light is diffused from a fire which is confined to one spot, so is this whole universe the [diffused] energy of the supreme Brahma. And as light shows a difference, greater or less, according to its nearness or distance from the fire, so is there a variation in the energy of Brahma. Brahmā, Vishṇu and Śiva are his chief energies. The deities are inferior to them; the Yakshas, etc., to the deities; men, cattle, wild animals, birds and reptiles to the Yakshas, etc.; and trees and plants are the lowest of all [these energies]. This entire universe, which, O most excellent Muni, is subject to appearance and disappearance, to production, to destruction, and to change, is yet undecaying and eternal. Vishṇu, containing all the energies, is the highest form of Brahma, which, at the commencement of their abstraction, is contemplated by Yogins as invested with shape. Directed to him, the great union (*mahāyoga*) with its basis, and its germs, is produced in the undistracted minds of the devotees. Hari (Vishṇu) is the highest and most immediate of all the energies of Brahma, the embodied Brahma, formed of the whole of Brahma. On him this entire universe is woven and interwoven: from him is the world, and the world is in him; and he is the whole universe. Vishṇu, the lord, consisting of what is perishable as well as what is imperishable, sustains everything, both Puruṣa and Prakṛiti, in the form of his ornaments and weapons." [The writer goes on to explain what is meant by the last clause. Vishṇu bears or wears Puruṣa as the Kaustubha gem, Prakṛiti as the Śrīvatsa, etc. See Wilson's translation, vol. ii. p. 94 of Dr. Hall's ed.]

In the earlier part of the same section (Wilson, vol. ii., pp. 86 f.) it is said that all kings, whether of men, gods, Daityas, Dānavas, or Rākshasas, are portions of Vishṇu.

VII. In several of the passages which have been already cited in the preceding pages, Vishṇu has been identified with the supreme spirit (see above, pp. 38, 50, 181). I shall now proceed to adduce some others of the same kind from the Mahābhārata. In the Śānti-parvan, vv. 1500 ff. Yudhisṭhira says to Kṛishṇa :

Tava Kṛishṇa prasādena nayana cha balena cha | buddhyā cha Yada-
tardūla tathā vikramayena cha | punaḥ prāptam idaṁ rājyam pitṛi-

*pañāmāham mayā | namas te Puṇḍarikākṣha puṇaḥ puṇar arindama |
tvām ekaṁ āhuḥ Puruṣhaṁ tvām āhuḥ Sāttvatāṁ gatim | nāmaḥhis tvām
bahuvīdhaiḥ stuvanti prayatāḥ dvijāḥ | viśvakarmen namas te 'stu viśvāt-
man viśva-sambhava | Viśhṇo jishṇo Hare Kṛishṇa Vaikuṇṭha Puru-
shottama | Adityāḥ saptaadhā tvām tu purāṇe garbhatām gataḥ | Prīṇi-
garbhās tvam evaikaṣ triyugaṁ tvām vadanty api | Suchisravāḥ Hṛishī-
keśo ghṛitāchir haṁsaḥ uchyase | trichakṣuḥ Sāmbhur ekaṣ tvām vidhur
Dāmodaro 'pi cha | Varāho 'gnir vṛihadbhānur vṛishabhas Tārkaḥya-
lakṣhaṇaḥ | . . . 1514. Yonis tvam aśya pralayaścha Kṛishṇa tvam
evedaṁ vṛijasi viśvam agre | viśvanchedaṁ tvad-vaśe viśvayone ṇamo 'stu
te śārngā-chakrāsi-pāṇe |*

“By thy favour, Kṛishṇa, chief of the Yadus, and policy, and power, and understanding, and valour, I have recovered this kingdom of my father and grandfathers. Adoration be to thee, lotus-eyed, subduer of thy foes, again and again. Thee alone men call Puruṣa : thee alone they call the refuge of the Sātvats. Devout twice-born men laud thee by names of various kinds. Glory be to thee, thou maker of all, thou soul of all, thou source of all, Viśhṇu, conqueror, Hari, Kṛishṇa, Vaikuṇṭha, chief of spirits (or males). Of old thou didst become the sevenfold offspring of Aditi.²⁰⁰ Thou alone art Prī-nigarbha : they also call thee [him who exists in] the three ages (*yugas*). Thou art called Suchisravas, Hṛishīkeśa, Ghṛitāchi, and Hansa. Thou alone art the three-eyed Sāmbhu (Mahādeva) and Dāmodara, the pervading, the Boar, Agni, Vṛihadbhānu,²⁰¹ the Bull, he whose sign is Tārkaḥya (Garuḍa).” A long list of other titles then follows, concluding with these words : “Thou art the source and the destruction of this universe, Kṛishṇa : it is thou who createst it in the beginning, and it is all in thy power, thou source of all things : glory be to thee who wieldest the bow, the discus, and the sword.”

A little further on, at vv. 1604 ff., a long hymn of Bhīṣhma to Kṛishṇa is given, in which the following lines occur :

1609 | *Yasmin viśvāni bhūtāni tiṣṭhanti cha viśanti cha | guṇa-
bhūtāni bhūteṣu sūtre maṇi-gaṇāḥ iva | yasmin nitye tate tantau drīḍha
vṛag iva tiṣṭhāti | sad-asad grahitāṁ viśvāṁ viśvāṅge viśva-karmaṇi |*

²⁰⁰ This, I suppose, refers to the Ādityas being in the Veda spoken of as only seven in number. See above, pp. 114 ff.

²⁰¹ A name of Agni.

*Harim sahasra-śīrasaṁ sahasra-charaṇekshaṇam | sahasra-bāhu-mukha-
taṁ sahasra-vadanojjvalam | prāhur Nārāyaṇaṁ devaṁ yaṁ viśvasya
parāyaṇam | anīyasām aniyāṁsaṁ sthaviṣṭhaṁ oha sthaviyasām | garī-
yasaṁ garishṭhaṁ oha bṛeṣṭhaṁ oha bṛeyasām api | yaṁ vākeṣu anuvā-
keṣu nishatsūpanishatsu oha | grīṇanti satya-karmāṇaṁ satyaṁ satyesu
sāmasu | ityādi | 1616. Sarvātmā sarva-vit sarvaḥ sarvajñaḥ
sarva-bhāvaṇaḥ | yaṁ devaṁ Devakī devī Vasudevād ajjanat | Bhaumasya
Brahmaṇo guptyai dīptam Agnim ivāraṇiḥ | 1622. Yasmin lokāḥ
sphurantīṁ jale lakunayo yathā |*

"In whom, the lord of beings, all beings, existing as his qualities, abide and enter, like gems [strung] upon a thread: upon whom, the universal-membered artificer of all things, extended as a strong and eternal thread, the universe, existent and non-existent, abides, arranged, like a chaplet; Hari, the thousand-headed, thousand-footed, thousand-eyed, with a thousand arms and diadems, resplendent with a thousand faces, whom they call Nārāyaṇa, the god who transcends all, the minutest of the minute, the vastest of the vast, the greatest of the great, the most eminent of the eminent, whom, true, and true in act, they celebrate in 'vākas,' 'anuvākas,' in 'nishads,'²⁶² and in 'upanishads,' and in true 'sāma'-hymns, . . . 1616. the soul of all, the omniscient, the all, the all-knowing, the producer of all, the god whom the goddess Devakī bore to Vasudeva, for the preservation of the terrestrial deity (*i.e.* the Vedas, Brāhmins and sacrifices, Comm.) as Arani (the wood used for kindling fire),²⁶³ produced the flaming Agni. . . . 1622. In whom these worlds flutter, like birds in water," etc.

²⁶² This is the only place in which I have ever met with this word. I am unable to say whether Indian literature contains any such writings as 'nishads,' or whether the term is a purely fictitious one, invented by the author of this passage to denote a principal and original set of writings to which the Upanishads may have formed, in his idea, a secondary and supplemental class, as the Upapurāṇas do to the Purāṇas. Nilakanṭha, one of the commentators (whether conjecturally, or on good grounds, I cannot say), explains nishatsu as meaning karmāṅgādy-avabaddha-dēvatādi-jñāna-vākyeshu, "works treating of the knowledge of the deities, etc., connected with the ceremonial part of the Veda," etc. The Upanishads "reveal the knowledge of soul alone" (kevalātma-jñāpaka-vākyeshu). Vākas, according to the same authority, "make known ceremonies generally" (sāmānyataḥ karma-prakāśakeshu); while anuvākas are "texts of the Brāhmaṇas, explanatory of the sense of the mantras, or Vedic hymns" (mantrārtha-vivaraṇa-bhūteshu brahmaṇa-vākyeshu).

²⁶³ See the 5th vol. of this work, pp. 208 ff.

In the following passage, also from the Śānti-parvan, Kṛishṇa identifies himself with the supreme Spirit, and represents Brahmā and Mahādeva as having proceeded from him. In it the writer likewise endeavours to explain away the effect of certain texts in other parts of the poem (see above, pp. 185-204), in which Kṛishṇa is related to have worshipped Mahādeva, and which were no doubt felt to be inconsistent with the supreme deity of the former. The difficulty is attempted to be overcome by the explanation that in worshipping Rudra, he was only worshipping himself. In the verses 13133 ff. Arjuna asks Kṛishṇa to interpret the different appellations which had been applied to him in the Vedas and Purāṇas; and this Kṛishṇa accordingly proceeds to do, remarking by the way that Arjuna had been of old declared to be his own half²⁰⁴ (*tvam hi me 'rdhaṁ smṛitaḥ purā*). Nārāyaṇa (i.e. Viṣṇu), he says, was the source of all things, and from him Brahmā and Śiva were produced; the one from his good pleasure, the other from his anger (13140. *Yasya prasādajo Brahmā Rudrascha krodha-sambhavaḥ*). He then goes on (13144): *Brāhṁe rātri-kahaye prāpte tasya hy amita-tejasaḥ | prasādāt prādurabhavat padmam padma-nibhekeḥṣaṇa | tato Brahmā samabhavat sa tasyaiva prasādajaḥ | ahaṁ kahaye lalāṭāchcha suto devasya vai tathā | krodhāvishṭasya sanjayne Rudraḥ saṁhāra-kārakaḥ | etau dvau vibudha-śreṣṭhau prasāda-krodha-jāv ubhau | tad-ādesita-panthānau śriṣṭi-saṁhāra-kārakau | nimitta-mātram tāv atra sarva-prāṇi-vara-pradau | kapardī jaṭilo munḍaḥ śmaśāna-gṛiha-sevakaḥ | ugra-vrata-dhara Rudro yogi parama-dāruṇaḥ | Dakṣa-kratu-haraśchaiva Bhaga-netra-haraḥ tathā | Nārāyaṇātmako jñeyaḥ Pāṇḍaveya yuge yuge | tasmin hi pūjyamāne vai deva-dve Maho-ṣvare | sampūjito bhavet Pārtha devo Nārāyaṇaḥ prabhūḥ | ahaṁ ātmā hi lokanām viśveśham Pāṇḍu-nandana | 13152. tasmiṁ ātmānam evāgre Rudraṁ sampūjayāmy ahaṁ | yady ahaṁ nārohayeyāṁ vai Īśānāṁ varadaṁ Śivam | ātmānaṁ nārochayet kaśchid iti me bhāvītātmanaḥ | mayā pramāṇaṁ hi kṛitaṁ lokaḥ samanuvartate | pramāṇāni hi pūjyāni tatas tam pūjayāmy ahaṁ | yas taṁ vetti sa mām vetti yo 'nu taṁ sa hi mām anu | Rudro Nārāyaṇaś cchaiva sativam ekaṁ dvaidhākṛitaṁ | loka-charati Kaunteya vyakti-śhaṁ sarva-karmasu | na hi me kenachid doyo varaḥ Pāṇḍava-nandana | iti sanohintya manasā purāṇam Rudram itva-ram | putrārtham āvādhitaṁvān ahaṁ ātmānam ātmaṇā | na hi Viṣṇuḥ*

²⁰⁴ See the other passages about their identity, or intimate union, above, pp. 228 ff.

*pranamatī kasmaichit vibudhaya cha | rite ātmānam eveti tato Rudram
bhajāmy aham | sabrahmakāḥ sarudrāśoḥa sendraḥ devāḥ saharakṣibhiḥ |
archayanti sura-broshikaṁ devaṁ Nārāyaṇaṁ Harim | bhavakhyatām
vartatānoḥa bhūtānānoḥaiva Bhārata | sarveśhaṁ agragṛīḥ Viṣṇuḥ
soḇyaḥ pājyaśoḥa nityaśaḥ ityādi |*

"When the end of Brahmā's night had arrived, there sprang from the good pleasure of that being of boundless power a lotus, O thou whose eyes are like a lotus. From it was produced Brahmā, who was the offspring of his (Viṣṇu's) good pleasure; and at the end of the day Rudra the destroyer was born from the forehead of the god when he was possessed with anger. These two eminent gods, produced [the one] from his good pleasure, [the other] from his anger,"³⁶⁵ have their

³⁶⁵ I quote the following from the Maitrī Upanishad, 5th Prapāthaka: *Tamo vai idam agre āstīd ekam | tat pare syūt | tat tat parēḥa īritām viśhamatvam prayāti | etad rūpam vai rajaḥ | tad rajaḥ khalu īritām viśhamatvam prayāti | etad vai sattvasya rūpam | tat sattvam eva īritām rasaḥ samprāravat | so 'mśo 'yaṁ yaś chetū-mātraḥ pratīpuruḥaḥ khetrajñaḥ sankalpādhyavasāyābhimāna-lingaḥ | Prajā-patir Viśvō ity asya prāg uktīḥ etās tanavaḥ | atha yo ha khalu vōva asya tāmāso 'mśo 'sau sa brahmachāriṇo yo 'yaṁ Rudraḥ | atha yo ha khalu vōva asya rājaso 'mśo 'sau sa brahmachāriṇo yo 'yam Brahmā | atha yo ha khalu vōva asya sūttviko 'mśo 'sau sa brahmachāriṇo yo 'yaṁ Viṣṇuḥ | sa vai eśha ekaś tridhā bhūto 'shṭadhā ekādāśadhā dvādāśadhā aparimitadhā vā udbhūtaḥ udbhūtatvād bhūtam bhūteshu charati pravishṭaḥ sa bhūtānam adhipatir bābhūva | ity asā ātmā antar bahīś cha antar bahīś cha |* This passage is translated as follows by Professor Cowell: "Verily this was at the first darkness alone; it abode in the Supreme; then, being set in motion by the Supreme, it passes into inequality. This condition becomes activity (*rajas*): this activity, being set in motion, passes into inequality. This becomes the condition of Goodness. This goodness alone was set in motion; and Flavour flowed forth. This is a portion [of the Soul] which is only measured by the Soul, reflected in each individual, cognizant of the body, and possessing as its signs volition, ascertainment, and consciousness. Prajāpati, Viśvā—these and the like, before mentioned, are its forms. As for its darkness-characterized" [*tāmāśaḥ*] "portion, that, O ye students, is the same as Rudra; as for its activity-characterized" [*rājasoḥaḥ*] "portion, that, O students, is the same as Brahma; and as for its goodness-characterized" [*sūttvikaḥ*] "portion, that, O students, is the same as Viṣṇu. He truly is one, existing as threefold, as eightfold, as elevenfold, as twelvefold, as infinite fold; he is manifested everywhere; and, from being thus manifested, he is the Being; he enters and pervades all beings, he is the lord of beings. Thus he, the Soul, is within and without, within and without."

In the Vāyu-purāṇa, sect. 66, as quoted by Professor Aufrecht in his "Catalogus Codicum Sanscriticorum," p. 566, it is declared by Sūta that there is but one God, who assumed three forms (*rājasī, sūttviki, tāmāsī tanuḥ*) for the creation, preservation, and destruction of the world. In the Devā-Bhāgavata Purāṇa, book i., sect. 4, v. 46, quoted in the same Catalogue, p. 80a, Nārada tells Vyāsa that Viṣṇu had once spoken to Brahmā as follows: *Brashīṭa tvam pālakaś chāḥam Haraḥ sāmāhāra-kṛakaḥ |*

courses prescribed by him, [and are] the accomplisners [respectively] of creation and destruction. In this, these bestowers of boons on all creatures are merely instrumental causes. Rudra, with braided hair and matted locks, shaven, the frequenter of cemeteries, the performer of awful rites, the devotee, the very terrible, he who swept away Dakṣha's sacrifice, and put out Bhaga's eyes, is to be understood by thee to possess in every age the nature of Nārāyaṇa. For when that god of gods Maheśvara is worshipped, then, son of Prithā, the god Nārāyaṇa, the lord, will also be worshipped. I am the soul of all the worlds. 13152. It was therefore myself whom I formerly worshipped as Rudra. If I were not to worship Īśāna, the boon-bestowing Śiva, no one would worship myself [or the Soul]—this is [the reflection made] by me who am contemplative in spirit. An authoritative example is set by me [which] the world follows.³⁶⁶ Authoritative examples are to be revered: hence I reverence him (Śiva). He who knows him knows me; he who loves him loves me.³⁶⁷ Rudra and Nārāyaṇa, one essence, divided into two, operate in the world, in a manifested form, in all acts. Reflecting in my mind that no boon could be conferred upon me by any one, I [yet] adored the ancient Rudra, the lord, [that is] I, with myself adored myself, to obtain a son (see p. 195). For Viṣṇu does not do homage to any god, excepting himself: hence I [in this sense] worship Rudra. The gods, including Brahmā, Rudra, and Indra, together with the rishis, worship the god Nārāyaṇa, Hari, the most eminent of the deities. Viṣṇu the chief of all who shall be, are, or have been, is to be served and worshipped continually."

In the following passage (Anuśāsana-parvan, vv. 6295 ff.), some

*kṛtāḥ kṛmeti sa tārkaḥ kṛiyate veda-pāragaiḥ | 47 | Jagat-sañjanano śaktis tvayī
vartatī rājasi | śāttvikī mayī Rudre cha tāmasī parikṛtītā | 48 | tayā virahitas tvam
tu na hy stat karaṇe prabhūḥ | nāham pālayitūṃ śaktiḥ saṃhartūṃ nāpi ś'ankaraḥ |
49 | tad-adhīnāḥ vayanā sarve vartāmaḥ sataim vibho | 46.* "The question by what thou art made the creator, I the preserver, and Hara the destroyer, is proposed by those who have studied the Veda. 47. In thee there exists a passionate [or 'active,' as Professor Cowell translates *rājasi*] energy, [which operates] in the production of the world, in me there is declared to be a pure [śāttvikī], and in Rudra a dark [tāmasī], energy. 48. If we were destitute of these several energies, thou wouldst be unable to create, or I to preserve, or Ś'ankara to destroy. 49. We are continually dependent upon these our [respective energies]."

³⁶⁶ See above, p. 53, the quotation from the Bhagavad-gīta, iii. 21 ff.

³⁶⁷ Compare a similar sentiment in p. 230.

parts of which may be later interpolations, Kṛishṇa is described as performing a ceremony to obtain a son, at the same time that he is represented as the supreme deity. Bhīshma, at the request of Yudhishthira, tells him a story illustrative of the glory of Kṛishṇa. He states that Kṛishṇa had performed a ceremonial (*vrata*) of twelve years' duration (6397), which many rishis came to witness. In presence of these rishis flame issued from the mouth of Kṛishṇa, which set on fire the mountain where he was, and burnt up everything on it; and having done so, came back, and submissively touched his feet. The mountain was afterwards restored to its natural condition. Seeing the rishis astonished at this display, Kṛishṇa asks the cause of their surprise. They request that he who is the creator and destroyer of all things will explain to them the phenomenon which they have just witnessed. He replies that this was the power (*tejas*) of Viṣṇu which had issued from his mouth. He had come, he informs them, to this mountain to perform a ceremony with the view of obtaining a son like himself (6320); and the soul residing in his body had become fire, and blazed forth, and had gone to see the parent of the world, when Mahādeva had declared that a son should be created for him out of the half of his power (*tejas*). Kṛishṇa next calls on the rishis to tell him any wonders they had seen or heard of in heaven or on earth. The rishis then, after celebrating Kṛishṇa's praises, appoint Nārada to describe the wonders which had been witnessed by the rishis on the Himālaya mountain, when they had gone thither on a pilgrimage to the holy places. Nārada accordingly proceeds to give an account of a long conversation which had taken place between Mahādeva and his wife Umā or Pārvatī, the daughter of the Himālaya. Mahādeva, it appears, had been performing austerity (*tapas*, vv. 6340, 6348) on that mountain, where he was surrounded by his attendant demons (Bhūtas) and by the nymphs (Apsarases), etc., etc. While he was sitting in that delightful region, clothed in tigers' and lions' skins, with a serpent for his sacrificial cord (6355 f.), his wife Umā comes up, clothed in the same style as her husband, with her attendant demonesses (*Bhūta-stri-gaṇa*), and playfully puts her hands over his eyes. The effects of this act are tremendous. Suddenly the world becomes darkened, lifeless, and destitute of oblations and *vashaṭkāras*, etc. This gloom, however, is as suddenly dispelled by a great flame

which bursts from Mahādeva's forehead, in which a third eye, luminous as the sun, was formed (6367). By the fire of this eye the mountain was scorched and everything upon it consumed. Umā hereupon stands in a submissive attitude before her lord, when in a moment her parent, the Himālaya, is restored to his former condition. A long conversation then ensues between Mahādeva and Umā. The latter inquires why Mahādeva's third eye had been formed (6379), and puts a number of questions about himself, and the various duties of men (6412 ff.), all of which he answers. Mahādeva next, in his turn, asks Umā to describe the duties of women. She says she will consult the rivers in regard to the question. The Gangā replies on their behalf that Umā herself should furnish the answer, which, as Bhīṣma tells us, she accordingly does (6780 ff.). Bhīṣma then informs us (v. 6804) that, at the close of Umā's discourse, Mahādeva dismissed his attendant demons, with the rivers, nymphs, and celestial choristers (Gandharvas). We might have expected here that Nārada (who had hitherto been the narrator of what was done and said on the Himālaya) would have finished his account of all that occurred there, without the introduction of the other interlocutor; but, as I have said, he is interrupted by Bhīṣma at v. 6804, and afterwards introduced again at v. 6870. Whatever may be the reason, we are first told by Bhīṣma (v. 6804) that the rishis now requested Mahādeva to describe to them the greatness of Vāsudeva (Kṛishṇa). At the close of Mahādeva's discourse, Nārada is again abruptly introduced (6870), and relates that a great sound of thunder accompanied with lightning was then heard, and the sky became covered with thick clouds and veiled in darkness. Mahādeva and his attendant demons were now no longer visible to the munis. (The departure of the demons and the other classes of beings had, however, been previously told in v. 6804.) The darkness then suddenly clears away. Nārada next observes to Kṛishṇa (6875) that he was the eternal being, one with Brahma, about whom they had been instructed on the mountain. At the close of Nārada's discourse, the rishis express their devotion to Kṛishṇa (6879 ff.), and say that as he knew all things, he had no occasion to ask them for any information such as had been given at his request. They end by giving him what, after this avowal of his omniscience, was (one would have thought) a needless assurance, that he

should have a son like himself. Bhīṣma then relates that, after completing the rite on which he had been engaged, Kṛiṣṇa returned to Dvārakā, where a son was born to him (6889), and goes on to expatiate yet further on his divine character. Yudhiṣṭhira, however, is still unsatisfied, and inquires as follows (6937 ff.) :

*Kim ekam daivataṁ loke kiṁ vā py ekam parāyaṇam | kaṁ stuvantaḥ
kam archantaḥ prāpnuyur mānavāḥ śubham | ko dharmāḥ sarva-dharmā-
ṇam bhavataḥ paramo mataḥ | kiṁ jagan muchyate jantur janma-saṁsāra-
bandhanāt | Bhīṣmaḥ uvācha | Jagat-prabhuṁ deva-devaṁ anantam
puruṣhottamam | stuvan nāma-sahasreṇa puruṣaḥ satatottṛitaḥ | tam eva
chārchayan nityam bhaktiā puruṣam avyayam | dhyāyan stuvan nama-
syaṁścha yajamānas tam eva cha | an-ādi-nidhanam Viṣṇuṁ sarva-loka-
maheśvaram | lokādhyakṣam stuvan nityaṁ sarva-duḥkhātigo bhavet |
brahmanyam sarva-dharma-jnam lokānāṁ kīrti-varḍhanam | loka-
nātham mahad bhūtam sarva-bhūta-bhavodbhavam | oṣa me sarva-dhar-
māṇāṁ dharmo 'dhikataṁ mataḥ | . . . 6946. Yataḥ sarvāṇi bhūtāni
bhavanty ādi-yugāgame | yasmiṁścha pralayaṁ yānti punar eva yuga-
kṣaye | tasya loka-pradhānasya jagannāthasya bhūpate | Viṣṇor nāma-
sahasram me śṛiṇu pāpa-bhayāpaham |*

"What is the one deity in the world, or what is the one highest object? By lauding and worshipping whom can men attain to felicity? What duty is regarded by you as the highest of all duties? By muttering what, is a creature freed from the bonds of birth and of the world? Bhīṣma answers: A man, rising continually, and lauding with his thousand names the supreme infinite Puruṣa, the lord of the world, the god of gods, worshipping perpetually with devotion this undecaying Puruṣa, contemplating, praising, reverencing, and adoring him, Viṣṇu, without beginning or end, the great lord of all the worlds, lauding continually the ruler of the worlds, who (the ruler) is devout, skilled in all duty, the augments of the renown of the worlds, the lord of the world, the great being, the source of the existence of all beings, [doing all this, a man] will overpass all grief. This is regarded by me as the greatest of all duties. . . v. 6946. Hear, king, from me the sin-and-fear-removing thousand names of this Viṣṇu, chief of the world, lord of the world, from whom all creatures spring on the arrival of the commencing yuga, and in whom again they are absorbed at the end of the yuga."

These thousand names of Vishṇu are then detailed, among which the following occur, all, or most of them, ordinarily appellations of Mahādeva, viz. Sarva, Sarva, Siva, Sthāṇu (v. 6953), Īśāna (v. 6957), Rudra (v. 6962).

Again, we are informed in the Anuśāsana-parvan, that the rishis requested Mahādeva to expound to them the greatness of Vāsudeva (Kṛishṇa), which he accordingly does in vv. 6806 ff. :

*Pitāmahād api varah śāsvataḥ Puruṣo Hariḥ | Kṛishṇo jāmbūnada-
bhāso vyabhre sūryaḥ ivoditaḥ | daśa-bāhur mahātejaḥ devatāri-nisūdanaḥ |
śrīvatsāṅko Hṛishīkeśaḥ sarva-daivata-pūjitaḥ | Brahmā tasyodara-bhavaḥ
tathā chāhaṁ siro-bhataḥ | śiroruhebhyo jyotiṁśhi romaḥkṛishṇa-
suraḥ | rishayo deha-sambhūtāḥ tathā lokāḥ cha śāsvataḥ | Pitāmaha-
grihaṁ sūkṣhāt sarva-deva-grihaṁ cha saḥ | so 'syaḥ prithivyāḥ kṛitnā-
yāḥ sraśṭā tribhuvaneśvaraḥ | saṁhartā chaiva bhūtānāṁ sthāvarasya
charasya cha | sa hi deva-varaḥ sūkṣhād deva-nāthaḥ parantapaḥ | sarva-
jñaḥ sa hi saṁślishṭaḥ sarvagaḥ sarvato-mukhaḥ | paramātmā hṛishīkeśaḥ
sarva-vyāpī mahēśvaraḥ | na tasmāt paramam bhūtaṁ triṣhu lokeshu
kinchana | sanātano vai Madhuhā Govindaḥ iti vīrutāḥ | sa sarvān
pārthivān sankhye ghātayishyati mānadaḥ | sura-kāryārtham utpanno
mānushaṁ vapur āsīhitaḥ | na hi deva-gaṇāḥ śaktāḥ Trivikrama-vinā-
kṛitāḥ | bhuvane deva-kāryāṇi kartuṁ nāyaka-varjitaḥ | nāyakaḥ sarva-
bhūtānāṁ sarva-bhūta-namaśṛitaḥ | etasya deva-nāthasya deva-kārya-
ratasya cha | brahma-bhūtasya satataṁ devareṣi-saraṇasya cha | Brahmā
vasati garbhasthaḥ śarīre mukha-saṁsthitaḥ | sarvāḥ sukhaṁ saṁśritāḥ cha
śarīre tasya devatāḥ | sa devaḥ puṇḍarikākṣaḥ śṛigarbhaḥ śrī-sahasitaḥ |
ityādi | . . . 6827. bhavārtham iha devānāṁ buddhyā paramayā yutaḥ |
prajāpātyo śubhe mārge Mānave dharma-saṁhite | samutpatsyati Govindo
Manor vaṁśe mahātmanaḥ | . . . v. 6835. tṛiṣaṁ vikhyāta-viryāṇāṁ
chārītra-guṇaśālīnāṁ | yajvanāṁ suvisuddhānāṁ vaṁśe brāhmaṇa-
sammatē²⁰⁰ | sa S'uraḥ kṣatriya-śreṣṭhō mahāvīro mahāyāsāḥ | sva-
vaṁśa-vistara-karaṁ janayishyati mānadaḥ | Vāsudevaḥ iti khyātam
putram Anakadundubhim | tasya putraḥ chaturbāhur Vāsudevo bha-
viṣhyati | dātā brāhmaṇa-satkartā brahmabhūto divja-priyaḥ | . . .
6842. Tam bhavantaḥ samāsādya vāṇ-mālyair arhaṇair varaiḥ | aroha-
yantu yathānyāyam Brahmāṇam iva śāsvatam | yo hi mām drashṭum
ichcheta Brahmāṇaṇcha pitāmahaṁ | drashṭavyas tena bhagavān Vāsu-*

²⁰⁰ Quere, *Brāhmaṇa-sammitē*, "equal to Brahmana" ?

*devaḥ pratāpavān | dṛśiṣṭo tasminn ahaṁ dṛśiṣṭo na me 'trāṣṭi vicāraṇā |
pitāmaho vā devaśaḥ iti vitta tapodhanāḥ |*

“Superior even to Pitāmaha (Brahmā) is Hari, the eternal Puruṣa, Kṛṣṇa, brilliant as gold, like the sun risen in a cloudless sky, ten-armed, of mighty force, slayer of the foes of the gods, marked with the śrīvatsa, Hṛṣīkeśa, adored by all the gods. Brahmā is sprung from his belly and I (Mahādeva) from his head, the luminaries from the hair of his head, the gods and Asuras from the hairs of his body, and the rishis, as well as the everlasting worlds, have been produced from his body. He is the manifest abode of Pitāmaha, and of all the deities. He is the creator of this entire earth, the lord of the three worlds, and the destroyer of creatures, of the stationary and the movable. He is manifestly the most eminent of the gods, the lord of the deities, the vexer of his foes. He is omniscient, intimately united [with all things], omnipresent, facing in every direction, the supreme Spirit, Hṛṣīkeśa, all-pervading, the mighty lord. There is no being superior to him in the three worlds. The slayer of Madhu is eternal, renowned as Govinda. He, the conferrer of honour, born to fulfil the purposes of the gods, and assuming a human body, will slay all the kings in battle. For all the hosts of the gods, destitute of Trivikrama (the god who strode thrice), are unable to effect the purposes of the gods, devoid of a leader. He is the leader of all creatures, and worshipped by all creatures. Of this lord of the gods, devoted to the purposes of the gods, who is Brahma, and is the constant refuge of gods and rishis, Brahmā dwells within the body, abiding in his face, and all the gods are easily sheltered in his body. This god is the lotus-eyed, the producer of Śrī, dwelling together with Śrī. . . . 6827. For the welfare of the gods, Govinda shall arise in the family of the great Manu, possessed of eminent intelligence, and [walking] in the excellent path of the Prajāpati Manu, characterized by righteousness.” [Govinda’s ancestors are then detailed.] 6835. “In this family, esteemed by Brahmans, of men renowned for valour, distinguished by good conduct and excellent qualities, priests, most pure, this Sūra, the most eminent of Kṣatriyas, heroic, renowned, conferring honour, shall beget a son Ānakadundubhi,²⁴⁰ the prolonger of his race, known as Vasudeva. To him shall be born a four-armed son, Vāsudeva, liberal, a

²⁴⁰ See Wilson’s Viṣṇu Purāṇa, p. 436 = vol. iv., p. 101, of Dr. Hall’s ed.
VOL. IV.

benefactor of Brāhmanas, one with Brahma, a lover of Brāhmanas. . . . 6842. You (the gods) should, as is fit, worship this deity, like the eternal Brahmā, approaching him with reverential and excellent garlands of praise. For the divine and glorious Vāsudeva should be beheld by him who desires to see me and Brahmā the Parent. In regard to this I have no hesitation, that when he is seen I am seen, or the Parent (Brahmā), the lord of the gods : know this ye whose wealth is austerity."

Further on in the same Anuśāsana-parvan (7356 ff.), it is related that Bhīshma, when called on by Yudhishtīra to inform him what are the benefits resulting from reverence rendered to Brāhmanas, refers him to Kṛishṇa, whose divine greatness he then proceeds to set forth as follows (vv. 7360 ff.) :

Kṛishṇaḥ prithvīm asṛijāt khaṁ divancha Kṛishṇasya dehād medinī sambabhūva | varāho 'yam bhīma-balaḥ purāṇaḥ sa parvatān vyasṛijad vai diśascha | asya chādho 'thāntarikshaṁ divancha diśas chatasro vidiśas chatasraḥ | sṛiṣṭis tathaiveyam anuprasūtā sa nirmame viśvam idam purāṇam | asya nābhyaṁ pushkaraṁ samprasūtāṁ yatropannaḥ svayam evāmitayaj | yena chhinnaṁ yat tamaḥ Pārtha ghoraṁ yat tat tishṭhaty arṇavaṁ tarjayānam | 7388. Vāyur bhūtvā vikshipate sa viśvam agnir bhūtvā dahate viśva-rūpaḥ | āpo bhūtvā majjayate sa sarvam Brahmā bhūtvā sṛijate sarva-saṅghān | vedyancha yad vedayate cha vedyāṁ vidhiścha yaś chāśrayate vidheyam | dharme cha vede cha bale cha sarvaṁ charācharaṁ Keśavaṁ tvam pratihi | jyotir-bhūtaḥ paramo 'sau purastāt prakāśate yat prabhayā viśva-rūpaḥ | apaḥ sṛiṣṭvā sarva-bhūtātma-yoniḥ purā 'karot sarvam evātha viśvam ityādi |

"Kṛishṇa created the earth, the air, and the sky; from Kṛishṇa's body the earth was produced. He is the ancient boar of fearful strength; he created the mountains and the regions. Beneath him are the atmosphere and the heaven, the four regions, and the four intermediate regions : and [from him] this creation sprang forth : he formed this ancient universe. In his navel a lotus grew up, where he himself [in the form of Brahmā] was born of boundless power. By him the dreadful darkness was pierced, that threatening ocean which abides. . . . 7388. Becoming Vāyu, he dissipates this universe; becoming Fire, he burns it, universal in his forms; becoming Water, he drowns all things; becoming Brahmā, he creates all the hosts [of beings]. He is

whatever is to be known, and he makes known whatever is to be known: he is the rule for performance, and he who exists in that which is to be performed. Believe that Keśava [abides] in righteousness, in the Veda, in strength, and that he is the whole world, movable and immovable. Since he, the supreme, being by nature luminous, shines from the beginning, in every form of splendour, this soul and source of all beings, having created the waters, formed of old this entire universe." Kṛishṇa then (vv. 7402 ff.) proceeds to set forth the benefits of reverence to Brahmans, who he says (7412 f.) could reduce this world to ashes, and create new ones, and rulers of worlds, (*bhasma kuryur jagad idaṁ kruddhāḥ pratyakṣa-darśinaḥ | anyān api śṛjeyuḥ cha lokān lokaśvarāṁs tathā*) and illustrates his opinion of their importance by the results of his own experience regarding Durvāsas (see above, p. 196). He afterwards goes on, in the passage which I have already cited in pp. 197 ff., to return the compliment paid to him by Mahādeva, by celebrating the greatness of that deity; and in the course of his description he makes nearly as explicit an avowal of the supreme divinity of the other god, as the latter has made in regard to him in the text (Anuśāsana-parvan, 6806 ff.) which has just been adduced in p. 273 f.

In the Āsvamedhika-parvan it is related, vv. 1536 ff., that when Kṛishṇa had left the city of the Pāṇḍus, and was journeying to Dvārakā, he fell in with the muni Uttanga, who asked him whether he had reconciled the Kurus and Pāṇḍus with one another. Kṛishṇa replied (1559) that he had made the attempt to do so, but without success, and that the Kurus had perished in consequence. On hearing this Uttanga becomes greatly incensed, and threatens to curse Kṛishṇa because he had not rescued the Kurus, although he was perfectly able to do so. To pacify the muni's wrath, Kṛishṇa offers to explain the circumstances, and to unfold the mystery of his own nature; which he accordingly does in vv. 1564 ff.:

*Vāsudevaḥ urūcha | tamo rajas cha sattvaṁ cha viddhi bhāvān mad-
āśrayān | tathā Rudrān Vasūn vā 'pi viddhi mat-prabhavān divja | mayi
sarvāṇi bhūtāni sarva-bhūteshu chāpy aham | sthitaḥ ityādi | . . .
1567. Sad asachchaiva yat prākṛ avyaktam vyaktam eva cha | akṣharaṁ
cha kṣharanchaiva sarvaṁ etad mad-ātmaṁ | ye chāśrameṣu vai dharmās
chaturdhā viditāḥ muno | vaidikāni cha sarvāṇi viddhi sarvaṁ mad-ātma-*

*kaṁ | asaccha sad-asacchaiva yad viśvaṁ sad-asat-param | mattaḥ
 paratāraṁ nāsti deva-devāt sanātānāt | oṁkāra-pramukhān vedān viddhī
 mām tvam Bhṛiguḍavaḥ | yūpaṁ somaṁ charuṁ homaṁ tridaśāpyāyanam
 makho | hotāraṁ api havyaṁcha viddhī mām Bhṛigu-nandana | adhvaryuḥ
 kalpakasyāpi haviḥ parama-saṁskṛitam | udgātā ohāpi mām stauti gita-
 ghoshair mahādhvare | prāyaścittieshu mām brahman śānti-mangala-
 vāchakāḥ | stuvanti viśvakarmānaṁ satataṁ devja-sattama | mama viddhī
 sutāṁ dharmam agrajaṁ devja-sattama | mānasam dayitaṁ vipra sarva-
 bhūta-dayātmakam | tatṛāhaṁ vartamānaiścha nirvṛttaiśchaiva māna-
 vaiḥ | bahoiḥ saṁsaramāṇo vai yonir vartāmi sattama | dharmā-saṁrakṣh-
 aṇārthāya dharmā-saṁsthāpanāya cha | taiś tair veśaiś cha rūpaiś cha
 triśhu lokeshu Bhārgava | ahaṁ Viśṇur aham Brahmā Sakro 'tha pra-
 bhāvavyayaḥ (āpyayaḥ ?) ²⁷⁰ | bhūta-grūmasya sarvasya sraśṭā saṁhāraḥ
 eva cha | adharṁ vartamānānāṁ sarveśhām aham achyutaḥ | dharmasya
 setum badhnāmi chālīte chālīte yuge | tās tāḥ yonīḥ pravṛtyāham prajānāṁ
 hitakāmyayā | yadā tv ahaṁ deva-yonau vartāmi Bhṛigu-nandana | tadā
 'haṁ deva-vat sarvam ācharāmi na saṁśayaḥ | . . . 1582. Mānushye
 vartamāne tu kripanāṁ yāchitūḥ mayā | na cha te jāta-sammohāḥ cacho
 'grihṇanta mohitāḥ | bhayaṁcha mahad uddiśya trāṣitāḥ Kuravo mayā |
 kruddhena bhūtvā cha punar yathāvad anudarśitāḥ | te 'dharmēṇcha
 saṁyuktāḥ paritāḥ kāla-dharmaṇā | 'dharmēṇa nihatāḥ yuddhe gatāḥ
 svargaṁ na saṁśayaḥ | . . . Uttangaḥ uvācha | abhijānāmi jagataḥ
 kartāraṁ tvāṁ Janārdana |*

“Know that the qualities of darkness (*tamas*), passion (*rajas*), and goodness (*sattva*) have their abode in me. Know also that both the Rudras and Vasus are sprung from me. All beings reside in me, and I in all beings, etc. . . . 1567 ff.: That which men call entity and non-entity, the unmanifested and the manifested, the undecaying and the decaying,—all this consists of my essence. And know, O muni, that the fourfold duties which are recognized as belonging to the [four] conditions of life, as well as all the Vedic [ordinances], partake of my essence. As regards non-entity, and that which is both entity and non-entity, and that which transcends both entity and non-entity,—know that [of all this] there is nothing which transcends me, the eternal god of gods. Know, descendant of Bhṛigu, that I am the Vedas which are introduced by the oṁkāra, [that I am], the sacrificial post,

²⁷⁰ See Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, under *āpyaya*; and Udyoga-parvan, v. 2569.

the soma, the charu, the homa, which satiates the immortals, tridaśāpyāyana in the sacrifice. Know that I am both the hotṛi (priest), and the havya (oblation). [I am] also the adhvaryu of the ceremony, and the highly purified butter. The udgātṛi celebrates me with sounds of hymns at the great sacrifice. And at the rites of atonement, the priests who utter propitiatory and auspicious texts continually, O excellent Brahman, praise me, the architect of all. Know that Dharma (Righteousness) is my beloved first-born mental son, whose nature is to have compassion on all creatures. There I exist among men, both present and past, passing through many varieties of mundane existence, in different disguises and forms, in the three worlds, for the preservation and establishment of righteousness. I am Viṣṇu, Brahmā, Indra, and the source as well as destruction [of things], the creator and the annihilator of the whole aggregate of existences. When all men live in unrighteousness, I, the unfailing, build up the bulwark of righteousness, as the ages pass away, entering into various wombs, from a desire to promote the good of creatures. Whenever I assume a divine birth, I act in every respect agreeably to my character of a god." . . . (He adds that he acts agreeably to all the other natures which he assumes.) . 1582. "But during the existence of my mortal condition, though they (the Kurus) were humbly entreated by me, they, through delusion, were not touched, and did not listen to my words. Though terrified by me, when I was incensed, with great alarms, and again fittingly admonished, they, influenced by unrighteousness, and overcome by fate, have been righteously slain in battle, and have undoubtedly gone to heaven."²⁷¹ On hearing this reply of Kṛiṣṇa, the sage Uttanga breaks out: "I recognize thee, Janārdana, as the creator of the world," etc. Kṛiṣṇa then shows him his divine form.

²⁷¹ See Mahābhārata, S'ānti-parvan, v. 3655 ff., where Indra says: *Āhave tu hataṁ śūram na śocheta kathanchana | aśochyo hi hataḥ śūraḥ evarga-loke mahiyato | na hy annaṁ nodakaṁ tasya na snānaṁ nāpy aśauchakam | hataṁ kartum ichhanti tasya lokān śrinuṣvha me | varāpsaraḥ-sahasrāṇi śūram āyodhane hataṁ | tvaramāṇā bhīdhāvanti "mama dhartā bhaved" itī |* "Let no one ever lament a hero slain in battle. A hero slain is not to be lamented, for he is exalted in heaven. Men do not desire to offer to him food or water, or perform ablutions, or [contract?] impurity [on his account]. Hear from me the worlds to which he goes. Thousands of beautiful nymphs (*apsaras*) run quickly up to the hero who has been slain in combat, saying to him, 'be my husband.'" Professor Weber refers to this passage, *Indische Studien*, i. 398, note, and notices the parallel it forms to similar representa-

VIII. In the preceding pages, various passages have been adduced in which the supremacy of Mahādeva and his identity with the soul of the universe have been asserted (pp. 185 f., 194, 196), and other texts have been quoted in which the same rank and character are assigned to Viṣṇu (pp. 263 ff.). The reader will likewise have noticed that in some places also (pp. 241, 268), an attempt is made, by alleging the essential oneness of the two deities, to reconcile their conflicting claims.²⁷² Another passage of this description occurs in the Harivaṃśa, vv. 10660 ff. It had been related in the preceding section that Śiva had come to the assistance of Bāṇa and the Dānavas in tions about Hūris in the Coran. So also in vv. 3591 ff., it is said: *Abhūto vikīraṇa śatrūn pratigrihya śarāṃsi tathā | na tasmāt tridaśūḥ śreyo bhuvi paśyanti kinchana | śasya śastrāṇi yāvanti tvacham bhīdanti sāmyuge | tāvataḥ so 'śnute lokān sarva-kūma-duho 'kshayān | yad asya rudhiraṃ gūtrād āhave sampravartate | suha tenaiva pāpāna sarva-pāpāṇi pramucyate* | "The gods see nothing on earth superior to the man who, fearless, scattering his foes, receives arrows in his body. As many weapons as pierce him in the fray, so many worlds yielding all enjoyments does he enjoy. With the blood which flows from his body, and through that misery so endured, he is freed from all his sins." Much more follows in praise of valour and reprehension of timidity. In vv. 3626 ff. a battle is compared to a sacrifice, and their corresponding parts described. In vv. 3666 ff. we are told that King Janaka showed his warriors the shining heavens, filled with Gandharvas' daughters, and yielding all manner of delights, destined for the courageous (*abhīrūṇām ime lokāḥ bhāsvanto hanta paśyata | pūrṇāḥ gandharva-kanyūbhīḥ sarva-kūma-duho 'kshayāḥ*); and the hells prepared for such as fled from battle. In the same way Kṛṣṇa says to Jarā-sandha (Sabhā-parvan, v. 869): *Ko hi jñānu abhijānam ātmavān kṣatriyo nṛipaḥ | nūvisat svargam atulaṃ raṇānantaram avyayam | svargam hy eva samāśtāya raṇa-yajñeshu dīkṣitūḥ | jayanti kṣatriyūḥ lokāṃś tad viddhi manujarabha | svargayonir mahad brahma svarga-yonir mahad yajñah | svarga-yonis tapo yuddhe mṛityuḥ so 'vyabhicāravān* | "For what Kṣatriya king, who was wise, and appreciated his own noble birth, has not, after the battle, entered into an incomparable and undecaying paradise? Know, chief of men, that Kṣatriyas, consecrated in the sacrifice of battle, attain to paradise and conquer the worlds. Great scriptural knowledge is the source of paradise, and so is great renown; austerity (*tapas*) in fight, too, is the source of paradise; such a death never fails of its reward." See also R.V. x. 154, 3, quoted in the fifth volume of this work, p. 310.

²⁷² Compare Vāya Purāṇa, as quoted in Aufrecht's Catalogue, p. 56, col. 2 (partly referred to above, p. 267, note); Varāhap., *ibid.*, p. 58, col. 2, note 2, and p. 59, col. 2; Devībhāg., *ibid.*, p. 81a; also Padmap., *ibid.*, p. 16, note 1. The last text is as follows: Kṛṣṇa speaks: *Saivūḥ Saurās cha Gūṇasūḥ Vaiṣṇavāḥ S'akti-pūjakaḥ | mām eva prāpnuvantīha sarvopāḥ sūgarām yathā | eko hi pañchadhā jātāḥ svarūpaḥ nūmabhiḥ kila | Devadatto yathā kṣchit putrādya-āhvāna-nūmabhiḥ* | "The worshippers of Śiva, Śūra (the Sun), Gaṇeśa, Viṣṇu and Śakti, come to me, as all streams flow to the ocean. For, though one, I am born with fivefold forms and names, just as the man Devadatta when called [is addressed] by the appellations of 'son,' etc."

their conflict with Kṛishṇa (v. 10587 f.), when a terrible combat ensues between the latter and Siva, which causes the earth to tremble, and throws the whole universe into disorder (v. 10601 f.). Siva is at length paralyzed by a weapon of his adversary called jṛimbhana, which causes him to yawn incessantly (v. 10632 f.). The earth is distressed (v. 10641 ff.) and appeals to Brahmā for assistance. Brahmā (v. 10647) remonstrates with Siva against his conflict with Kṛishṇa, who, he says, is in reality one with himself. Siva perceiving by yoga (mental union with the object contemplated) the truth of what Brahmā had stated, says to Brahmā that he will no longer fight against Kṛishṇa, and the two combatants embrace (v. 10648 ff.). Brahmā then says to the sage Mārkaṇḍeya (v. 10656 ff.) that he had formerly, in a dream, seen the two deities on the northern side of the mountain Mandara, each invested with the emblems of the other, Hara (Siva) in the form of Hari (Viṣṇu) with the shell, discus, and club, clothed in yellow vestments and mounted on Garuḍa, and Hari in the form of Hara, bearing the trident and axe, clad in a tiger's skin, and mounted on a bull; and he asks the sage Mārkaṇḍeya to explain this phenomenon which had occasioned him great astonishment. Mārkaṇḍeya replies (vv. 10660 ff.):

*Mārkaṇḍeyaḥ uvācha | Sivāya Viṣṇu-rūpāya Viṣṇave S'iva-rūpiṇe²⁷³ |
athāntaraṁ na paśyāmi tena te dīśataḥ²⁷⁴ śivam | an-ādi-madhya-nidhanam
etaḍ akṣharam avyayam | tad eva te pravakṣhyāmi rūpam Hari-Harāt-
makam | yo vai Viṣṇuḥ sa vai Rudro yo Rudraḥ sa Pitāmahaḥ | eka
mūrtis trayo devāḥ Rudra-Viṣṇu-Pitāmahaḥ | varadāḥ loka-kartāro
loka-nāthāḥ svayambhuvāḥ | ardha-nārīśvarāś te tu vrataṁ tīvraṁ samā-
śritāḥ | yathā jale jalāṁ kṣiptaṁ jalam eva tu tad bhavet | Rudraṁ
Viṣṇuḥ pravishṭas tu tathā Rudramayo bhavet | agnim agniḥ pravishṭas
tu agnir eva yathā bhavet | tathā Viṣṇum pravishṭas tu Rudro Viṣṇu-
mayo bhavet | Rudram agnimayaṁ vidyād Viṣṇuḥ somātmakaḥ smṛitaḥ |
agnishomātmakaṁ chaiva jagat sthāvara-jangamam | kartārau chāpa-
hartārau sthāvarasya charasya cha | jagataḥ śubha-kartārau prabhā
Viṣṇu-Maheśvarau | kartri-kāraṇa-kartārau kartri-kāraṇa-karakau |
bhūta-bhavya-bhavaṁ devau Nārāyaṇa-Maheśvarau | etau tau cha pra-
vakṭārāv etau tau cha prabhūmayau | jagataḥ pālakāv etāv etau śrīṣṭi-
karau smṛitau | ete chaiva pravaraṣanti bhānti vānti srijanti cha | etat*

²⁷³ See the same words above, p. 231.

²⁷⁴ The MS. in the library of the Royal Asiatic Society reads *darśitaḥ*.

*paratāraṁ guhyaṁ kathitaṁ te Pitāmaha | yaś chainam paṣhate nityaṁ
yaś chainaṁ śṛṇuyād naraḥ | prāṇoti paramaṁ sthānaṁ Rudra-Vishṇu-
prasāda-jam | devau Hari-Haraṁ stothye Brahmanā saha sangatau | etau
cha paramau devau jagataḥ prabhavāpyayau | Rudrasya paramo Vishṇur
Vishṇoscha paramaḥ Śivaḥ | ekaḥ eva dvīdha-bhūto loka charati nityasaḥ |
na vinā Śankaraṁ Viṣṇur na vinā Keśavaṁ Śivaḥ | tasmād ekatvam
āyātau Rudropendrau tu tau purā | ityādi.*

"When thou showest me this auspicious [vision], I perceive thereby no difference between Śiva who exists in the form of Viṣṇu, and Viṣṇu who exists in the form of Śiva. I shall declare to thee that form composed of Hari and Hara (Viṣṇu and Mahādeva) combined, which is without beginning, or middle, or end, imperishable, undecaying. He who is Viṣṇu is Rudra; he who is Rudra is Pitāmaha (Brahmā): the substance (*mūrti*) is one, the gods are three, Rudra, Viṣṇu, and Pitāmaha. Bestowers of boons, creators of the world, sovereigns of the world, self-existent, they are the half-female lords, and have performed austere rites. Just as water thrown into water can be nothing else than water, so Viṣṇu entering into Rudra must possess the nature of Rudra. And just as fire entering into fire can be nothing else but fire, so Rudra entering into Viṣṇu must possess the nature of Viṣṇu. Let Rudra be understood to possess the nature of Agni; Viṣṇu is declared to possess the nature of Soma (the Moon); and the world, movable and immovable, possesses the nature of Agni and Soma.²⁷⁶ The lords, Viṣṇu and Maheśvara, are the makers and destroyers of things movable and immovable, and the benefactors of the world. The gods Nārāyaṇa and Maheśvara are the [first] makers of the cause, and of [the secondary] maker, the [first] causers of the cause, and of the [secondary] makers, existing in the past, future, and present. And these two are the revealers, they possess a luminous essence, they are declared to be the preservers of the world, and the creators. They rain, they shine, they blow, and they create. This which I have told thee, Pitāmaha, is the highest mystery. The man who continually repeats it, and hears it, obtains the highest abode, granted by the grace of Rudra and Viṣṇu. I shall laud the gods Hari and Hara, associated with Brahmā; and these two are the supreme deities, the originators and destroyers of the

²⁷⁶ See above, pp. 204 and 225.

world. Vishnu, the highest [manifestation] of Rudra, and Śiva, the highest [manifestation] of Vishnu,—this [god] one only, though divided into twain, moves continually in the world. Vishnu does not [exist] without Sankara, nor Śiva without Keśava; hence these two, Rudra and Upendra (Vishnu), have formerly attained to oneness," etc.

Then follows a hymn to the double deity.

The various representations of Kṛishṇa given in the different sets of passages above cited possess a certain interest in themselves, even independently of the light which they may be considered to throw on the process by which his deification was effected. Among the texts adduced from the Mahābhārata there are some (see pp. 185 ff.) in which he is distinctly subordinated to Mahādeva, of whom he is exhibited as a worshipper, and from whom, as well as from his wife Umā, he is stated to have received a variety of boons. Even in these passages, however, a superhuman character is ascribed to Kṛishṇa.

A second class of texts has been brought forward in pp. 205 ff., in which his superiority is represented to have been denied by Śiśupāla, Duryodhana, Karna, and Salva. Of course we are not to imagine that any claim to a superhuman character was ever advanced on behalf of the Yādava hero in his lifetime, either by himself or his friends. These narrative passages, therefore, in which his divine dignity is denied by his enemies, and asserted by his partisans, as well as vindicated by the miraculous exploits which are attributed to him, are nothing more than poetical fictions (possibly of a polemical import) put forward at a period when his godhead had come to be recognized by the Vaishnavas, though perhaps doubted or disputed by other sects. Such a resistance to the pretensions set up on Kṛishṇa's behalf may be indicated in the verses I have quoted in p. 237 f., where all who regard him as a mere man are stigmatized as being under the dominion of the quality of darkness.

In the third class of passages, quoted in pp. 243 ff., where the achievements of Kṛishṇa are described with a supernatural colouring, it seems not unreasonable to recognize a basis of simpler legend (if not of actual history)³⁷⁶ underlying the miraculous narrative, and to trace a reference to a variety of warlike adventures in which the Yādava chief contended as a mere man with the warriors of other tribes. The supernatural powers which are here ascribed to him are not in their

³⁷⁶ See Lassen's *Indian Antiquities*, vol. i., p. 616; in second ed., p. 762.

character essentially different from those which are attributed to his enemies, who, it will be observed, are in like manner represented as endowed with superhuman faculties; while Kṛishṇa himself is in various places described as being indebted to the gods for his weapons, or for other advantages (see the Drona-parvan, v. 402, and the Ādi-parvan, v. 8196, quoted or referred to in pp. 244 ff., and the Udyoga-parvan, quoted in p. 247).

The identification of Arjuna and Kṛishṇa with the saints Nara and Nārāyaṇa (pp. 228 ff.)²⁷⁷ is curious; but I am unable to conjecture whether it may have originated in a previously existing legend respecting two rishis of that name (the one of whom, as bearing the same name which was ultimately applied to Viṣṇu and Kṛishṇa, was, in the fanciful spirit of Indian mythology, and in consonance with the tenet of metempsychosis, declared to have been an earlier manifestation of Kṛishṇa,—when Arjuna, the bosom friend of the latter, would naturally be regarded as the same with Nara, the inseparable companion of Nārāyaṇa); or whether the whole legend was originally invented for the glorification of Kṛishṇa and Arjuna.

In the passages above adverted to, where Kṛishṇa is subordinated to Mahādeva, the latter is identified with the supreme Deity (see pp. 185 ff., 194). In another set of texts, however (pp. 230, 264 ff.), Kṛishṇa, as Viṣṇu, is asserted to be one with the supreme God,²⁷⁸ while Mahādeva is represented as springing from, and dependent on, Viṣṇu. But here and elsewhere, as we have already seen, an attempt is made to reconcile the claims of the two rival deities by affirming their identity (pp. 241, 268). How are we to explain this circumstance, that in one place Mahādeva is extolled at the expense of Kṛishṇa, and that in another place Kṛishṇa is exalted above Mahādeva? Must we assume the one set of passages to be older

²⁷⁷ In Böhtlingk and Roth's Dictionary the word *Nārāyaṇa* is explained as the "son of man," and as a patronymic of the personified Puruṣa, the rishi of the Puruṣa-sūkta (E.V., x. 90). *Nara* is in the same work interpreted as the "primeval man."

²⁷⁸ Even in the parts of the Viṣṇu Purāṇa and Mahābhārata (see pp. 49 and 253 ff.), where Kṛishṇa is represented as a partial incarnation of the godhead, there does not appear to be any intention to question the plenitude of his divine nature. Compare the 27th with the 34th and following verses of the 33rd section of the 10th Book of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, quoted in p. 49.

than the other, or are we to suppose them to be contemporaneous, or nearly contemporaneous, and to have been inserted in the *Mahābhārata* by different classes of sectaries in order to give a sort of catholicity to the great epic, by making it a storehouse in which the votaries of all the different deities might find something to satisfy their various tendencies?

Though deeper study might lead to a different conclusion, it does not, I think, result from a superficial comparison of the principal passages which I have quoted relative to Mahādeva, with those which have reference to Kṛishṇa, that the one class bears in its general complexion the impress of any greater antiquity than the other. Both, in their present form at least, appear to belong to the same age, as we find in both the same tendency to identify the god who is the object of adoration with the supreme Soul. The passages relating to both gods, as they now stand, would therefore seem to be the products of a sectarian spirit, and to have been introduced into the poem by the Śaivas and Vaiṣṇavas for the purpose of upholding the honour of their respective deities. But on the other hand the mere fact that a poem in which Kṛishṇa plays throughout so prominent a part, and which in its existing form is so largely devoted to his glorification, should at the same time contain so many passages which formally extol the greatness, and still more, which incidentally refer to a frequent adoration, of the rival deity, by the different personages, whether contemporary or of earlier date, who are introduced,—this fact is, I think, a proof that the worship of the latter (Mahādeva) was widely diffused, if indeed it was not the predominant worship in India, at the period to which the action of the poem is referred. Various references to such a worship of Mahādeva as I have alluded to will be found in the preceding pages, 184 ff., 230 ff., and 269 (where the abode of this deity is described as being in the Himālaya, p. 230 and 269). I shall quote some further illustrations of its prevalence.²⁷⁹

Lassen remarks (i. 780; i. 922 in second ed.), that in the epic poems the worship of Viṣṇu is but seldom²⁸⁰ mentioned—a fact which he

²⁷⁹ See Lassen's *Indian Antiquities*, vol. i., pp. 561, 571, 610, 711, 716, 741, and 781; = pp. 676, 686, 766, 861, 708, 871, 922, in second ed.

²⁸⁰ Lassen (i. 679 = p. 828 in second ed.) refers to a passage⁸ of the *Vana-parvan* (16283 ff.), where Duryodhana, being prevented from offering a rājasūya sacrifice, is advised by his priest to offer a sacrifice to Viṣṇu. This story will be quoted further on.

regards as proving that at the period when they were composed no special worship of that deity had been extensively spread, at least among the Brahmans and princes, to the description of whose manners and customs those works almost exclusively confine themselves. On the other hand he quotes (note to i. 561, 1st ed.; i. 675, 2nd ed.) the following passages to prove the wide extension of the worship of Mahādeva in different parts of India. In the Tīrtha-yātrā, or section on visiting places of pilgrimage, in the Vana-parvan, 6054 ff., it is said of the Vaitaraṇī river, in the country of the Kalingas :

Tatas Tripiṣṭhapaṁ gacchhet trishu lokeshu viśrutam | tatra Vaitaraṇī punyā nadī pāpa-praṇāśini | tatra snātvā 'rohayitvā cha S'ūlapāṇīm Vṛṣhadhvaṇam | sarva-pāpa-viśuddhātmā gachheta paramāṁ gatim |
 "Let him then go to Tripiṣṭhapa, renowned in the three worlds. There is the holy river Vaitaraṇī, which destroys sin. Having bathed there and worshipped the god who wields the trident and whose ensign is the bull (Mahādeva), he shall be purified from all sin, and attain the highest felicity."

At vv. 11001 of the same book (p. 569 of the printed Calcutta ed.) it is said of the north bank of the same river :

Atraiva Rudro rājendra paśum ādattavān makhe | paśum ādāya rājendra bhāgo 'yam iti chābravīt | hṛite paśau tadā devās tam uchuḥ Bharatarshabha | mā para-svam abhidrogdhāḥ mā dharmān sakalān vaśiḥ | tataḥ kalyāṇa-rūpābhir vāgbhis te Rudram astuvan | iṣṭyā chainaṁ tarpayitvā mānayanāchakrire tadā | tataḥ sa paśum uterijya deva-yānena jagmivān | tatrānuvaṁso Rudrasya tan nibodha Yudhisṭhira | ayātayāmaṁ sarvebhyo bhāgebhyo bhāgam uttamam | devāḥ sankalpayāmaṁsur bhayād Rudrasya śāśvatam | imāṁ gūthām atra gāyann apaḥ spṛśati yo naraḥ | deva-yāno 'sya panthās cha chakshuṣā 'bhiprakāśate |

"In this very place, O king, Rudra seized a victim at a sacrifice, and having done so, said, 'This is [my] portion.' When he had seized the victim, the gods said to him, 'Do not attack the property of others; do not covet all the offerings.' They then lauded Rudra with words of auspicious import; and having satiated him with an oblation, they paid him honour. He then relinquished the victim, and departed by the path of the gods. Referring to this is the following traditional verse of Rudra, which learn from me, Yudhisṭhira: 'Through dread of Rudra, the gods allotted to him for ever the most excellent of all

portions, the *ayātayāma* (or fresh portion). The man who, here reciting this verse, touches the waters, obtains a distinct vision of the path leading to the gods.'"

In the same *Vana-parvan*, v. 8166, it is said that Mahādeva was worshipped at Gokarṇa, on the west coast of the Dekhan :

Atha Gokarṇam āsādyā trishu lokeshu viśrutam | samudra-madhye rūjendra sarva-loka-namaskṛitam | yatra Brahmādayo devāḥ ṛishayaś cha tapodhanāḥ | 8169: *Saritaḥ sāgarāḥ sailāḥ upāsanta Umā-patim | ityādi |* "Then having reached Gokarṇa, renowned in the three worlds, standing in the sea, adored by all worlds, where Brahmā and the other gods and rishis rich in austerity," [various other kinds of beings are here enumerated, Bhūtas, Yakshas, etc., etc.], "rivers, oceans, and mountains worshipped the lord of Umā (Mahādeva)."

The same place is also mentioned in the *Rāmopākhyāna* of the *Vana-parvan*, v. 15999 f. :

Trikūṭam samatikramya Kālparvatam eva cha | dadarśa makarāvāsam gambhīrodam mahodadhim | tam atītyūtha Gokarṇam abhyagachhat Daśūnanaḥ | dayitaṁ sthānam avyagraṁ Sūlapāṇer mahātmanaḥ | "Having passed Trikūṭa, and the Black Mountain, he (Rāvaṇa) saw the deep ocean, the abode of marine monsters. Having crossed it, he then approached Gokarṇa, the beloved undisturbed abode of the mighty wielder of the trident."

[The same *Tirtha-yātrā*, however, from which the passages preceding the last are taken, contains the following lines celebrating Kṛṣhṇa :

* *Vana-parvan*, v. 8349 f.—*Punyā Drāravatī tatra yatrāsau Madhusūdanaḥ | sūkshhād devaḥ purāṇo 'sau sa hi dharmāḥ sanātanaḥ | ye cha vedavido viprah ye chādhyātma-vido janāḥ | te vadanti mahātmanāṁ Kṛṣhṇam dharmam sanatanam | pavitrāṇām hi Govindaḥ pavitram param uchyate | punyānām api punyo 'sau mangalānām cha mangalam | trailokye Puṇḍarikākṣho deva-devaḥ sanātanaḥ | avyayātmā vyayātmā cha kshhetrajñaḥ paramēśvaraḥ | ūste Harir achintyātmā tatraiva Madhusūdanaḥ |* "There is the holy Dvāravatī where that Madhusūdana [abides], that manifest, ancient god ; for he is the eternal righteousness. Brāhmanas who know the Veda, and who know the supreme spirit, call the mighty Kṛṣhṇa the eternal righteousness. Govinda is called the supremely pure among the pure, the holy among the holy, the blessed among the blessed. In the three worlds the lotus-eyed is the eternal god of gods,

the undecaying in essence, and the decaying, the conscious occupant of the body, the supreme lord. There the inconceivable Hari, Madhusūdana, abides.”]

The following passages supply some further instances of the worship of Mahādeva by personages introduced in the poem :

- Ādi-parvan, v. 7049.—*Evaṁ teshāṁ vilapatāṁ viprāṇāṁ vividhāḥ girāḥ | Arjuno dhanuṣo 'bhyāse tasthau girir ivāchalaḥ | sa tad dhanuḥ parikramya pradakṣiṇam athākarot | pranāmya śirasā devam Īśānaṁ varadam prabhum | Kṛishṇaṁ cha manasā kṛtvā jagrihe chārjuno dhanuḥ | yat pārthivaiḥ Rukmi-Sunītha-Vaktraiḥ Rādheya-Duryodhana-Sālya-Sālvaḥ | tadā dhanur-veda-parair nṛṣiṅhaiḥ kṛtaṁ na sajjam mahato 'pi yatnāt | tad Arjunaḥ ityādi |* “While the Brāhmaṇs thus uttered various speeches, Arjuna stood firm as a mountain, trying the bow. He then made a circuit round it, bowing down in reverence to the boon-bestowing lord Īśāna (Mahādeva); and having meditated on Kṛishṇa,²⁸¹ Arjuna seized the bow. And that bow which the lion-like kings Rukmin, Sunītha (Sisupāla), Vaktra, Rādheya, Duryodhana, Sālya, and Sālva, skilled in archery, could not with great effort bend [so as to fix the bowstring], Arjuna bent, and hit the mark,” etc., etc.

In the Vana-parvan, vv. 15777, it is related that Jayadratha, after being captured by Bhishma and released at the request of Yudhishthira, went to worship Mahādeva (v. 15801):

Jagāma rājan duḥkharṭo Gangādvārāya Bhārata | sa devaṁ śaraṇaṁ gatvā virūpākṣham Umāpatim | tapas chachāra vipulāṁ tasya prito Vṛṣhadhvajaḥ | baliṁ sayam pratyagrihnāt prīyamāṇas Trilochanaḥ | varaṁ chūṣmai dadau devaḥ sa jagṛha cha tach chhṛiṇu | “Samastān sarathān pancha jayeyāṁ yudhi Pāṇḍarān” | iti rājā 'braviḍ devaṁ neti devas tam abravīt | ajayyāṁś chāpy abadhyāṁś cha vūrayishyasi tām yudhi | ṛite 'rjunam mahābāhuṁ Naraṁ nāma sureśvaram | Vadāryāṁ tapta-tapasāṁ Nārāyaṇa-sahūyakam | ajitaṁ sarva-lokānāṁ devair apī durāsadam | mayā dattam pūṣpataṁ diryam apratimaṁ śaram | avāpa lokapālebhyo vajrādīn sa mahāśarān | deva-devo hy anantātmā Viṣṇuḥ sura-guruḥ prabhuḥ | pradhāna-puruṣo 'vyaktuḥ viśvātmā viśva-mūrtimān | yugāntakāle samprāpte kālāgnir dahate jagat | sa-parvatārṇava-dvīpaṁ sa-sāila-vana-kānanam |

²⁸¹ Lassen (Indian Antiquities, vol. i., p. 646, first ed.; p. 794, second ed.) regards this reference to Kṛishṇa as a later interpolation in the older story.

"He went, O king, distressed with grief, to Gangādvāra (Haridvāra). There, resorting to the distorted-eyed lord of Umā as his refuge, he practised long austerities. Gratified with this, the three-eyed god, whose ensign is a bull, himself received his oblation, and offered him a boon, which he accepted. Hear how [he did so]. The king (Jayadratha) said to the god, 'May I vanquish all the five Pāṇḍavas with their chariots in battle.' The god said, 'No; thou shalt withstand them all, though they are unconquerable and not to be slain, excepting only the great-armed Arjuna, who is called Nara, the lord of the gods, who performed austerity at Badari, attended by Nārāyaṇa, who is invincible by all the worlds, and irresistible even by the gods. He obtained the Pāśupata, a divine, incomparable missile, given by me, and thunderbolts and other great weapons from the guardians of the worlds. For the infinite Viṣṇu, the god of gods, the chief of the deities, the chief spirit (Puruṣa), the undiscernible, the soul of all things, the universal-formed, at the end of the yuga burns up the world, with its mountains, oceans, continents, rocks and forests.'" Mahādeva then goes on to relate how the destruction and the restoration of the world is effected by Viṣṇu, and describes his various incarnations. He concludes by saying that Arjuna who was aided by him could not be conquered even by the gods. In this legend it will be observed that the warrior goes to worship Mahādeva, and not Viṣṇu, though the latter is represented as being magnified by the rival deity. But this part of the story may be interpolated.

In the Sānti-parvan also (vv. 1748 f.), it is related how Paraśurāma worshipped Mahādeva on the mountain Gandhamādana, and obtained his celebrated axe, by which he became renowned in the world (*toṣayitvā Mahādevam parvate Gandhamādane | astrāṇi varayāmāsa paraśum chāti-tejasam | sa tenākuntha-dhāreṇa jvalitūnala-varchaṣā | kuṭhāreṇā-prameyeṇa lokeshv apratimo 'bhavat*). Then follows the story of Kārtavīrya (see the first volume of this work, pp. 450, 478).

In the following passage, Jarāsandha is introduced as a zealous votary of Mahādeva. Yudhisṭhira had been purposing to celebrate a Rājasūya sacrifice, which presupposed that he was the most powerful of contemporary monarchs; but Kṛishṇa in the following words tells him that he cannot do so while Jarāsandha lives :

Sabhā-parvan, v. 626.—*Na tu śakyaṃ Jarāsandhe jīvamāṇe mahābale |*

rājasūyaṁ tvayā 'vāptum eṣā rājan matir mama | tena ruddhāḥ hi rājānaḥ sarve jīvā Girivraje | kandaro parvatendrasya imhenova mahā-dvipāḥ | sa hi rājā Jarāsandho yiyakṣur vasudhādhipaiḥ | Mahādevam mahātmānam Umāpatim arindama | ārādhya tapasogreṇa nirjitas tena pāṛthivāḥ | pratijñāyās cha pāraṁ sa galaḥ pāṛthiva-sattamaḥ | sa hi nirjitya nirjitya pāṛthivān pritanāgatān | puram ānīya baddhvā cha chakāra puruṣa-vrajam | vayaṁ chaiva mahārāja Jarāsandha-bhayāt tadā | Mathurāṁ samparityajya gatūḥ Dvāravatīm purīm |

“But whilst the powerful Jarāsandha lives, a Rājasūya sacrifice cannot be attained by thee; such, king, is my opinion. For all the kings have been conquered, and are imprisoned by him in Girivraja, as elephants by a lion in a cave of a great mountain. For this monarch Jarāsandha desired to sacrifice to the glorious Mahādeva, the lord of Umā, with these kings [as ‘victims’]; and they were conquered by him after he had worshipped the god with dreadful austerities. And this eminent prince has attained to the accomplishment of his design. For after repeatedly conquering the princes who had come against him in battle, he has brought them to his capital, confined them, and made them a human herd. And we too,” (confesses Kṛishṇa) “from dread of Jarāsandha, deserted Mathurā, and went to the city of Dvāravatī.”

Kṛishṇa returns, a little farther on, to Jarāsandha's cruelty to the kings:

Sabhā-parvan, v. 653.—*Ratna-bhājo hi rājāno Jarāsandham upāsate | na cha tushyati tenāpi bālyād anayam āsthitāḥ | mūrdhābhishikṭam nripatim pradhāna-puruṣo balāt | ādatte na cha no dṛiṣṭo 'bhāgaḥ puruṣhataḥ kvachit | evaṁ sarvān vāse chakre Jarāsandhaḥ śatāvarān | taṁ durbala-paro rājā katham Pārtha upaishyati | prokṣhitānām pramriṣhṭānām²⁸² rājñām Paśupater grihe | paśūnām ivā kṛ pṛitir jīvite Bharat-arṣhabha |* “For jewelled kings wait upon Jarāsandha; and yet he is not contented even with that, having through folly become imprudent. A prince seizes by force a consecrated king, and we do not see that he has failed to master any mortal anywhere.²⁸³ In this manner

²⁸² The commentator's remark on this is as follows: *Pramriṣhṭānām | Rudra-dāto atyo 'yam iti pratyekam abhimriṣhṭānām |*

²⁸³ These words are explained by the commentator in the above sense: *Jarāsandhena abhāgaḥ avikṛitāḥ | puruṣhataḥ mūrdhābhishikṛiteshu puruṣheshu | tena sarve vaditṛitāḥ ity arthaḥ |* “*Abhāgaḥ* means ‘unappropriated’ by Jarāsandha. *Puruṣhataḥ* means ‘among anointed kings.’ The sense is, that ‘all have been subdued by him.’”

Jarāsandha has reduced to subjection in all at least a hundred persons; how, then, can a feeble prince approach him? What pleasure can those princes have in existence, when they have been sprinkled for slaughter and devoted as victims like beasts in the temple of Paśupati (Mahādeva)?”

Krishṇa afterwards proceeds to Jarāsandha's capital with Bhīma and Arjuna, with the view of slaying their enemy. They are admitted to his palace in the disguise of Brahmans, and after some conversation, Krishṇa says to Jarāsandha :

Sabhā-parvan, vv. 861 ff.—*Tvayā chopahṛitāḥ rājan kshatriyāḥ lokarāsināḥ | tad āgaḥ krūram utpādya manyase kim anāgasam | rājā rājnaḥ katham sūdhūn hiṁsyād nṛipati-sattama | yad rājnaḥ sannigrihya tvam Rudrūyopajihṛaśasi | asmāns tad enopagachchhet kṛitam Vārhadratha tvayā | vyaṁ hi śaktiḥ dharmasya rakṣaṇe dharmachārīṇaḥ | manushyānām samālabho na oha dṛiṣṭaḥ kadāchana | sa katham mānuṣhair devaṁ yaśtum ichhasi S'ankaram | savarṇo hi savarṇānām²⁸⁴ paśu-sañjñām*

²⁸⁴ On this the commentator remarks: *Nanu “Brahmaṇe brāhmaṇam ālabheta” ityādinā sarva-jūtiyānām sarva-karmaṇām manushyānām ālabho devatārīkṣam badhaḥ śrūyate ity āsankya āha savarṇo hi iti |* “But is not the immolation,—the slaughter as an offering to a god,—of men of all classes, and all occupations, enjoined in such Vedic texts as this, ‘let him immolate a Brāhmaṇa to Brahman,’ etc.? Having raised this doubt, he says, ‘For thou, belonging to the same tribe,’ etc.”

Texts such as that here quoted by the commentator occur in the Taitt. Br., iii. 4, 1, 1 ff. (*Brahmaṇe brāhmaṇam ālabhate ityādi* | “He sacrifices a Brāhmaṇa to Brahman,” etc., etc.) and in the Vājasaneyi Sanhita, xxx. 5 ff. (*Brahmaṇe brāhmaṇam ityādi*). In regard to the question whether human sacrifices were practised in the earliest Vedic age, see Prof. Haug, as quoted in the first volume of this work, p. 11, and in the second volume, p. 463; the story of S'unasēpa, adduced in vol. i., pp. 355 ff.; Prof. Müller's Ancient Sanskrit Literature, pp. 419 f.; Prof. Weber's paper in the Journal of the German Oriental Society, vol. xviii., pp. 262 ff. (reprinted in his Indische Streifen, i., pp. 54 ff.). The two last-named writers quote texts from the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, ii., 8, and the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, i., 2, 3, 6, which I shall here cite. The former begins thus: *Purusham vai devūḥ paśum ālabhanta | tasmād ālabdhād medhaḥ udakrāmat | so 'ivam prāviśat | tasmād aśvo medhyo 'bhavat | atha enam utkrūnta-medham atyārjanta | sa kimpurusho 'bhavat | te 'ivam ālabhanta | so 'ivād ālabdhād udakrāmat | sa gām prāviśat | tasmād gaur medhyo 'bhavat | atha enam utkrūnta-medham atyārjanta sa gauramṛigo 'bhavat | te gām ālabhanta | sa gor ālabdhād udakrāmat | so 'vim prāviśat |* “The gods sacrificed a man as a victim. After he had been sacrificed, the sacrificial element went out of him. It entered into the horse, which consequently became suitable for sacrifice. They then dismissed the man, after the sacrificial element had left him; and he became a kimpurusha,” [probably an ape, according to Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, vol. ii., p. 228, and vol. v., p. 1296; with whom Weber agrees, Ind. Stud., ix., 246. “The author very

*karishyasi | ko 'nyah evaṁ yathā hi tvāṁ Jarāsandha vṛthā matiḥ | yas-
yāṁ yasyām avasthāyām yat yat karma karoti yaḥ | tasyām tasyām
avasthāyām tat-phalaṁ samavāpnuyāt | te tvāṁ jñāti-kṣaya-karam vayan
ārtānusārīṇaḥ | jñāti vṛddhi-nimittārthaṁ vinśantam śhāgatāḥ | . . .
Jarāsandha uvācha . . . 882 : Devatārtham upāhṛitya rājnah Kṛṣṇa
katham bhayāt | aham adya vimuchyeyāṁ kṣhātraṁ vratam anumaram |*

"Thou, king, hast devoted [to Mahādeva] Kshatriyas dwellers in this world. Having devised this cruel iniquity, dost thou regard thyself as guiltless? How should a king slaughter virtuous kings? Inasmuch as thou hast confined kings, and seekest to offer them up to Rudra, the guilt committed by thee, son of Vṛhadratha, would attach to us. For we who practise righteousness are able to protect righteousness. And [such a thing as] the immolation of men has never been seen. How [then] dost thou seek to sacrifice to the god Śankara with human victims? For thou, belonging to the same tribe [as those

likely means a dwarf," Haug's transl of the Ait Br, p 90, note, Muller regards the word as meaning "a savage."] "They sacrificed the horse, from which the sacrificial element then departed, and entered into the ox, which consequently became fit for sacrifice. They then dismissed the horse out of which the sacrificial element had departed, and it became a white deer. They next sacrificed the ox, from which the sacrificial element then departed, and entered into the sheep," etc. The same thing happens to the goat (in which the sacrificial element remained longest), then to the earth, in which it (the thing fit for sacrifice), when followed by the gods, became rice.

On this Prof Muller remarks "The drift of this story is most likely that in former times all these victims had been offered. We know it for certain in the case of horses and oxen, though afterwards these sacrifices were discontinued."

"The text from the Satapṛitha Brahmana, 1, 2, 3, 6, is as follows. *Purushaṁ ha vaḥ detāḥ agre pasuṁ ālebhīre | tasya ālabdhasya medho 'pachakrāma | so 'ivam praviveśa | te 'siam ālabhanta | tasya ālabdhasya medho 'pachakrāma sa gām praviveśa | te gām ā — | so 'vīm praviveśa | te 'vīm ā — | so 'jam praviveśa | te 'jam ālabhanta | tasya ālabdhasya medho 'pachakrāma | 7 | sa imām pṛithvīm praviveśa | tam kṣhanantah va anvīshuh | tam anvāvindams tav imau vṛhi-yavau | . . . sa yāvad-vīryavād ha vaḥ asya ele sarve paravah ālabdhāḥ syus tūvad-vīryavād ha asya havir bhavati yaḥ evaṁ veda |* "The gods formerly offered up a man as a victim. The sacrificial element left him when he had been sacrificed and entered into the horse. They offered up the horse, whereupon the sacrificial element went out of him and entered into the ox." The same thing happens with the ox, and then with the sheep and the goat successively. "The sacrificial element went out of the goat, and (7) entered the earth. Digging, they searched for it, and found it (the thing fit for sacrifice) in the shape of rice and barley . . . An oblation of these grains has as much efficacy, for him who knows this fact, as resides in all these victims when sacrificed."

princes], wilt designate as victims men of thine own tribe. What other person, Jarāsandha, is so foolish as thou? Whosoever, in any condition, perpetrates any particular act, will reap the fruit of it in that particular condition. We, the avengers of the afflicted, seeking the welfare of our kindred, have come hither to slay thee, the destroyer of thy kindred." Kṛishṇa, then, after some further arguments, calls upon Jarāsandha either to liberate the kings, or to submit to be destroyed in combat. Jarāsandha (v. 880) says he has conquered the kings, and has a right to act as he is doing. He adds (v. 882): "How, Kṛishṇa, can I, who have devoted the kings to the god, remembering my duty as a Kshatriya, to-day release them through fear?" He then accepts the challenge, and is killed by Bhīmasena.

The birth of Jarāsandha is thus related in the Sabhā-parvan; and the narrative contains at the close a reference to his being a worshipper of Mahādeva. His father, Vṛihadratha, had two wives, who, after having been long barren, at length bore him two halves of a boy (v. 711), which, being regarded with horror, were thrown out (v. 714). A female demon (Rākshasī) named Jarā, an eater of flesh, takes them up (v. 715), and puts them together in order that they may be more easily carried away. A boy is thus formed who cries; and people in consequence come out of the inner apartments of the palace, and among them the two queens and the king. The Rākshasī assumes a human shape, and gives the child to the king, who then asks who she is. She replies (vv. 729 ff.):

*Jarū-nāmā 'smi bhadraṁ te Rākshasī kāmā-rūpiṇī | tava veśmani rājen-
dra pūjita nyavasaṁ sukham | grihe grihe manushyānāṁ nityaṁ tiṣṭhāmi
rākshasī | griha-devitī nāmnā vai purā śriṣṭā Svayambhuvā | dānavānāṁ
vināśāya sthāpitā divya-rūpiṇī | yo mām bhaktyā likhet kudyē saputrāṁ
yauvanānvitāṁ | grihe tasya bhaved vṛiddhir anyathā kṣayam āpnuyāt |
tvad-grihe tiṣṭhamānā tu pūjita 'haṁ sadā vibho | likhita ohaiva kudyē
'haṁ putrair bahubhir avṛitā | gandha-puṣhpais tathā dhūpair bhakṣhyair
bhōjyair supūjita | sā 'haṁ pratyupakārārtham chintayāmy anisāṁ tava |
taveme putra-sakale dṛiṣṭavaty asemi dhārmika | samśleshite mayā daivāt
kumārāḥ samapadyata | tava bhāgyād mahārāja hetu-mātram ahaṁ to
iha | Meruṁ vā khādituṁ śaktā kim punas tava bālakam | griha-sampū-
janāt tuskṭyā mayā pratyarpitas tava |*

"I am, bless thee, a Rākshasī named Jarā, who can change my shape

at will. Worshipped in thy house, I have dwelt there in comfort. Named the house-goddess, I dwell constantly in every separate house of men, having been created of old by Svayambhū; and placed [there], of celestial form, for, the destruction of the Dānavas. Prosperity will remain in the house of that man who devoutly paints me in a youthful form, together with my sons, upon his wall;—otherwise he shall decay. Abiding in thy house, O king, and continually revered, painted upon the wall,²⁸⁵ surrounded by my numerous sons, worshipped with odours and flowers, with incense, and various kinds of food, I continually consider how I may benefit thee in return. I saw, righteous prince, these two pieces of thy son; I put them together by chance, and a boy was produced, through thy good fortune, O great king, and I was merely the instrument. I could devour mount Meru, much more thy son: but being gratified by the domestic worship I have received, I have restored him to thee."

The Rākshasī then disappears. King Vṛihadratha orders a great festival to be celebrated among the people of Magadha in her honour; and calls the boy Jarāsandha, because he had been put together (*sandhitah*) by the Rākshasī Jarā (v. 738. *Ājñāpayach cha rākshasyāḥ Magadheshu mahotsavam | tasya nāmākaroch chaiva Pitāmaha-samāḥ pitū | Jarayā sandhito yasmāj Jarūsandho bhavatu ayam*). The rishi Chanḍakaushika arrives on a certain occasion in the country of the Magadhas, and prophesies the future greatness of Jarāsandha (vv. 745 ff.). He ends by saying that this mighty prince of Magadha should have a manifest vision of Rudra, Mahādeva, Hara, the destroyer of Tripura (v. 753. *Esha Rudram Mahādevam tripurānta-karam Haram | sarvalokeshv atibalo sākshād drakshyati Māgadhaḥ*).

The description here given by the Rākshasī of the worship paid to herself, furnishes, as Lassen (who quotes it, i. 609, first ed.; p. 755, second ed.) remarks, an instance of the local adoration of particular deities in ancient India.

In the account given of the transactions connected with the Rājasūya sacrifice which Yudhishtira sought to celebrate, we find (as Lassen, i. 673, first ed.; p. 821, second ed., remarks) the Pāṇḍavas represented as the partisans of Kṛishṇa; and this legendary narrative may perhaps

²⁸⁵ Lassen remarks, vol. i., p. 755, note, that this is one of the oldest references in Indian literature to images of the gods.

be taken as an indication that they actually were the votaries of Vishṇu, and opposed to the worship of Mahādeva. In the story of Śiśupāla, which has been given above (pp. 205 ff.), we have seen that, in the assembly of princes who were gathered together on the occasion of that ceremonial, Kṛishṇa's claims to veneration were strongly maintained by the Pāṇḍavas, and others who took their side, while they were strenuously resisted by Śiśupāla, an adherent of the Kauravas, and, according to Lassen,³⁸⁶ a representative of the Śaiva worship. The same opposition to the worship of Kṛishṇa was, as I have already noticed, manifested by Duryodhana, Karna, and Śalya (pp. 216, 218, 220; etc.).

It is true that there is one passage (referred to above, p. 283, note 280*), to which Lassen has drawn attention, in which Duryodhana is represented as having offered up a sacrifice to Vishṇu; and as this legend exhibits some features of interest, I shall give some account of it here. In the Vana-parvan, 15274 ff., Karna, after having conquered the earth, says to Duryodhana that the earth was now his, and he should rule over it like Indra. Duryodhana answers that he wished to celebrate a Rājasūya sacrifice. Karna replies that he should make preparation for that purpose (15278 ff.). Duryodhana then sends for his priest (purohita), whom he desires to perform the sacrifice (15284). The priest, however, states that the Rājasūya sacrifice cannot be celebrated by Duryodhana while Yudhishṭhira lives, and while his own father, Dhṛitarāshṭra, survives (15285 ff.); but he suggests that there is another great sacrifice which Duryodhana may offer (15287 ff.):

*Asi tv anyad mahat satraṁ rājasūya-enmam prabho | tena tvaṁ yaja
rājendra śṛiṇu chedaṁ vacho mama | ye ime prithivī-pālāḥ kara-dās tava
pārthiva | te karān samprayachhantu suvarṇaṁcha kṛitākṛitaṁ | tena te
kriyatām adya lāṅgalaṁ nṛipa-sattama | yajna-vāṭasya te bhūmiḥ
kṛishyatām tena Bhārata | tatra yajno nṛipa-bṛeshṭha prabhūtannaḥ
susaṁskṛitāḥ | pravartatām yathānyāyāṁ sarvato hy anivāritāḥ | esha te
Vaiṣṇavo nāma yajnaḥ satpurushochitāḥ | etena neṣṭavān kaschid rite
Vishṇum purāṇanam | rājasūyaṁ kratu-bṛeshṭhaṁ sparadhaty esha
mahākratuḥ |* "But there is another great ceremonial equal to the Rājasūya, with which, O great king, do thou sacrifice: and hear this which I have to say. Let those princes who are your tributaries

³⁸⁶ See above, p. 211, note 210.

present to you their contributions, and gold both wrought and unwrought. With this let a plough be to-day made, and with it let the ground of thy sacrificial inclosure be ploughed. There let a sacrifice, well arranged, and with abundant food, be duly celebrated; for it will be completely unobstructed. This is to thee the Vaishṇava sacrifice (the sacrifice of Viṣṇu), a ceremony suitable for virtuous men. With it no one ever sacrificed except the ancient Viṣṇu.²⁶⁷ This great ceremonial vies with the Rājasūya, the most excellent of sacrifices."

Duryodhana and his friends consented to this proposal (15295 f.), and the sacrifice was accordingly performed (15301 ff.). Amid the rejoicings which followed the ceremony, however, some foolish persons said to Duryodhana that his sacrifice was not a sixteenth part so good as Yudhisṭhira's Rājasūya sacrifice, while his friends said that this sacrifice surpassed all other ceremonies, and that Yayāti, Nahusha, Māndhātṛi, and Bharata, had celebrated this rite, and had in consequence gone to heaven (15327 ff.): *Apare tv abruvans tatra vātikās tam mahīpatim | Yudhisṭhirasya yajñena na samo hy eṣa te kratuḥ | naiva tasya krator eṣa kalām arhati śhodakim | evaṁ tatrābruvan kechid vātikās taṁ janēśvaram | suhṛidas tv abruvans tatra ati sarvān ayaṁ kratur ityādi |*

I am not aware of any passage of the Mahābhārata in which Duryodhana is represented as a special worshipper of Mahādeva; but in a passage in the Karna-parvan, quoted above, pp. 228 ff., (which, however, I have supposed may be a later interpolation) he is declared to have narrated a legend descriptive of Mahādeva's prowess, and in which Viṣṇu is generally subordinated to his rival. Duryodhana is also in two passages of the Mahābhārata connected (as if he was considered to be heretically disposed) with a Rākshasa named Chārvāka, and is represented as his friend (Śānti-parvan, 1414-1442), and as calling him to mind after he has received his death-blow, and expressing a belief that if once informed of his fate, the eloquent mendicant Chārvāka would perform an expiation for him in the holy lake Samantapanchaka.

I subjoin both of these passages: the substance of the first is given at the close of the preceding sentence.

Śalya-parvan, v. 3619: *Yadi jānāti Chārvākaḥ parivṛṇaḥ vāg-viśā-*

²⁶⁷ It must, according to this, have been very uncommon. Further on, however, it is said to have been celebrated by Yayāti and others.

*radaḥ | karishyati mahābāho dhruvaṁ chāpachitam mama | Samantapan-
chaks punye triakṣu lokeṣu viśrute |*

The passage from the Śānti-parvan, v. 1414, is as follows: *Niśśabde
cha sthite tatra tato vipra-jana punaḥ | rājānaṁ brāhmaṇa-chhadmā
Chārvāko rākshaso 'bravīt | tatra Duryodhana-sakhā bhikṣu-rūpeṇa
saṁvritaḥ | sākshaḥ śikhī tridandī cha dhṛiṣṭo vigata-sādhvasaḥ | vṛitaḥ
sarvaiḥ tathā viprair āśtrvāda-vivakṣubhiḥ | paraṁ sahasraiḥ rājendra
tapo-niyama-saṁśritaiḥ | sa duṣṭaḥ pāpam āsumṣuḥ Pāṇḍavānām ma-
hātmanām | anāmantryaiva tān viprāṁs tam uvācha mahīpatim | Chār-
vākaḥ uvācha | ime prāhur dvijāḥ sarve samūropya vacho mayi | dhig
bhavantaṁ kunṛipatiṁ jñāti-ghātinam astu vai | kiṁ tena syād hi Kaunteya
kṛitvemaṁ jñāti-sankshayam | ghātayitvā gurūṁś chaiva mṛitaṁ śreyo
na jīvitaṁ | iti te vai dvijāḥ śrutvā tasya duṣṭasya rakshasaḥ | vivyathuḥ
chukruḥś chaiva tasya vākya-pradharshitāḥ | tatas te brāhmaṇāḥ sarve sa
cha rājā Yudhiṣṭhiraḥ | vṛiḍitāḥ paramodevignāś tūṣṇīm āsan viśāmpate |
Yudhiṣṭhiraḥ uvācha | prasīdantu bhavanto me pranaśasyābhiyāchataḥ |
pratyāsanna-vyasaninaṁ na mām dhikkartum arhatha | Vaiśampāyanaḥ
uvācha | tato rājan brāhmaṇāś te sarve eva viśāmpate | ūchur naitad
vacho 'emākaṁ śrīr astu tava pāṛthiva | jajnuḥ chaiva mahātmanāś tatas
tu jnāna-chakṣuḥś | brāhmaṇāḥ veda-vidvāṁśś tapobhir vimalkṛitāḥ |
brāhmaṇāḥ ūchuḥ | eṣha Duryodhana-sakhā Chārvāko nama rākshasaḥ |
parivṛjaka-rūpeṇa hitaṁ tasya chikīrṣhati | na vāyam brūma dharmāt-
man yetu te bhayam īdṛiṣam | upatiṣṭhatu kalyāṇam bhavantaṁ bhrū-
ṭṛibhiḥ saha | Vaiśampāyanaḥ uvācha | tatas te brāhmaṇāḥ sarve hunkā-
raiḥ krodha-mūrohkhitāḥ | nirbhartsayantaḥ śuchayo nijagṇuḥ pāpa-
rākshasaṁ | sa papāta vinirdagdhaś tejasā brahmavādīnaṁ | mātendra-
śani-nirdagdhaḥ pādapo 'nṅkuravān iva | pūjitāś cha yayur viprāḥ rājānam
abhinandya tam | rājā 'bha harṣhaṁ āpede Pāṇḍavaḥ sa-suhṛīj-janaḥ |
tatas tatra tu rājānaṁ tiṣṭhantaṁ bhrāṭṛībhiḥ saha | uvācha Devaki-
putraḥ sarvadarśī Janūrdanaḥ | Vāsudevaḥ uvācha | brāhmaṇāś tāta loka
'eminṇ archanīyāḥ sadā mama | ste bhūmicharāḥ devāḥ vāg-viśāḥ supra-
sādakāḥ | purā Kṛitayuge rājāṁś Chārvāko nāma rākshasaḥ | tapas tope
mahābāho Vadaryām bahuvārshikam | vareṇa chhāndyamānaś cha
Brahmaṇā cha punaḥ punaḥ | abhayaṁ sarva-bhūtebhyo varayāmāsa
Bhārata | dvijāvamanād anyatra prādād varam anuttamam | abhayaṁ
sarvabhūtebhyo dadau tasmai Prajāpatiḥ | sa tu laḍḍha-varaḥ pāpo devān
amita-vikramaḥ | rākshasaś tāpayāmāsa tivrakarmā mahābalaḥ | 1414.*

“ When the Brahmanś were again standing silent, the Rākshasa Chārvāka, the friend of Duryodhana, a pretended Brahman, in the garb of a mendicant, with a rosary, a lock of hair on his head, carrying three staves, bold, and shameless, addressed the king. Surrounded thus by all the Brahmanś, thousands in number, who were devoted to austere observances, and who sought to utter blessings, this wretch, who wished ill to the great Pāṇḍavas, without consulting the Brahmanś, thus spoke to the monarch: ‘ All these Brahmanś, assigning the speech to me, utter an imprecation against thee, thou wicked king, slayer of thy kindred. What can come of this? Since thou hast destroyed thy kinsmen, and slaughtered thy elders, death is better for thee than life.’ Hearing the words of this wicked Rākshasa, the Brahmanś were pained, and cried out, being provoked by his speech. All the Brahmanś and king Yudhishtira, being ashamed and extremely vexed, remained silent. Then Yudhishtira said: ‘ Let all your reverences be gracious to me, who bow down, and supplicate you. You ought not to curse me, who have so recently been involved in calamity.’ All the Brahmanś replied: ‘ These were not our words: prosperity be thine, O king!’ These great Brāhmans, learned in the Veda, purified by austerities, understood by the eye of knowledge (who Chārvāka was). They said: ‘ This is a Rākshasa called Chārvāka, the friend of Duryodhana, who has assumed the form of a wandering mendicant, and desires his welfare. We say nothing (of what he pretends); let such an apprehension pass away from thee: may good fortune be the lot of thyself and thy brothers!’ The holy Brahmanś then, furious with anger, slew the wicked Rākshasa, reviling him with loud menaces. Burnt up by the fervour of these utterers of the Veda, he fell, like a sprouting tree consumed by the lightning of Indra. The Brahmanś honoured, departed, after saluting the king; and the Pāṇḍava monarch and his friends were glad. The all-seeing Janārdana, son of Devakī, then said to the king as he stood there with his brothers: ‘ The Brahmanś are always to be revered by me in this world: they are gods who walk on the earth, whose words are poison, and also beneficent. Formerly, in the Krita age, a Rākshasa named Chārvāka practised austerity for many years at Badari. Having again and again received from Brahmā the offer of any boon which he might prefer, he chose that of security against all creatures. Prajāpati granted the incomparable boon which

he asked, on condition that he should not condemn the Brahmans. But the wicked Rākshasa of boundless valour, fierce in act, and great in force, having obtained the boon, began to vex the gods.'” The result is that they appeal to Brahmā, who assures them that he has provided for the speedy death of Chārvāka. Duryodhana will become his friend; and out of regard to him, he will treat the Brāhmans with disrespect; and they will destroy him. This has now been fulfilled.²⁸⁸

In his *Indische Studien*, i. 206, Professor Weber conjectures that “the Kurus may have been the representatives of the Rudra (=Śiva)-worship, and the Pāṇḍus or Panchālas of the Indra (=Vishṇu)-worship,” and this supposition seems to derive support from the considerations which have just been adduced.

The following passage from the *Sabhā-parvan* (where Kṛishṇa is describing to Yudhisṭhira the different partisans of Jarāsandha) appears as if it contained a tradition indicating some struggle, at a period antecedent to that of the writer, between the worship of Vishṇu, and that of some local deity who was venerated in the provinces east of Magadha.

Jarāsandham gatas tv eva purā yo na mayā hataḥ | Purushottama-vijnāto yo 'sau Chediṣhu durmatih | ātmānam pratijānāti loka 'smin Puroshottamam | ādatte satatam mohād yaḥ sa chihnam cha māmakam | Vanga-Puṇḍra-Kirāteshu rūjā bala-samanvitah | Pauṇḍrako Vāsudeveti yo 'sau loka 'bhiviśrutaḥ | “And he who formerly was not slain by me, has also taken the side of Jarāsandha—(I mean) the wicked man who is known as Purushottama among the Chedis, who in this world professes himself to be Purushottama, who through infatuation continually assumes my mark—He who is a powerful king among the Bangas, Puṇḍras, and Kirātas, and is celebrated in the world as the Vāsudeva of the Puṇḍras.²⁸⁹ He is mentioned also *Ādip.* v. 6992.

²⁸⁸ Both passages had been previously translated by me in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, vol. xix., pp. 308 f. I have not been able to find any other text in the *Mahābhārata* in which the connexion of Duryodhana with this Chārvāka (who stands here, no doubt, as a mythical representative of the well-known heretics of that name) is more explicitly described; though, from the two passages above adverted to, one would have expected to find some further references to Duryodhana's connexion with him. The passage referred to in the summary of the contents of the *Mahābhārata*, i. 349, must be the second of those here quoted.

²⁸⁹ On this Lassen remarks (*i.* p. 608, first ed.; p. 754 f., second ed.): “Since

The following remarks of Prof. Weber on the preceding chapter (translated from a notice of this work in the "Literarisches Central-Blatt," reprinted in his "Indische Streifen," ii. 226 f.) may be introduced here, though they might perhaps have been more appropriately quoted in p. 97, or p. 163. "As regards the second part, the representation of the Vishṇu legends, it is impossible to arrive at any certain conception of the proper nature of this god from the documents presented to us. According to our view it would have been perhaps more advantageous for the course of the representation in general to start, not from the later triad of gods, but from the Vedic triad, which so often appears in the Brāhmaṇa texts themselves, viz. that of Agni, Vāyu, and Sūrya, the rulers of the earth, the air, and the heaven; as we have in fact actually to recognize this as the foundation of the later triad. The sun, as the generative, creative, principle, is throughout the ritual-texts regarded as the equivalent of Prajāpati, the father of the creation. The destructive power of fire in connexion with the raging of the driving storm lies clearly enough at the foundation of the epic form of Śiva. By the side of Vāyu, the wind, stands his companion Indra, the lord of the light, clear, heaven; and with him again Vishṇu, the lord of the solar orb, stands in a fraternal relation (see my two Vedic texts on omens and portents, p. 338). This close relation of Vishṇu to Indra is far from being estimated by the author in its full significance. Vishṇu owes to Indra his blue colour, his names Vāsava and Vāsudeva, and his relations to the human heroes, as Arjuna, Rāma, and Kṛishṇa, which have become of such great importance for his entire history."

these (Purushottama and Vāsudeva) became in later times two of the most venerated names of Vishṇu, it is clear from this passage, that among the Eastern tribes, and those too not of Arian origin, a supreme god was worshipped, whose name was afterwards transferred to Vishṇu."

CHAPTER III.

RUDRA AND MAHĀDEVA, AS REPRESENTED IN THE VEDIC
HYMNS, AND THE BRAHMAÑAS.

In the preceding chapter I have quoted a variety of passages from the Mahābhārata, which, though primarily adduced to illustrate the ideas entertained of Kṛishṇa's nature, afford at the same time a pretty full representation of the attributes of Mahādeva as he was conceived in the period of the epic poems and Purāṇas. I have thus anticipated much that would otherwise have found its place towards the close of the present chapter, of which it is the purpose to compare the earlier and the later accounts furnished to us by Indian literature of the deity or deities to whom the name of Rudra was applied. I shall now proceed to adduce the passages relating to this divinity which occur (1) in the Rīg-veda, (2) in the Yajur-veda, (3) in the Atharva-veda, and (4) in the Brāhmaṇas, and to compare the representations which they contain with those which are found in the texts descriptive of Mahādeva which I have quoted in the preceding chapter.

SECT. I.—*Rudra as represented in the Hymns of the Rīg-veda.*

In the present Section I purpose to quote all the texts of the Rīg-veda in which the word Rudra occurs in the singular, whether as an epithet of Agni or as the name of a separate deity.

R.V. i. 27, 10 (S.V. i. 15; Nir. x. 8).—*Jarābodha tad viviḍḍhi viśe viśe yajñiyāya stomāṁ rudrāya dṛiṣṭikam* | “Thou who art skilled in praise, utter therefore for every house a beautiful hymn to the adorable, the terrible (Agni).”¹ In connexion with this verse, Yāska remarks :

Nir. x. 7 and 8.—*Agnir api rudraḥ uchyate | tasya eṣā bhavati. . . .*
īarā stutiḥ | jarateḥ stuti-karmaṇaḥ | tām bodha tayā bodhayitar iti vā |
tad viviḍḍhi² tat kuru manushyasya manushyasya yajanāya stomāṁ
Rudrāya darśanīyam | “Agni also is called Rudra, as in this verse

¹ See Prof. Benfey's version of this and following texts of the first maṇḍala of the R.V. in his “Orient und Occident.”

² See Westergaard, Benfey's Glossary to Sama-veda, and Böhtlingk and Roth, s. v. viśā.

(the one before us). *Jarā* means 'praise.' One who perceives it, or awakens [another] by it, is *jarābodha*. Compose that for the worship of every man,—a sightly hymn for the terrible." Roth (Illust. of Nir., p. 136) remarks that "rudra" in this verse is an epithet of Agni, to whom the whole "tricha," or aggregate of three verses in which it occurs, is addressed; and he refers to R. V. x. 70, 2, 3, and R. V. viii. 26, 5, where the same epithet is applied in the dual to Mitra and Varuṇa, and to the Aśvins,³ respectively. Roth also quotes from Jayatīrtha the following short *itihāsa* in reference to this verse, which, however, applies it to Rudra: *Agniḥ stūyamānaḥ Sunaśsep̄ham uvācha "Rudraṁ stūhi raudrāḥ hi paśavaḥ" iti | Sa tam pratyuvācha "nāhaṁ jānāmi Rudraṁ stotuṁ tvam eva etaṁ stūhi" iti tad idam uchyaṭe "He jarābodha Rudra-stūti-vettas tat kuru" ityādi |* "Agni, when he was being praised, said to Sunaśsep̄ha, 'Praise Rudra, for cattle (or victims) belong to him.' He (Sunaśsep̄ha) answered, 'I do not know how to praise Rudra; do thou praise him.' It is this which is here expressed, 'O thou who art skilled in the praise of Rudra, do thou do so.'"

R. V. i. 43, 1 ff.—*Kad Rudrāya prachetase mīlkushṭamāya taryase | vochema śantamaṁ hṛide |* 2. *Yathā no Aditiḥ karat paśve nṛibhyo yathā gave | yathā tokāya rudriyam⁴ |* 3. *Yathā no Mitro Varuṇo yathā Rudraś chiketati | yathā viśve sajoshasaḥ |* 4. *Gūtha-patīm medha-patīm Rudraṁ jalāsha-bhesajam | tat śamyoh sumnam īmahe |* 5. *Yaḥ śukraḥ iva sūryo hiranyam iva rochate | śreeshṭho devānām vasuḥ |* 6. *Saṁ naḥ karaty arvate sugam meshāya meshye | nṛibhyo nāribhyo gave |* "What can we utter to Rudra, the intelligent, the most bountiful, the strong, which shall be most pleasant to his heart? 2. That so Aditi may bring Rudra's healing to our cattle, and men, and kine, and children. 3. That so Mitra, Varuṇa, Rudra, and all the [gods] united, may think of us. 4. We seek from Rudra, the lord of songs, the lord of sacrifices, who possesses healing remedies, his auspicious favour. 5. [We seek this from him] who is brilliant as the sun, who shines like gold, who is the best and most bountiful of the gods. 6. He grants prosperity and welfare to our horses, rams, ewes, men, women, and cows."

R. V. i. 64, 2.—*Te jajnīre divaḥ rishvāsaḥ ukshaṇo Rudrasya maryāḥ asurāḥ arepasāḥ | pāvakāsaḥ śuchayaḥ sūryāḥ iva satvāno na drapsino*

³ See also R. V. viii. 22, 14, which will be quoted further on.

⁴ "Rudra's favour" (Benfey). Compare *mārutasya bhesajasya* in R. V. viii. 20, 23.

ghora-varpasah | 3. *Yuvāno Rudrāḥ aṣarāḥ abhogghano vavakshur adhri-gāvah parvatāḥ iva* | *ḍrīḥā chid viśvā bhuvanāni pārthivā prachyāvayanti divyāni majmanā* | . . . 12. *Ghṛishum pāvakaṁ vaninaṁ vicharsha-niṁ Rudrasya sūnuṁ havasā grīṇīmāsi* | *rajasturaṁ; tavasam mārutaṁ gaṇam ṛijishinaṁ vṛishanaṁ saschata śriyo* | "These followers of Rudra have been produced from the Sky, exalted, fertilizing, divine, purifiers, bright as suns, like heroes, shedding drops, fearful in form. 3. The youthful Rudras, undecaying, destroyers of the niggardly, resistless, [firm as] mountains, have increased [in vigour]. By their power they cast down all terrestrial and celestial creatures, however firm. . . 12. We praise with invocations the fierce, purifying, rain-dispensing energetic offspring of Rudra. To obtain prosperity, worship the host of Maruts, which sweeps over the atmosphere, vigorous, impetuous, and fertilizing."⁵

R.V. i. 85, 1.—*Pra ye śumbhante janayo na saptayo*⁶ *yāman Rudrasya sūnataḥ sudaṁsasah* | *rodasī hi marutāḥ chakrire vṛidhe madanti vīrāḥ vidatheshu ghṛishvayah* | "The swift Maruts, energetic sons of Rudra, who, in their course, are bright like wives, have made the two worlds to prosper, and, impetuous heroes, rejoice in sacrifices."

R.V. i. 114, 1 ff. (Vāj. S. 16, 48; Taitt. S. iv. 5, 10, 1).—*Imāḥ Rudrāya tavase kapardine*⁷ *kshayad-vīrāya*⁸ *prabharūmahe matih* | *yathā*

⁵ See Prof. Max Müller's version of this hymn, and of that next quoted, in his Translation of the R.V., vol. i.

⁶ See Prof. Max Müller's note on this word, Translation of R.V. i. 110 ff. The word also occurs in R.V. x. 142, 2, as well as in the other texts enumerated by Müller, p. 112

⁷ *Kapardīn* is also an epithet of Pūshan in R.V. vi. 55, 2: *Rathītamaṁ kapardinam īśanaṁ rūḍhaso mahāḥ* | *rūyah sakhāyam īmahe* | "We solicit the great charioteer, adorned with spirally-braided hair, the lord of great bounty, and our friend, for wealth." And also in R.V. ix. 67, 10, 11: *Arītū no ajūsvah Pūshā yāmani yāmani* | *ābhākshat kanyūsu nah* | 11. *Ayān somaḥ kapardine ghṛitaṁ na pavate madhu* | *ā bhākshat kanyūsu nah* | "Pūshan, who has goats for steeds, is our protector on every journey. May he make us possessors of damsels. 11. This soma is purified for the god with spirally-braided hair, like sweet butter. May he make us possessors of damsels." The word is also applied to the Tritus in R.V. vii. 83, 8. *Svītyancho yatra namasā kapardino dhiyā dhṛvanto asapanta Tritasvah* | "Where the white-robed Tritus with braided hair have worshipped you with obseances and prayers." With this compare *dakṣiṇataa-kapardāḥ* in R.V. vii. 33, 1. The word *Kapardīn* also occurs in R.V. x. 102, 2.

⁸ This word is rendered "governing men" by Böhlingk and Roth, vol. ii. (published 1866-1868), who first cite, as determining the sense of the word, R.V.

śam asad dvipade chatushpade viśvam puṣṭaṁ grāme asminn anāturam |
 2. (=T. S. iv. 5, 10, 2) *Mṛṣa no Rudra uta no mayas kridhī kshayad-
 vīrāya namaśa vīdhema te | yat śaṁ cha yośoha Manur ā yeje pītā tad
 āśyāma tavo Rudra prāṇītiṣhu |* 3. *Āśyāma te sumatiṁ deva-yajyaya
 kshayad-vīrasya tava Rudra mīḍhvaḥ | sumnāyann id viśo asmākam
 āchāra arishṭa-vīrāḥ juhavāma te haviḥ |* 4. *Tveshaṁ vāyāṁ Rudraṁ*

viii. 19, 10 *Yasya tvam ūrdhvo adhvārāya tishthasi kshayadvīraḥ sa sādhatē | so
 arvadbhīḥ samtū sa vipanyubhīḥ sa śūraḥ samtū kṛtam |* "The man to whom thou
 hoverest over the sacrifice, prospers as a commander of heroes he, with horses, with
 triumphant men, with heroes, will acquire spoil" Benfey also (Orient und Occident,
 iii. pp. 140 and 156) renders the word "governing heroes", and adds in a note on
 the latter page "Are the heroes, the single stormy winds, the maruts (comp. v. 6)
 over whom Rudra rules, or is Rudra generally designated as the lord of all heroes,
 inasmuch as he makes them swift, and destructive as storm-winds, in battle?"
 'Destroyer of heroes,' as Whitney proposes, ('slayer of men,' Journal of the American
 Oriental Society, vol. iii, p. 519, published in 1853), is not specially suitable
 in R.V. viii. 19, 10, or in other places." Professor Aufrecht translates the word
 "ruling over men" (as well as gods). Rudra, he remarks, is called *īśānād aśya
 bhūvanasya dhūrīḥ*, "lord over this manifold creation," in R.V. ii. 33, 9, and
 compares *sed u rājā kshayati charshaṇīnām* in i. 32, 15, and the similar phrases
 in i. 112, 3, and x 9, 5 *Kshayadvīra* is, he believes, nothing more than the usual
nṛpati. It is true, Professor Aufrecht adds, that in i. 114, 8, it is said of Rudra,
 "do not strike our children in thy anger," and that in iv 3, 6, he is called *nṛhan*,
 but he does not think it likely that in one particular hymn a word should have a
 quite different meaning from that which it has in all other passages, and regards it
 as quite possible that *nṛhan* may be based on a false interpretation of *kshayadvīra*.
Sāyana renders the word variously. On the passage above referred to, viii. 19, 10,
 he interprets it *nvasadbhir itvarar vā vīraḥ putradbhir upataḥ* | i.e. "attended by
 heroes, sons, etc., dwelling or moving." On i. 106, 4, where it is an epithet of *Pūshan*,
 he explains it *atī-batīnam | yasmin sarve vīrāḥ kṣiyante*, i.e. "very powerful. he in
 whom all heroes are consumed." On the passage before us, i. 114, 1, he gives two possible
 explanations of it. *Kshayanto vinasīyanto vīrāḥ yasmin tūdrīyāya | yadvā kshayati
 aśvuryaḥarmā | kshayantaḥ prāptasvīryāḥ vīrāḥ Marudgaṇāḥ putrāḥ yasya* | "He
 in whom heroes perish; or, as the root *kṣi* also means 'exercising authority,'—he of
 whom the Maruts, heroes, exercising authority, are the sons." The same verse
 occurs in Vāj. S., xvi. 48, where Mahīdhara interprets the phrase *Kshayanto nva-
 santo vīrāḥ śūrāḥ yatra sa kshayadvīraḥ tasmas śūra-yutāya ity arthah | kshayanto
 nasīyanto vīrāḥ rāpavo yasmād itī vā* | "He in whom heroes dwell is *kshayadvīra*,
 to him who is possessed of heroes Or, he through whom heroes perish." On the
 second and third verses of i. 114, *Sāyana* repeats in different words the explanations
 he had given on the first verse (*Kshayita-sarva-vīram prāptasvīryavar marudbhī
 yuktāṁ vā | kshayita-pratīpakṣasya Marudbhir yuktasya vā*). On verse 10, he
 confines himself to the one explanation, *Kshayita-sarva-īatru-jana*. In R.V. i.
 125, 3, the same epithet is applied to Indra, where *Sāyana* expounds it thus
*Kshayanto nvasanto vīrāḥ putra-bhrityādayo yasya tāṁ tādṛśāṁ tvad-īṣṭa-sādhanā-
 bahū-dhana-pradātāram* | "He in whom heroes, sons, servants, etc., abide—the giver
 of much wealth, which is the instrument of obtaining thy wishes."

*yajna-sādhaṁ vanluṁ kavim avase nihvayāmahe | āre asmad duivyaṁ helo
asyatu sumatim id vāyam aśya ā vṛiṇīmahe | 5. Divo varāhaṁ aruṣhaṁ
kapardīnaṁ iveshhaṁ rūpaṁ namaśā nihvayāmahe | hasta bibhṛad bheṣajā
vāryāni śarma varma chhardir asmadbhyaṁ yaṁsat | 6. Idam pitre Maru-
tām uchyaṭe vachah svādoḥ svādīyo Rudrāya vardhanam | rūṣva cha no
amṛita marta-bhojanaṁ tmane tokāya tanayāya mṛiḷa | 7 (= V. S. 16,
15; T. S. iv. 5, 10, 2; A. V. ii. 2, 29). Mā no mahāntam uta mā no
arbhaḥam mā naḥ ukshantam uta mā naḥ ukṣitam | mā no badhiḥ pitarām
mota mātaram mā naḥ priyās tanto Rudra ririshaḥ | 8. (V. S. 16, 16;
T. S. iv. 5, 10, 3). Mā nas toke tanaye mā na āyau (āyushi V. S., T. S.)
mā no goshu mā no aśveshu ririshaḥ | vīrān mā no bhāmīto (bhāmīno
V. S., T. S.) badhīr havishmantah sadam it tvā havāmahe | 9. Upa te stomān
paśu-pūḥ vākaram rūṣva pitar Marutām sunnam asme | dhadrā hi te
sumatir mṛiḷayattamā aṭha vāyam avah it te vṛiṇīmahe | 10. (T. S. iv.
5, 10, 3). Āre te go-ghnam uta pūruṣa-ghnam kṣayad-itra sunnam
asme te astu | mṛiḷa cha no adhi cha brūhi deva adha cha naḥ śarma
yachha dvi-barhāḥ | 11. Avochāma namo asmai avasyavaḥ sṛiṇotu no
haviṁ Rudro marutān | tan no Mitro Varuṇo mamahantām Aditiḥ
sindhuh prthivī uta dyauh |*

“We present these prayers to Rudra,⁹ the strong, with spirally-

⁹ Sāyana, in his note on this verse, gives no less than six explanations of the word Rudra, which I subjoin, as a specimen of commentorial ingenuity

*Rodayati sarvām antakāle iti Rudrah | yadvā rut saṁsārākhyāṁ duḥkham | tad
drūyaty apagamayati smāyaty iti Rudrah | yadvā rutah śabda-; ūpāḥ upanishā-
dah | tābhīr drūyate gamyate pratpādyaṭe iti Rudrah | yadvā rut śabdātmikā vāṇī
tat-pratpādyaṭma-vedyū itā | tam upāsakebhyo itā dadāti iti Rudrah | yadvā ruṇa-
ddhy ūvṛiṇoti iti rud andhakānādi | tad drīṇāti vidārayaty iti Rudrah | yadvā kadā-
chid devāsura-saṅgrāme 'gny-ūtmaḥ Rudro devaḥ nihṣṭptān dhanam apahritya
magat | asuṇ jītv devūḥ nam anuśhya drīṣtvā dhanam apohayan | tadānīm
arudat | tasmāt Rudrah ity ākhyāyate |* “He is called Rudra (1) because he makes
every one weep (*rodayati*) at the destruction of the world. Or (2) *rut* means the
suffering called the world. He drives away (*drūyaty*), removes, destroys, that:
therefore he is named Rudra. Or (3) *rut* in the plural means the Upanishads, which
are composed of words: by them he is attained, expounded (*drīṇāti*) therefore he
is termed Rudra. Or (4) *rut* signifies language composed of words, or the science of
soul which is to be explained by it this he gives (*itā*) to his worshippers. hence
he is denominated Rudra. Or (5) the root *rudh* means to shut, cover, and therefore
rut means darkness, etc.: he tears (*drīṇāti*), rends, it. therefore he is designated as
Rudra. Or (6) when on one occasion there was a battle between the gods and
Asuras, Rudra having the nature of Agni carried off the treasures which had been
thrown down by the gods and went away. But the gods, after conquering the
Asuras, sought him, saw him, and took the treasures from him. then he wept (*arudat*),
and from that he is called Rudra.”

braided hair, ruling over heroes, that there may be prosperity to our two-footed and four-footed creatures, that everything in this village may be well fed and free from disease. 2. Be gracious to us, Rudra, and cause us happiness; let us with obeisance worship thee, the ruler over heroes. Whatever prosperity and blessing our father Manu acquired by worship, may we attain it all under thy guidance, Rudra. 3. May we by our divine worship obtain the goodwill of thee, Rudra, who art the ruler of heroes, and beneficent; act favourably towards our people: may we, with our men unharmed, offer thee our oblation. 4. We invoke to our succour the impetuous Rudra, the fulfiller of sacrifice, the swift, the wise. May he drive far away from us the anger of the gods, for we desire his favour. 5. We invoke with obeisance the ruddy boar of the sky, with spirally-braided hair, a brilliant form. Carrying in his hand most choice remedies, may he give us protection, defence, shelter. 6. This exhilarating hymn, sweeter than the sweetest, is uttered to Rudra, the father of the Maruts. Bestow on us, O immortal, the food of mortals; be gracious to ourselves, our children, and descendants. 7. Slay neither our great, nor our small, neither our growing nor our grown, neither our father nor our mother; injure not, Rudra, our dear selves. 8. Injure us not in our children and descendants, nor in our men (life, V.S.), nor in our cattle, nor in our horses. Slay not our men in thine anger (angry men, V.S.): we continually worship thee with offerings. 9. As a keeper of cattle (brings victims), so have we brought praises near to thee:¹⁰ bestow on us thy favour, O father of the Maruts. For kind and most gracious is thy benevolence, and now we desire thy succour. 10. Far from us be thy cow-slaying and thy man-slaying [weapon]: ruler of heroes, let thy blessing be with us. Be gracious to us, O god, and take our side; bestow on us mightily thy protection. 11. We have uttered to him our adoration, desiring his help. May

¹⁰ Compare R.V. x. 127, 8, quoted by Böhlingk and Roth, *s.v. kar+upa+ā*: *upa te gāṅ iva ākaram vṛjīṣhva duhitar divaḥ | Rātri stomān na jigyuṣhe |* "I have, O Night, brought before thee (praises) as it were cows; choose (them, daughter of the Sky), as it were a hymn to a conqueror." Sāyaṇa (on R.V. i. 114, 9) explains the comparison as follows: *Yathā paśūnām pālayitā gopaḥ prātaḥkālṇe svasmai samarpitān paśūn sūyamkālṇe svāmibhyaḥ pratyarpayati evaṁ tvat sakāśāt labdhān stutirūpān mantrān stūti-sādhanaṭayā tubhyam pratyarpayāmi |* "As a cattle-herd returns to the owners in the evening the cattle entrusted to him in the morning, so I, by the fulfilment of praise, give back to thee the laudatory hymns received from thee."

Rudra, attended by the Maruts, listen to our invocation. Then may Mitra, Varuṇa, Aditi, Sindhu, Earth and Sky, gladden us."

In Sāyaṇa's annotations on the sixth verse, he quotes the following later story to explain how Rudra (here identified with the later Mahādeva) came to be called the father of the Maruts :

Rudrasya Marutām pitṛitvam evam ākhyāyate | purā kadachid Indro 'surān jigūya | tudānām Ditiḥ Asura-mātā Indra-hanana-samartham putraṁ kūmayamānā tapasā bhartuḥ sakāsād garbhaṁ lebhe | imāṁ vṛttāntam avagachhann Indro vajra-hastāḥ san sūkshma-rūpo bhūtvā tasyāḥ udaram praviśya taṁ garbhaṁ saptaadhā bibheda | punar apy ekaikāṁ sapta-khaṇḍam akarot | te sarve garbhaika-deśūḥ yoner nirgatyārudan | etasminn avasure līlārthaṁ gachhantau Pārvatī-parameśvarāv imān da-dṛśatuh | Maheśam prati Pārvaty evam avochat | "ime māṁsa-khaṇḍāḥ yathā pratyekam putrāḥ sampadyantūm eveṁ trayā lāryam mayi chet prītir asti" iti | sa cha Maheśvaras tān samāna-rūpān samāna-vayasāḥ samānūlankārān putrān kṛtvā Gauryai pradadau "taveme putrāḥ sante" iti | ataḥ sarveshu Māruteshu sūkteshu Maruto Rudra-putrāḥ iti ślūyante Raudreshu cha Marutām pitā Rudraḥ iti |

"The story of Rudra being the father of the Maruts is thus recounted. Formerly, once on a time, Indra overcame the Asuras. Then Diti, the mother of the Asuras, desiring a son who should be able to slay Indra, through austerity became pregnant by her husband. Indra, learning this news, entered into her womb in a very minute form, with a thunberbolt in his hand, divided her foetus into seven parts, and again made each of these parts into seven. All these being in one part of the foetus, issued from the womb and wept. At this conjuncture, Parameśvara (Mahādeva) and Pārvatī were passing by for amusement, and saw them. Pārvatī spoke thus to Parameśvara, 'If you love me, effect that all these bits of flesh may become severally sons.' Maheśvara made them all of the same form and age, and with the same ornaments, and gave them to Gaurī (Pārvatī), saying, 'Let those be thy sons.' Hence in all the hymns addressed to the Maruts, they are lauded as the sons of Rudra; and in the hymns to Rudra, he is praised as the father of the Maruts."¹¹

¹¹ On R.V. viii. 28, 5, Sāyaṇa has the following note: *Atra purātanī kathā | Indra-samānam putram icchāntiyāḥ Aditer garbhāsya kenachit kāraṇena Indrena saptaadhā bhinnatvūt sa garbhāḥ sapta-gaṇātmake 'bhavat | tato Marutaḥ sampannāḥ |*

R.V. i. 122, 1.—*Pra vaḥ pāntāṃ raghu-manyavo 'ndho yajnaṃ Rudrāya mīlhuṣhe bharadvam | divo astoshi asurasya¹² vitair iśudhyā iva Maruto rodasyoḥ |* "Present, ye zealous (priests), to the bountiful Rudra, the draught of soma, your offering. I have praised him with the heroes of the divine Sky: may I (with my prayer) as it were aim at the Maruts in heaven and earth."

R.V. i. 129, 3.—*Dasmo hi śhma vṛṣhanam pūvasi tvacham kaṃ chid yāvīr ararum tūra martyam parivṛṇakṣi martyam | Indrota tubhyam tad Dīve tad Rudrāya eva-yaśase | Mitrāya vocam Varuṇāya saprathaḥ sumṛṇikāya saprathaḥ |* "Thou (Indra), who art energetic, fillest the teeming skin (the cloud?): thou, hero, hast chased away every hostile mortal, thou puttest to flight the mortal. Indra, I have uttered this to thee, and this to the Sky, and to Rudra, who derives his renown from himself, and to Mitra, and to Varuṇa abundantly, to the very gracious, abundantly."

R.V. ii. 1, 6.—*Tvam Agne Rudro asuro maho divas tvam śardho mārutam priḥṣaḥ iśiṣhe | tvam iātair arunair yāsi śamgayas tvam Pūṣhā vidhataḥ pāsi nu tmanā |* "Thou, Agni, art Rudra, the great spirit (*asura*) of the sky. Thou art the host of the Maruts. Thou art lord of nourishment. Thou, who hast a pleasant abode, movest onward with the ruddy winds. Thou [being] Pūshan, by thyself protectest those who worship thee."

"*sapta-gaṇāḥ vas Marutāḥ*" *its śruteḥ* | "Regarding this there is an ancient story. The focus of Aditi, who desired to have a son equal to Indra, having been for some reason divided by Indra into seven parts, it became formed into seven troops. Thence the Maruts were produced. For a Vedic text says, "The Maruts are divided into seven troops." Unless the reading in the latter of these two passages is incorrect, it will be observed that the mother of the Maruts is variously represented to be Diti and Aditi. As in the first of the two texts Diti is defined as the mother of the *Asuras*, the reading there must be correct, and the Maruts must have been regarded by the writer as her sons. In the hymns they are said to be the sons of Rudra and Pṛān; and the sons of the Sky and Ocean. See the fifth volume of this work, p. 147 f

¹² Compare with *divo asurasya*, R.V. i. 131, 1, and iii. 53, 7, where the phrases *Dyaus asuraḥ*, "the divine Sky," and *Divas putrāso asurasya*, "the sons of the divine Sky," occur. I am indebted to Prof. Aufrecht for an explanation of the sense of this half verse. He holds *iśudhyā* as put for *iśudhyāni*, the 1st pers. sing. of the imperative of the root *iśudhy*. See Dr. Bollenzen's article in the *Journal of the German Oriental Society*, vol. xxii., "Die Lieder des Parāśara," p. 577, where other instances of the suffix *ni* being omitted in this part of the verb are given.

See above (p. 76 f.) the third verse of this hymn, where Agni is identified with Indra, and Vishnu, in the same way as he is identified with Rudra and Pūshan in the verse before us.—See also verses 4, 5, and 7. Sāyana, in his commentary on this verse, gives two derivations of the word Rudra :

Rud duḥkhaṁ duḥkha-hetur vā pāpādih | tasya drāvayitā atan-nāmako devo' si | “*Rudro vai esha yad Agnir*” *ity ādisho Agneḥ Rudra-śabdena vyavahārāt | yadvā tvam Rudraḥ | rauti | mām anishṭvā narāḥ duḥkhe patishyanti | Rudras tādrīso 'si |* “*Rut* means suffering, or sin, etc., which causes suffering. Thou (Agni) art the god so called, who drives this away (*rud-drāvayitā*); for Agni is intended by the word Rudra in such passages as this, ‘He who is Agni is Rudra.’ Or, thou art Rudra. He cries : Not worshipping me, men will fall into grief. Thou art such a Rudra,” etc.

R.V. ii. 33, 1 ff.—*Ā te pitar Marutām sumnam etu mā naḥ sūryasya saṁdrīso yuyothāḥ | abhi no viro arvati khameta pra jāyemahi Rudra prajābhiḥ |* 2. *Tvā-dattebhiḥ Rudra saṁtamebhiḥ śataṁ himā āsiya bheśhajeḥbhiḥ | vi asmad dvesho vitaraṁ vi aṁho vi amivās chātayassa vishūchih |* 3. *S'reshṭho jātasya Rudra śriyā 'si tavastamas tavasāṁ vajra-bāho | parshi naḥ pāram aṁhasaḥ svasti viśvāḥ abhitiḥ rapaso yuyodhi |* 4. *Mā tvā Rudra chukrudhāma namobhir mā dushṭutī vṛishabha mā sahūti | ud no vīrūn arpayā bheśhajeḥbhir bhishaktamaṁ tvā bhishajām śrinomi |* 5. *Havīmabhir havate yo havirbhir ava stomēbhiḥ Rudraṁ dishīya | rīdūdaraḥ suhavo mā no asyai babhruḥ susiprō rīradhad manūyai |* 6. *Ud mā mamanda vṛishabho marutvān tvakshiyasā vayasā nādhamānam | ghṛiṇīva¹³ chhūyām arapāḥ āsiya ā vivāssyaṁ Rudrasya sumnam |* 7. *Kva sya te Rudra mṛilayākur hasto yo asti bheśhajo jalā-shaḥ | apabhartā rapaso dāvyasya abhi nu mā vṛishabha okakhamithāḥ |* 8. *Pra babhrave vṛishabhāya śvītiche maho mahim sushṭutim irayāmi | namasyā kalmālikinaṁ namobhir grīṇīmāsi tceṣaṁ Rudrasya nāma¹⁴ |* 9. *Sthirebhir angair puru-rūpaḥ ugro babhruḥ śukrebhiḥ pipīṣe hiranyaiḥ | īśānād asya bhuvanasya bhūr na vai u yoshad Rudrād asuryam |* 10. *Arhan bibharshe sāyakāni dhanva arhan nishkaṁ yajataṁ viśvarūpam | arhann idam dayaso viśvam abhvaṁ na vai oṣṭyo Rudra tvad asti |*

¹³ See Dr. Bollensen's article in Benfey's *Orient und Occident*, ii. 474, where he says *ghṛiṇī* is a locative or instrumental. Bohtlingk and Roth judge differently. See *s.v.*

¹⁴ Compare R.V. vii. 100, 8, above, p. 87.

11 (A. V. 18, 1, 40; T. S. iv. 5, 10, 3, 4). *Stuhi śrutam garta-sadam yuvānam mrigam na bhīmam¹⁵ upahatnum agram | mṛiḥ jaritre Rudra stavāro anyam te asmad ni vapantu senāḥ |* 12. *Kumāras chit pitarām vandamānam prati nanāma Rudra upayantam | bhūrēr dātāram satpatim grīṇiṣhe stutas tvam bheṣhajā rāsi asme |* 13. *Yā vo bheṣhajā Marutaḥ śuchini yā śāntamā vṛiṣhaṇo yā mayobhu | yāni Manur avriṇṭa pitā na tā śam cha yoścha Rudrasya vaśmi |* 14 (V. S. 16, 50; T. S. iv. 5, 10, 4). *Pari no hetih Rudrasya vṛijyūḥ¹⁶ (vriṇaktu, V. S., T. S.) pari tveshasya durmatir mahi gāt | ava sthirā maghavadbhyas tanushva mīdhvas tokāya tanayāya mṛiḥ |* 15. *Eva babhro vṛiṣabha chekitāna yathā deva na hrīṇiṣhe na haṃsi | havana-śrud no Rudra iha bodhi bṛihad vadema vidathe suvīrāḥ |*

"1. Father of the Maruts, may thy blessing come (to us): remove us not from the sight of the sun. May the hero spare our horses: may we, Rudra, increase in offspring. 2. Through the auspicious remedies conferred by thee, Rudra, may I attain a hundred winters. Drive away far from us enmity, and distress, and diseases, to a distance. 3. Thou, Rudra, art in glory the most eminent of beings, the strongest of the strong, O wielder of the thunderbolt. Carry us happily across our calamity: repel all the assaults of evil. 4. Let us not, Rudra, provoke thee by our prostrations, by our unsuitable praises, vigorous [deity], or by our common invocations. Raise up our heroes by thy remedies: I hear that thou art the greatest physician of physicians. 5. May I with hymns avert (propitiate) that Rudra who is invoked with praises and oblations. Let not him who is mild, easily-invoked, tawny, with a beautiful chin, deliver us up to this ill will [of our enemies]. 6. The mighty [god], attended by the Maruts, has gladdened me his suppliant with robust health. May I, free from injury, obtain [thy protection], as it were, shade in the heat [of the summer]: may I seek the blessing of Rudra. 7. Where, Rudra, is that thy gracious hand which is healing and restorative? Removing the evil which comes from the gods, spare me, thou vigorous [deity]. 8. I joyfully send forth a great encomium to this tawny, vigorous, luminous god.

¹⁵ Compare similar modes of speaking about Vishnu, Indra, Varuna, etc., above, p. 69 and note 18.

¹⁶ See in the note to Roth's Illustrations of the Nirukta, p. 86, other instances of similar forms, apparently of the 2nd pers. sing., standing for the 3rd pers.

Reverence the fiery [deity] with prostrations: we celebrate the glorious name of Rudra. 9. With firm limbs, multiform, fierce, tawny, he has been arrayed with bright golden (ornaments).¹⁷ Divine power can never be removed from Rudra, the lord of this vast world. 10. Thou, fitly, holdest arrows and a bow; fitly, thou [wearest] a glorious necklace of every form (of beauty). Fitly, thou possessest all this vast [world]. There is nothing, Rudra, more powerful than thou. 11. Celebrate the renowned and youthful god, mounted on his chariot, terrible as a wild beast, destructive, and fierce. Be gracious to thy worshipper, Rudra, when praised: may thy hosts prostrate some one else than us. 12. Even a boy, when his father approaches and salutes him, makes obeisance to him in return; [so] O Rudra, I praise [thee], the giver of much [good], the lord of heroes. Thou, when lauded, grantest to us remedies. 13. Those pure remedies of yours, Maruts, those which are salutary, ye strong [gods], those which are beneficent, those which our father Manu desired¹⁸—those, as well as the blessing and favour of Rudra, I desire. 14. May the bolt of Rudra avoid us; may the great malevolence of the impetuous [deity] depart far from us. Unbend thy strong [bows so as not to strike] thy wealthy worshippers. Dispenser of good, be gracious to our children and descendants. 15. O tawny and vigorous god, so taking heed of us, as neither to be incensed against us, nor to injure us—think of us now, Rudra, hearing our invocations; let us with our vigorous men utter a great hymn at the sacrifice.”

R. V. ii. 34, 2.—*Dyāvo na śtribhīś śhitayanta khādīno vi abhriyāḥ na dyutayanta vṛiṣṭayāḥ | Rudro yad vo Maruto rukma-vakshaso vṛiṣhā 'jani priśnyāḥ śukre ūdhani* | “Adorned with armlets, [the Maruts] have shone like the skies with¹⁹ their stars, they have glittered like showers from the clouds, at the time when the prolific Rudra generated you, O Maruts, with jewels on your breasts, from the shining udder of Pṛiṣni.”

R. V. ii. 38, 9.—*Na yasya Indro Varuṇo na Mītro vratam Aryamā na minanti Rudraḥ | na arātayas tam idaṁ svasti huve devaṁ Savi-*

¹⁷ See *śukra-piṭ*, Nir. viii. 11 = R.V. x. 110, 6; and Roth, Erl. See the fifth vol. of this work, p. 453 f., where some remarks of Dr. Bollensen (Journ. Germ. Or. Society, xxii. 587 ff.) are quoted, in which this passage, with others, is adduced to show that images of the gods were common in the Vedic age.

¹⁸ Compare i. 114, 2, above, pp. 302 and 304.

tāraṁ namobhiḥ | "With prostrations I invoke this blessing from the god Savitṛi, whose purpose neither Indra, nor Varuṇa, nor Mitra, nor Aryaman, nor Rudra, nor any enemies can resist."

In the next text, 'rudra' is merely an epithet of Agni.

R. V. iii. 2, 5.—*Agniṁ sumnāya dadhīre puro janāḥ vāja-śravasam*¹⁹ *iha vṛikta-barhiṣaḥ | yata-srucaḥ suruṣaṁ viśva-devyaṁ rudraṁ yajñā-nāṁ sādhad-īkṣm apasām* | "Men, having prepared the sacrificial grass, and holding ladles, have, to obtain his blessing, placed in their front Agni, renowned for wealth, the brilliant, acceptable to all the gods, the terrible (*rudra*), who fulfils the objects of sacrifices and rites."

In the first verse of the hymn next quoted also, 'rudra' is merely an epithet of Agni. In verse 6, on the other hand, Rudra is the name of a god.

R. V. iv. 3, 1.—*Ā vo vājānam adhvaryasya rudraṁ hotāraṁ satya-yajam rodasyoh | Agniṁ purā tanayitnor achittād hiraṇya-rūpam avase kṛinudhvam* | 6. *Kad dhiṣṇyāsu vṛidhasāno Agne kad Vātāya pratavase śubhāṇye | pariṃmane nāsatyāya kṣhe bravaḥ kad Agne Rudrāya nṛi-ghno*²⁰ | (verse 7 is quoted above, p. 78). "Before the thunderbolt [falls] unawares, call to your succour Agni, the terrible (*rudra*) king of the sacrifice, the invoker in both worlds, offering genuine worship, the golden-formed. . . 6. Wilt thou, Agni, who delightest in the altars, wilt thou declare [our sin]²¹ to Vāta, the energetic, the bestower

¹⁹ This word is explained by Sāyaṇa in this place as = *manuṣhyebhyaḥ preriṭānam*, "who has sent food to men," and on R. V. vi. 35, 4, as = *vājair balair prasiddhāḥ*, "famed for force." In the Nighantus (ii. 7, 17) two senses are assigned to *vāja*, "food," and "battle," and to *śravas* are ascribed (ii. 7, 10) the meanings "food," and "wealth." In the Nirukta iv. 24 (where R. V. iv. 38, 5, is explained), the senses "praise" or "wealth" are attributed to the latter word; in Nir. ix. 10, the sense of "praise"; in Nir. x. 3, that of "food"; and in Nir. xi. 9, that of "renown." Böhtlingk and Roth assign to *vāja* the senses (1) of "swiftness, spirit," (2) "running a race, conflict," (3) "prize of victory in a race, spoil," (4) "gain, reward, valuable possession," etc.; and explain the compound *vāja-śravas*, "contending in a race," comparing it with *vāja-srit*, to which they ascribe the same meaning, and which is explained by Sāyaṇa in R. V. ix. 43, 5, as = *sangrāma-saraṇaḥ*, "moving in battle."

Prof. Aufrecht sees no reason why *vājaśravas* should be interpreted differently from *varuśravas*, and translates it "renowned for power or wealth," comparing *gomad vājavat śravas*, R. V. i. 9, 7; *vājāya, śravase iṣhe cha*, vi. 17, 4 (vi. 1, 11); ix. 67, 5; iv. 36, 9; *mahi śravo vājam*, vi. 70, 5; *sa vājām darśhi sa iha śravo dhāḥ*, x. 69, 2; *vājam ukthyam*, x. 140, 1; *abhi vājam uta śravaḥ*, ix. 1, 4; ix. 6, 3; *vājām jushī śravo bṛihat*, ix. 44, 6; ix. 63, 12; ix. 87, 5.

²⁰ Comp. *puruṣa-ghnam* in i. 114, 10, above, p. 303. ²¹ See the preceding verse.

of blessings, the circumambient, the truthful? Wilt thou declare it to the earth, and to the man-slaying Rudra?"

R.V. v. 3, 3, quoted and translated above, p. 80.

R.V. v. 41, 2.—*Te no Mitro Varuṇo Aryamā "yur.Indraḥ Ribhukṣaḥ Maruto jushanta | namobhir vā ye dadhate svaṛikṭim stomañ Rudrāya mīlhushe sajoshāḥ |* "May Mitra, Varuṇa, Aryaman, Āyu, Indra, Ribhukshan, the Maruts, be favourable to us, [and to those] who, united together, offer with obeisances hymns and praises to the bountiful Rudra."

R.V. v. 42, 11.—*Tam u shtuḥi yaḥ sviṣṭuḥ sudhanvā yo viśvasya kṣhayati bheṣajasya | yakṣhva mahe saumanasūya Rudrañ namobhir devam asurañ duvasya | . . . 15. Eṣa stoma mārutañ śardho acḥha Rudrasya sūnūn yuvanyūn ud aśyāḥ | ityādi |* "Praise him who has excellent arrows and bow, who commends all remedies. Worship Rudra to [obtain his] great benevolence: with prostrations adore the spiritual deity. . . . 15. May this hymn ascend to the troop of Maruts, to the sons of Rudra, who comport themselves as youths," etc.

R.V. v. 46, 2 (V.S. 33, 48), quoted and translated above, p. 80.

R.V. v. 51, 13.—*Viśve devāḥ no adya svastaye vaiśvānaro vasur Agniḥ svastaye | devāḥ avantu Ribhavaḥ svastaye svasti no Rudraḥ pātu aṁhasaḥ |* "May all the gods, may Agni, the beneficent, worshipped by all men, may the divine Ribhus, preserve us for our welfare. May Rudra bless and preserve us from calamity."

R.V. v. 52, 16.—*Pra ye me bandhveshe gūṁ vochantā sūrayaḥ Prīṣniṁ vochantā mātaram | adha pitaram iṣhmīṇāṁ Rudrañ vochantā śikvasaḥ |* "These wise and powerful [Maruts], who, when I was inquiring after their kindred, declared to me that the Earth, Prīṣni, was their mother, and that the rapid Rudra was their father" (see above, p. 306, note 11).

R.V. v. 59, 8.—*Mimātu Dyaur Aditir vitaye naḥ saṁ dānu-chitrāḥ uṣaso yatantām | āchuchyavur divyañ koṣam ete riṣhe Rudrasya Maruto grīṇānāḥ |* "May Dyans and Aditi provide for our enjoyment: may the dawns, glittering with moisture, strive [in our behalf]. These Maruts, [the sons] of Rudra, when lauded, O rishi, have caused the celestial treasure to drop down."

R.V. v. 60, 5.—*Ajyeshṭhāso akanishṭhāsaḥ ete saṁ bhrātaro vāvridhuḥ saubhagāya | yuvā pitā svapāḥ Rudraḥ eṣhāñ sudughā Prīṣniḥ sudina Marudbhyaḥ |* "These brothers (the Maruts), among whom there

is no distinction of elder and younger (comp. R. V. v. 59, 6, where also these epithets occur), have grown to prosperity. Rudra, their young and energetic father, and the prolific Priśni, [have created] fortunate days for the Maruts."

R.V. vi. 16, 39.—*Ya ugraḥ iva śarya-hā tigma-śringo na vaṁsagaḥ | Agne puro ruṛojitha |* "Thou, Agni, who art fierce (*ugra*), like an archer, like a sharp-horned bull, hast broken down castles."

On this the commentator remarks: "*Rudro vai esha yad Agnir*" *iti śruteḥ | Rudra-kṛitam api Tripura-dahanam Agni-kṛitam eva iti Agniḥ stūyate |* "For the Veda says that 'this Agni is Rudra.' It is here said in praise of Agni, that the burning of the Tripura (or the three cities), though done by Rudra, was done by Agni." Another explanation of the commentator is that Agni was present in Rudra's arrow on that occasion. All this, however, is merely said with the view of bringing the Veda into harmony with later stories.

R.V. vi. 28, 7 (A. V. iv. 21, 7).—*Prajāvatīḥ sūyavasāṁ rīśantiḥ śuddhāḥ apaḥ suprapāṇe pibantiḥ | mā vaḥ stenāḥ īśata mā 'ghaśaṁśaḥ pari vo hetīḥ Rudrasya vṛjyāḥ |* "Be ye (cows) prolific, consuming excellent pasture, drinking pure waters in a good pond. May no thief or wicked man have power over you. May the bolt of Rudra avoid you."

R.V. vi. 49, 10.—*Bhuvanasya pitarāṁ gīrbhīr ābhīḥ Rudraṁ divā vardhaya Rudram aktau | bṛihantam ṛishvam ajaraṁ sushumnam ṛidhag huema kavīnoshītāsaḥ |* "Magnify with these songs, the father of the world, Rudra, by day, [magnify] Rudra by night. Let us, impelled by the poet, severally invoke [him] the mighty, the exalted, the undecaying, the beneficent."

R.V. vi. 50, 4.—*Ā no Rudrasya sūnavo namantām adya hūtāso Vasavo adhṛishṭāḥ | ityādi |* (verse 12 is quoted above, p. 82). "May the sons of Rudra, the irresistible Vasus (or gods), invoked to-day, stoop down to us," etc. . . . v. 12 (translated above, p. 82).

R.V. vi. 66, 3.—*Rudrasya ye mīlhusaḥ santi putrāḥ yāmś cho nu dādhrivir bharaḍhyai | vide hi mātā maho mahi sā sā it Priśniḥ subho garbham ā adhāt | . . . 11. Tam vṛidhantam mārutam bhrājad-ṛishṭīm Rudrasya sūnuṁ havasā ā vivāse | ityādi |*—"Those who are the sons of the bountiful Rudra, and whom he upholds for their nourishment. For the mighty mother possessed these mighty sons. This Priśni was

pregnant for an illustrious birth. . . . 11. I worship with invocation this growing race of the Maruts, with shining weapons, the offspring of Rudra," etc.

R.V. vi. 74, 1 ff.—*Somā-Rudrā dhārayethāṁ asuryam pra vām ishṭayo 'ram āśnuvantu | dams dame sapta ratnā dadhānā śaṁ no bhūtaṁ dvipade śaṁ chatushpade |* 2 (A. V. 7, 42, 1). *Somā-Rudrā vi vṛihataṁ viśhūchām amīvū yā no gayam āviveśa | āre bādhetthām Nirṛitim parāchair asme bhadrā sausravasāni santu |* 3 (A. V. 7, 42, 2). *Somā-Rudrā yueam etāni asme viśvā tanūshu bheshajāni dhattam | ava syatam munchataṁ yad no asti tanūshu baddhām kṛitam eno asmat |* 4. *Tigmā-yudhau tigma-heti susevau Somā Rudrāv iha su mṛīlataṁ naḥ | pra no munchataṁ Varuṇasya pāsād gopūyataṁ naḥ sumanasyamānā |* "Soma and Rudra, do ye grasp divine power. May oblations in abundance reach you! In every house, bearing with you seven jewels, be favourable to our bipeds and our quadrupeds. 2. Soma and Rudra, drive far away that disease which has entered into our abode. Chase Nirṛiti far away from us. May we have excellent renown. 3. Soma and Rudra, infuse into our bodies all these remedies. Remove and banish from us whatever sin we have done which attaches to our bodies. 4. Soma and Rudra, whose weapons are sharp, and whose bolts are piercing, be beneficent and favourable to us. Deliver us from the noose of Varuṇa; protect us, regarding us with favour."

R.V. vii. 10, 4.—*Indraṁ no Agne Vasubhiḥ sajoshāḥ Rudraṁ Rudrebhir ā vaha bṛihantam | Ādityebhir Aditiṁ viśva-janyām Bṛihaspatim rikvabhir viśva-vāram |* "Agni, united with the Vasus, bring hither to us Indra; with the Rudras [bring] the powerful Rudra, with the Ādityas [bring] Aditi, who is acceptable to all, and with the bards [bring] the Bṛihaspati who grants all boons."

R.V. vii. 35, 6.—. . . *Śaṁ no Rudro Rudrebhir jalāśah . . .* "May the healing Rudra, with the Rudras, be favourable to us," etc.

R.V. vii. 36, 5.—*Yajante asya sakhyāṁ vayas cha namasvināḥ sve rītasya dhāman | vi priکشo bābadhe nṛibhiḥ stavānaḥ idaṁ namo Rudrāya preshṭham |* "Men making obeisance in their own place of sacrifice, seek by worship his friendship, and life. Lauded by men, he has distributed food amongst them. This reverence is most dear to Rudra."

R.V. vii. 40, 5 (quoted and translated above, p. 85).

R.V. vii. 41, 1 (V. S. 34, 34; A. V. 3, 16, 1).—*Prātar Agnim*

prātar Indraṁ havdmahe prātar Mitrā-Varuṇa prātar Aśvinā | prātar Bhagam Pūṣaṇam Brahmanaspatim prātaḥ Somam uta Rudraṁ huveṃa |
 "In the morning we invoke Agni, in the morning Indra, in the morning Mitra and Varuṇa, in the morning the Aśvins; in the morning let us invoke Bhaga, Pūṣan, Brahmanaspati, Soma, and Rudra."

R.V. vii. 46, 1 (Nirukta x. 6).—*Imāḥ Rudrāya sthira-dhāncano girāḥ kṣhipreshavo devāya svadhāveṇa²² | aśhūlhāya sahamānāya vedhase tigmad-yudhāya bhārata śrinotu naḥ | 2. Sa hi kṣhayeṇa kṣhamyasya janmanaḥ sāmrajyena divyasya chetati | avann avantir upa no duras̄ chara anamitvo Rudra jāsu no bhava | 3 (Nirukta x. 7).—Yā te didyud avasṛiṣṭā divas pari kṣmayā charati pari sā vṛinaktu naḥ | sahasraṁ te svapivāta²³*

²² Prof. Roth (Illust. of Nir., p. 135) considers the word *svadhāvat* to signify "independent," "whose glory is inherent," etc., and refers to R.V. vii. 20, 1; vii. 37, 2; vii. 86, 4. At p. 40 f. of his Illustrations Roth assigns to *svadhām annu*, etc., the sense of "according to one's own determination," "according to pleasure," and quotes the following passages where it has this sense, viz.: R.V. i. 6, 4; i. 33, 11; i. 81, 4; ii. 3, 11; iii. 47, 1; vii. 78, 4; and viii. 20, 7. On *svadhā* see also Prof. Müller's Transl. of the R.V., pp. 19-25.

²³ This word is not explained in the printed text of Sūyana; although in the "Varietas Lectionis," appended to his preface, Prof. Müller notes that in one MS., B. 4, *svapivāta* is rendered by *jītaprāṇa*, "he by whom life (or breath) is conquered." In the Nirukta, x. 7, it is explained by *svāpta-vachana*, "thou whose words are very suitable or authoritative." In his Illustrations of the Nirukta, pp. 135 f., Prof. Roth has some remarks on the word, which I translate: "*Svapivāta* in the Pada text is divided into *su+apivāta*, and is consequently to be derived from *api+vat*, a compound, which is often found in the R.V., viz. in vii. 3, 10, *api kratuṁ suchetasāṁ vatema*; vii. 60, 6, *api kratuṁ suchetasāṁ vatantaḥ*; i. 128, 2, *taṁ yajna-sādham api vatayāmasi*; i. 165, 13, *manmāni chitrāḥ api vātayantaḥ*; x. 25, 1, *bhadraṁ no api vātaya mano dakṣhaṁ uta kratum*; x. 13, 5, *pitre putrāso apy avivatann ṛitam* | It has the signification of 'learning to understand,' 'appropriating to one's self,' and in the causal 'to teach to understand,' agreeing entirely with the Zend word of similar form, which as yet no one had been able to decipher in Sanskrit. The word (*svapivāta*) thus means 'readily understanding, hearing, accessible, gracious.' Yāska's explanation appears right, and Durga has misunderstood it, when he explains the word by *anatikramaṇīyājña* ('thou whose command cannot be transgressed')." I have to remark, however, that if Yāska's phrase *svāpta-vachana* have the sense I have above assigned to it of "speaking with authority," (see the third vol. of this work, pp. 124, 127 f., and elsewhere) it means nearly what Durga asserts. Prof. Roth, however, must have taken it to mean "thou by whom words (prayers) are readily received, or apprehended." Otherwise it could not harmonize with the sense he regards as the right one. In his Lexicon, s.v. *vat+api*, Prof. Roth adheres to the meanings assigned to the compound verb in his "Illustrations," rendering it "to understand, comprehend," and in the causal "to cause to understand, to make comprehensible"; and assigning to the words *bhadraṁ no api vātaya manaḥ* in x. 20, 1 and x. 25, 1, the sense of "awaken in us a good sense." Prof. Aufrecht assigns to

bheshajā mā nas tokeshu tanayeshu śrīśaḥ | 4. *Mā no vadhiḥ Rudra mā parā dāḥ mā te bhūma prasitau kṛtāṣya* | *ā no bhaja bārhishī jīva-śamso*²⁴ *gūyam pata svastibhiḥ sādā naḥ* | "Present these songs to Rudra with the strong bow, and swift arrows, the self-dependent god, unassailable, the assailant, the disposer, armed with sharp weapons: may he hear us. 2. Through his power he perceives the terrestrial race, and through his universal dominion [he perceives] the divine. Protecting us, approach our protecting doors; Rudra, remove sickness from our offspring. 3. May that shaft of thine which is discharged from the sky, and traverses the earth, avoid us. Thou, who art easy of access, hast a thousand remedies. Injure us not in our children and descendants. 4. Slay us not, Rudra; do not abandon us; let us not fall into thy net when thou art incensed. Give us a share in the sacrifice desired by the living. Do ye always succour us with your benedictions."

R.V. vii. 56, 1 (S. V. i. 433).—*Ke iṁ vyaktāḥ naraḥ sanilāḥ Rudrasya maryaḥ adha svastāḥ* | 2. *Nakir hi eśāṁ janūmahi veda te anga vidre mitho janitram* | "Who are these brilliant heroes, the sons of Rudra, occupying the same abode, riding on excellent horses? No one knows their births. They [themselves] know the place of their common production."

R.V. vii. 58, 5.—*Tān ā Rudrasya mīḥuho vivāso ityādi* | "I worship these [sons] of the bountiful Rudra," etc.

svapivāta the sense "possessed of great knowledge," from *su+apivāta*, "intelligence, knowledge," which again comes from *api+vat*, to which he considers that the proper meaning has been assigned by Prof. Roth. Sāyaṇa explains as follows the texts quoted above, viz. R.V. vii. 3, 10: *Apy api cha kratum karma yajñānūṁ kartāraṁ vā suchetasam iobhāna-prajñāna-yuktaṁ suprajñānam putraṁ vā vātana sambhajemahi* | *vanateḥ sambhajanārthasya varjāntarūgame sati rūpam* | "And further may we gain a rite, or a performer of sacrifices possessed of good intelligence, or a very intelligent son. *Van*, which means 'to divide' (or gain), becomes *vat* by the alteration of a letter." He interprets vii. 60, 6, thus: *Api suchetasam prakṛiṣṭa-jñānavantam puruṣam kratuṁ kartāraṁ karmānushṛṣṭhānavantam vātantu gachhantaḥ* | "going to a man, a performer of rites possessed of eminent intelligence." The verb in R.V. i. 128, 2, is thus expounded: *ā paritosaṁ sevāmahe* "we serve till we are satisfied"; and in i. 165, 13, thus: *sampūrṇam prapayantaḥ*, "completely bringing to us"; in x. 20, 1, by *āgamaya*, "cause to come"; in x. 25, 1, by *gamaya*, "cause to go"; in x. 13, 5, by *āngamayanti*, "cause to go together."

²⁴ This word appears from Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon to occur twice in the R.V., viz. in i. 104, 6, and the present passage. They make it a substantive, signifying "rule over the living." Benfey, in his translation of i. 104, 6, renders the word "to be praised among men." Sāyaṇa has there *kūmayitavye*, "to be desired"; and here *śāmaśanīye*, which means the same.

R.V. viii. 13, 20.—*Tad id Rudrasya chetati yadvam pratneshu dhāmasu | mano yatra vi tad dadhur vichetasah |* “That great (manifestation) of Rudra [or the terrible (Indra)²⁵] is perceived in the ancient abodes, and on it the wise have therefore fixed their minds.”

R.V. viii. 20, 17.—*Yathā Rudrasya sūnavo divo vaśanti asurasya vedhasah | yuvānas tathā it asat |* “As the youthful sons of Rudra, the wise deity of the sky, desire, so shall it be.”

R.V. viii. 22, 13.— . . . *Tū u namobhir īmahe | 14. Tāv id doṣhā tāv ushasi śubhas patī tū yāman rudra-vartanī²⁶ | mā no martāya ripave vājini-vasū paro rudrāv ati khyatam |* “We invoke them (the Aśvins), with adoration, (14) at evening and at dawn, and on their path, the two lords of splendour, proceeding on terrible roads. Do not, O terrible (*rudrau*) lords of swift horses,²⁷ abandon us to our mortal enemy.”

R.V. viii. 29, 5. (quoted and translated above, p. 90).

R.V. viii. 61, 3 —*Antar ichhanti taṁ jane rudram paro manīṣhayā | grībhñanti jīhvayā sasam²⁸ |* “They entreat the god (Agni), who is terrible (*rudra*) beyond all thought,²⁹ [to enter] among the people. With their tongue they take food (or seize him sleeping).”

R.V. x. 64, 8.—*Triḥ sapta saśrūḥ nadyo mahīr apo vanaspatīn parvatān Agnim ūtaye | Kṛīśūnum aśtṛīn Tīshyaṁ sadhasṭhe ā Rudraṁ Rudreshu rudriyaṁ havāmahe |* “We invoke to our aid in the assembly of sacrifice, the three times seven swift rivers, the great waters, the trees, the mountains, Agni, Kṛīśānu, the archers, Tīshya, and Rudra, among the Rudras, and possessing their character.”

²⁵ Böhtlingk and Roth, *s.v. rudra*, hold the word to be here an epithet of Indra. The rest of the hymn is addressed to him.

²⁶ This word *rudra-vartanī* is also applied to the Aśvins in the first verse of this hymn, and in R.V. x. 39, 11. Compare *kṛīṣṇavarṇanī* and *kṛīṣṇādḥvan* as applied to Agni. See the fifth vol. of this work, p. 212.

²⁷ This is the sense assigned by Böhtlingk and Roth to *vājini-vasū*. Sāyana renders it by *annavarū* (R.V. v. 74, 6), *annadhana* (x. 40, 12) “rich in food.” Elsewhere he also takes *vājini* for food or oblation.

²⁸ This word is given in the Nighaṇṭus, 2, 7, as signifying food. Sāyana takes it to mean “sleeping,” and renders the last clause “men through praise sprung from their tongue, catch Agni with their fingers” (*jīhvā-prabhavayā stutya grībhñanti grībhñanti angulibhiḥ*). See Roth's Illustrations of Nirukta, pp. 55 and 86 f.; also R.V. i. 51, 3 (where Benfey renders *sasena* “in sleep”); iii. 5, 6; iv. 5, 7; iv. 7, 7; v. 21, 4; x. 79, 3.

²⁹ This interpretation is confirmed by Böhtlingk and Roth, *s.v. manīṣhā*, who refer to R.V. v. 17, 2, as another passage where the phrase occurs.

R.V. x. 65, 1 (quoted and translated above, p. 95).

R.V. x. 66, 3.—*Indro Vasubhiḥ paripātu no gayam Ādityair no Aditiḥ śarma yaohhatu | Rudro Rudrebhir devo mṛīlayāti nas Tvashṭā no gnābhiḥ suvitāya jinvatu |* “May Indra with the Vasus preserve our habitation; may Aditi with the Ādityas grant us protection. May the divine Rudra with the Rudras be gracious to us; may Tvashṭri with the wives (of the gods) advance us to prosperity.”

R.V. x. 92, 5.—*Pra Rudrena yayinā yanti sindhavas tiro mahīm aramatiṃ³⁰ dadhanvire | yebhiḥ parijmā pariyaṇn uru jrayo vi roruvaj jaṭhare viśvam ukshate | . . . 9. Stomaṃ vo adya Rudrāya śikvase kahayad-virāya namasā didishṭana | yebhiḥ śivaḥ svavān evayāvabhir divaḥ sishakti³¹ eva-yaśūḥ nikāmbhiḥ |* “The waters flow [impelled] by the hastening Rudra, and have spread over the vast earth; with them the circumambient, shouting god, who moves round the wide space [of the earth], moistens all (that is contained) in its womb. . . . 9. With reverence present your hymn to-day to the mighty Rudra, the ruler of heroes, [and to the Maruts] those rapid and ardent deities with whom the gracious and opulent [Rudra], who derives his renown from himself, protects us from the sky.”

R.V. x. 93, 4.—*Te gha rūjāno amṛitasya³² mandrāḥ Aryamā Mitro Varunaḥ parijmā | kad Rudro nṛiṇām stuto Marutaḥ Pūshano Bhagaḥ | . . . 7. Uta no rudrā chid mṛīlatām Aśvinā ityādi |* “These are the

³⁰ This word occurs in different parts of the R.V., where it is variously interpreted by Sāyana. On ii. 38, 4, he explains it by *anuparatiḥ*, “never resting,” as an epithet of Savitṛi; on v. 43, 6, as an epithet of *gnā* (a goddess), *ā samantād ramamānām sarvatiḥ gantrīm vā*, “sporting all round, or, going everywhere”; on vii. 36, 8, similarly, *uparati-rahitām*, “having no rest,” as an epithet of *mahī*, the earth; on vii. 42, 3, as meaning the earth (*dhūmim*); on vii. 1, 6, as signifying brilliancy (*dīptiḥ*); on v. 54, 6, as *āramāṇām dhanūdikam*, “object of enjoyment, wealth,” etc.; on vii. 34, 21, as denoting a being “of perfect intelligence, or whose intelligence reaches to all objects,” (*paryāpta-buddhiḥ sarva-vishaya-vyāpi-buddhir vā*) spoken of Tvashṭri; and on viii. 31, 12, as equivalent to *alammatiḥ paryāpta-stutiḥ*, a god “who obtains full, or complete, worship,” said of Pūshan. I have not access to his commentary on x. 64, 15, and x. 92, 4, 5. Böhtlingk and Roth regard *Aramati* in all these passages but one as designating either “readiness for service, obedience, devotion,” or “as a personification of religious worship, or active piety.” In viii. 31, 12, they regard it as signifying “obedient, pious.” I cannot see that any of these senses except that of earth is applicable to the passage before us. Or *Aramati* may here be an epithet of the earth.

³¹ From the root *sakh*. See R.V. i. 18, 2; i. 56, 4; and v. 41, 20.

³² Compare *amṛitasya gopām*, R.V. viii. 42, 2; and *amṛitasya patnīḥ*, iv. 5, 13.

kings of immortality who gladden us: Aryaman, Mitra, Varuṇa the circumambient, what (shall we say) of Rudra celebrated by men, the Maruts, the Pūshans, and Bhaga? . . . 7. May the terrible (*rudra*) Aśvins be favourable to us," etc.

R.V. x. 125, 6 (A. V. 4, 30, 5).—*Ahaṁ Rudrāya dhanur ā tanomi brahma-dviṣhe śaravaṁ hantavai u ityādi* | (Vāch?³³ speaks): "I bend the bow for Rudra, for an arrow to slay the hater of the priest," etc.

R.V. x. 126, 5.—. . . . *Ugram Marudbhīḥ Rudraṁ huvema ityādi* | "Let us invoke the terrible Rudra with the Maruts," etc.

R.V. x. 136, 1 (Nir. xii. 26).—*Keśi agniṁ keśi viśhaṁ keśi bībharti rodasī | keśi viśvaṁ svar dṛiṣe³⁴ keśi idaṁ jyotiṣ uchyate* | 2 | *munayo vātaraśanāḥ piśangū vasate malū | vātasyānu dhṛūjīm yanti yad devāso avikṣhata* | 3 | *unmaditāḥ maṇeyena vātān ā tasthīmā vayam | śarīrād* (i.e. *śarīrā id*) *asmākaṁ yūyaṁ martāso abhi paśyatha* | 4 | *antarikṣheṇa patati viśvā rūpā 'vachākaśat | munir devasya devasya saulkrīḍyāya saḥkṣā hataḥ* | 5 | *Vātasyāśvo Vāyoḥ saḥkṣā atha devaḥṣto munir | ubhau samudrāv ā kṣeti yaś cha pūrvaḥ utāparah* | 6 | *apsarasāṁ gandharvānām mṛigāṇām charaṇe charan | keśi ketasya vidvān saḥkṣā evādur madīntamaḥ* | 7. *Vāyur asmaḥ upāmanthat pinakṣi sma kunannamā | keśi viśhasya pātrena yad Rudreṇāpibat saha* | "The long-haired [being] sustains fire, water, and the two worlds; he is to the view the entire sky; he is called this light. 2. The wind-clad (i.e. naked) munis wear brown and soiled (garments); they follow the course of the wind, when ye, O gods, have entered (into them). 3. Transported by (our) impulses as munis, we have pursued the winds. You, O mortals, behold our bodies. 4. The muni, a friend fitted to gain the beneficent aid of every god, flies through the air, perceiving all forms. 5. The muni, impelled by the gods, the steed of the wind, the friend of Vāyu, dwells in both the oceans, the eastern and the western. 6. Moving in the path of the Apsarases, the Gandharvas, and the wild animals, the long-haired being is aware of our call, and a sweet and gladdening friend. 7. Vāyu agitated for him; the long-haired [being] breaks down the things which are unbending, by means of the vessel of water (*viśha*) which he drank along with Rudra."

Although but little of this hymn has reference to Rudra, I have

³³ See note 27 in p. 258 of the third vol. of this work.

³⁴ *Keśi idaṁ sarvaṁ idaṁ abhivipaśyati* | —Nir. xii. 26.

quoted it entire on account of the interest it possesses in another respect. The first verse is explained in the Nirukta x. 26; and Prof. Roth, in his Illustrations of that work, p. 164, has the following note on the subject of the hymn: "The hymn," he says, "shows the conception that by a life of sanctity (*mauneyana*, verse 3) the muni can attain to the fellowship of the deities of the air, the Vāyus, the Rudras, the Apsarases, and the Gandharvas; and, furnished like them with wonderful powers, can travel along with them on their course. Transcending even this, the verse before us says that the beautiful-haired, the long-haired, that is to say, the Muni, who during the time of his austerities, does not shave his hair, upholds fire, moisture, heaven, and earth, and resembles the world of light, ideas which the later literature so largely contains. Similarly in an older hymn, R. V. vii. 56, 8, an unusual power of the Muni is celebrated, when it is said of the winds: *Subhro vaś śuśhmaś krudhmā manāñsi dhunir munir iva śardhasya dhrishnoś*, where Sāyaṇa explains the word *mananād muniḥ stotā* ('the muni, from the root "man," is one who praises'); and where the representation above given is in any case to be found in its germ."

Although, in his Lexicon (see *s.v. muni*), Prof. Roth no longer adheres to Sāyaṇa's explanation of the word *muni*, as applicable to the last-mentioned passage, where he thinks it may mean "pressure, crowd, impulse," he takes the same view as formerly of the hymn before us (x. 136), and defines the word *muni* as signifying "(one who is driven by an inward impulse), a person inspired, or in a state of ecstasy; with this conception of the word," he proceeds, "agrees what is said of the ecstasy and deification of the muni in R. V. x. 136, 2, 4, *devashito muniḥ* ('the god-impelled muni'), v. 5, and what is related in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa vi. 33, of the Muni Aitasa, whom his son regards as mad. *Indro muninām sakha*, 'Indra is the friend of munis,' R. V. viii. 17, 14." I subjoin the passage of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa vi. 33, here referred to:

*Aitasa-pralāpaṃ śaṃsati | Aitaso ha vai munir "Agnor āyur"*³⁸ *dadarśa yajñasya ayātayāmam iti ha eke ākuḥ | so' bravīt putrān "putrakāḥ 'Agnor āyur' adarśam | tad abhilapishyāmi | yat kincha vadāmi tad me mā parigāta" iti | sa pratyapadyata "etāḥ asvāḥ āplavanto pratīpam*

³⁸ The words *Agnor āyur asi tasya te* occur in the Kāṭhaka, according to the list of initial words of passages given by Weber, Ind. Stud., iii. 289.

prātisutvanam" (A. V. xx. 129, 1) *iti* | *tasya Abhyagnir Aitaśāyanaḥ aitya akāle 'bhihāya mukham apyagrihṇād "adṛipat naḥ pitū" iti* | *taṁ ha uvācha "apekya alaso bhūr yo me vācham avadhīḥ | śatūyūṁ gām akarishyaṁ sahasrāyūṁ puruṣhaṁ | pāpishṭhām te prajāṁ karomi yo mā itthaṁ asakthāḥ"* *iti* | *tasmād āhur "Abhyagnayaḥ Aitaśāyanāḥ Aurvāṇām pāpishṭhāḥ"* *iti* | "He repeats the Aitaśa-pralāpa. The Muni Aitaśa beheld (i.e. received a revelation of) the 'Agnir āyuh' ('Agni's life,' etc.), which, some say, renders the sacrifice efficacious.³⁶ He said to his sons, 'Sons, I have seen "Agni's life;" and will speak of it. Do not fail to attend to" what I say.' He then obtained (by revelation) the verse beginning *etāḥ aśvāḥ*, etc. Abhyagni, of the family of Aitaśa, came unseasonably, and stopped his mouth, saying 'our father is mad.' His father said, 'Go, become destitute of energy,³⁷ thou who hast stopped my words. I should otherwise have made kine live a hundred years, and men a thousand. Since thou hast so done violence to me, I make thy offspring most degraded. Hence they say that the Abhyagnis of the family of Aitaśa are the most degraded of all the Aurvas."

Compare Professor Kuonen's remarks on the possible original sense of the Hebrew word *nabi*, "prophet," in his *Historisch-Kritisch Onderzoek*, ii. 3, and also pp. 16 (note 3), and 19 (note 6).

The allusion in the 7th verse of the hymn before us to Rudra drinking water (*viśha*) may possibly have given rise to the legend of his drinking posion (*viśha*).—See above, p. 50.

R. V. x. 169, 1.—*Mayobhūr vāto abhivātu usrāḥ ūrjasvatīr ośadhīr āriśantām | pīvasvatīr jīva-dhanyāḥ pibuntu avasūya padvate*³⁸ *Rudra mṛṣā* | "May the wind, causing prosperity, blow upon our cows. Let them consume invigorating plants; let them drink (waters) rich and life-sustaining: Rudra, be gracious to our walking sources of food" (compare vi. 28, 7, above, p. 312).

³⁶ Prof. Haug renders *ayūṭayāmam*, "which should remove all defects from the sacrifice"; and Prof. Weber, who, in his review of Dr. Haug's translation, *Indische Studien*, ix. 177 ff., dissents from many of the translator's renderings, expresses here no difference of opinion, see p. 304.

³⁷ Weber here differs from Haug's rendering of *parigāta* by "do not scorn me," and translates *übergeht* (*überhöret mir dies nicht*) *was ich auch sagen mag*, which is also the sense assigned in Böhtlingk and Roth's *Lexicon*; and has been given by me.

³⁸ Haug translator, "Become infected with leprosy"; Weber, "become destitute of energy."

³⁹ *Pavāḥ avasāṁ gūvaḥ* | —Nir. i. 17.

SECT. II.—*Passages relating to Rudra in the Vājasaneyi recension of the white Yajur-Veda.*

I now proceed to quote from the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā the principal texts which it contains relative to Rudra.

Vaj. S. 3, 57 ff.—*Esha te Rudra bhāgaḥ saha vasarā Ambikayā taṁ jushasva svāhā* | *esha te Rudra bhāgaḥ ākhus te paśuḥ*⁴⁰ | 58. *Ava Rudram adimāhy ava devam tryambakam* | *yathā no vasyasas karad yathā naḥ śreyasas karad yathā no vyavasāyayāt* | 59. *Bheshajam asi bheshajam gave 'śvāya purushāya bheshajam* | *sukham meshāya meshyai* | 60 (=R. V. vii. 59, 12; Taitt. S. i. 8, 6, 2). *Tryambakam yajāmahe sugandhim pushṭi-varḍhanam* | *urvārukam iva bandhanād mṛityor mukshīya mā 'mṛitāt* | *tryambakam yajāmahe sugandhim pativedanam*⁴¹ | *urvārukam iva bandhanād ito mukshīya mā 'mutaḥ* | 61 (T. S. i. 8, 6, 2). *Etat te Rudra avasam tena paro Mūjavato ātihi* | *avatata-dhanvā pinākavasaḥ krīti-rāsāḥ ahimsan naḥ śivo 'tihi* | 62. *Tryāyusham Jamadagneḥ Kātyapasya tryāyusham* | *yad deveshu tryāyusham tad no astu tryāyusham* | 63. *Śivo nāma 'si svadhitis te pitā namas te astu mā mā himsīḥ* | *nivartāyāmy āyushe annādyāya prajānanāya rāyasposhūya suprajāstvāya suvityāya* |

"This is thy portion, Rudra, with thy sister Ambikā; accept it with favour, may it be fortunate (*svāhā*). This is thy portion; thy victim is a mouse. 58. We have satisfied Rudra; we have satisfied the god Tryambaka,⁴² that he may make us most opulent, most happy, that he may prosper us. 59. Thou art a medicine, a medicine for kine and horses, a medicine for men, a [source of] ease to rams and ewes. 60. We worship Tryambaka, the sweet-scented, the increaser of prosperity. May I, like a cucumber [severed] from its stem, be freed from

⁴⁰ The Taittirīya Br. i. 6, 10, 4, has only the first part of this verse: *Esha te Rudra bhāgaḥ saha vasarā Ambikayā*; then follow the words: *ity āha* | *Śarad vai asya Ambikā vasat* | *tayā vai esha himast* | "He says, 'This is thy portion, Rudra, with thy sister Ambikā.' His sister Ambikā is the autumn; with her he smites (or kills)," etc. The commentator on the passage before us (of the Vaj. S.) says in reference to this that Ambikā kills by taking the form of Autumn, and producing diseases, etc. (*Śarad-rūpam prāpya jar-* [qu. ? *jar-*] *ādikam utpādya taṁ nirodhiṇaṁ hanti*).

⁴¹ Compare *patividyā*, "the acquisition of a wife," in Taitt. Br. ii. 4, 2, 7.

⁴² S. P. ii. 6, 2, 9.—*Ambikā ha vai nāma asya vasat* | *tayā 'sya esha saha bhāgaḥ* | *tad yad asya esha strīyā saha bhāgas tasmāt Tryambako nāma* | "He has a sister called Ambikā, with whom he has this share: and since he has this share along with a female (*strī*), he is called Tryambaka" (i.e. Tryambaka).

death, not [severed] from immortality. We worship Tryambaka, the sweet-scented, who bestows on us husbands.⁴² Like a cucumber [severed] from its stem, may I be released from this [world], not [severed] from that [world]. 61. This, Rudra, is thy provision; with it depart beyond the Mūjavat, with thy bow unbended, and concealed from view, clothed with a skin, without injuring us, gracious, cross over.⁴³ 62. Let us have a triple life, the triple life of Jamadagni, the triple life of Kaśyapa, the triple life which exists among the gods. 63. Thou art gracious (śiva) by name; the thunderbolt⁴⁴ is thy father. Reverence be to thee: destroy us not. I clip thy hair, thee [O sacrificer], that thou mayest live, have food to eat, the power of procreation, the possession of wealth, abundant offspring, and eminent prowess."⁴⁵

The next passage which I shall quote is the famous Satarudriya, a prayer, which is referred to in three passages quoted above from the Mahābhārata, pp. 186, 193, and 199. It is translated and annotated by Prof. Weber in his Indische Studien, ii. 32 ff. The text there translated, and which is given in the preceding pp. 26 ff., is that of the Upanishad bearing the name of Satarudriya.

Vājasaneyi Samhitā, xvi. 1 ff. (=Taitt. S. iv. 5, 1, 1 ff.).—*Namas te Rudra manyave uto te ishava namaḥ*⁴⁶ | *bāhubhyām uta te namaḥ* | 2. *Yā te Rudra śivā tanūr aghorā 'pāpa-kāśinī* | *tayā nas tanvā (tanuvā, T. S.) śantamayā grīśantūbhichakāśinī* | 3. *Yām ishūm girīśanta haste bibharshi astave* | *śivām giritra tām kuru mā hīṁsīḥ puruṣaṁ jagat* | 4. *Sivena vacasā tvā girīśūchha vadāmasi* | *yathā naḥ sarvaṁ ij jagad ayakṣhmaṁ sumanūḥ*⁴⁷ | *asat* | 5. *Adhy avochad adhvīvaktū prathamō daivyo bhīṣak* | *ahīṁścha sarvān jambhayan sarvāścha yātudhānyo 'dharūchīḥ parāsuva*⁴⁸ | 6. *Asau yas tāmro aruṇaḥ uta babhruḥ sumangalaḥ* | *yo chainaṁ Rudrāḥ abhito dīkṣu śritāḥ sahasraśo 'vaiśhām heḍaḥ*⁴⁹ | *imahe* | 7. *Asau yo 'vasar-*

⁴² This, the Commentator says, is spoken by virgins walking round the fire.

⁴³ See the second volume of this work, pp. 351 f., and note 138, where the comments of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa (ii. 6, 2, 17) on the passage before us are quoted.

⁴⁴ Such is the sense assigned to *svadhiti* in the Nighaṇṭus, 2, 20.

⁴⁵ The commentator says that the first half of this verse is addressed to a razor, and the second half is supposed to be spoken by the razor to the person to whose head it is to be applied. He translates the words *nivārtayāmy āyushe*, etc., by "I shave thee that thou mayest live," etc.

⁴⁶ The Taitt. S. inserts here *namas te astu dhanvane*, "reverence be to thy bow."

⁴⁷ *Sumanah-śabde guṇmatvam ārṣham* | Comm.

⁴⁸ These last two words are omitted in the Taitt. S.

*pati nilagrīvo vilohitaḥ | utainaṁ gopāḥ adṛśrann adṛśrann uḍāhāryaḥ*⁴⁹
sa dṛśiḥto mṛṇḍayāti naḥ | 8. Namo 'stu nīla-grīvāya sahasrākṣhāya
mīḍhusho | atho yaḥ asya satvāno ahaṁ tebhyo 'karaṁ namaḥ | 9. Pramuncha
dhanvanas tcam ubhayaḥ dṛtmyor jyām | yāścha te haste ishavaḥ parā tā
*bhagavo vapaḥ*⁵⁰ | 10. *Vijyaṁ dhanuḥ kapardino viśalyo bāṇavān uta |*
aneśann asya yāḥ ishavaḥ ābhur asya nishangadhiḥ [-thiḥ, T. S.] | 11.
Yā te hetir mīḍhushṭama haste babhūva te dhanuḥ | tayā 'smān viśvatas
*tvam ayakṣmayā pari bhūja*⁵¹ | 12. *Pari te dhanvano hetir asmān vṛṇaktu*
viśvataḥ | atho yaḥ iśhudhis tava āre asmaḍ nidhehi tam | 13. Avatatya
dhanuḥ tvaṁ sahasrākṣha sateshudhe | niśtrya śalyānām mukhā śivo naḥ
sumanāḥ bhava | 14. Namas te āyudhāya anātātāya dhṛiṣṇave | ubhā-
bhyām uta te namo bāhubhyām tava dhanvane | 15 and 16 (=R.V. i.
114, 7, 8, see above p. 303). 17. Namo hiranyabāhave senānyo diśāṇḥ
pataye namo namo vṛikṣebhyo harikṣēbhyāḥ paśūnām pataye namo
namaḥ śaṣṭpinjārāya tvishimate pathinām pataye namo namo harikṣūya
upavitine puṣṭhānām pataye namaḥ | 18. Namo babhruśūya vyādhiṇe
'nnānām pataye namo namo Bhavasya hetyai jagatām pataye namo namo
Rudrāya ātatāvīne (ātatāvīne, T. S.) kṣetrāṇām pataye namo namaḥ
sūtāya ahantyai (ahantiyāya, T. S.) vanānām pataye namaḥ | 19. Namo
rohitāya śthapataye vṛikṣhūnām pataye namo namo bhuvantaye vāriṇas-
kṛitāya ośadhīnām pataye namo namo mantriṇe vāṇijāya kakṣhānām
pataye namo namo uchchairghoṣhūya ākrandayate pattinām pataye namaḥ |
20. Namaḥ kṛitēnāyatayā (kṛitṣnavitāya, T. S.) dhāvate satvanām pataye
namo namaḥ sahamānāya nivṛyādhiṇe āvyādhiṇinām pataye namo namo
nishangīṇe kakubhāya stenānām pataye namo namo nicheraṇe paricharāya
aranyānām pataye namaḥ | 21. Namo vanchate parivanchate stāyūnām
pataye namo namo nishangīṇe iśhudhimate taskarāṇām pataye namo
namaḥ śṛikāyibhyo (śṛikāvibhyo, T. S.) jighāṁsadbhyo muṣhṇatām pataye
namo namo 'śimadbhyo naktaṁ ckaradbhyo vikṛintānām (prakṛintānām,
T. S.) pataye namaḥ | 22. Namaḥ uśhṇiṣhīṇe giricharāya kulunehānām
pataye namo namaḥ iśhunadbhyo dhanvāyibhyāścha vo namo namaḥ ātan-
vānebhyo pratidādhānebhyāścha vo namo namaḥ āyachhādhhyo 'syadbhyāś-
cha vo namaḥ | 23. Namo viśṛijadbhyo vidhyadbhyāś cha vo namo namaḥ

⁴⁹ The Taitt. S. adds here *utainaṁ viśvā bhūtāni*, "and all beings have seen him."

⁵⁰ The T. S. introduces here verse 13 of the Vāj. S.

⁵¹ The T. S. inserts the 14th verse here, and there are similar transpositions elsewhere.

svapadbhyo jāgradbhyaś cha vo namo namaḥ śayānebhyaḥ āsīnebhyaścha vo namo namas tiśhṭhabdhyo dhāvadbhyaścha vo namaḥ | 24. Namaḥ sabhābhyaḥ sabhāpatibhyaścha vo namo namo 'śvebhyo 'svapatibhyaścha vo namo namaḥ āvyādākinibhyo vīvidhyantibhyaścha vo namo namaḥ ugaṇā-gbhyaś trīmhaṭibhyaś cha vo namaḥ | 25. Namō gaṇebhyo gaṇapati-bhyaścha vo namo namo vrātebhyo vrātapatibhyaścha vo namo namo grītebhyo grītapatibhyaścha vo namo namo virūpebhyo viśvarūpebhyaścha vo namaḥ | 26. Namaḥ senābhyaḥ senānibhyaścha vo namo namo rathibhyo 'rathēbhyaścha vo namo namaḥ kṣatṛibhyaḥ saṅgrahitṛibhyaścha vo namo namo mahadbhyo arbhavebhyaścha (kṣullakebhyaś cha, T. S.) vo namaḥ | 27. Namas takṣhabhyo rathakārebhyaścha vo namo namaḥ kulūlebhyaḥ karmārebhyaścha vo namo namo nishūdebhyaḥ punjiśṭhēbhyaś cha vo namo namaḥ śvanibhyo mṛigayubhyaścha vo namaḥ | 28. Namaḥ śvabhyāḥ śvapatibhyaścha namo Bhaṭṭāya Rudrāya cha namaḥ Śarvāya cha Paśu-pataye cha namo nīlagrīvāya cha śitikaṇṭhāya cha | 29. Namaḥ kapardīno cha vyūpta-keśāya cha namaḥ sahasrākṣhāya cha śatadhanvane cha namo girīśayāya (girīśāya, T. S.) cha śipivīśṭhāya cha namo mīdhushṭamāya cha īshmate cha | 30. Namō hrasvāya cha vāmanāya cha namo brīhate cha varshīyase cha namo vṛiddhāya cha savṛidhe (saṁvṛidhvane, T. S.) cha namo 'gryāya prathamāya cha | 31. Namaḥ āśave cha ajirāya cha namaḥ śīghryāya (śīghriyāya, T. S.) cha śībhyāya cha namaḥ ūrmyāya cha avasā-nyāya cha namo nādeyāya (śrotasyāya, T. S.) cha dvīpyāya cha | 32. Namō jyēśṭhāya cha kanīśṭhāya cha namaḥ pūrṇajūya cha aparajūya cha namo madhyamāya cha apagalbhāya cha namo jaghanyāya cha budhnyāya cha | 33. Namaḥ sobhyāya cha pratisaryāya cha namo yūmyāya cha kṣemyāya cha namaḥ ślokyāya cha avasānyāya cha nama urvaryāya cha khalyāya cha | 34. Namō vanyāya cha kakshyāya cha namaḥ śravāya cha pratīśravāya cha namaḥ āśuśenāya cha āśuratāya cha namaḥ śūrāya cha avabhedīno (avabhindate, T. S.) cha | 35. Namō bilmine cha kavachīne cha namo varminē cha varūthīne cha namaḥ śrutāya cha śrutasenāya cha namo dundubhyāya cha āhananyāya cha | 36. Namō dhṛīśhṇave cha pramṛīśāya cha²² namo nīshangīne cha īśkudhimate cha namas tīkṣhṇeshave cha āyudhīno cha namaḥ svāyudhāya sūdhānvane cha | 37. Namaḥ śrutyāya cha pathyāya cha namaḥ kūtūyāya cha nīpyāya cha namaḥ kulyāya cha sarasyāya cha namo nādeyāya (nādyāya, T. S.) cha vaiśantāya cha | 38. Namaḥ kūpyāya cha avatīyāya cha namo vīdhryāya cha ālapyāya namo meghyāya cha

²² The T. S. adds here namo dūtāya cha prahītāya cha.

vidyutyāya cha namo varshyāya cha avarshyāya cha | 39. *Namo vātyāya cha reshmyāya (reshmiyāya, T. S.) cha namo vāstavyāya cha vāstupāya cha namaḥ Somāya cha Rudrāya cha namas tāmrāya cha aruṇāya cha* | 40. *Namaḥ śāngave (śāngāya, T. S.) paśupataye cha namaḥ ugrāya cha bhīmāya cha namo agrevadhāya cha dūrevadhāya cha namo hantre cha hanīyase cha namo vṛikṣebhyaḥ hari-keśebhyaḥ namas tārāya* | 41. *Namaḥ śambhāvāya (śambhave, T. S.) cha mayobhavāya (mayobhave, T. S.) cha namaḥ śankarāya cha mayaskarāya cha namaḥ śivāya cha śivatarāya cha* | 42. *Namaḥ pūryāya cha avūryāya cha namaḥ prataranāya cha uttaranāya cha⁵³ namas tīrthyāya cha kūlyāya cha namaḥ śaṣṭpyāya phenyāya cha* | 43. *Namaḥ eikatyāya cha pravāhyāya cha namaḥ kiṃśīlāya cha keśayanāya cha namaḥ kapardīne cha pulastaye cha namaḥ irinyāya cha prepathyāya cha* | 44. *Namo vrajyāya (grīhyāya, T. S.) cha goṣṭhyāya cha namas talpyāya cha gehyāya cha namo hṛidayyāya (hradayyāya, T. S.) cha niveshyāya cha namaḥ kūtyāya cha gahvareṣṭhāya cha* | 45. *Namaḥ śuṣhkyāya cha harītyāya cha namaḥ pāṃsavyāya cha rajasyāya cha namo loptyāya cha ulapyāya cha namaḥ ūrvyāya cha sūrvyāya (sūrmyāya, T. S.) cha* | 46. *Namaḥ parṇāya (parṇyāya, T. S.) cha parṇaśadāya cha namaḥ udguramānāya (apagurumānāya, T. S.) cha abhighnate cha nama ākḥidate cha prakḥidate cha namaḥ iṣukṛīdbhyaḥ dhanuṣkṛīdbhyaś cha vo namo namo vaḥ kirīkebhyaḥ devūnām hṛidayebhyaḥ namo vichinvatkebhyaḥ namo vikṣiṇatkebhyaḥ (vikṣiṇakkebhyaḥ, T. S.) namaḥ ānirhatebhyaḥ⁵⁴ | 47. Drāpe andhasaspate daridra (daridran, T. S.) nilalohita | āsām prajñām eśām paśūnām mā bher mā roṣ mo cha naḥ kinchanāmamat | 48 (=R.V. i. 114, 1). 49. Yā te Rudra śivā tanūḥ śivā viśiḍhā bheshajī | śivā rutasya bheshajī tayā no mṛiḍa jīcase | 50 (=R.V. ii. 33, 14⁵⁵). 51. Mīḍhuṣṭama śivatama śivo naḥ sumanāḥ bhava | parame vṛikṣe āyudham nūdhāya kṛittīm vasānāḥ āchāra pinākam bibhṛad āgahi | 52. Vikiridra (vikirīda, T.S.) vilohita namas te astu bhagavaḥ | yā te sahasraṃ hetayo 'nyam asmad nivapantu tāḥ | 53. Sahasraṇī sahasraso (sahasradhā, T. S.) bāhvos (bāhuvoḥ, T. S.) tava hetayaḥ | tāsām īśūno bhagavaḥ parāchīnā mukhā kṛīdhi | 54. Aśankhyātā sahasraṇī (sahasraṇī*

⁵³ The T. S. here adds, *namaḥ ātūryāya cha ālōpyāya cha.*

⁵⁴ The T. S. here adds, *namaḥ ānirhatebhyaḥ.*

⁵⁵ Instead of *māhī gāt*, the concluding words of the first half of the verse, as it stands in the R.V., the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā has *agḥāyeḥ*, "or the malicious." The T. S. introduces here verses corresponding to those in R.V. i. 114, 2, 7, 8, 10; ii. 33, 11, 14.

sahasraśo, T. S.) ye Rudrāḥ adhi bhūmyām | teshāṁ sahasra-yojane ava
 dhanvāni tanmani | 55. Asmin mahaty arṇave antarikṣhe Bhavāḥ adhi |
 teshāṁ ityādi | 56. Nilagrivāḥ śitikanṭhāḥ divaṁ Rudrāḥ upāsritāḥ |
 teshāṁ ityādi | 57. Nilagrivāḥ śitikanṭhāḥ Sarvāḥ adhaḥ kṣhamācharāḥ |
 teshāṁ ityādi | 58. Ye vṛkṣheshu śaṣṭpinjarāḥ nilagrivāḥ vilohitāḥ |
 teshāṁ ityādi | 59. Ye bhūtānām adhipatayo viśikhāsaḥ kapardīnaḥ |
 teshāṁ ityādi | 60. Ye pathām pathirakṣaṣaḥ (pathirakṣayaḥ, T. S.)
 aīlabridāḥ āyuryudhaḥ (yavyudhaḥ, T. S.) | teshāṁ ityādi | 61. Ye
 tīrthāni praacharanti epikāḥastāḥ (epikāvanto, T. S.) nishanginaḥ | teshāṁ
 ityādi | 62. Ye anṇeshu vividhyanti pātreshu pibato janān | teshāṁ ityādi |
 63. Ye etāvantaścha bhūyāṁsaś cha dīśo Rudrāḥ vitasthīre | teshāṁ
 ityādi | 64. Namō 'stu Rudrebhyo ye divi yeshāṁ⁵⁶ varshaṁ iṣavaḥ |
 tebhyo daśa prāchīr daśa dakṣiṇāḥ daśa pratichīr daśa uttichīr daśa
 ūrdhvāḥ | tebhyo mamo astu te no avantu te no mṛḍayantu te yaṁ dvishmo
 yaś cha no dveshīti tam eśhām (vo, T. S.) jambhe dadhmaḥ (dadhāmi, T. S.) |
 65. Namō 'stu Rudrebhyo ye antarikṣhe yeshāṁ vātāḥ iṣavaḥ | tebhyo
 daśa ityādi | 66. Namō 'stu Rudrebhyo ye prithivyāṁ yeshāṁ annam
 iṣavaḥ | tebhyo daśa ityādi |

"Reverence, Rudra, to thy wrath, and to thy arrow. Reverence to both thy arms. 2. Shine upon us, dweller in the mountains, with that blessed body of thine which is auspicious, not terrible,⁵⁷ and which does not betoken harm. 3. The arrow, O dweller in the mountains, which thou bearest in thy hand to discharge, make it, O lord of the mountains, auspicious; do not slay men and cattle. 4. With auspicious words we supplicate thee, dweller in the mountains, that all our men and cattle may be healthy and cheerful. 5. The deliverer, the first divine physician, hath interposed for us. Destroying all serpents, strike down and drive away all Yātudhānīs (female goblins). 6. We deprecate from us the wrath of that auspicious deity who is copper-coloured, ruddy, and brown, and of those Rudras who in thousands surround him on all sides. 7. May he who glides away, blue-necked and red-coloured, and whom cowherds and female drawers of water⁵⁸ have seen,—may he, when seen, be gracious to us. 8. Reverence to the

⁵⁶ The T. S. inserts here the words *annaṁ vāto*.

⁵⁷ Compare the passage quoted from the Mahābhārata, above, p. 204, near the foot.

⁵⁸ "Persons who are destitute of initiation in Vedic rites" (*Yedokta-saṁskāra-ātmāḥ*).—Comm.

blue-necked, to the thousand-eyed, to the bountiful; and to his attendant spirits I offer reverence. 9. Loosen the string from both ends of thy bow; and throw away, O divine being, the arrows which are in thy hand. 10. May the bow of the god with braided hair be stringless, and his quiver contain pointless shafts. His arrows have perished, and his sword-sheath is empty. 11. That shaft, O most bountiful, that bow which is in thy hand, with it, rendered innocuous, do thou protect us on every side. 12. May the shaft from thy bow avoid us in every direction; and deposit thy quiver far from us. 13. Unbending thy bow, O thousand-eyed, and thousand-quivered, and blunting the points of thy arrows, be gracious and kind to us. 14. Reverence to thy violent weapon, unstrung, to both thy arms, and to thy bow. (Verses 15 and 16 correspond nearly with R. V. i. 114, 7, and 8. See above, p. 304.) 17. Reverence to the golden-armed leader of armies, to the lord of the regions, to the green-haired trees, to the lord of beasts,⁵⁹ who is yellow like young grass, to the radiant, to the lord of roads, the yellow-haired, the wearer of the sacrificial cord, to the lord of the full-fed, (18) to the brown-coloured, to the piercer, to the lord of food. Reverence to the weapon of Bhava, to the lord of things moving, to Rudra with the bended bow, to the lord of the fields, to the innoxious charioteer, to the lord of the forests, (19) to the red architect, to the lord of trees, to the being who stretches out the worlds, who affords deliverance, to the lord of plants, to the observant merchant, to the lord of bushes, to the loud-shouting lord of foot-soldiers who causes his foes to shriek, (20) to him who runs in full stretch, to the lord of spirits, to the conqueror, to the piercer, to the lord of armies which wound, to the towering wielder of a sword, to the lord of thieves,⁶⁰ to the robber,

⁵⁹ This, Weber thinks, must originally have meant "the lord of sacrificial victims."

⁶⁰ On this the Commentator has the following apologetic remarks: *Rudro lilayā chorādī-rūpam dhatto | yadvā Rudrasya jagad-ātmakatvāch chorādāyo Rudrāḥ eva dheyūḥ | yadvā stenādī-sarīre jīveśvara-rūpeṇa Rudro dvidhā tiśṭhati | tatra jīva-rūpam stenādī-labda-vachyam | tad īśvara-rudra-rūpam lakṣhayati | yathā śākhā-grām chandrasya lakṣhakam | kim bahunā | lakṣyārtha-vivakṣayā mantreshu laukikāḥ śabdāḥ prayuktāḥ* | "Rudra in sport assumes the forms of thieves and such like persons. Or, since Rudra is the soul of the world, thieves, etc., are to be thought of as being Rudras. Or, Rudra abides in two ways, as life and as lord, in the bodies of thieves, etc. Then his character as life is denoted by the words thieves, etc.; and that points to his character as Rudra the lord, just as the end of a branch points to the moon. But why enlarge further? Common words are employed in the sacred texts to intimate the sense which is pointed to."

to the prowler, to the lord of woods, (21) to the cheater, to the deceiver, to the lord of pilferers, to the bearer of the sword and quiver, to the lord of robbers, to those armed with thunderbolts, to the murderous, to the lord of stealers, to those who carry swords, to those who prowl by night, to the lord of plunderers; (22) to him who wears a turban, who frequents the mountains, to the lord of robbers, to you who have arrows, and to you who have bows, to you with bended bows, and you who fit your arrows on the string, to you who draw the bow, and to you who shoot, (23) to you who discharge, and to you who pierce, to you who sleep and you who wake, to you who lie and you who sit, to you who stand and you who run, (24) to the assemblies, and to you the lords of assemblies, to horses, and to you the lords of horses, to you the hosts which wound and pierce, and to the goddesses who have excellent troops, and who are destructive, (25) to the troops, and to you the lords of troops, to the companies, and to you the lords of companies, to the rogues, and to you the lords of rogues, to you who are ill-formed, and to you who have all forms, (26) to armies, and to you the leaders of armies, to you who ride in chariots, and to you without chariots, to you the chariotcers, and to you the drivers of horses, to you the great, and to you the small, (27) to you the carpenters, and to you the chariot-makers, to you the potters, and to you the blacksmiths, to you the Nishādas, and to you the Punjisthas, to you the leaders of dogs, and to you the huntsmen, (28) to dogs, and to the masters of dogs, to Bhava,⁶¹ and to Rudra, and to Śarva, to Paśupati, to Nilagrīva, and to

⁶¹ Prof. Weber has the following note on verse 28 of his translation of the S'atarudriya in his Indische Studien, ii. 37: "Bhava is variously explained, sometimes as the 'existent,' 'eternal' (*bhavaty eva na kadāchid api na bhavati*), sometimes as the producer of everything (*bhavaty asmin sarvam*), so that according to the latter explanation he is the exact opposite of 'Śarva,' the destroyer: and possibly the term (Bhava) has been formed with the view of propitiating the terrible god by a favourable name. When both words appear in verses 55 and 57 as additional names of the Rudras, they are no doubt transferred to them from their master, since the name Bhava in particular will not apply well to them. According to the S'atap. Br. i. 7, 38 (dating certainly from a period when Rudra had already been identified with Agni), both words (see also Ind. St. i. 132, 140) are appellations of Agni,—Bhava being that which was usual among the Bāhikas, and Śarva the one prevailing among the Prāchīyas (and so among the Kosala-videhas, for example). As we meet with the word Śarva in the well-known passage of the Vendidad, Fargard x., p. 342," (Śaurva in the Zend, see Spiegel's translation, p. 176, and his Commentary, i., p. 285, and Justi's Handbuch s.v.) "we should rather have expected that Śarva would have

Śitikanṭha, (29) to him with the braided hair, and to him with the shaven hair, to him with a thousand eyes, to him with a hundred bows, to the dweller in the mountains, to Sipivishta,⁶² to the most bountiful, to him who has arrows, (30) to the short, and to the dwarf, to the great, and to him who has arrived at a mature age, to the old, to the coetaneous, to the chief, and to the first, (31) to the swift (or pervader), and to the moving, to him who abides in the swift, and in the flowing waters, and to him who dwells in billows, and in tranquil waters, and in rivers, and on islands, (32) to the eldest, and to the youngest, to the first-born, and to the last-born, to the middlemost, to him who is not full-grown, to the lowest, to him who exists at the roots of trees, (33) to him who lives in the magical city Sobha (?), to him who exists in incantations, to him who exists in punishment, and in prosperity, to the renowned, to the endmost, to him who exists in the soil, and in the threshing floor, (34) in the woods and in the bushes, in the form of sound, and in echo, to him who has fleet armies and swift chariots, to the hero, and to the splitter, (35) to the helmeted, to him with cotton-quilted cuirass, with iron mail, and with armour, to him who is renowned and has a renowned army, to him who exists in drums, and in resounding blows, (36) to the impetuous, to the assailant, to the bearer of a sword and a quiver, who carries swift arrows, who wields weapons, and has excellent weapons and a good bow, (37) to him who dwells in pathways, and roads, and rough (or desert) places, and the skirts of mountains, and watercourses, and lakes, and rivers, and ponds, (38) and in wells, and pits, and in bright clouds, and in sunshine, in clouds, in lightning, in rain, in fair weather, (39) in wind, in storm, to the dweller in houses, to the protector of houses, to Soma, and to Rudra, to the copper-coloured, to the ruddy, (40) to the bringer of prosperity, to Paśupati, to the fierce (*ugra*) and the terrible, to him who kills in

been the name current among the Būhikas. It is difficult to decide whether both appellations actually belonged at first to Agni, and not to Rudra. But, generally speaking, the contrary appears to me to be more credible, because in the hymns of the Rīg-veda a peaceful, and not a destructive, character is predominately ascribed to Agni. Further, both words are brought directly into connexion with the lightning in A.V. x. 1. *Bhavāsraṇas asyatām pāpakṛite devahitim.*⁶³ This text is quoted a few pages further on.

⁶² R.V. vii. 99, 7; and vii. 100, 6, above, pp. 86-88, and Appendix on p. 88.

front, and who kills from afar, to the slayer, to the excessive slayer, to the green-haired trees, to the deliverer, (41) to the source of prosperity, to the source of happiness, to the causer of prosperity (*śankarāya*), to the causer of happiness, to the auspicious (*śiva*) and the very auspicious, (42) to him who exists beyond and on this side, to him who crosses over to and fro, to him who exists in fords and river-banks, in young grass, and in foam, (43) who exists in gravel and in streams, in stony ground, and in habitable⁶³ places, to the god with spirally-braided hair, to him with smooth hair,⁶⁴ who exists in barren land, and in frequented roads, (44) among herds, in cow-pens, in beds, in houses, in the heart, in whirlpools (or in hoar-frost), and in rough (or desert) places, who abides in abysses, (45) in dry things and in green things, in dust, in moisture (or dust), in inaccessible places, in creepers, in the earth and deep under the earth. 46. Reverence to the leaf, and to him who is in the fall of the leaf, to the threatener, to the slayer, to the vexer and the afflieter, to you who make arrows and who make bows, to you the sprinklers, to the hearts of the gods,⁶⁵ to the discerners, to the destroyers, and to the indestructible. 47. O thou who chasest away, who art lord of the soma-juice, who art poor,⁶⁶ who art blue and red, do not crush, do not destroy⁶⁷ these [our] offspring, or these cattle, and let nothing of ours be sick. 48 (=R.V. i. 114, 1). 49. That we may live, be gracious to us with that body of thine which is propitious, which is propitious and healing on all days, which is propitious and heals disease. 50 (=R.V. ii. 33, 14. See above, p. 309). 51. Most bountiful, most gracious, be gracious and benevolent to us. Placing thy weapon on the remotest [or, highest] tree, approach, clad in a skin,⁶⁸

⁶³ Or, "in a place with still water."—Comm.

⁶⁴ This is the rendering of Böhlingk and Roth. See Weber's Ind. Stud., ii. 41, note. The Commentator on the Vāj. S. gives the following alternative explanation: *Pulastaye agre tishṭhati pulastih . . . yadvā pūrshu saritreshu astiḥ sattū yaśya ea pulastih sarvāntaryāmī* |

⁶⁵ Agni, Vāyu, and Aditya are meant, according to the Commentator, and the S'atap. Br. ix. 1, 1, 23.

⁶⁶ *Daridra*. The Commentator explains this as meaning "without any connexion with others, from being without a second" (*nishparigraho dvitīyatvāt*). Prof. Roth (Lexicon) proposes to render the word by "roving about," and Prof. Weber by "splitter."

⁶⁷ *Mā bheṣ mā rok*. See Böhlingk and Roth, s.v. *ruj*, where *bheṣ* is said to come from *bhid*, not *bhī*.

⁶⁸ See V. S. 3, 61, above, p. 322.

come, holding thy bow. 52. O deity, who avertest wounds [or, shootest arrows], and art ruddy in hue, reverence be to thee. May thy thousand shafts smite some one else than us. 53. Thousands of thousands of shafts are in thy hands. O god, do thou, the lord, avert their points [from us]. 54. We unbend a thousand leagues (*yojana*) away the bows of those unnumbered thousands of Rudras who are upon the earth. 55. Above this great atmospheric ocean there exist Bhavas. We unbend their bows a thousand leagues away. 56. Rudras with blue necks and white throats occupy the sky. We unbend, etc. 57. Śarvas with blue necks and white throats frequent [the regions] beneath the earth. We unbend, etc. 58. Of those [deities] with a colour like young grass, with blue necks and ruddy hue, who [live] in trees, we unbend, etc. 59. Of those lords of beings who are without locks of hair, and of those whose hair is spirally-braided, we unbend, etc. 60. Of those who are guardians of roads, givers of nourishment, who fight for life, we unbend, etc. 61. Of those who frequent the fords, with weapons in their hands, and swords, we unbend, etc. 62. Of those who pierce, in the midst of their meals, men who are drinking in vessels, we unbend, etc. 63. Of those Rudras who, so many [as we have described] and yet more numerous, occupy the regions, we unbend, etc. 64. Reverence to the Rudras who [live] in the sky,⁶⁹ of whom rain is the arrows. To them [I hold out] ten [fingers] to the east,⁷⁰ ten to the south, ten to the west, ten to the north, and ten upwards. To them be reverence: may they protect us, may they be gracious to us. We consign to their teeth the man whom we hate, and who hates us. 65. Reverence to the Rudras who [live] in the atmosphere, of whom the wind is the arrows. To them [I hold out] ten [fingers], etc., etc. 66. Reverence to the Rudras who [live] upon the earth, of whom food is the arrows. To them [I hold out] ten [fingers], etc., etc."

Many of the epithets in this Śatarudriya are not found in other books; and it is difficult, and perhaps of little importance, to discover their real sense. Others, as the reader will have observed, are of the most fantastic character.

⁶⁹ The T. S. inserts here, "whose food is the wind."

⁷⁰ *Prāgabbhimukhāṅ angulīḥ kurve iti ścahaḥ | . . . aṅjalīm baddhvā sarva-dikṣu namaskaromi |* Comm.

SECT. III.—*Passages relating to Rudra, Bhava, Sarva, etc., from the Atharva-veda.*

A. V. ii. 27, 6.—*Rudra jalāsha-bhoshaja nila-sikhaṇḍa karma-kṛt | prāsam pratiprāso jahi arasāṁ kṛiṇu ośadhē |* “Rudra, who hast healing remedies, who hast dark locks, who art the performer of works, destroy the food of him who seeks to take ours; make it savourless, O plant!”

A. V. iv. 28, 1.—*Bhavā-Sarvau manvo vām asya vittaṁ yayor vām idam pradiśi yad virochate | yāv asyesāthe dvipado yau chatushpadas tau no munchatam aṁhasaḥ |* 2. *yayor abhyadhve uta yad dūre chid yau viditāv ishubbhṛitām asishṭhau | yāv— |* 3. *sahasrākshau vṛitrahāṇā huvo 'haṁ dūregavyūti stuvann emy ugrau | yāv— |* 4. *yāv ārebhāte bahu sākam agre pra ched aśrūshṭam abhibhām janeshu | yāv— |* 5. *yayor vadhād nāpadyate kaśchana antar deveśhūta mūnusheshu | yāv— |* 6. *yaḥ kṛityā-kṛid mūla-kṛid yātudhāno ni tasmīn dhattām vajram ugrau | yāv— |* 7. *adhi no brūtam pritanāsu ugrau saṁ vajrena erijatam yaḥ kimīdī⁷¹ | staumi Bhavā-S'arvau nāthito johavīmi tau no munchatam aṁhasaḥ |*

1. “O Bhava and Sarva, I reverence you; have regard to this (your worshipper), ye under whose control is all this which shines: ye who are lords of this two-footed and four-footed (creation), free us from calamity. 2. Ye to whom belongs all that is near and even all that is remote, who are known as the most skilful shooters among all archers: ye who are lords, etc. (as in v. 1). 3. Ye thousand-eyed slayers of enemies, I invoke you; I go on praising you, ye fierce gods, whose domain extends far and wide: ye who are lords, etc. 4. Ye who, united, performed many (exploits) of old, who manifested ill omens among men: ye who are lords, etc. 5. Ye from whose destroying stroke no one either among gods or men escapes: ye who are lords, etc. 6. Fierce gods, launch your thunderbolt against the Yātudhāna, who practises sorcery, and prepares roots (for that purpose): ye who are lords, etc. 7. Fierce gods, take our side in battles, smite with the thunderbolt him who is a goblin. I praise you, Bhava and Sarva; distressed I again and again invoke you; deliver us from calamity.”

⁷¹ Yaska explains this word thus, Nirukta, vi. 11: *Kim idānim iti charate kim idam kim idam iti vā piśunāya charate |*

A. V. v. 21, 11.—*Yūyam ugrāḥ Marutaḥ Pṛisni-mātaraḥ Indreṇa yujā pra mṛṇita śatrūn | Somo rājā Varuṇo rājā mahādevaḥ uta mṛityur Indrah |* “Do ye, fierce Maruts, whose mother is Pṛisni, allied with Indra, destroy [our] enemies. (May) king Soma, king Varuṇa, and Indra, who is a great god and death, (do the same).” [This verse is from a martial hymn addressed to the Dundubhi or drum, which in verses 4–6 is besought to terrify the poet's enemies, as the sight of a man frightens wild animals, a wolf goats and sheep, and a hawk smaller birds. 4. *Yathā mṛigāḥ saṁvijante āraṇyāḥ puruṣhād adhi |* . . . 5. *Yathā vṛikād ajāvayo dhāvanti bahu bibhyatīḥ |* . . . 6. *Yathā śyenāt patatrīṇaḥ saṁvijante ahar divi. . . .*]

A. V. vi. 93, 1.—*Yamo Mṛityur aghamāro nirritho babhruḥ S'arvo 'stā nīla-śikhandaḥ | deva-janūḥ senayā uttasthivāṁśas to asmākam pari vrinjantu vīrān |* 2. *Manasā homair harasā ghṛiteṇa S'arvāyāstre uta rājne Bhavūya | namasyebhyaḥ namaḥ ebhyaḥ kṛṇomy anyatra asmaḍ aghaviṣhā nayantu |* “May Yama, Death, who brings dire destruction, may the Destroyer, may tawny Sarva the archer with dark locks, may the hosts of the gods, arising with their army, may these avoid our heroes. 2. With mind, with oblations, with fire, with butter, I offer reverence to Sarva the archer, and to king Bhava, to them who deserve reverence; let them carry their deadly poisons to others than us.”

In A. V. vi. 141, 1, Rudra is mentioned along with Vāyu, Tvastṛi, and Indra (*Rudro bhūmno chikitsatu*).

A. V. vii. 87, 1.—*Yo Agnau Rudro yo apsu antar yaḥ ośadhīr virudhaḥ āviveṣa | yaḥ imā viśvā bhuvanāni chūkṛipe tasmai Rudrāya namo asto Agnaye |* “Reverence be to that Rudra, Agni, to the Rudra who is in Agni, who is in the waters, and who has entered into the plants and bushes, and who has formed all these creatures.”

A. V. viii. 2, 7.—. . . *Bhavā-sarvau mṛidataṁ śarma yachhatam apasidhya duritaṁ dhattam āyuh |* “Bhava and Sarva, be gracious, give protection; removing calamity, give life.”⁷²

A. V. viii. 5, 10.—*Asmai manim varma badhnantu devāḥ Indro Viśhnuḥ Savitā Rudro Agniḥ | ityādi |* “May the gods, Indra, Viśhnu, Savitṛi, Rudra, Agni, bind on him the jewel as a protection,” etc.

⁷² See the translation of the entire hymn, in which this half verse occurs, in the fifth volume of this work, p. 446 ff.

A. V. ix. 7, 7.—*Mitrāś cha Varuṇāś cha aṁsau Tvashṭā cha Aryamāś cha doṣhañi Mahādeva bāhū* | “Mitra and Varuṇa are the shoulders, Tvashṭri and Aryaman the fore-arms, and Mahādeva the two arms”

A. V. x. 1, 23.—*Bhavā-sarvāu asyatām pāpa-kṛite kṛityā-kṛite duṣh-kṛite vidyutām deva-hetiṁ* | “Let Bhava and Sarva launch the lightning, the bolt of the gods, against the doer of wickedness, against him who employs sorcery, against the evil doer.” (See Weber's Ind. Studien, ii. 37, note, quoted above in p. 328 f.)

A. V. xi. 2, 1.—*Bhavā-Sarvau mṛīdatam mā 'bhiyātam bhūta-patī paśu-patī namo vām | pratihitām āyatām mā vi srāṣṭam mā no hiṁsi-śṣṭām dvīpado mā chatuspadaḥ* | 2. *Sune kroṣṭre mā śarirūṇi kartam aliklavobhyo grīdhrebhyo ye cha kṛishnāḥ avishyavaḥ | makṣhikās te Paśu-pate vayāṁsi te vighase mā vidanta* | 3. *Krandāya te prānāya yās cha te Bhava ropayaḥ | namas te Rudra kṛinmaḥ sahasrākṣhāya amartya* | 4. *Purastāt te namaḥ kṛinmaḥ uttarād adharād uta | abhivargād divas pari antarikṣhāya te namaḥ* | 5. *Mukhāya te Paśupate yāni chakṣhūṁśhi te Bhava | tvache rūpāya saṁdṛiṣe pratichīnāya te namaḥ* | 6. *Angobhyas te udarāya jīhvāyai āsyāya te | dadbhyo gandhāya te namaḥ* | 7. *Astrū nīla-śikhaṇḍena sahasrākṣheṇa vūjinā | Rudreṇārdhaka-ghātīnā tena mā samarāmahi* | 8. *Sa no Bhavaḥ pari vṛinaktu viśvataḥ āpaḥ⁷³ ivāgniḥ pari vṛinaktu no Bhavaḥ | mā no 'bhi māṁśata namo astv asmai* | 9. *Chatur namo aṣṭakṛitvo Bhavāya daśa kṛitvaḥ Paśupate namas te | tavame paṇ-cha paśavo vibhaktāḥ gāvo aśvāḥ puruṣhāḥ ajāvayaḥ* | 10. *Tava chatasraḥ pradīśas tava dyaus tava prithivī tavedam ugroro antarikṣham | tavedaṁ sarvām ātmanvad yat prānat prithivīm anu* | 11. *Uruḥ kośo vasudhānas tavāyaṁ yasminn imā viśvā bhuvanāny antaḥ | sa no mṛīda Paśupate namas te paraḥ kroṣṭāro abhibhūḥ śvānaḥ paro yantu agharūdo vikṣyaḥ* | 12. *Dhanur bibharshi haritaṁ hiraṇyayaṁ sahasra-ghniṁ śata-vadhaṁ śikhaṇḍin | Rudrasyeshuś charati deva-hetiṁ tasyai namo yatamasyām dīśtāḥ* | 13. *Yo 'bhiyāto nilayate tvām Rudra nichikīrṣhati | paśchād anu prayunkṣhe taṁ viddhasya pada-nīr iva* | 14. *Bhavā-rudrau sayujā saṁvidānāv ubhāv ugrau charato vīryāya | tābhyām namo yatamasyām dīśtāḥ* | 15. *Namas te astv āyate namo astu parāyate | namas te Rudra tiṣṭhate āśtāyola te namaḥ* | 16. *Namaḥ sūyaṁ namaḥ prātar namo rātryā namo divā | Bhavāya cha Sarvāya cha ubhābhyām akaraṁ namaḥ* |

⁷³ In Böhrtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, vol. v., p. 1003, several passages are quoted where *āpaḥ* (with a long *ā* in the first syllable) occurs as an accusative plural.

17. *Sahasrūkṣham atipaśyam purastād Rudram asyantam bahudhā vipaś-
chitam | mā upārāma jihvayā iyamānam |* 18. *S'yāvāsvaṁ kṛishṇam asi-
tam mṛiṇantam bhīmaṁ ratham keśiṇaḥ pādayantam | pūrve pratīmo
namo astu asmai |* 19. *Mā no 'bhi srāḥ matyaṁ deva-hetim mā naḥ kru-
dhaḥ Paśupate namas te | anyatra asmad divyāṁ sūkhāṁ vi dhānu |*
20. *Mā no hīṁsīr adhi no brūhi pari no vṛindhi mā krudhaḥ | ma tvayā
samarāmaḥ |* 21. *Mā no goshu purusheshu mā grīdho no ajāvishu |
anyatrogra vi vartaya piyārūṇūm prajāṁ jahi |* 22. *Yasya takmā
kāsikā hetir ekam āsvasyeva vṛishanaḥ krandaḥ eti | abhipūrvaṁ nirṇayate
namo astu asmai |* 23. *Yo antarikshe tishṭhati viṣṭabhito ayajvanāḥ
pramṛiṇan deva-pīyūn | tasmai namo dasabhiḥ śakvarībhiḥ |* 24. *Tubhyam
āraṇyāḥ paśavo mṛigāḥ vane hitūḥ haṁsāḥ suparnāḥ śakunāḥ vayāṁsi |
tava yakṣham Paśupate apsv antas tubhyaṁ kṣharanti divyāḥ āpo vṛidhe |*
25. *Siṁsumārāḥ ajagarāḥ purikayāḥ jashāḥ matsyūḥ rajasūḥ yebhyo
asyasi | na te dāraṁ na pariśṭhā 'sti te Bhava sadyaḥ sarvām pari-
paśyasi bhūmim pūrvasmād haṁsy uttarasmin samudre |* 26. *Mā no
Rudra takmanū mā viṣeṇa mā naḥ saṁ srāḥ divyenāgninā | any-
atrāsmad vidyutam pūtayaitūm |* 27. *Bhavo divo Bhavaḥ īse pṛithivyāḥ
Bhavaḥ ā papre uru antarikṣham | tasyai namo yatamasyūṁ dīśitāḥ |*
28. *Bhava rājan yajamānāya mṛiḍa paśūnāṁ hi paśupatir babhū-
tha | yaḥ śraddadhāti santi devāḥ iti chatuṣpade dvipade asya mṛiḍa |*
29 (= R.V. i. 114, 7). *Mā no mahāntam uta mā no arbhakam mā
no vahanam uta mā no vakshyataḥ | mā no hīṁsīḥ pitaram mātaram
cha svām tanvaṁ Rudra mā ririsho naḥ |* 30. *Rudrasya ilāba-kārebhyo
'saṁsūkta-gilebhyāḥ | idam mahāsyebhyāḥ ścabhyo akaraṁ namaḥ |*
31. *Namas te ghoshinībhyo namas te keśinībhyāḥ | namo namaskṛitābhyo
namaḥ sambhūjātībhyāḥ | namas te deva senābhyāḥ svasti no abhayaṁ
cha naḥ |*

1. "Bhava and Sarva, be gracious to us, be not hostile, lords of spirits, lords of beasts [see v. 9]; reverence to you twain. Discharge not a long arrow; destroy not our bipeds and quadrupeds. 2. Abandon not our bodies to the dog or the jackal, to carrion birds, to vultures, to thy greedy black flies, lord of beasts; let not thy birds get us to devour. 3. We offer reverence to thy shout, to thy breath, and to thy arrows, Bhava, and, O immortal Rudra, to thee, the thousand-eyed. 4. We offer reverence to thee from before, and from above, and from below, and from thy domain in the sky: reverence to thy firmament.

5. Reverence to thy face, Paśupati, to thine eyes, Bhava, to thy skin, to thy form, to thine aspect from behind. 6. Reverence to thy limbs, to thy belly, to thy tongue, to thy mouth, to thy teeth, to thy odour (nose?). 7. May we never contend with that archer whose locks are dark, who has a thousand eyes, the warrior, with Rudra the slayer of Ardhaka.⁷⁴ 8. May he (Bhava) everywhere avoid us, may Bhava avoid us as fire avoids the waters. May he not bear malice towards us: reverence be to him. 9. Four times, eight times, be reverence to Bhava: ten times be reverence to thee, Paśupati. Thine are these five distinct sorts of animals—kine, horses, men, goats, and sheep. 10. Thine, Ugra [or fierce god], are the four regions, the sky, the earth, and the wide atmosphere; thine is everything which has a spirit and which breathes upon the earth. 11. This is a vast and wealthy storehouse of thine, within which all these beings are contained. Do thou favour us, Paśupati; reverence be to thee. Far from us be jackals, unlucky omens, dogs: may shrieking female demons with dishevelled hair go far from us. 12. Long-haired god, thou carriest a yellow and golden bow, [a weapon] which smites thousands and kills hundreds. Rudra's arrow, a celestial bolt, flies abroad: reverence be to it in whatever direction from hence [it flies]. 13. Thou pursuest after the adversary who lurks and seeks to overcome thee, Rudra, as a man tracking the steps⁷⁵ of a wounded [animal]. 14. Bhava and Rudra, who are always united and concordant, both fierce, ye advance to [deeds of] heroism. Reverence be to them twain in whatever direction they are from hence. 15. Reverence to thee coming, and to thee departing; reverence to thee, Rudra, standing, and to thee sitting. 16. Reverence in the evening, in the morning, by night and by day: I have offered reverence to Bhava, and to Śarva, both of them. 17. Let us not with our tongue offend Rudra, who rushes on, thousand-eyed, viewing all the world, who hurls his shafts in our presence, and who is manifoldly wise. 18. We approach first [with our worship] the god who has brown horses, is dark, black, destroying, terrible, who casts down the car of Keśin (the long-haired being)⁷⁶: reverence be to him. 19. Do

⁷⁴ Rudra is elsewhere said to be the slayer of Ardhaka or Antaka. See Rāmāyaṇa, Aranya Kāṇḍa 30, 27, which is quoted in the Appendix.

⁷⁵ Messrs. Böhtlingk and Roth assign to *pada-nī* the sense of "guide."

⁷⁶ Böhtlingk and Roth make *keśin* an epithet of Rudra: see *s.v.*

not hurl at us thy club,⁷⁷ thy celestial bolt: be not incensed at us, Paśupati; reverence be to thee. Brandish thy celestial weapon⁷⁸ over some other than us. 20. Slay us not; interpose for us; avoid us; be not angry with us; let us not contend with thee. 21. Do not covet our cattle, our men, our goats, and sheep. Fierce god, betake thyself [or, turn thy chariot] elsewhere; slay the offspring of the malignant. 22. Reverence be to him whose consumption, whose cough, whose bolt assails some one like the neighing of a stallion—to him who carries away [his victims?] in order. 23. Be reverence paid with ten śakvari verses to him who abides fixed in the atmosphere, smiting the despisers of the gods who offer no sacrifice. 24. For thee the beasts of the wood, deer, swans, and various well-winged birds⁷⁹ are placed in the forest; thy living creatures, Paśupati, exist in the waters: to delight thee the celestial waters flow. 25. (There exist) poŋpoises, great serpents, puri-kayas, sea-monsters, fishes, rajasas,⁸⁰ at which thou shootest. There is to thee, Bhava, nothing far, nor anything which stands [near] around thee. At a glance thou lookest around the whole earth: from the eastern thou slayest in the northern ocean. 26. Do not assail us, Rudra, with consumption, or with poison, or with celestial fire: cause this lightning to descend elsewhere than upon us. 27. Bhava rules the sky, Bhava rules the earth, Bhava hath filled⁸¹ the vast atmosphere: reverence be to him in whatever direction from hence [he is]. 28. Bhava, king, be gracious to thy worshipper, for thou art lord of beasts. Be gracious to the quadrupeds and bipeds of him who believes that the gods exist.⁸² 29 (=R.V. i. 114, 7). Slay neither our great nor our small, neither him who is growing nor those who are to grow,⁸³

⁷⁷ A. V. viii. 8, 11.—*Triṇḍīḥ enān matyam Bhavasya* | “May the club of Bhava crush them.”

⁷⁸ The word in the original is *śākhā*, “branch.”

⁷⁹ In the original, *suparnāḥ śakunāḥ vayāmsi*.

⁸⁰ B. and R. say this word perhaps means “unclean.”

⁸¹ Compare R.V. i. 52, 13, p. 99, above; and the other passages quoted in note 73 on the same page.

⁸² Compare R.V. viii. 89, 3, 4, quoted in the third volume of this work, p. 254.

⁸³ Compare R.V. i. 114, 7, and T. S. iv. 6, 10, 2, p. 303, above. In Professor Wilson's Dictionary I find the sense of “growing” assigned to the root *vah*, when conjugated in the *ātmane pada* with a nasal, *vaṁhate*. He says, however, that in this sense the root is more properly *bañ*, *bañhate*. If the verb be so understood in this passage, the meaning will be the same as that which, on the authority of Messrs. Böhtlingk and Roth, I have adopted in the parallel text of the Rīgveda.

neither our father nor our mother: injure not, Rudra, ourselves. 30. I have offered this reverence to Rudra's wide-mouthed howling dogs who swallow their prey unchewed. 31. Reverence, O deity, to thy shouting, long-haired, revered, devouring hosts. May blessing and security be ours."

A. V. xi. 6, 9.—*Bhavā-śarvāv idam brūmo Rudram Paśupatiś cha yaḥ | iśhūr yāḥ eśhām saṁvidma tāḥ naḥ santu sadā śivāḥ* | "We say this to Bhava and Sarva, to Rudra and to him who is Paśupati: may those arrows of theirs which we know be always propitious to us."

A. V. xii. 4, 17.—*Yaḥ enām avasām āha devānām nihitam nidhim | ubhau tasmai Bhavā-śarvau parikramyeshum asyataḥ* | "Both Bhava and Sarva advancing, discharge an arrow against him who declares this [cow], the hoarded treasure of the gods, to be no cow."

A. V. xiii. 4, 4.—*So 'ryāmā sa Varuṇaḥ sa Rudraḥ sa Mahādevaḥ* | 26. *Sa Rudro vasuvānir vasudeye namorāke vashaṭkāro 'nu saṁhitaḥ* | 27. *Tasyeme sarve yātavaḥ upa praśisham āsate* | 28. *Tasyāmū sarvā nakshatrā vaśe chandramasū saha* | "4. He (Savitrī) is Aryaman, he is Varuṇa, he is Rudra, he is Mahādeva. 26. He, Rudra, the giver of wealth, is placed as the 'vashaṭkāra' in the reverential invocation, at the giving of wealth. 27. All these demons wait upon his command. 28. All these stars, with the moon, are under his control."

The following passage, together with the rest of the fifteenth book of the Atharva-veda, is quoted and translated by Prof. Aufrecht in the first vol. of Weber's *Indische Studien*, pp. 121-140:

A. V. xv. 5, 1.—*Tasmai prāchyāḥ diśo antar-deśād Bhavam ishvāsam anuśṭhātāram akurvan* | *Bhavaḥ enam ishvāsaḥ prāchyāḥ diśo antar-deśād anuśṭhātā 'nutishṭhati* | *nainam Sarvo na Bhavo na Īśāno na asya paśūn na samānān kinasti yaḥ evam veda* | 2. *Tasmai dakṣiṇāyāḥ diśo antardeśāc ohharvam ishvāsam ityādi* | 3. *Tasmai pratichyāḥ diśo antar-deśāt Paśupatim ityādi* | 4. *Tasmai udichyāḥ diśo antar-deśād ugraṁ devam ityādi* | 5. *Tasmai dhruvāyāḥ diśo antar-deśād Rudram ityādi* | 6. *Tasmai ardhrvāyāḥ diśo antar-deśād Mahādevam ityādi* | 7. *Tasmai sarvebhyo antar-deśebhyāḥ Īśānam ityādi* | "[The gods] made Bhava the archer [to be] to him (the Vṛātya) a deliverer from the intermediate space of the eastern region. Bhava the archer, a deliverer, delivers him from the interval of the eastern region. Neither Sarva nor Bhava, nor Īśāna saves either him who knows this, or his cattle, or his kindred.

2. [The gods] made Sarva the archer [to be] his deliverer from the intermediate space of the southern region, etc. 3. [The gods] made Paśupati the archer [to be] his deliverer from the intermediate space of the western region, etc. 4. [The gods] made the god Ugra, etc. (as above), of the northern region, etc. 5. [The gods] made Rudra, etc. (as above), of the lower region, etc. 6. [The gods] made Mahādeva, etc. (as above), of the upper region, etc. 7. [The gods] made Īśāna the archer [to be] his deliverer from all the intermediate regions," etc.

SECT. IV.—*Passages relating to Rudra from the Śatapatha and Sāṃhāyana Brāhmaṇas.*

In the following text (which has been already quoted in the second volume of this work, p. 202) Rudra is identified with Agni:

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, i. 7, 3, 8.—*Agnir vai sa devaḥ tasya etāni nāmāni Sarvaḥ iti yathā prāchyāḥ āchakshate Bhavaḥ iti yathā Bāhikāḥ Paśunām patiḥ Rudro 'gnir iti | tāny asya aśāntāny eva itarāṇi nāmāni | Agnir ity eva śāntatamam |* "Agni is a god. Those are his names: Sarva, as the eastern people call him,⁸³ Bhava, as the Bāhikas, Paśunāmpati (lord of beasts), Rudra, and Agni. These other names of his (i.e. all the foregoing except Agni) are ungentle. Agni is his gentlest appellation."⁸⁴

The following passage describes the birth of Rudra, and at the same time identifies him with Agni:

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, 6, 1, 3, 7 ff.—*Abhūd vai iyam pratishṭhā iti | tad bhumir abhavat | tām aprathayat sā prithivy abhavat | tasyām asyām pratishṭhāyām bhūtāni bhūtānācha patiḥ saṃvatsarāya adikshanta | bhūtānām patir griha-patir āsīt Ushāḥ patnī | 8. Tad yāni tāni bhūtāni ritavas to | atha yaḥ sa bhūtānām patiḥ saṃvatsaraḥ saḥ | atha yā sā Ushāḥ patny aushasi sā | tāni imāni bhūtāni cha bhūtānācha patiḥ saṃvatsaraḥ Ushasi reto 'sinchan | sa saṃvatsaro kumāro 'jāyata | so 'rodit | 9. Tam Prajāpatir abravīt "kumāra kiṃ rodishi yach chhramāt*

⁸³ On this the commentator remarks (p. 124 of Weber's edition): *Prāchyādi-deśa-bhedeṇa 'Sarvādi-nāma-bhede 'pi devatā ekā eva |* "Though, owing to the difference of countries, there is a difference of names, as Sarva, etc., still the god is but one."

⁸⁴ See the note translated from Weber's *Indische Studien* above in p. 328.

tapaso 'dhi jāto 'si" iti | so 'bravīd "anapahata-pāpmā vai asmy ahita-
 nāmā nāma me dhoḥi" iti | tasmāt putrasya jātasya nāma kuryāt pāpmā-
 mam eva asya tad apahanty api doṣṭiyam api tṛiṭṭiyam abhipūrvam eva asya
 tat pāpmānam apahanti | 10. Tam abravīd Rudro 'si iti | tad yad asya
 tan nāma akarod Agnis tad-rūpam abhavat | Agnir vai Rudraḥ | yad arodit
 tasmād Rudraḥ | so 'bravīj "jyāyān vai asato 'smi dhoḥy eva me nāma"
 iti | 11. Tam abravīt "Sarvo 'si" iti | tad yad asya tan nāma akarod
 āpas tad-rūpam abhavan | āpo vai Sarvaḥ | adbhyo hi idaṁ sarvaṁ jāyate |
 so 'bravīj "jyāyān vai asato 'smi dhoḥy eva me nāma" iti | 12. Tam abravīt
 Paśupatiḥ asi iti | tad yad asya tan nāma akarod ośadhāyāś tad-rūpam
 abhavan | ośadhāyo vai Paśupatis tasmād yadā paśavaḥ ośadhīr labhante
 'iḥa patiyanti | so 'bravīj "jyāyān vai asato 'smi dhoḥy eva me nāma"
 iti | 13. Tam abravīd Ugro 'si iti | tad yad asya tan nāma akarod Vāyus
 tad-rūpam abhavat | Vāyur vai Ugras tasmād yadā balavad vāty "Ugro
 vāti" ity āhuḥ | so 'bravīj "jyāyān vai asato 'smi dhoḥy eva me nāma" iti |
 14. Tam abravīd "Āsanir asi" iti | tad yad asya tan nāma akarot vidyut
 tad-rūpam abhavat | vidyud vai Āsanis tasmād yaṁ vidyud hanti "Āsanir
 abadhīd" ity āhuḥ | so 'bravīj "jyāyān vai asato 'smi dhoḥy eva me nāma"
 iti | 15. Tam abravīd "Bhavo 'si" iti | tad yad asya tan nāma akarot Par-
 janyas tad-rūpam abhavat | Parjanya vai Bhavaḥ | Parjanyaḥ hi idaṁ sar-
 vam bhavati | so 'bravīd "jyāyān vai asato 'smi dhoḥy eva me nāma" iti |
 16. Tam abravīd "Mahān devo 'si" iti | tad yad asya tan nāma akarod
 chandramās tad-rūpam abhavat | Prajāpatiḥ vai chandramāḥ Prajāpatiḥ
 vai mahān devaḥ | so 'bravīj "jyāyān vai asato 'smi dhoḥy eva me nāma"
 iti | 17. Tam abravīd "Īśāno 'si" iti | tad yad asya tan nāma akarod
 Ādityas tad-rūpam abhavat | Ādityo vai Īśānaḥ Ādityo hy asya sarvasya
 īhṣe | so 'bravīd "etāvān vai asmi mā mā itaḥ paro nāma dhāḥ" iti |
 18. Tūny etāny ashtāo Agni-rūpāṇi Kumāro navamaḥ | sā eva Agnes tri-
 vṛittā | 19. Yad vai iva ashtāo Agni-rūpāṇy ashtākṣharā gāyatrī tasmād
 āhur "gāyatro 'gnir" iti | so 'yaṁ kumāro rūpāṇy anuprāviśat | na vai
 Agniṁ kumāram iva paśyanty etāny eva asya rūpāṇi paśyanty etāni hi
 rūpāṇi prāviśat |

"This foundation existed. It became the earth (bhūmi). He ex-
 tended it (apṛathayat). It became the broad one (prithivī). On this
 foundation beings, and the lord of beings, consecrated themselves for
 the year (samvatsara). The lord of beings was a householder, and
 Ushas was his wife. 8. Now these 'beings' were the seasons. That

'lord of beings' was the Year. That wife Ushas was Aushasī (the daughter of the dawn).⁸⁵ Then both those beings, and that lord of beings, the Year, impregnated Ushas, and a boy (*Kumāra*)⁸⁶ was born in a year. The boy wept. 9. Prajāpati said to him, 'Boy, why dost thou weep, since thou hast been born after toil and austerity?' The boy said, 'My evil indeed has not been taken away, and a name has not been given to me. Give me a name.' Wherefore when a son has been born [to any man], let a name be given to him; that takes away his evil; and [let] also a second and a third [name be given] in succession: that takes away his evil. 10. Prajāpati said to him, 'Thou art Rudra.' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Agni became his form, for Rudra is Agni. He was Rudra because he wept (*arodīt* from *rud*, 'to weep').⁸⁷ The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 11. Prajāpati replied, 'Thou art Sarva.'⁸⁸ Inasmuch as he gave him that name, the waters became his form, for Sarva (All) is the waters, because all this is produced from the waters (see above, p. 24 f.). The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 12. Prajāpati replied, 'Thou art Paśupati.' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, the Plants became his form, for Paśupati is the Plants. Hence, when beasts obtain plants, they become lords (or strong). The boy said,

⁸⁵ I am unable to explain how Ushas, the dawn, is identified with her own offspring, Aushasī; or how the 'lord of beings' = the Year, consecrated himself for the year.

⁸⁶ The name *Kumāra*, Weber remarks (*Indische Studien*, ii. 302, 395), is applied to Agni in Rig-veda, v. 2, 1.

⁸⁷ See the end of note 9, p. 303, above. A story like the one there given will be found in Taitt. Saṁh. i. 5, 1, 1:—*Devāsuraḥ saṁyattūḥ āsan | te devāḥ vijayam upayanto 'gnau vāmān vasa samnyajadhata "idaṁ u no bhaviṣhyati yadi no jeshyanti" iti | tad Agnir nyakāmaya | tena apākrāmat | tad devūḥ vijitya avarurutsamānūḥ anvāyan | tad asya sahasā āditsanta | so 'rodīt | yad arodīt tad Rudrasya Rudratvam* | "The gods and Asuras engaged in battle. The gods, conquering, deposited valuable property with Agni, saying, 'If they should ever conquer us, we shall have this.' Agni desired the property; and went off with it. The gods, after being victorious, went after him to recover their goods, which they sought to take from him by force. He wept. From his weeping Rudra gets his character of Rudra."

⁸⁸ The origin of this name may perhaps be found in Rig-veda, x. 61, 19, where these words occur: *Iyam me nābhīr iha me sadhastham ime me devūḥ ayam aśmi Sarvaḥ | dvijāḥ aha prathama-jāḥ ṛitasya idaṁ dhenur aduhaj jāyamānā* | "This is my centre, here is my abode, these are my gods, this is I, Sarva (All). The twice-born men are the firstborn of the sacred rite. This the cow milked out, when she was being born."

'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name. 13. Prajāpati said to him, 'Thou art Ugra.' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Vāyu (the Wind) became his form. For Ugra (or the 'Fierce') is Vāyu. Wherefore when it blows strongly, men say, 'Ugra blows.' The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 14. Prajāpati said to him, 'Thou art Aśani.' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Vidyut (Lightning) became his form. For Aśani is Lightning. Hence they say that Aśani has struck a man whom lightning strikes. The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 15. Prajāpati said to him, 'Thou art Bhava.' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Parjanya (the god of rain) became his form. For Bhava (Being) is Parjanya; because all this [universe] springs (*bhavati*) from Parjanya. The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 16. Prajāpati replied, 'Thou art Mahādevaḥ (the 'Great god').' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Chandramas (the Moon) became his form. For the Moon is Prajāpati: the 'Great god' is Prajāpati. The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 17. Prajāpati replied, 'Thou art Īśāna (the ruler).' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Āditya (the Sun) became his form. For Īśāna is the Sun, because he rules (*iśkte*) over this universe. The boy said, 'I am so much: do not give me any further name.' 18. These are the eight forms of Agni. Kumāra (the boy, see above, para. 8 in the preceding page) is the ninth. This is the threefoldness (*trirīttā*) of Agni. 19. Since there are, as it were, eight forms of Agni, [and] the gāyatrī metre has eight syllables, men say, 'Agni pertains to the gāyatrī.'⁶⁰ This boy (Kumāra) entered into the forms. Men do not see Agni as a boy; it is these forms of his that they see; for he entered into these forms."

This passage appears to be the original from which the story of the birth of Rudra in the Purāṇas is borrowed. That legend, as given in the Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa (in nearly the same words as in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa), is as follows:

⁶⁰ The same words occur in the Taitt. S. ii. 2, 5, 5; and the Taitt. Br. i. 1, 5, 3. The Commentator on the latter passage says: *Agner mukha-jatvena gāyatrī-sambandhitvam* | "Agni's connexion with the Gāyatrī arises from his having sprung from the mouth."

Mārķ. Pur. Sect. 52, 2 ff.—*Kalpāday ātmanas tulyaṁ sūtam pradyāyataḥ prabhōḥ* | 3. *Prādur-āsīt athāṅke 'sya kumāro nīla-lohitāḥ* | *ruroda suscaraṁ so 'tha dravaṁś cha dvija-sattama* | *kiṁ rodishīti tam Brahmā rudantam pratyuvācha ha* | *nāma dehīti taṁ so 'tha pratyuvācha jagat-patim* | *Rudras tvaṁ deva nāmnā 'si mā rodīr dhairyam āvaha* | *evam uktas tataḥ so 'tha sapta-kṛitvo ruroda ha* | *tato 'nyāni dadau tasmai sapta nāmāni vai prabhūḥ* | *sīhānāni chaishāṁ aśhṭānām patnīḥ putrāṁś cha vai dvija* | *Bhavaṁ Sarvaṁ tatheśānaṁ tathā Paśupatiṁ prabhūḥ* | *Bhīmam Ugram Mahādevam uvācha sa Pitāmahaḥ* |

"When, at the beginning of the kalpa, the lord (i.e. Brahmā) was meditating on a son similar to himself, there was manifested in his lap a boy of a blue and red colour, (3) who then wept loudly, running about. Brahmā said to him when he was weeping, 'Why dost thou weep?' He answered the lord of the world, 'Give me a name.' [Brahmā rejoined], 'Thou, O deity, art called Rudra; do not weep; be patient.' Being thus addressed, [the boy] wept again seven times. Then the lord gave him seven other names, and the places of these eight, and wives and sons. The Progenitor (Brahmā) called him [besides Rudra] Bhava, Sarva, Īśāna, Paśupati, Bhīma, Ugra, Mahādeva."

These names (except Bhīma, which is substituted for Aśāni) are the same as those in the Brāhmaṇa. The same legend is given in a somewhat different form in the Sāṅkhāyana or Kaushītakī Brāhmaṇa, and an abstract of that passage is furnished by Prof. Weber in his *Indische Studien*, ii. 300 ff. For the text of the passage I am indebted to Prof. Aufrecht, who copied it from the MS. of the Sāṅkhāyana in the Bodleian Library at Oxford.

Sāṅkhāyana Brāhmaṇa, vi. i. etc.—*Prajāpatih prajāti-kāmas tapo 'tapyata* | *tasmāt taptāt pancha ajāyanta Agnir Vāyur Adityas Chandra-māḥ Ushāḥ panchamī* | *tān abravīt "yūyam api tapyadhvam"* | *te 'dikshanta* | *tān dikshitāṁś tepānān Ushāḥ prajāpatyā 'psaro-rūpaṁ kṛtvā purastāt pratyudait* | *tasyām eśhām manaḥ samapatat* | *te reto 'sinchanta* | *To prajāpatim pītarām etya abruvan "reto vai asichāmahai idam no mā amuyā bhūd"* | *iti* | *sa prajāpatir hiraṇmayāṁ chamasam akarod iśhu-mātram ūrdhvam evam tiryancham* | *tasmīn retaḥ samasinchat* | *tataḥ udatishṭhat sahasrākshaḥ sahasrapāt sahasrēṇa pratihitābhīḥ* | 2. *Sa prajāpatim pītarām abhyāyachhat* | *tam abravīt "kathā mā 'bhyā-*

'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name. 13. Prajāpati said to him, 'Thou art Ugra.' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Vāyu (the Wind) became his form. For Ugra (or the 'Fierce') is Vāyu. Wherefore when it blows strongly, men say, 'Ugra blows.' The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 14. Prajāpati said to him, 'Thou art Aśani.' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Vidyut (Lightning) became his form. For Aśani is Lightning. Hence they say that Aśani has struck a man whom lightning strikes. The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 15. Prajāpati said to him, 'Thou art Bhava.' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Parjanya (the god of rain) became his form. For Bhava (Being) is Parjanya; because all this [universe] springs (*bharati*) from Parjanya. The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 16. Prajāpati replied, 'Thou art Mahādevaḥ (the 'Great god').' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Chandramas (the Moon) became his form. For the Moon is Prajāpati: the 'Great god' is Prajāpati. The boy said, 'I am greater than one who does not exist: give me a name.' 17. Prajāpati replied, 'Thou art Īśāna (the ruler).' Inasmuch as he gave him that name, Āditya (the Sun) became his form. For Īśāna is the Sun, because he rules (*īśhṛṣṭe*) over this universe. The boy said, 'I am so much: do not give me any further name.' 18. These are the eight forms of Agni. Kumāra (the boy, see above, para. 8 in the preceding page) is the ninth. This is the threefoldness (*trivṛttā*) of Agni. 19. Since there are, as it were, eight forms of Agni, [and] the gāyatrī metre has eight syllables, men say, 'Agni pertains to the gāyatrī.'⁸⁹ This boy (Kumāra) entered into the forms. Men do not see Agni as a boy; it is these forms of his that they see; for he entered into these forms."

This passage appears to be the original from which the story of the birth of Rudra in the Purāṇas is borrowed. That legend, as given in the Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa (in nearly the same words as in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa), is as follows:

⁸⁹ The same words occur in the Taitt. S. ii. 2, 5, 5; and the Taitt. Br. i. 1, 5, 3. The Commentator on the latter passage says: *Agner mukha-jatvena gāyatrī-sambandhi-
tvam* | "Agni's connexion with the Gāyatrī arises from his having sprung from the mouth."

Mārk. Pur. Sect. 52, 2 ff.—*Kalpādāv ātmanas tulyaṁ sutam pradhyaṃyataḥ prabhoḥ* | 3. *Prādur-āsīd athānke 'sya kumāro nīla-lohitaḥ* | *ruroda suscaraṁ so 'tha dravaṁś cha dvija-sattama* | *kiṁ rodishīti tam Brahmā rudantam pratyuvācha ha* | *nāma dehīti taṁ so 'tha pratyuvācha jagat-patim* | *Rudras tvaṁ deva nāmnā 'si mā rodīr dhairyaṁ āvaha* | *evam uktas tataḥ so 'tha sapta-kṛitvo ruroda ha* | *tato 'nyāni dadau tasmai sapta nāmāni vai prabhuḥ* | *sīhānāni chaishāṁ aśhṭānāṁ patnīḥ putrāṁś cha vai dvija* | *Bhavaṁ Sarvaṁ tatheśānaṁ tathā Puśupatiṁ prabhuḥ* | *Bhīmam Ugram Mahādevam uvācha sa Pitāmahaḥ* |

“When, at the beginning of the kalpa, the lord (i.e. Brahmā) was meditating on a son similar to himself, there was manifested in his lap a boy of a blue and red colour, (3) who then wept loudly, running about. Brahmā said to him when he was weeping, ‘Why dost thou weep?’ He answered the lord of the world, ‘Give me a name.’ [Brahmā rejoined], ‘Thou, O deity, art called Rudra; do not weep; be patient.’ Being thus addressed, [the boy] wept again seven times. Then the lord gave him seven other names, and the places of these eight, and wives and sons. The Progenitor (Brahmā) called him [besides Rudra] Bhava, Sarva, Īśāna, Puśupati, Bhīma, Ugra, Mahādeva.”

These names (except Bhīma, which is substituted for Āśani) are the same as those in the Brāhmaṇa. The same legend is given in a somewhat different form in the Sāṅkhāyana or Kaushītaki Brāhmaṇa, and an abstract of that passage is furnished by Prof. Weber in his *Indische Studien*, ii. 300 ff. For the text of the passage I am indebted to Prof. Aufrecht, who copied it from the MS. of the Sāṅkhāyana in the Bodleian Library at Oxford.

Sāṅkhāyana Brāhmaṇa, vi. i. etc.—*Prajāpatih prajāti-kāmas tapo 'tapyata* | *tasmāt taptāt pancha ajāyanta Agnir Vāyur Ādityas Chandra-māḥ Ushāḥ panchamī* | *tān abravīd “yūyam api tapyadhvam”* | *te 'dikshanta* | *tān dikshitāṁś tepānān Ushāḥ prajāpatyā 'psaro-rūpaṁ kṛtvā purastāt pratyudait* | *tasyām eśhām manaḥ samapatat* | *te reto 'sinehanta* | *Tv prajāpatim pitaram etya abruvan “reto cai asiehāmahai idam no mā amuyā bhūd”* | *iti* | *sa prajāpatir hiraṇmayaṁ chamasam akarod ishū-mātram ūrdhvam evam tiryancham* | *tasmīn retāḥ samasinehat* | *tataḥ udatisīkṣhat sahasrākṣaḥ sahasrapūt sahasrāṇa pratikṣitābhīḥ* | 2. *Sa prajāpatim pitaram abhyāyachhat* | *tam abravīt “kathā mā 'bhyā-*

yaohhasi" iti | "nāma me kuru" ity abravīn "na vai idam avihitena nāmnā annam atsyāmi" iti | "sa vai tvam" ity abravīd "Bhavaḥ eva" iti yad Bhavaḥ āpas | tena na ha vai evam Bhavo hinasti na asya prajāñ na asya paśūn na asya bruvāṇaṁ dhana | atha yaḥ enaṁ dveshṭi sa eva pāpīyān dhavati | na sa yaḥ evaṁ veda | tasya vratam d im eva vāsaḥ paridadhīta iti | 3. Tam dvitīyam abhyāyachhat tam abravīt | "kathā mā abhyāyachhasi" iti | "dvitīyam me nāma kuru" ity abravīn "na vai idam ekena nāmnā annam atsyāmi" iti | "sa vai tvam" iti abravīch "Chharvaḥ eva" iti yach Chharvo 'gniḥ | tena na ha vai enaṁ Sarvo hinasti na asya prajāñ na asya paśūn na asya bruvāṇaṁ dhana | atha yaḥ enaṁ dveshṭi sa eva pāpīyān dhavati | na sa yaḥ evaṁ veda | tasya vratam sarvam eva na aśnīyād iti | 4. Tam tṛitīyam abhyāyachhat tam abravīt "kathā mā abhyāyachhasi" iti | "tṛitīyam me nāma kuru" ity abravīn "na vai idam dvābhyāṁ nāmaabhyāṁ annam atsyāmi" iti | "sa vai tvam" ity abravīt "Paśupatiḥ eva" iti yat Paśupatiḥ Vāyuḥ | tena na ha vai enam Paśupatiḥ hinasti na asya prajāñ na asya paśūn na asya bruvāṇaṁ dhana | atha yaḥ enaṁ dveshṭi sa eva pāpīyān dhavati | na sa yaḥ evaṁ veda | tasya vratam brāhmaṇam eva na parivaded iti | 5. Tam chaturtham abhyāyachhat | tam abravīt "kathā mā 'bhyāyachhasi" iti | "chaturtham me nāma kuru" ity abravīt | "na vai idam tribhir nāma-bhir annam atsyāmi" iti | "sa vai tvam" ity abravīd "Ugraḥ eva devaḥ" iti yad Ugro devaḥ ośadhayo vanaśpatayaḥ | tena na ha vai enam Ugro devo hinasti na asya prajāñ na asya paśūn na asya bruvāṇaṁ dhana | atha yaḥ enaṁ dveshṭi sa eva pāpīyān dhavati | na sa yaḥ evaṁ veda | tasya vrataṁ striyāḥ eva vivaraṁ na iksheta iti | 6. Tam panchamam abhyāyachhat | tam abravīt "kathā mā 'bhyāyachhasi" iti | panchamam me nāma kuru" ity abravīt | "na vai idam chaturbhir nāmaabhir annam atsyāmi" iti | "sa vai tvam" ity abravīn "Mahān eva devaḥ" iti | yan Mahān devaḥ Ādityaḥ | Tena na ha vai enam Mahān devo hinasti na asya prajāñ na asya paśūn na asya bruvāṇaṁ dhana | atha yaḥ enaṁ dveshṭi sa eva pāpīyān dhavati | na sa yaḥ evaṁ veda | tasya vratam udyantam eva enaṁ na iksheta astaṁ yantaṁ dha iti | 7. Tam śha-śṭham abhyāyachhat tam abravīt "kathā mā abhyāyachhasi" iti | "śhaśṭham me nāma kuru" ity abravīt | "na vai idam panchabhir nāmaabhir annam atsyāmi" iti | "sa vai tvam" ity abravīd "Rudraḥ eva" iti yad Rudraḥ Chāṇḍramāḥ | Tena na ha vai enaṁ Rudro hinasti na asya prajāñ na asya paśūn na asya bruvāṇaṁ dhana | atha yaḥ enaṁ

dveshṭi sa eva pāṭīyān bhavati | na sa yaḥ evaṁ veda | tasya vrataṁ vimarśam eva nāśīyān majjānaṁ cha iti | 8. Taṁ saptaṁam abhyāyachhat | tam abravīt "kathā mā 'bhyāyachhasi" iti | "saptaṁam me nāma kuru" ity abravīt | "na vai idaṁ śhaḍbhīr nāmaḥ annam atsyāmi" iti | "sa vai tvam" ity abravīt "Īśānaḥ eva" iti yad Īśāno 'nnaṁ | tena na ha vai enam Īśāno hinasti na asya prajāṁ na asya paśūn na asya bruvānaṁ chana | atha yaḥ enam dveshṭi sa eva pāṭīyān bhavati | na sa yaḥ evaṁ veda | tasya vrataṁ annam eva ichhamānaṁ na pratyāchakṣhita iti | 9. Tam aśṭamam abhyāyachhat | tam abravīt "kathā mā 'bhyāyachhasi" iti | "aśṭamam me nāma kuru" ity abravīt "na vai idaṁ saptaḥ nāmaḥ annam atsyāmi" iti | "sa vai tvam" ity abravīt "Āsanir eva" iti yad Āsanir Indrāḥ | tena na ha vai enam Āsanir hinasti na asya prajāṁ na asya paśūn na asya bruvānaṁ chana | atha yaḥ enam dveshṭi sa eva pāṭīyān bhavati | na sa yaḥ evaṁ veda | tasya vrataṁ satyam eva vadeḥ hiraṇyaṁ cha bibhriyād iti | sa esho 'śṭanāma 'śṭadhā vihito Mahān devaḥ | ā ha vai asya aśṭamāt puruṣhāt prajā 'nnam attī vasiyān vasiyān ha eva asya prajāyām ājāyato yaḥ evaṁ veda |

"Prajāpati, being desirous of progeny, performed austerity. From him when he had [thus] performed austerity five [children] were born, Agni, Vāyu, Āditya, Chandramas (Moon), and Ushas (dawn) the fifth. He said to them, 'Do you also perform austerity.' They consecrated themselves. Before them, when they had consecrated themselves, and had performed austerity, Ushas, the daughter of Prajāpati, assuming the form of an Apsaras (a celestial nymph) rose up. Their attention was riveted upon her, and they discharged seed. They then came to Prajāpati their father, and said to him, 'We have discharged seed; let it not lie there in vain.' Prajāpati made a golden platter, of the depth of an arrow, and of equal breadth. In this he collected the seed, and from it there arose a being with a thousand eyes, a thousand feet, and a thousand arrows on the string. 2. He came to his father Prajāpati, who asked him, 'Why dost thou come to me?' He answered, 'Give me a name. I shall not eat this food, so long as no name has been given to me.' 'Thou art Bhava,' said Prajāpati; for Bhava is the Waters. Therefore Bhava does not slay this man, nor his offspring, nor his cattle, nor any [creature of his] who speaks. And further, whoever hates him is most wicked. Such is not the case with

him who knows this. His rule is, let a man wear a garment. 3. He (this newly-produced being) came a second time to Prajāpati, who asked him, 'Why dost thou come to me?' 'Give me,' he replied, 'a second name: I shall not eat this food with only one name.' 'Thou art Sarva,' Prajāpati answered; for Sarva is Agni. Wherefore Sarva does not slay him, nor his offspring, nor his cattle, nor any [creature of his] who speaks. Further, whoever hates him is most wicked. Such is not the case with him who knows this. His rule is, let not a man eat every sort of food. 4. He came the third time to Prajāpati, who said to him, 'Why dost thou come to me?' 'Give me a third name,' he replied; 'I shall not eat this food with only two names.' 'Thou art Paśupati,' Prajāpati answered; for Paśupati is Vāyu (the Wind). Wherefore Paśupati does not slay him, etc., etc. His rule is, let no one slander a Brāhman. 5. He came the fourth time to Prajāpati, who said to him, 'Why dost thou come to me?' 'Give me a fourth name,' he replied; 'I shall not eat this food with only three names.' 'Thou art Ugradeva (the fierce god),' Prajāpati answered; for Ugradeva is plants and trees. Wherefore Ugradeva does not slay him, etc., etc. His rule is, let not a man look upon the shame of a woman. 6. He came the fifth time to Prajāpati, who said to him, 'Why dost thou come to me?' 'Give me a fifth name,' he replied; 'I shall not eat this food with only four names.' 'Thou art Mahādeva (the great god),' Prajāpati answered; for Mahādeva is Āditya (the Sun). Wherefore Mahādeva does not slay him, etc., etc. His rule is, let no man look upon him (the Sun) rising or setting. 7. He came the sixth time to Prajāpati, who said to him, 'Why dost thou come to me?' 'Give me a sixth name,' he replied; 'I shall not eat this food with only five names.' 'Thou art Rudra,' Prajāpati answered; for Rudra is Chandramas (the Moon). Therefore Rudra does not slay him, etc., etc. His rule is, let no man eat anything coagulated [or solid],⁹⁰ or any marrow. 8. He came the seventh time to Prajāpati, who said to him, 'Why dost thou come to me?' 'Give me a seventh name,' he replied; 'I shall not eat this food with only six names.' 'Thou art Īśāna,' Prajāpati answered; for Īśāna is food. Wherefore Īśāna does not slay him, etc., etc. His rule is, let no one reject him who desires food. 9. He came the eighth time to Prajā-

⁹⁰ This is the sense assigned by Böhlingk and Roth, s.v. *mūrchh+vi*.

pati, who said to him, 'Why dost thou come to me?' 'Give me an eighth name,' he replied; 'I shall not eat this food with only seven names.' 'Thou art Aśani,' Prajāpati answered; for Aśani is Indra. Wherefore Aśani does not slay him, etc., etc. His rule is, let a man speak truth, and keep gold. This is the Mahādeva (great god), who has eight names, and who is formed in eight ways. The progeny to the eighth generation of the man who possesses this knowledge, eats food, and ever wealthier and wealthier men will be born among his descendants."

The following is the account given in the Sātapatha Brāhmaṇa of the object and name of the Satarudriya:

Sātapatha Brāhmaṇa, ix. 1, 1, 1.⁹¹—*Atha ataḥ satarudriyaṁ juhōti | atra eṣha sarvo 'gñiḥ saṁskṛitaḥ | sa eṣho 'tra Rudro devatā | tasmin devāḥ etad amṛitaṁ rūpam uttamam adadhuh | sa eṣho 'tra dīpyamāno 'tishṭhad annam ichhamānaḥ | tasmād devāḥ abibhayaḥ "yad vai no 'yam na hiṁsyād" iti | 2. Te 'bruvann "annam asmai sambharāma tena enaṁ samayāma" iti | tasmai etad annaṁ samabharan śānta-devatyam⁹² | tena enaṁ aśamayan | tad yad etaṁ devam etena aśamayaṁs tasmācch chhānta-devatyam | "śānta-devatyāṁ ha vai tach chhatarudriyam" ity āchakshate paroksham | paroksha-kāmāḥ hi devāḥ |*

"He now offers an oblation with the Satarudriya. Here this universal fire has been prepared; and here this Rudra is the deity. In him the gods placed this most excellent immortal form. Here he rose up flaming, desiring food. The gods were afraid of him, 'lest' (they thought) 'he should destroy us.' 2. They said, 'Let us collect food for him, and with it appease him.' They collected for him this food with which a deity is appeased, and with it they appeased him. Inasmuch as they appeased this god with this, it is therefore called 'Śāntadevatya' ('that with which a god is appeased'). They call this 'Śāntadevatya' esoterically 'Sata-rudriya'; for the gods love what is esoteric."

⁹¹ Compare Taitt. Br. i. 6, 1, 2. In the same work, i. 7, 1, 2, we read that the gods and Asuras were fighting, when the former said to Agni, "We shall conquer with thee as our champion." He said, "I shall transform myself into three parts." He did so, Agni being one part, Rudra a second, and Varuṇa a third, etc (*te devāḥ Agniṁ abruvan "tvayā vireṇa Asurān abhibhavāma" iti | so 'bravīt "tredhū ātmānaṁ vikarishye" iti | sa tredhū ātmānam vyakuruta Agniṁ trīṇyām Rudraṁ trīṇyām Varuṇaṁ trīṇyām ityādī*).

⁹² *Śānta-devatyam śānta-devatārthaṁ devatā-śānty-artham* Comm.

On this the commentator remarks: *Vihito 'yañ homo Rudra-rūpatā, pannasya Agner upasamanārtham* | "This oblation is offered in order to appease Agni who has taken the form of Rudra."⁹³

The same work gives, a little further on, another account of the origin of Rudra, and a different etymology for the Satarudriya:

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, ix. 1, 1, 6 ff.—*Prajāpater vierastād devatāḥ udakrāmāṃs tam ekah eva devo na ajahūd Manyur eva* | so 'sminn antar vitato 'tishṭhat | so 'rodit | *tasya yāny āsrāṇi prāskandāṃs tāny asmin Manyau pratyatishṭhan* | *sa eva śata-śīrshāḥ Rudraḥ sambhavaat sahasrākṣaḥ śateshuhriḥ* | *atha yāḥ anyāḥ vipruṣho 'patāṃs tā asankhyātā sahasrāṇi*⁹⁴ | *imān lokān anuprāviśan* | *tad yad ruditāt sambhavaṃ tasmād Rudrāḥ* | so 'yañ śataśīrshāḥ Rudraḥ sahasrākṣaḥ śateshuhir⁹⁵ | *adhīya-dhanvā pratihitāyī bhīṣhayamāṇo 'tishṭhad annam icchamānaḥ* | *tasmād devāḥ abibhayuḥ* | 7. *Te Prajāpatim abruvan* | "asmād vai bibhīmo yad vai no 'yañ na hīmyād" iti | so 'bravīd "annam asmai sambharata tena enaṃ śamayata" iti | tasmāi etad annaṃ sambharan śatarudriyaṃ tena enaṃ śamayam | tad yad etaṃ śataśīrshāṇāṃ Rudram etena śamayāṃs tasmācchhataśīrsha-rudra-śamanīyam | śataśīrsha-rudra-śamanīyaṃ ha vai tat śatarudriyam ity āchakṣate parokṣam | parokṣa-kāmāḥ hi devūḥ ityādi | . . . 14. "Namas te Rudra manyave" iti | yaḥ eva asmin so 'ntar Manyur vitato 'tishṭhat tasmāi etan namas-karoty uto "te śhave namo bāhubhyām uta te namaḥ" iti śhvā cha hi bāhubhyām cha bhīṣhayamāṇo 'tishṭhat |

6. "From Prajāpati, when he had become enfeebled, the deities

⁹³ In the Taitt. S. v. 4, 3, 1. it is said: *Rudro vai esha yad Agniḥ* | *sa etarhi jūto yarhi sarvaś chitāḥ sa yathā vatso jūtaḥ stanam prepsaty evaṃ vai esha etarhi bhū-gadheyam prepsati* | *tasmāi yad āhutiṃ na juhuyād adhvaryuṃ cha yajamānaṃ cha āhyāyet* | *S'atarudriyaṃ juhoti* | *bhūgadheyena eva enaṃ śamayati* | *na ūrtim ā archaty adhvaryuṃ na yajamānaḥ* | "This Agni is Rudra (or terrible). When now he is born, and all kindled, as a calf when born desires the udder, so he now desires his share. If an oblation were not presented to him, he would turn his thoughts (with the view of devouring) towards both the adhvaryu priest and the sacrificer. The S'atarudriya is celebrated; and the priest quiets him with a share. So both adhvaryu and sacrificer avoid injury." The same work, v. 5, 7, 4, says similarly: *Rudro vai esha yad Agniḥ* | *sa yathā vyūghraḥ kruddhas tishṭhaty evaṃ vai esha etarhi* | *sanchi-tam etair upatishṭhate namaskārair eva enaṃ śamayati* | "This Agni is Rudra (or terrible). As a tiger stands raging, so does he now. The priest approaches with these [oblations] [the fire] that has been prepared [and kindled]; and quiets him with prostrations."

⁹⁴ Compare Nir. i, 15, and Vāj. Sanh. 16, 54, above, 325.

⁹⁵ Compare Vāj. Sanh. xvi. 13, above, p. 323.

departed. Only one god, Manyu, did not leave him, but continued extended within him. He (Prajāpati) wept. The tears which fell from him remained in that Manyu. He became Rudra with a hundred heads, a hundred eyes, and a hundred quivers. Then the other drops which fell from him in unnumbered thousands entered into these worlds. They were called Rudras because they sprang from him when he had wept. This Rudra with a thousand heads, eyes, and quivers, stood with his bow strung, and arrows on the string, causing terror, and demanding food. The gods were afraid of him. 7. They said to Prajāpati, 'We are afraid of this being, lest he destroy us.' Prajāpati said to them, 'Collect for him food, and with it appease him.' They collected for him this food, the śatarudriya, and with it they appeased him. From the fact that with this they appeased the hundred-headed Rudra, it is 'that wherewith the hundred-headed Rudra is to be appeased' (*Sata-śirsha-rudra-samanīyam*). This they esoterically call Śatarudriya; for the gods love what is esoteric." . . . 14. "'Reverence, Rudra, to thy wrath' (see above, p. 326, verse 1). (In these words) he (the priest) expresses reverence to Manyu, who stood extended within him (Rudra). 'Reverence also to thy arrow and thine arms.' He (the god) stood causing terror with his arrow and arms."

The word Mahādeva occurs in the Tāndya Mahābrāhmaṇa, vi. 9, 7, *Yām samām Mahādevaḥ paśūn hanyād ityādi* | "In whatever year Mahādeva slays cattle." The same work, vii. 9, 16 ff., makes mention of Rudra in connexion with cattle or victims: *Devāḥ vai paśūn vyabhajanta | te Rudram antarāyan* | "The gods were dividing the victims. They passed over Rudra."

In the descriptions of Mahādeva which are found in the passages quoted in the last chapter from the Mahābhārata, though that deity is occasionally identified with Agni, as he is with other gods (see above, p. 204), he is generally represented in a different aspect, and with different characteristics. In the legend of the birth of Skanda or Kārttikeya,⁸⁶ however, which is narrated in the Vana-parvan of that poem, we find some trace of the early connexion of Rudra with Agni. We are there told that, after Skanda had been installed in his office of general of the gods (v. 14424), Mahādeva and Pārvatī arrived:

⁸⁶ Lassen (Ind. Ant. i. 588, note, 1st ed. = p. 701, 2nd ed.) observes that this legend differs from the one on the same subject in the Rāmāyaṇa, i. 38, and regards the former as a later interpolation in the Mahābhārata.

14427 ff.—*Āgamyā manuḥ-vyāghra saha devyā parantapa | arohra-
yāmāsa suprito bhagavān govriṣha-dhvajaḥ | Rudram Agniṁ devijāḥ prā-
huḥ Rudra-sūnus tatas tu saḥ | Rudrena śukram uterishṭaṁ tat śvetaḥ
parvato 'bhavat | Pāvakasyendriyaṁ śveto kṛittikābhiḥ kṛitaṁ naga | pā-
jyamānaṁ tu Rudrena dṛishṭvā sarve divaukasaḥ | Rudra-sūnuṁ tataḥ
prāhur Guhaṁ guṇavatāṁ varam | anupraviśya Rudrena vahnīm jāto hy
ayaṁ śiśuḥ | tatra jātas tataḥ Skando Rudra-sūnus tato 'bhavat | Ru-
drasya Vahneḥ Scāhāyāḥ śhaṇṇāṁ strinām cha Bhārata | jātaḥ Skandaḥ
suru-śreṣṭhō Rudra-sūnus tato 'bhavat |*

“The god whose banner is a bull, arriving with his goddess, paid him honour, well pleased. Brāhmans call Agni Rudra; consequently he (Kārttikeya) is the son of Rudra. The seed which was discharged by Rudra became the white mountain. And the seed of Pāvaka (Agni) was formed by the Kṛittikās on the white mountain. Having seen Guha (Kārttikeya) thus honoured by Rudra, all the deities consequently call him, who is the most excellent of the gifted, the son of Rudra. For this child was produced by Rudra when he had entered into Fire. Being there born, Skanda was the son of Rudra. Skanda, that most eminent deity, being born from Agni, [who was] Rudra, and from Svāhā [and] the six wives [of the Rishis], was the son of Rudra.”

The allusions in this passage will become more intelligible if I give an outline of the preceding part of the allegorical story, which commences with v. 14241. Indra being distressed at the defeat of the armies of the gods (*deva-senā*) by the Dānavas (v. 14245 ff.) is meditating on this subject, when he hears the cry of a female calling for help, and asking for a husband to protect her. Indra sees that she has been seized by the demon Keśin, with whom he remonstrates; but the demon hurls his club at Indra, who, however, splits it with his thunderbolt. Keśin is disabled in the next stage of their combat, and goes off. Indra then finds out from the female that her name is Devasenā (army of the gods), and that she has a sister called Daityasenā (army of the Daityas), and that they are both daughters of Prajāpati. Her sister, she says, loves Keśin, but she herself does not, and wishes Indra to find for her a proper husband, who shall be able to overcome all the enemies of the gods. Indra takes Devasenā with him to Brahmā and desires him to provide her with a martial husband; and Brahmā promises that a helpmate of that description shall be born (14279 f.).

Indra then departs with Devasenā. It happened that Vāsishṭha and other rishis had been offering a sacrifice, whither the gods headed by Indra proceeded to drink the soma-juice. Agni too, being invoked, descended from the region of the sun, entered into the fire, received the oblations of the rishis, and presented them to the gods. The story then proceeds (v. 14287):

*Nishkrāmaṁś chāpy apasyat sa patnīś teshāṁ mahātmanām | sveshv
āśrameshūpaviśṭhāḥ svapantīś cha tathā sukhām | rukma-vedi-nibhās⁷⁷ tās
tu chandra-lekhāḥ ivāmalāḥ | hutāsānārchih-pratimāḥ sarvās tārāḥ ivā-
bhūtāḥ | sa tatra tena manasā babhūva kshubhitendriyaḥ | patnīr driśṭvā
dviḥjendrāṇām Vahnīḥ kāma-vaśaṁ yayau | bhūyaḥ sa chintayāmāsa na
nyāyyaṁ kshubhito hy aham | sādhyāḥ patnyo dviḥjendrāṇām akamāḥ
kāmayāmy aham | natīḥ śakyāḥ mayā drashtum prashtum vā 'py ani-
mittataḥ | gārhapatyāṁ samāviśya tasmāt paśyāmy abhikṣaṇasāḥ | sa-
m-
apriśann iva sarvās tāḥ śikhābhīḥ kanchana-prabhāḥ | paśyamānās cha
mumude gārhapatyāṁ samāśritaḥ | nirushya tatra suchiram evaṁ Vah-
nir vaśaṁ gataḥ | manas tāsū viniḥkshipya kāmāyāno varāṅganāḥ | kāma-
santapta-hṛidayo deha-tyāga-viniśchitaḥ | alābhe brāhmaṇa-strīṇām Agnir
vanam upāgamat | Svāhā tam Dakṣa-duhitā prathamāṁ kāmāyat tadā |
sā tasya chhidram anraichhach chirāt-prabhṛiti bhāvinī | apramattasya
devasya na cha paśyaty aninditā | sā taṁ jñātvā yathārat tu Vahnīm
vanam upāgatam | tattvataḥ kāma-santaptaṁ chintayāmāsa bhārinī |
aham saptarshi-patnīnām kṛitā rūpūṇi Pūvakam | kāmāyishyāmi kāmā-
mārtā tāsāṁ rūpeṇa mohitam | evaṁ kṛite prītur asya kāmāvṛptīś cha
me bharet | S'ivā bhāryā tv Angīrasaḥ śīla-rūpa-guṇānvitā | tasyūḥ sū
prathamāṁ rūpaṁ kṛitvā devī janādhipa | jugūma Pūvakābhyaśaṁ taṁ
chovācha varāṅganā | mām Agne kāmā-santaptūṁ tvaṁ kāmāyitum
arhasi | kariṣhyasi na ched evam mṛitām mām upadhāraya | aham
Angīraso bhāryā S'ivā-nāmā Hutāsana | śiṣṭābhīḥ prakṛtā prāptā
mantrayitvā viniśchayam | Agnir uvācha | katham mām tvaṁ vijānīṣhe
kāmarṭam itarāḥ katham | yās trayā kīrtitāḥ sarvāḥ saptarshīṇām
priyāḥ strīyaḥ | S'ivā uvācha | asmākūṁ tvaṁ priyo nityam bibhīmas tu
vayāṁ tava | tvachchittam ingitair jñātvā preshitā 'smi tavāntikam |
maithunāyecha samprāptā kāmam prāptum drutaṁ chara | yāmāyo mām*

⁷⁷ In Rāmāyaṇa iii. 32, 5, Rāvaṇa is described as *Rukma-vedi-gatam*, which the Commentator explains as *rukma-vedīm prāptam hiraṇyeshṭaka-akṛitām vedīm prāptam* | "mounted on a platform of golden bricks."

*pratikhanto gamishyāmi Hutāsana | Mārkaṇḍeyaḥ uvācha | tato 'gnir
 upayame tām S'ivām prītām mudā yutaḥ | prītyā devī samāyuktā śukraṁ
 jagrāha pāṇina | achintayad mamedam ye rūpaṁ drakshyanti kānane | te
 brāhmaṇīnām anṛitaṁ doṣaṁ vakshyanti Pāvake | tasmād etad raksha-
 mānā Garuḍī sambhavāmy aham | vanād nirgamanam chaiva sukham mama
 bhaviṣyati | Suparṇī sā tadā bhūtvā nirjagāma mahāvanāt | apaśyat
 parvataṁ śvetaṁ sara-slabhaiḥ svaśmṛitam | dṛishṭvīvishaiḥ sapta-śirṣhair
 guptam bhogibhir adbhutaiḥ | rakṣobhīḥ cha piśāchais cha vaudrair bhāta-
 ganāis tathā | rākṣasibhīḥ cha sampūrṇam anekaiścha mṛiga-dvijaiḥ | sā
 tatra sahasā gatvā śaila-prīṣṭhaṁ sudurgamam | prākṣhipat kāncane
 kuṇḍe śukraṁ sā tvaritā śubhā | saplānām api sā devī saptarāṣṇīnām
 mahātmanām | patnī-sarūpatūṁ kṛitvā kūmayāmāsa Pāvakam | divya-
 rūpam Arundhatyāḥ kartum na śakitaṁ tayā | tasyās tapaḥ-prabhāveṇa
 bhartuḥ śūsrūṣhaṇena cha | *śat-kṛitras tat tu niḥkṣiptam Agneḥ relakḥ
 Kurūttama | tasmin kuṇḍe pratipadi kāmīnyā Svāhayā tadā | tat skan-
 naṁ lejasā tatra śmṛitam janayat sutam | rīṣidbhīḥ pūjitaṁ skannam
 anayat Skandatūṁ tataḥ | śaṭ-śirāḥ dviguṇa-śrotro dvādaśākṣi-bhūja-
 kramaḥ | eka-grīvāika-jāṭharaḥ kumārāḥ samapadyata |
 v. 14514: Yadā Skandena mātṛīnām evam etat priyaṁ kṛitam | ta-
 thainam abravīt Svāhā "mama putras tvam aurasaḥ | ichhāmy ahaṁ
 tvayā dattam prītim parama-durlabhām" | tām abravīt tataḥ Skandāḥ
 prītim ichhasi kīdriṣīm | Srāhā uvācha | Dakṣhasyāham priyā kanyā
 Svāhā nāma mahābhūja | bālyāt prabhṛiti nityancha jāta-kāmā Hutā-
 śane | na sa mām kāmīnīm putra samyag jānāti Pāvakaḥ | ichhāmi
 śāśvataṁ vāsaṁ vastum putra sahāgninā | Skandāḥ uvācha | Havyaṁ
 kavyancha yat kinchid dvijānām mantra-saṁstutam | hoshyanty Agnav
 sadā devī svāhety uktvā samuddhṛitam | adya prabhṛiti dāsyanti surpittāḥ
 sat-paṭhe sikhilāḥ | evam Agnis tvayā sardham sadā vatsyati śobhane |
 Mārkaṇḍeyaḥ uvācha | evam uktā tataḥ Svāhā tushṭā Skandena pūjitā |
 Pāvakena samāyuktā bhartrā Skandam apūjayat | tato Brahmā Mahā-
 senam Prajāpatir athābravīt | abhigachha Mahādevam pitarām tripurār-
 danam | Rudreṇāgniṁ samūviśya svāhām āviśya chomayā | hitārthaṁ
 sarva-lokānām jūtas tvam aparājitaḥ |*

"Issuing forth, he beheld the wives of these great [rishis] reclining in their own hermitages, and sweetly sleeping, resembling golden altars, pure as beams of the moon, like to flames of fire, all wonderful as stars. Perceiving that, his senses became agitated. Beholding the wives of

the Brahmins, Agni was overcome by desire. Again and again he reflected, 'It is not proper that I should be thus agitated: I am enamoured of the chaste spouses of the Brahmins, who are not in love with me. They cannot be looked upon or questioned by me without reason. Entering into the domestic fire, I shall gaze upon them close at hand.' Entering the domestic fire, touching, as it were, with his flames, all of them, who were bright as gold, and beholding them, he was delighted. Dwelling thus there for a long time, fixing his attention upon these beautiful women, and enamoured of them, Agni was overcome. His heart being distressed with desire, Agni, failing to obtain the Brahmins' wives, resolved to abandon his corporeal form, and went into the forest. Then Svāhā, the daughter of Dakṣa, first fell in love with him. This amorous and blameless goddess for a long time sought for his weak point, but as the god was watchful, she could not find any. But being perfectly aware that he had gone into the wood, and that he was really disturbed by desire, the amorous goddess thus reflected: 'I, who am distressed by love, will take the forms of the seven rishis' wives, and will court the affection of Agni, who is enchanted by their beauty. By doing so he will be pleased, and I shall obtain my desire.' Assuming first the form of Sīvā, the wife of Angiras, who possessed a good disposition, beauty, and excellent qualities, the handsome goddess (Svāhā) went to Agni, and thus addressed him: 'Agni, thou oughtest to love me, who am disturbed with love for thee: if thou wilt not do so, look upon me as dead. Agni, I, Sīvā, the wife of Angiras, have come, sent by virtuous women, and having considered my determination.' Agni replied: 'How dost thou, and how do all the other beloved wives of the seven rishis whom thou mentionest, know that I am distressed with love?' Sīvā answered: 'Thou hast always been beloved by us, but we are afraid of thee. Knowing thy heart by external signs, I have been sent to thee. I have come to be embraced: come quickly and fulfil thy desire. The other females are awaiting me; I shall depart, Hūtāśana (Agni).' Agni then with joy embraced the delighted Sīvā. The goddess filled with delight took his seed in her hand. She reflected, 'All those who shall see this form of mine in the forest will falsely allege the transgression of Brahmins' wives with Agni. Wherefore preserving this, I shall become Garuḍī; and thus my egress from the wood will

become easy. She then, becoming Suparnī, issued from the great forest, and beheld the white mountain surrounded by palisades of arrows, guarded by wondrous seven-headed serpents, whose very glance was venomous, by Rākshasas, Piśāchas, and by hosts of Rudra's demons, filled with Rakshasis, and numerous beasts and birds. The beautiful goddess, having then gone quickly to the summit of the mountain, which was difficult of access, hastily threw the seed into a golden reservoir. Thus this goddess, assuming in succession the resemblance of the wives of the seven great rishis, loved Agni. But she could not take the divine form of Arundhatī (the wife of Vasiṣṭha), owing to the power of the latter's austerity, and her obedience to her husband. Six times was the seed of Agni thrown by the enamoured Svāhā into the reservoir on the pratipad (the first day of the lunar fortnight). Discharged there and collected, that seed by its energy generated a son. That [seed] which was discharged (*ślanna*), being worshipped by the rishis, gave to this son his character of Skanda. Kumāra (Kārttikeya) was born with six heads, a double number of ears, twelve eyes, arms, and feet, one neck, and one belly." Kārttikeya marries Devasenā (vv. 14446 ff.). The six rishis' wives, his mothers, afterwards come to him, complaining that they had been abandoned by their husbands, and degraded from their former position, and asking him to secure their admission into paradise (*svarga*). The story then proceeds (v. 14514 ff.): "When Skanda had done what was gratifying to his mothers, Svāhā said him, 'Thou art my genuine son: I desire the love, difficult to obtain, which thou givest.' Skanda then asked her, 'What love dost thou desire?' Svāhā replied, 'I am the beloved daughter of Dakṣa, by name Svāhā. From my childhood I have been enamoured of Agni. But, my son, Agni does not thoroughly know me, who am enamoured of him. I wish to dwell perpetually with Agni.' Skanda rejoined: 'Whatever oblation of Brahmans is introduced by hymns, they shall always, goddess, lift and throw it into the fire, saying, "Svāhā." From this day forward, virtuous men, abiding in the right path, shall grant [thee this]. Thus, O beautiful goddess, Agni shall dwell with thee continually.' Being thus addressed by Skanda, Svāhā, gratified, worshipped by Skanda, and united with Agni as her husband, worshipped Skanda. Then Brahmā Prajāpati said to Mahāsena*(Skanda), 'Go to thy father Mahādeva, the vexer of

Tripura. Thou unconquered hast been produced for the good of all worlds by Rudra who had entered into Agni, and Umā who had entered into Svāhā.”

SECT. V.—Passages relating to Rudra in the Upanishads.

To the preceding passages, descriptive of Rudra, from the Brāhmanas, I shall now subjoin a few of a different character from the Upanishads.

The first is from the Svetāsvātara Upanishad (Bibliotheca Indica, vol. vii., pp. 323 ff.):

Svetāśvarātara Upanishad, iii. 1 ff.—*Yañ eko jālavān īsate īsanibhiḥ sarvān lokān īsate īsanibhiḥ | yañ eva ekaḥ udbhave sambhave cha ye etad vidur amṛitās te bhavanti |* 2. *Eko hi Rudro na dvitīyāyo tasthur⁹⁸ yañ imān lokān īsate īsanibhiḥ | pratyāñ janāms tiṣṭhati sanchukopānta-kāle⁹⁹ saṁsriyā viśvā bhuvanāni gopāḥ |* 3. (R.V. x. 81, 3, above, p. 5.) *Viśvatas-chakshur uta viśvato-mukho viśvato-bāhur uta viśvatas-pat | sam bāhubhyām dharmati sam patatrair dyāvābhūmīm (sic) janayan devaḥ ekaḥ |* 4. *Yo devānām prabhavaś chodbhavaś cha viśvādhipo Rudro maharshiḥ | Hiranyagarbhañ janayāmāsa pūrvañ¹⁰⁰ sa no buddhyā śubhayā saṁyunaktu |* 5 and 6 = Vāj. S. xvi. 2, 3 (see above, p. 322) . . . iv. 21. *Ajātaḥ ity evaṁ kaśchid bhīruḥ pratipadyate | Rudra yat te dakṣiṇam mukham tena mām pāhi nityam |* 22 = R.V. i. 114, 8, and Vāj. S. xvi. 16 with various readings (see above, pp. 303 and 323). “He who alone, the enchanter, rules by his powers, rules all worlds by his

⁹⁸ These words *na dvitīyāyo tasthur* appear to be established as the current reading of this passage; and a reading partly similar (with variations in other respects) will be found below in a corresponding verse which occurs in the Atharva-sīras. The commencement of the verse is, however, also found in the Nirukta, i. 15, where the reading is different and preferable, *ekaḥ eva Rudro 'vataste na dvitīyaḥ*; and Sayana, in his commentary on the Rig-veda (quoted in vol. iii. of this work, p. 60), gives the words thus, *ekaḥ eva Rudro na dvitīyo 'vataste*. Durga, the commentator on the Nirukta, as cited by Roth (Illust. of Nir., p. 12, note 4), quotes the whole verse as follows (without saying from what work it is taken): *Ekaḥ eva Rudro 'vataste na dvitīyo rañe vighnau pritañau satrūn | saṁsriyā viśvā bhuvanāni gopā pratyāñ janān sanchukośānta-kāle |* “One only Rudra has existed and no second; slaying his enemies in the conflicts of the battle. Having created all worlds, a protector, he draws back all beings into himself at the time of the end.”

⁹⁹ The proper reading is probably *sanchukocha*. See the last note; and Böhtlingk and Roth, *s.v. kucḥ+sam*; where *sanchukocha* is given as the proper reading, instead of *sanchukośa*, which is found in Roth's Illust. of Nirukta, p. 12, note 4.

¹⁰⁰ These two words are varied below, 4, 12, thus: *paśyata jñyamānam*, i.e. “beheld Hiranyagarbha being born.” The rest of the verse remains the same.

powers, he who in origination and in production is alone,—they who know this become immortal. 2. For Rudra who rules these worlds by his powers, is but one; [the wise] do not assert (?) a second. Having, a preserver, created all worlds, he abides in men severally; he displays his wrath (absorbs them?) at the time of the end. 3. This one god, who has on every side eyes, on every side a face, on every side arms, on every side feet, when producing the heaven and earth, fashions them with his arms and with his wings. 4. May Rudra, the lord of all, the great rishi, the cause of production and the source of the gods, who first generated Hiranyagarbha,—may he put us in possession of an excellent understanding. . . . *Ibid.* iv. 21. Some fearful man concludes thus—'[Thou art] unborn.' Rudra, protect me with thy southern face."

The next passage is from the commencement of the Atharva-sīras¹⁰¹ Upanishad. The MSS. which I have consulted vary very much in their readings:

*Devāḥ ha vai svargaṁ lokam agaman | te devāḥ Rudram aprichohhan
 "ko bhavān" iti | so 'bravīd "aham ekaḥ prathamam āsām vartāmi cha
 bhaviṣyāmi cha na anyāḥ kaśchid matto vyatiriktaḥ" iti | so 'ntarūd anta-
 ram prāviśād diśāścha antaram samprāviśat | "so 'ham nityānityo vyaktā-
 vyakto 'ham Brahmābrahma aham prāñchaḥ pratyancho 'ham dakṣiṇāñcha
 [dakṣiṇās cha?] udancho 'ham adhaścha ūrdhvañcha diśāścha pratidiśāś-
 cha aham pumān apumān strī cha ahañ sāvitrī ahañ gāyatrī aham
 trishṭub jagaty anuṣṭup cha ahañ chhando 'ham gārhapatyō dakṣiṇāgnir
 āhavanīyo 'hañ satyo 'hañ gaur ahañ Gaurī ahañ jyeshṭho 'hañ śreṣṭho
 'hañ varishṭho 'ham ūpo 'hañ tejo 'ham ṛig-yajuh-sāmātharvāṅgīraso
 'ham akṣharam ahañ kṣharam ahañ guhyo 'hañ gopyo 'ham aranyo 'ham
 pūshkaram aham pavitrām aham agrancho madhyāñcha vahiṣṭha purastāj
 jyotiṣ ity aham ekaḥ | sarvāñcha mām eva mām yo veda sa sarvāñ devāñ
 veda | gāṁ gobhir brāhmaṇāñ brāhmaṇyena havīmāshi haviṣhā āyur āyushā
 satyāñ satyena dharmāñ dharmena tarpayāmi svena tejasā" | tato devāḥ
 Rudrañ na apāśyams te devāḥ Rudrañ dhyāyanti tato devāḥ ūrdhva-
 bāhavaḥ stuvanti yo vai Rudraḥ sa bhagavān yaś cha Brahmā tasmat
 vai namo namaḥ | yo vai Rudraḥ sa bhagavān yaścha Viṣṇus tasmat
 vai namo namaḥ | yo vai Rudraḥ sa bhagavān yaścha Mahēśvaras tasmat*

¹⁰¹ A work called Atharva-sīras is mentioned in the passage of the Rāmāyana, i. 14, 2, quoted above, p. 165 f. See Weber's Indische Studien, i. 382 ff.; and ii. 53 ff.

*vai namo namaḥ | yo vai Rudraḥ sa bhagavān yā cha Umā tasmai . . . |
yo vai Rudraḥ sa bhagavān yaścha Vināyakas tasmai . . . | yo vai
Rudraḥ . . . yaścha Skandaḥ . . . | yo vai Rudraḥ . . . yaścha
Indraḥ . . . | yo vai Rudraḥ . . . yaścha Agniḥ . . . | yo vai
Rudraḥ . . . yā cha Bhūḥ . . . | yo vai Rudraḥ . . . yaścha
Bhuvāḥ . . . | om ādau madhye bhūr bhuvāḥ suvar ante śīreham
janadom¹⁰² viśva-rūpo 'si | Brahma ekas tvaṁ dvitridhā ūrdhvam adhaś
cha tvaṁ śāntiścha tvaṁ puṣṭiścha tvaṁ tushṭiścha tvaṁ hutam ahutam
viśvam aviśvaṁ dattam adattam kṛitam akṛitam param aparam parā-
yaṇaṇcha iti | "apāma somam¹⁰³ amṛitāḥ abhūma aganma jyotir avidāma
devān | kiṁ nūnam asmān kṛiṇavad arātiḥ kim u dhūrtir amṛita mar-
tyasya" | (R.V. viii. 48, 3) | sarva-jagaddhitam vai etad aksharam prajā-
patyaṁ sūkshmaṁ saumyam puruṣam agrūhyam agrūhyeṇa Vāyūṁ
rūpyavyeṇa somaṁ saumyeṇa grasati svena tejāsā | tasmai upasaṁharte
mahagrāsāya vai namo namaḥ | hṛidiśthāḥ devatāḥ sarvāḥ hṛidi prāṇe
pratiśthitāḥ | hṛidi tvam asi yo nityaṁ tiro mātṛāḥ paras tu saḥ |
tasya uttarataḥ śīro dakṣhiṇataḥ pāduu yoḥ uttarataḥ sa oṁkāraḥ | yaḥ
oṁkāraḥ sa prāṇavo yaḥ prāṇavaḥ sa sarva-vyūpī yaḥ sarva-vyūpī so
'nanto yo 'nantas tat tūraṁ¹⁰⁴ yat tūraṁ tat sūkshmaṁ yat sūkshmaṁ
tat śuklaṁ yat śuklaṁ tad vaidyutaṁ yad vaidyutaṁ tat param Brahma
iti sa ekaḥ | sa eko Rudraḥ sa Īśānaḥ sa bhagavān sa Maheśvaraḥ sa
Mahādevaḥ | atha kasmād uchyate oṁkāraḥ | yasmād uochhāryamāṇaḥ
eva sarvaṁ śarīram unnāmayati tasmād uchyate oṁkāraḥ . . . atha
kasmād uchyate ekaḥ | yaḥ sarvān lokān udgrīhṇāti¹⁰⁵ sṛijati visṛijati
vāsāyati tasmād uchyate ekaḥ | atha kasmād uchyate eko Rudraḥ | "eko
Rudro na dvitīyāya tasthe (sthitavān | advitīyaḥ eva sthitavān | Comm.)
turīyam imaṁ lokam īsate īśāniyur (niyamana-śaktimān | Comm.) jananī-
yuh (viśvotpādaka-śaktimān | Comm.) | pratyāṁ janās tiṣṭhanti saṁyug*

¹⁰² The commentator explains this thus: *Śīrehaṁ śīro mantrāḥ svāhā ity evaṁrū-
pāḥ | janadom janada iti kormopalakṣhaṇārtham akshara-trayam | janam janim tad-
upalakṣhita-janimaḥ vastu-jātam tad dadāti iti janadaḥ | tasya sambodhanam |* Instead
of the words in the text, another MS. reads, *bhūs te ādī madhyam bhūvas te evas te
śīrehaṁ viśvarūpo 'si*.

¹⁰³ *Umāyā Brahma-vidyā-svarūpīṇyā Kātyāyanyā saha vartate iti Somaḥ tam |
[Soma is thus = sa + Uma, "with Umā"] yataḥ somam apāma tataḥ amṛitāḥ maraṇa-
hetubhir avidyā-tat-kūrya-saṁskārair vivarjitāḥ abhūma sampannāḥ |* —Comm.

¹⁰⁴ *Tūrayati*, "delivers:" that which delivers. —Comm.

¹⁰⁵ *Ūrdhva-mokṣham āmani grīhṇāti |* —Comm.

asyāntakāle samhritya viśvā bhuvānāni goptā" | tasmād uchyate *eko Rudrah*¹⁰⁶ | atha kasmād uchyate *Īśāno* "yaḥ sarvān lokān īśato īśanībhir" jananībhiḥ parama-śaktībhiḥ | "abhi tvā śūra nonumahaḥ adugdhāḥ iva dhenavaḥ | īśānam asya jagataḥ svarprīṣam īśānam Indra tastushaḥ" | (R.V. vii. 32, 22) | tasmād uchyate *Īśānaḥ* | atha kasmād uchyate *Maheshvaraḥ* | yaḥ sarvān lokān sambhaktshaḥ sambhaktshayaty aśasraṇī srijati visrijati vāsayati tasmād uchyate *Maheshvaraḥ* | atha kasmād uchyate *Mahādevaḥ* | yaḥ sarvān bhāvān parityajya ātma-jnāna-yogaiś-varye mahati mahīyate tasmād uchyate *Mahādevaḥ* | tad etad (etad nāma-nirukti-rūpaṁ charitam | Comm.) *Rudra-charitam* | "esho ha devaḥ pradīśo 'nu sarvāḥ pūrvo ha jātaḥ sa u garbho antaḥ | sa eva jātaḥ sa janīshyamāṇaḥ pratyāṇ janāś tishṭhati viśvato-mukhaḥ" | (Vā. S. 32, 4) | "viśvataś-chakshur uta viśvato-mukho viśvato-bāhur uta viśvatas-pāt | sam bāhubhyāṁ dharmati saṁ patatrar dyāvā-prithivī janāyan devaḥ ekaḥ" | (R.V. x. 81, 3) | *Rudre ekatvam* (aikyam | Comm.) āhuḥ | *Rudraṁ śāsvataṁ vai purāṇam ityādi* | *vratam etat pāśupatam* | *Agnir iti bhasma Vāyur iti bhasma jalam iti bhasma sthālam iti bhasma vyoma iti bhasma sarvaṁ ha vai idam bhasma manaḥ etāni chakshūṁśi bhasmāni* | "*Agnir*" ityādinā bhasma grihītvā nirmṛijya angāni saṁsṛīṣet | tasmād *vratam etat pāśupatam paśu-pāśa-vimokṣāya* | *yo 'tharva-śīram brāhmaṇo 'dhīte so 'gni-pūto bhavati* | *sa vāyu-pūto bhavati* | *sa āditya-pūto bhavati* | *sa soma-pūto bhavati* | *sa satya-bhūto bhavati* | *sa sarva-bhūto bhavati* | *sa sarveshu tirtheshu enāto bhavati* | *su sarveshu vedeshu adhīto bhavati* | *sa sarva-veda-vrata-charyāsu charīto bhavati* | *sa sarvair devair jnāto bhavati* | *sa sarva-yajna-kratubhir īśṭavān bhavati* | *tona itihāsa-purāṇānāṁ Rudrāṇām śata-sahasrāṇi japtāni bhavanti* | *gūyatryāḥ śata-sahasraṁ japtam bhavati* | *prajāvānām ayutāṁ japtam bhavati* | *rūpe rūpe (pāṭhe pāṭhe pratipāṭham* | Comm.) *daśa-pūrvān punāti daśottarān ā chakshushaḥ panktim punāti ityāha bhagavān Atharva-śīro 'tharva-śīraḥ (abhyāsaḥ ādarārthaḥ* | Comm.) | *sakṛj japtvā suchih pūtaḥ karmānyo bhavati* | *dvitīyaṁ japtvā gāṇapatyam (sarva-niyantṛitvam* | Comm) *avāpnōti tṛitīyaṁ japtvā devam eva anu-praviśaty oṁ satyam* | "yo Rudro agnau yo apsv antar ya ośadhīr vīrudhāḥ āviveśa | ya imā viśvā bhuvānāni chākṛīpe tasmai Rudrāya namo 'stu Agnaye" | (A. V. vii. 87, 1, above, p. 333).

¹⁰⁶ In another MS. a different answer is given to this question: *Yasmād rishībhir na anyair bhaktair dṛi tam asya rūpam upalabhyate* | "He is called 'Rudra' because his form is quickly (*drutam*) perceived by rishis, and not by other devout persons."

“The gods went to heaven. They asked Rudra, ‘Who art thou?’ He said, ‘I alone was before [all things], and I exist, and I shall be. No other transcends me.’ He entered into one space after another, and into the space of the sky. ‘I am eternal and not eternal, discernible and undiscernible, I am Brahma, I am not Brahma,¹⁰⁷ I am the eastern, western, southern, northern [breaths, etc., Comm.], I am below and above, the regions, and the intermediate regions, I am male, eunuch, and female, I am the Sāvitrī, I the Gāyatrī, I the Trishṭubh, Jagatī, and Anuṣṭubh (metres), I am metre, I am the household, the southern, and the āhavanīya fires, I am true, I am the earth (or cow), I am Gaurī,¹⁰⁸ I am the eldest, I am the chief, I am the most excellent, I am the waters, I am brilliancy, I am the Rik, Yajush, Sāman, Atharvāṅgirasas, I am the undecaying, I the decaying, I the mysterious, I the secret, I dwell in the forests, I am the pushkara (sacrificial jar), the filter, the end, the middle, the outside, the front, and light, —I alone. He who knows me only, me, to be all, knows all the gods. By my own energy I satisfy the earth with rays (or the cow with cows), the Brahmans with brahmanhood, oblations with oblation, life with life, truth with truth, righteousness with righteousness.’ Then the gods did not behold Rudra. They meditate upon him. Then the gods, with arms raised aloft, praise him: ‘He who is Rudra is divine, and he who is Brahmā, to him be adoration. He who is Rudra is divine, and he who is Viṣṇu, to him be adoration. He who is Rudra is divine, and he who is Mahēśvara, to him be adoration. He who is Rudra is divine, and he who is Umā, to him be adoration. He who is Rudra, etc., and he who is Vināyaka, to him be adoration. He who is Rudra, etc., and he who is Skanda, to him be adoration. He who is Rudra, etc., and he who is Indra, to him be adoration. He who is Rudra, etc., and he who is Agni, etc. He who is Rudra, etc., and he who is Bhūh, etc. He who is Rudra, etc., and he who is Bhuvah, etc. (In the same way Rudra is identified with *svaḥ* [svaḥ]; *mahāḥ*; *jana*; *tapas*; *satya*; *prithivī*; *āpas*; *tejas*; *vāyu*; *ākāśa*; *sūrya*; *soma*; *nakṣatrāṇi*; *aṣṭau grahāḥ*; *prūṇa*; *kāla*; *Yama*; *mṛityu*; *amṛita*; *bhūta*; *bhavya*; *bhaviṣyat*; *viśva*; *kṛtsna*;

¹⁰⁷ *Vākyābhyāso rūpasya āmano vāstavaiva-pradarśanārthaḥ* | Comm. I should rather suppose, however, that the second word is not *Brahma*, but *abrahma*.

¹⁰⁸ *S'iva-priyā* | *aṣṭavarshā vā kunārī gaura-varnā bāla-tātā* (?) *tu* | Comm.

sarva; and *satya*.) Om! at the beginning, and in the middle are Bhūr, Bhuvāḥ, Svah; at the end is the head. O giver of life, Om, thou art universal-formed. Thou alone art Brahma doubly, and triply, above and below; thou art gentleness, fatness, contentment; thou art the thing sacrificed, and the thing not sacrificed, the whole, and not the whole, what is given, and what is not given, what is done, and what is not done, that which is supreme, and not supreme, and what is surpassing. 'We have drunk the Soma, we have become immortal, we have entered into light, we have known the gods. What can an enemy now do to us? What can the malice of any mortal effect, O immortal god?'¹⁰⁹ This imperishable [principle], beneficial to the whole world, sprung from [or, having the nature of,] Prajāpati, subtile, beautiful, by its own energy swallows up the incomprehensible Purusha by the incomprehensible, Vāyu by that which has the nature of Vāyu, soma by that which has the nature of soma.¹¹⁰ To him the destroyer, the great devourer, be adoration. All the gods reside in the heart, situated in the heart and the breath. Thou who art continually in the heart, [art] the three letters, but he is beyond. To the north of him is the head, to the south the feet; that which is the north is the omkāra. The omkāra is the praṇava, which (praṇava) again is all-pervading, which ('all-pervading') again is infinite, which again is that which delivers, which again is subtile, which again is white, which again has the nature of lightning, which again is the supreme Brahma: thus he is the one. He is the only Rudra, he is Īśāna, he is divine, he is Maheśvara, he is Mahādeva. Now whence does the omkāra get its name? Inasmuch as so soon as it is uttered, it raises up the whole body, it is called omkāra." (The same inquiry is then made and answered in regard to the words 'praṇava,' 'sarvavyāpīn' ['all-pervading'], 'ananta' ['infinite'] the 'deliverer,' 'subtile,' 'white,' 'having the nature of lightning,' and 'the supreme Brahma.' Then 'eka,' 'one,' is explained.) "Now why is he called 'one'? He who evolves, creates, variously creates, sustains all worlds, is therefore called the

¹⁰⁹ Quoted in the third volume of this work, p. 266. According to the commentator whom I have quoted under the text, Soma means *sa-uma*, he who dwells with Umā, in the form of divine knowledge, Kātyāyanī. What would the Vedic rishi who composed the verse have said to this mystical interpretation? Such explanations are not, however, peculiar to the adherents of any one religion.

¹¹⁰ I do not profess to understand the sense of this.

‘one.’ Now why is he called the one Rudra? ‘There is only one Rudra; there is no place for a second. He rules this fourth world, controlling and productive; living beings abide within him united with him. At the time of the end he annihilates all worlds, the protector.’ Wherefore he is called the one Rudra. Then why is he called *Īśāna*? He it is who rules all worlds by his ordinances, and supreme creative powers. ‘We, O heroic Indra, like un milked cows, approach with our praises thee who art the heavenly lord (*Īśāna*) of this moving, and the lord of this stationary, [world].¹¹¹ Hence he is called ‘*Īśāna*.’ (‘*Bhagavat*’ is then explained.) Then why is he called *Mahāśvara*? He who, a devourer, constantly devours, creates, variously creates, sustains all worlds, is therefore called *Maheśvara*. Then why is he called *Mahādeva*? He who, abandoning all forms of being, exults in the great divine power of absorption in the knowledge of himself, is therefore called *Mahādeva*. Such is the history of Rudra. ‘This god [abides] throughout all regions; he was the first born; he is within the womb; it is even he who has been born, and he is still to be born; he exists, O men, pervading all things, with his face turned to every side.’ (*Vāj. S.* 32, 4.) ‘The one god, who has on every side eyes, on every side a face, on every side arms, on every side feet, when producing the earth and sky, fabricates them with his arms, and with his wings.’” (*R.V.* x. 81, 3, above, p. 6.) . . . Rudra is mentioned again in the following verses. “In Rudra they say there is oneness, and that Rudra is eternal and primeval,” etc. The *Pāśupata* rite is thus described: “This is the *Pāśupata* observance; ‘*Agni* is ashes, *Vayu* is ashes, water is ashes, dry land is ashes, the sky is ashes, all this is ashes, the mind, these eyes, are ashes.’ Having taken ashes while pronouncing these preceding words, and rubbing himself, let a man touch his limbs. This is the *Pāśupata* rite, for the removal of the animal bonds. The Brahman who reads the *Atharva-sīra* is purified with fire, with air, with the sun, with soma (or the moon); he becomes truth, he becomes all, he has bathed in all the holy places, he is read in all the Vedas, he has practised the observances prescribed in all the Vedas, he is known by all the gods, he has sacrificed with all sacrificial rites; by him hundreds of thousands of *itihāsas*, *purāṇas*, and *Rudras* (formulas

¹¹¹ *R.V.* vii. 32, 22, quoted above, p. 103.

relating to Rudra), and a hundred thousand Gāyatrīs have been muttered, ten thousand Oms have been uttered; at every recitation he purifies ten generations of ancestors, and ten future generations of descendants; he purifies a row of men as far as the eye can reach; thus says the divine Atharva-śiras. Having muttered it once, he becomes clean, pure, and fit for the ceremonial; having muttered it a second time, he obtains dominion over hosts; having muttered it a third time, he enters into the god: Om, [this is] true.- 'Adoration be to Rudra Agni, who resides in fire, and in the waters, who has entered into these plants, who formed all these worlds.'"

I shall not make more than a few further extracts from this mystical Upanishad, which throws little light on Rudra's character or history. The three gods, Brahmā, Viṣṇu, and Rudra, are mentioned together, along with Indra (*Brahmā-Viṣṇu-Rudrendrāḥ*); and Sambhu (one of the names of Rudra) is said (in a passage which I need not attempt to translate at length) to be possessor of all divine qualities, and to be lord of all; while the benefits of worshipping him are described (*kāraṇam tu dhyeyaḥ sarvaiśvarya-sampannaḥ sarveśvaraś cha Sambhuḥ ākāśa-madhye dhruvaṁ stabdhvā 'dhikam kṣaṇam ekaṁ kratusūtasatyāpi chatuḥ-saptatyā yat phalaṁ tad avāpnōti kṛtsnam oṁ-kāragataṁ cha sarva-dhyāna-yoga-jñānānām yat phalaṁ tad oṁkāra veda-para īśo vā śiva eko dhyeyaḥ śivankaraḥ sarvam anyat parityajya*).

In the Kaivalya Upanishad (translated by Prof. Weber, Ind. Stud. ii. 10 ff.) Āśvalāyana asks Brahmā to explain to him the science of divine things (*Athāśvalūyano bhagavantam parameshthinam upasametya uvācha adhihi bhagavan brahma-vidyām ityādi*). Brahmā (*pitāmaha*) among other things tells him as follows: *Antyāśrama-śthaḥ sakalendriyāni nirudhya bhaktyā sva-gurum pranamya | hrīṭ-puṇḍarikaṁ virajāṁ viśuddhaṁ viśintya madhye viśadaṁ viśokam | anantam avyaktam achintya-rūpaṁ śivam praśāntam amṛitam brahma-yoniṁ | tam ādi-madhyānta-vihinam ekaṁ vibhuṁ chidānanda-svarūpam adbhutam | Umā-sahāyam paramēśvaram prabhuṁ trilochanaṁ nīla-kanṭham praśāntam | dhyātvā munir gaohhati bhūta-yoniṁ samasta-sūkṣhiṁ tamasaḥ parastāt | sa Brahmā sa Śivaḥ Sendraḥ so 'ksharaḥ paramaḥ svarāḥ | sa eva Viṣṇuḥ sa prāṇaḥ sa ātmā paramēśvaraḥ¹¹² | sa eva sarvaṁ yad bhūtam yachcha bhavyaṁ sanātanam | jñātvā taṁ mṛityum atyeti nānyaḥ panthā vimuk-*

¹¹² Another MS. has here *Sa kālō 'gniḥ sa Chandramāḥ*.

tayo | . . . yaḥ śatarudriyam adhito so 'gnipūto bhavati sa Vāyupūto bhavati ityādi | "A man in the last (or fourth) religious order (i.e. that of a mendicant) restraining all his senses, making obeisance to his teacher, meditating within on the lotus of the heart, [which is] spotless, pure, lucid, undisturbed,—the infinite, undiscernible, inconceivable, auspicious (*śiva*), tranquil, immortal, source of Brahma, [or, of divine knowledge],—contemplating him who is without beginning, middle, or end, the one, the pervading, the spiritual and blessed, the wonderful, the consort of Umā, the supreme lord, the three-eyed, the blue-throated, the tranquil,—[doing this] a Muni, [passing] beyond darkness, attains the source of being, the universal witness. He is Brahmā, he is Śiva, he is Indra, he is undecaying, supreme, self-resplendent; he is Viṣṇu, he is breath, he is the spirit, the supreme lord; he is all that has been or that shall be, eternal. Knowing him, a man overpasses death. There is no other way to liberation." Further on it is said: "He who reads the Śatarudriya becomes purified by fire, purified by air," etc., etc.

In one of the MS. collections of Upanishads belonging to the library of the East India Office, I find another work of that description, called the *Nilurudropanishad*, which begins thus: *Apāśyaṁ ohāvarohantaṁ divitaḥ prithivīmayaḥ | apāśyaṁ apāśyaṁ taṁ Rudraṁ nīlagrivaṁ śikh-aṇḍīnam |* "I, formed of earth, beheld descending from the sky, I beheld, I beheld, that blue-necked, crested Rudra." This composition contains many verses from the Śatarudriya.

SECT. VI.—*Some further texts from the Itihāsas and Purāṇas relative to Rudra.*

In the earlier parts of this work I have given a variety of extracts from the Rāmāyaṇa, Mahābhārata, etc., which exhibit the character of Mahādeva as he was conceived in the epic period (see pp. 165, 176, 178, 184–205, 223–228, 230–232, 240 f., 266–273, 278–281, 282–289). I shall now adduce such other passages from the Itihāsas, or Purāṇas, as may appear to throw any light on the history of the conceptions entertained of this deity, and of his relations to the other members of the Indian pantheon.

Rudra is briefly alluded to in the passages of the Rāmāyaṇa i. 14, 1 ff.; i. 75, 14 ff.; and Yuddha-Kāṇḍa, 119, 1 ff., quoted in pp. 165,

176 f., and 178 ff. The other texts of the Rāmāyana in which I have observed any allusion to him are the following; and the representations which are there given of this god bear generally, perhaps, a stamp of greater antiquity than those which are found in the Mahābhārata.

In Rāmāyana i. 23, 10 ff. (ed. Bombay), Rudra curses the embodied Kandarpa (the Indian Cupid), who wished to enter into him after his marriage, at a time when he was performing austerities; and Kandarpa in consequence becomes bodiless (*ananga*). (*Kandarpo mūrtimān āsit Kāmaḥ ity uchyate budhaiḥ | tapasyantam iha Sthānuṁ nimayena samāhitam | 11. Kṛitodvāhaṁ tu deveṣaṁ gacchantaṁ sa-marud-gaṇam | dharṣayāmāsa durmedhūḥ kunkṛitaś cha mahātmanā | 12. Avadhyataś cha Rudreṇa cakṣhushā Raghunandana | vyaśīryanta śarīrāt svāt sarva-gātrāṇi durmateḥ |*)

In i. 35, 20 (Bombay ed.), it is mentioned that the mountain-god, Himavat, gave his daughter Umā to the "unequalled Rudra" (*Rudrāya apratirūpāya*). In chapter xxxvii. of the same book, vv. 5 ff. the connubial intercourse of Śiva with Umā is described in most undignified language, as follows: *Purā Rāma kṛitodvāhaḥ Sītikanṭho mahātapaḥ | 6. Dṛṣṭvā cha bhagavān devīm maithunāyopachakrame | tasya saṅkriḍamūnasya Mahādevasya dhimataḥ | Sītikanṭhasya devasya divyaṁ varṣa-śataṁ gatam | 7. Na chāpi tanayo Rāma tasyām āsit parantapa |* "Formerly, after his marriage, Sītikanṭha (Śiva) the great devotee, (6) beholding the goddess, began to indulge in connubial love. A thousand years of the gods passed while the wise Mahādeva Sītikanṭha was thus sporting. But, O Rāma, vexer of thy foes, no son was born to Umā." The gods being alarmed at the prospect of the formidable character of the offspring which might be born to Mahādeva, entreated him and his spouse to practise chastity. To this Mahādeva consented; but asked what would become of the seed which he had already discharged. This, the gods said, should be received by the earth. The gods then desired Agni, along with Vāyu, to enter into this seed. This Agni did, and the white mountain was produced in consequence (see above, p. 354), where Kārttikeya was born. The gods then worshipped Śiva and Umā, but the latter imprecated sterility on all their wives. The thirty-seventh section relates the birth of Kārttikeya. While Tryambaka (Śiva), the lord of the gods, was performing austerities, the other deities went to Brahṁā and asked for a general in the room of Mahā-

deva, who, it seems, had formerly acted in that capacity. "He," they said, "whom thou didst formerly give us as a leader of our armies (i.e. Mahādeva), is now performing great austerity, along with Umā" (sect. 38, v. 3, Schlegel's ed.=sect. 37, 3, of Bombay ed.: *Yo naḥ*¹¹³ *senāpatir deva datto bhagavatā purā | sa tapaḥ param āsthāya tapyate sma sahomayā*). Brahmā says, that in consequence of the curse of Umā, no son could be born to any of the wives of the gods; but that Agni could beget a son on the river Gangā, who should be the general of the gods. The gods accordingly went to mount Kailāsa, and appointed Agni to effect their object. Agni accordingly impregnated the Gangā, who brought forth Kārttikeya, so called because he was nursed by the Kṛittikās."

In the forty-second section it is related how the royal rishi Bhagīratha performed austerity in order that the Gangā might descend from heaven and purify the ashes of the sons of Sagara (who had been destroyed by Kapila, sect. 40, at the end); and might by this means elevate them to paradise. Brahmā appeared to the king and told him that he ought to propitiate Siva, who was the only being who could sustain the shock of the falling Gangā. Bhagīratha (as is told sect. 43) continued his austerities till Siva the lord of Umā, the lord of animals (*Paśupati*), appeared to him, and said he would receive the Gangā on his head. He accordingly mounted the Himālaya, and called on the Gangā to descend. The Gangā was indignant at this summons, and came down in great volume and with great force on his head, thinking to sweep him down along with her into Pātāla. The god, however, determined to humble her pride, and she was compelled to circle for a long period of years in the labyrinth of his matted locks, without being able to reach the earth. Being again propitiated by Bhagīratha, Siva at length allowed her to reach the lake Vindu, to flow to the sea, and eventually into the infernal regions, where she purified the ashes of the sons of Sagara and enabled them to ascend to heaven.

In the forty-fifth section is described the production of nectar from the churning of the ocean of milk by the rival sons of Diti and Aditi, who wished to obtain some specific which should render them immortal. In the first place, however, a fiery poison was vomited from the mouths

¹¹³ *Yo naḥ* is the reading of Schlegel's edition, as well as of Gorguesio's, 39, 3. The Bombay edition reads *gena*, which does not seem so good a reading.

of the serpent Vāsuki, who was used as the rope in the process of churning. The gods then resorted to Śiva to deliver them from this portent:

21. *Atha devāḥ Mahādevaṁ Śankaraṁ śaraṇārthinaḥ | jagmuḥ Paśupatiṁ Rudraṁ trāhi trāhiti tushṭvuh |* 22. *Evam uktas tato devasir deva-devesvaraḥ prabhuḥ | prādūrāsīt tato 'traiva śankha-chakra-dhara Hariḥ |* 23. *Uvāchainaṁ emitāṁ kṛtvā Rudraṁ śūla-dharaṁ Hariḥ | daivatair mathyamāne tu yat pūrvaṁ samupasthitaṁ |* 24. *Tat tvadīyaṁ sura-śreṣṭha surāṇaṁ agrato hi yat | agra-pūjāṁ iha sthītvā grihāṇedaṁ viśvaṁ prabho |* 25. *Ity uktvā cha sura-śreṣṭhas tatraivāntaradhīyata | devatānāṁ bhayaṁ dṛiṣṭvā śrūtvā vākyaṁ tu Śarṅgiṇaḥ |* 26. *Halāhalaṁ viśvaṁ ghoraṁ sanjagrāhāmṛitopamam | devān viśṛjya deveṣo jagāma bhagavān Haraḥ |* 21. "Then the deities, seeking as their refuge Mahādeva, Śankara, went to Rudra Paśupati, and lauded him [calling out] 'deliver, deliver.' 22. Then, being addressed by the gods, the lord of the gods, Hari, appeared on that very spot, bearing the shell and the discus, (23) and smiling, said to Rudra, the wielder of the trident: 'That which has first appeared, when the ocean was being churned by the deities, (24) belongs to thee, most eminent of the gods, since thou art at the head of them. Standing here, receive, lord, this poison as the earliest offering.' 25. Having thus spoken, the most eminent of the gods disappeared on the spot. Perceiving the alarm of the deities, and having heard the words of Viṣṇu, (26) he (Śiva) took the deadly poison, as if it had been nectar. The divine Hara then dismissed the gods and departed."

The gods and Asuras proceeded with the churning, but were obliged now to call in the aid of Viṣṇu, as the mountain with which the operation was being performed sank down into the infernal regions. Viṣṇu, however, assumed the form of a tortoise, and supported the mountain on his back. At length nectar was produced, which Viṣṇu carried off.

In the description of the northern region contained in the Kishkindhā¹¹⁴ kāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa, Kailāsa is spoken of as the residence of Kuvera, and no mention is made of Śiva as residing there:¹¹⁵

Kishk. 44, 27 ff. (ed. Gorresio = Bombay ed. 43, 20 f.).—*Tam tu*

¹¹⁴ In the Bombay edition this word is written 'Kishkindhā,' without a *y* before the final *ā*, which it has in Gorresio's edition.

¹¹⁵ See, however, the passage from the Sundara Kāṇḍa, sect. 89, which will be quoted in the Appendix, where Mahādeva is said to visit Kuvera, or mount Kailāsa.

siḡhram atikramya kántaraṁ loma-harṣaṇam | pāṇḍuraṁ drakṣyatha tataḥ Kailāsaṁ nāma parvatam | tatra pāṇḍura-meghābhaṁ Jāmbūnada-pariṣhṛītam | Kuvera-bhavanaṁ divyaṁ nirmitaṁ Viśvakarmaṇā |
 "Having quickly passed over that dreadful desert, you shall then see the white mountain, called Kailāsa, and there the celestial palace of Kuvera, formed by Viśvakarman, in colour like a brilliant cloud, and decorated with gold."

The Bombay edition, 43, 54 ff., has the following lines, in which Rudra may be referred to: *Tam atikramya śailendram uttaras toyasāṁ nidhiḥ | tatra Somagirir nāma madhye hemamayo mahān | 55. Sa tu deśo viśūryo 'pi tasya bhāsā prakāśate | sūrya-lakṣmyā 'bhivijneyo tapateva Vivasvata | 56. Bhagavāns tatra viśvātmā S'ambhur ekādaśāt-makaḥ | Brahmā vasati deveśo brahmarshi-parivārītaḥ*¹¹⁶ | 54. "Beyond this monarch of mountains is the northern ocean, in the midst of which stands the great golden mountain, called Somagiri. 55. With its lustre that region, although sunless, shines; and is distinguished by a solar splendour, as if from the beams of Vivasvat (the sun). 56. There the divine soul of the universe, the eleven-fold Sambhu, Brahmā, lord of the gods, dwells, attended by the Brahman Rishis."

In Gorresio's edition (44, 117 ff) this passage shows a number of various readings: *Kurūṁs tān samatikramya uttare payasāṁ nidhiḥ | tatra Somagirir nāma hiraṇmaya-samo mahān | 118. Indra-loka-gatāḥ ye cha Brahma-loka-gatāś cha ye | sarve te samavaiśhanta girirājāṁ divaṁ 'gatāḥ | 119. Asūryo 'pi hi deśaḥ sa tasya bhāsā prakāśate | sasūryaḥ iva lakṣmīrūpā tapatīva divākare | 120. Bhagavāns tatra bhūtātmā Srayambhūr bahudhātmaḥ | Brahmā bhavati caśyātmā sarvātmā sarva-bhāvanaḥ | 117. "Beyond, to the north of the Uttara Kurus, is an ocean, in which is a great mountain, as it were of gold. 118. All those who have gone to the sky, to the world of Indra, or to that of Brahmā, have beheld the king of mountains. 119. By its*

¹¹⁶ The commentator thus explains this verse: *Viśvam atati vyāpnoti iti viśvātmā vyūpakas tena Viśṇu-rūpaḥ | viśṇu-vyūptāv ity anusārāt | sa eva S'ambhuḥ sam bhavaty aśmūt | sa eva ekādaśātmakaḥ ekādaśānubhūrtiḥ ekādaśa-rudrātmakaḥ | sa eva Brahmā brīmhaṇatvāt jagat-sraṣṭṛitvāt |* "Viśvātmā means, he who pervades all things; and consequently he is in the form of Viśṇu, as Viśṇu has the sense of pervader. The same being is S'ambhu, he from whom prosperity (*śam*) arises (*bhāvati*); and he is also elevenfold, in the form of the eleven Rudras, who signify eleven repetitions of him (?). The same being is also Brahmā, from his increasing,—creating the world."

light that region shines, although sunless, as if it had a sun, and resplendent as if the lord of day were blazing. 120. There the divine soul of beings, Svayambhū, Brahmā, dwells, self-subdued, the soul, and producer of all things." Here there is no reference to Mahādeva, Svayambhū being substituted for Sambhu.

Another passage relating to Rudra which occurs in Gorresio's recension of the Rāmāyaṇa is the following (though it is not to be found in the corresponding section of the Bombay edition):

Kishk. 44, 46 ff.—*Taṁ tu deśam atikramya Trisṛiṅgo nāma parvataḥ | tasya pāde saro divyam mahat lāṅchana-pushkaram | tataḥ prachyavate divyā tīkṣhṇa-śrotās tarangiṇī | nadī naika-grahākīrṇā kuṭilā loka-bhū-vinī | tasyaikāṁ kāṅchanaṁ sṛiṅgam parvatasyāgni-sannibham | vaidūrya-mayam ekancha śailasyāśya samuchhṛitam | Anutpanneshu bhūteshu babhūva kila bhūmitaḥ | agrajaḥ sarva-bhūtānāṁ Viśvakarmeti viśrutaḥ | tat tasya kila paurāṇam agnihotram mahātmanaḥ | āstī trisīkharāḥ śailaḥ pravṛtītās tatra ye 'gnayah | tatra sarvāṇi bhūtāni sarvamedhe mahāmakhe | kṛtvā 'bhavaḥ mahātejāḥ sarva-loka-maheśvaraḥ | Rudrasya kila saṁsthānaṁ saro vai sārva-medhikam | tataḥ pravṛtītā Sarayūr ghora-nakravatī nadī | deva-gandharva-patagūḥ piśāchoraga-dānavāḥ | pratiśanti na taṁ deśam pradīptam ira pūrvakam | tam atikramya śailendram Mahaderābhipālitam | ityādi |* "When that region has been overpassed, a mountain called Trisṛiṅga [will be seen], at the foot of which is a divine lake, of large dimensions, filled with golden lotuses. Thence flows a divine billowy river, with rapid stream, swarming with crocodiles, winding, gladdening the world. That mountain has one golden peak, [one] resembling fire, and it has also one elevated point formed of lapis lazuli. When no creatures had as yet come into existence, there sprang from the earth the first of all beings, known as Viśvakarman. This triple-peaked mountain was the scene of the ancient Agnihotra sacrifice of that great being, where all the fires were employed. Having formed all beings there at this great universal sacrifice, he became the mighty lord (*maheśvara*) of all worlds. This lake of the universal sacrifice is the abode of Rudra; and from it issues the river Sarayū, abounding in dreadful crocodiles. Gods, Gandharvas, birds, Piśāchas, snakes, and Dānavas, do not enter that region, which is like blazing fire. Having overpassed that great mountain, protected by Mahādeva," etc.*

In regard to the story of Viśvakarman, which is not usually met with in the Purāṇas, and does not harmonize well with the course of their cosmogony, compare the two hymns in pp. 5 ff., the story from the Nirukta in p. 9, above, and the Satap. Br. xiii. 7, 1, 14.

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiii. 7, 1, 14.—*Tena ha etena Viśvakarmā Bhāuvanaḥ ijo | teneshvā 'tyatishkṣhat sarvāṇi bhūtāni idam sarvam abhavat | atitishkṣhati sarvāṇi bhūtāni idam sarvam bhavati yaḥ evam vidvān sarva-medhena yajate yo vā etad evam veda | 15. Tam ha Kāśyapo yājyāṇchakāra | tad api Bhūmīḥ ślokaṁ jagau | "na mā martyaḥ kaśchana dātum arhati Viśvakarman Bhāuvana mandah ānitha | upamankshyati syā salilasya madhye mrihassha te sangarah Kāśyapāya" iti |* "With this sacrifice, Viśvakarman, the son of Bhuvana, sacrificed. Having sacrificed with it, he overpassed all beings, and became all this. That man overpasses all beings and becomes all this, who, knowing this, sacrifices with the Sarva-medha ('universal sacrifice'), or he who thus knows this. 15. Kāśyapa performed this sacrifice for him. Wherefore also the Earth recited a verse: ¹¹⁷ 'No mortal ought to bestow me. Viśvakarman, son of Bhuvana, thou wast foolish. She (the earth) will sink into the midst of the water. This promise of thine to Kāśyapa is vain.'

It would appear as if the author of the preceding passage of the Rāmāyaṇa intended to identify Rudra with Viśvakarman, when he says that the latter "became the mighty lord (*maheśvara*) of all worlds." Compare the passages from the Kūrma Purāṇa and Mahābhārata quoted below in notes 131 and 133, pp. 376 and 377; and Mahābhārata, Śāntip. 241, quoted in a note to p. 372, vol. v., of this work. If Mahādeva is identified with Viśvakarman, he must, according to the Rāmā-

¹¹⁷ The commentator observes on this: *Asmai cha Viśvālmā bhūmīm dātum iyesha tatra cha kule Bhūmīr āpi imam ślokaṁ gītavati | tvam tu mandah mandamātr janah ānitha babhūvitha jātah ity arthah | upa-śabdo na-śabdasya nrthe | yaḥ cha aiakyaṁ pratyūñite mandah ity abhiprāyah |* "Viśvakarman desired to give the earth to him, and at that time the Earth also sang this verse. Thou wast 'dull,' dull of understanding. The preposition *upa* is here used in the sense of *na*. And the sense is that he who promises what is impossible is foolish." Compare the passage of the Mahābhārata, Vana-parvan, v. 10209 (in the first vol. of this work, p. 461), where the earth is said to have been given to Kāśyapa by Parasurāma; and another text from the Anuśāsana-parvan, vv. 7232 ff. (*ibid* p. 464), where the earth is said to have become offended with king Anga, who desired to bestow her on the Brahmana, and to have in consequence abandoned her from. Kāśyapa afterwards entered into her, and she became his daughter. Compare also Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, vii. 4, 3, 5 (quoted above, p. 27).

yana and Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, be regarded as sprung from the earth, or Bhuvana, and therefore not eternal. It is to be noted, however, that the Satap. Br. speaks of this Viśvakarman as a mortal, and the Ait. Br. speaks of him as a prince who conquered the earth.

In the next passage¹¹⁸ Mahādeva is represented as visiting Kuvera on Mount Kailāsa, and as acknowledging the divinity of Rāma :

Rām. (ed. Gorresio) v. 89, 6 ff.—*Atha pradhāno dharmātmā lokāndam īśvaraḥ prabhuḥ | tataḥ sabhāyām devasya rājno Vaiśravaṇasya saḥ | dhanādhyakṣa-sabhān devaḥ prāpto hi Vṛishhabha-dhvajaḥ | Umā-sahāyo deveśo gaṇaiś cha bahubhir vṛitaḥ | avatīrya vṛishāt tūrṇam mahitaḥ śūla-dhṛig vibhuḥ | giree tasya mahātejāḥ pravishṭas tu sabhām Haraḥ | Riddhyā sahāya-yuktas cha tathā Vaiśravaṇaḥ svayam | anyonyam tau samālingya upaviṣṭāv ubhāv api | sabhāyām tatra tau devau te cha devāḥ yathākramam | upaviṣṭāḥ gaṇās chaiva Yakṣas cha saha Guhyakāḥ | akṣa-dyūtaṁ tatas tābhyām pravṛittaṁ samanantaram | etasminn antare tatra Rākshasendraṁ Vibhīṣhaṇam | dṛiṣṭvā Paulastyaṁ āyantaṁ Sivaḥ prāha dhanesvaram | ayaṁ Vibhīṣhaṇaḥ praptaḥ śaraṇam tava pāṛthiva | manyunū bhipluto viro Rākshasendra-vimānitaḥ | ityādi |*

“Now the righteous and mighty ruler of the worlds, whose banner is a bull, the god of gods, accompanied by Umā, and attended by numerous hosts, came then: ‘o the assembly of the divine king Vaiśravaṇa (Kuvera), the lord of riches. Alighting quickly from his bull, Hara, the mighty lord, the wielder of the trident, being received with honour, entered into the assembly on that mountain (Kailāsa, v. 4); and at the same time Vaiśravaṇa himself, with Riddhi (his wife),¹¹⁹ and attended by his companions, [came in]. Having embraced each other, those two gods with the other deities sat down in order in the assembly, together with their hosts, and the Yakshas and Guhyakas. The two gods then began to play at dice. In the mean time, beholding the eminent Rākshasa Vibhīṣhaṇa, the son of Pulastya, approaching, Śiva says to the lord of riches, ‘This, O king, is the hero Vibhīṣhaṇa, who has resorted to thee, overwhelmed by distress, having been dishonoured by the chief of the Rākshasas (Rāvaṇa),’ etc., etc.

While Śiva is speaking, Vibhīṣhaṇa arrives, and bows down before

¹¹⁸ This passage, however, is only to be found in Gorresio's recension, and not in the section of the Devanagari recension which corresponds to it—viz. vi. 17, 1, ff.

¹¹⁹ See Böhtlingk and Roth, s.v. Riddhi, and the Mahābhārata, Anuśāsana-parvan, 675, and 7637, as well as the Harivaṁśa, 7167, 7739, there referred to.

the deities, who tell him to stand up; and go to Rāma, who will install him king of the Rākshasas (vv. 21 ff.). Vibhishana stands, with his head bent downwards, and sunk in contemplation, when Siva again speaks to him (vv. 37 ff.): *Taṁ dhyāyamānam bhagavān vāśha prabhuḥ avyayaḥ | uttiṣṭhotttiṣṭha rājendra sukhān āpnuhi śāśvataṁ |* 39. *Tasmād uttiṣṭha gachha tvam purāṇam prabhum avyayaṁ | ādhārāṁ sarvabhūtānāṁ śāśvataṁ niravagraham | sa hi sarva-nidhānaṁ cha gatir gatimatāṁ varaḥ | kṛtsnasya jagato mūlaṁ tasmād gachhasva Rāghavam |* "The divine, imperishable lord said: 'Stand up, stand up, prince of kings, obtain ever-during happiness. . . . Stand up, therefore, go to the ancient, imperishable lord, the support of all beings, eternal, uncontrolled. For he, the most excellent, contains all things, and is the refuge of all who seek a refuge, the root of the whole world: wherefore go to Rāghava (Rāma).'" Vibhishana then departs through the air, to go to Rāma.¹²⁰

¹²⁰ In the following passages some of Mahādeva's achievements are alluded to:— iii. 30, 27 (ed. Bomb.), and iii. 35, 93 (Gorr.): *Sa papāta Khara bhūman dahyamānaḥ śarāgninā | Rudreṇeva vinirṅgaḥḥaḥ Svetāranye purā 'ndhakaḥ |* "[The Rākshasa] Khara fell on the ground, burnt by the fire of the arrow, like Andhaka [who was] formerly consumed by Rudra in the S'veta forest." (Compare A. V. xi. 2, 7, above, pp. 334, 336, where Rudra is called the slayer of Ardhaka.) iv. 5, 30 (Gorr.): *Yathā kruddhanya Rudrasya Tripuraṁ vai vijigyushaḥ |* "[The frowning face of Rāma] like that of the incensed Rudra, who had conquered Tripura." vi. 51, 17 (Gorr.): "The Rākshasa trembled when smitten by Lakshmana's arrow, like the dreadful portal of Tripura, when struck by the bolt of Rudra" (*Rudra-vāṇāhataṁ ghoram yathā Tripura-gopuram*). In the following verse allusion is made to Rudra as a slaughterer of animals: vi. 73, 37 f. (Gorr. = Bombay ed. vi. 94, 35). *Hatair āśvair padātair cha tad babhūva raṇājiram | ākrīḍaḥ iva Rudrasya kruddhasya nighnataḥ paśūn |* "With slain horses and footmen, that battle-field became like the garden of the enraged Rudra when slaughtering animals." I do not know what the next verse refers to, vi. 55, 88 (Gorr.): *Kumbhasya patato rūpam bhagnasyorasi muṣhṭinā | Īśvareṇābhīpannasya rūpam Paśupater iva |* "The appearance of Kumbha when shattered on the chest by the fist of Sugrīva, was like the appearance of Paśupati (Siva) when overcome by Īśvara." The commentator quoted by Gorresio has the following note in explanation: *Īśvareṇa pralaya-kālena hetunā abhipannasya lohān abhīraṇasya Paśupateḥ Rudrasya rūpam iva rūpam babhūva ity arthaḥ |* The Bomb. ed. (76, 93) reads in the second line: *babhau Rudrābhīpannasya yathā rūpam Gavāmpateḥ |* which the commentator renders, "appeared like the form of the lord of rays (the sun), overcome by Rudra" (*Rudreṇa abhipannasya abhībhūtasya Gavāmpateḥ Sūryasya iva*). It would almost seem (strange as it may appear) as if the author of the recension of the Rāmāyaṇa published by Gorresio, had not understood the word Gavāmpatī (lord of cows or rays) as designating the sun, when he took it for the equivalent of Paśupati. Īśvara and Paśupati are both names of Rudra; and he could not be assailed by himself. Gavāmpatī occurs in the hymn to the Sun in the Mahābhārata, iii. 192 (as quoted by Böhtlingk and Roth, s.v.), as one of the numerous names or epithets of the Sun.

From the passages quoted above from the Mahābhārata and Brāhmaṇas in p. 284, and pp. 200 and 202, note, it appears as if some contest had at one time existed between the votaries of Mahādeva, and those of other deities, in regard to adoration of the former. It may perhaps be inferred from the passages cited in pp. 288–291, also, that the worship of this god, as practised by some tribes, was regarded by others with aversion, or even with horror. Some further indications of this aversion may be discovered in the myth of Dakṣa's sacrifice, as related in the Mahābhārata, and in the Vāyu and other Purāṇas (see Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, pp. 61 ff. = pp. 120 ff. of Dr. Hall's ed., vol. i.).

This story is told, perhaps in its simplest form, in the following passage of the Rāmāyaṇa, i. 66, 7 ff. (ed. Schlegel and Bombay = 68, 7 ff Gorresio):

Evam uktas tu Janakāḥ pratyuvācha mahāmuniḥ | śrūyatām asya dhanuḥśo yad-artham iha tiṣṭhati | Devarātaḥ iti khyāto Nimeḥ śhaśṭho (jyeshṭho, Bomb. ed.) mahāpatiḥ | nyāso 'yaṁ tasya bhagavan hato datto mahātmanaḥ | Dakṣa-yajna-badhe pūrvaṁ dhanur āyama vīryavān | vidhvasya tridāśān Rudraḥ salilam idam abravīt | "yasmād bhāgārthino¹²¹ bhāgān nākalpayata me surāḥ | varāṅgāni [= śīrāmāi, Comm. in Bomb. ed.] mahārhaṇi dhanuḥśa śatayāmi vaḥ | tato vimanasaḥ sarve devāḥ vai muni-pungava | prāsādayanta devesaṁ teshāṁ prito 'bhavad Bhavaḥ | pritaśchūpi dadau teshāṁ tāny angāni maharajasūm | dhanuḥśa yāni yāny āsan sūtītāni mahātmanā | tad etad deva-devasya dhanu-ratnam mahātmanaḥ | nyāso-bhūtaṁ tadā nyastaṁ asmākam pūrvake viśho |¹²²

"Janaka, being thus addressed, replied to the great muni: 'Hear, regarding this bow, from what cause it is here. A king called Devarāta was the sixth in descent from Nimi. This [bow] was a deposit committed to the hands of this great personage. Formerly, at the destruction of Dakṣa's sacrifice, the heroic Rudra, when he had drawn this bow, and routed the gods, thus spake in derision: "Since, ye gods, ye have divided to me no portion, though I desired it, I cut off your most precious heads with my bow." Then all the deities, being dis-

¹²¹ *Śviṣṭakṛtīd-ādī-yajna-bhāgārthino mama* | "To me who desired a share in the Svīhtakṛtīd, etc., offering."—Comm.

¹²² This last line runs as follows in Gorresio's edition (ch. lxviii. 13): *Tiṣṭhaty adyapī bhagavan kṛto 'smākam supujitam* | The other various readings, though numerous, are unimportant.

tressed, propitiated the god of gods, who became favourable to them, and restored the limbs of those glorious beings which had been cut off by the mighty bow. This is the precious bow of the great deity, which was at that time deposited with our ancestor.' ”

In this version of the myth there is no mention of Rudra commissioning Virabhadra, or any other demons, to destroy the sacrifice or put the gods to flight. He is simply said to wound the gods with his bow.¹²³

The same story is told in the Sauptika-parvan, vv. 786–808, and in greater detail in the Sānti-parvan, of the Mahābhārata, in verses 10226–10258, and is immediately afterwards repeated in vv. 10275 ff. According to the first account (which is given in answer to a question regarding the origin of Jvara, Fever), Umā, Siva's wife, seeing the gods passing by in chariots, inquires of her husband where they are going, and is told by him that they are proceeding to Daksha's horse-sacrifice. The goddess then asks why her lord also does not go. He replies: *Surair eva mahābhāge pūrvam etad anusṭhitam | yajneshu sarveshu mama na bhūgaḥ upakalpitaḥ | pūrvopāyopapannena mārgena varavarṇini | na me surāḥ prayachchanti bhūgaṁ yajnasya dharmataḥ*¹²⁴ |

¹²³ This same story is again briefly alluded to in the following other passages of the Rāmāyaṇa:—iii. 30, 36 (ed. Gorr. = Bomb. ed. iii. 24, 35): *Taṁ drisṭvā tejasā yuktāṁ vivyathur vana-devatāḥ | Dakshasyeva kratuṁ hantum udyatāstram Pinākinam* | “Beholding him (Rāma), possessed of might, the sylvan deities were distressed, as if he had been Pinākin (S'iva) with his weapon ready to destroy the sacrifice of Daksha.” Ibid. 70, 2: *Hantu-kāman paśum Rudraṁ kruddhām Daksha-kratau yathā* | “Like the incensed Rudra who sought to slay the victim at the sacrifice of Daksha.” (The Bomb. ed. iii. 65, 2, has a quite different reading: *Dagdhu-kāman jagat sarvaṁ yugānte cha yathā Haram* | “Like Hara [Rudra] desirous of burning up the whole world at the end of the Yuga.”) And again, vi. 54, 33 (ed. Gorr.): *Tato vishphārayāmāsa Rāmas tad dhanur uttamam | bhagavān eva sankruddho Bhavaḥ kratu-jighāmsayā* | “Then Rāma stretched that excellent bow, like the divine Bhava enraged, and seeking to destroy the sacrifice.” Rudra's followers are, however, mentioned in the Rāmāyaṇa. Thus in iii. 31, 10 (ed. Gorr.) it is said: “*Sa tathā parivṛito ghoratḥ rākshasair nṛi-varātmajaḥ | Mahādevaḥ pīṭri-vane gaṇaiḥ pārśva-gatair eva* | “This son of an eminent man (Rāma) was surrounded by these horrible Rākshasas, like Mahādeva by his attendant hosts in a cemetery.” (Instead of the last line the Bomb. ed. has the following, iii. 25, 12: *Tṛhiṣṭro eva Mahādevo vṛitaḥ pārishadām gaṇaiḥ*.) And in another place (v. 12, 39, ed. Gorr.) S'iva is called the lord of demons (*gṛīham Bhūtapaterevā*).

¹²⁴ The same words nearly are put into the mouth of Mahādeva in the Vāyupurāṇa. See Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, vol. i., p. 126, of Dr. Hall's ed.

"The former practice of the gods has been, that in all sacrifices no portion should be divided to me. By custom, established by the earliest arrangement, the gods lawfully (*dharmataḥ*) allot me no share in the sacrifice." Umā is extremely chagrined that her husband, a god of so great dignity, should be so treated. Perceiving his wife's distress, Śiva goes, with his attendants, and puts an end to the sacrifice. The sacrifice takes the form of a deer, and is followed by Śiva to the sky. A drop of sweat falls from his forehead, from which a fire proceeds, out of which again a formidable being is born, Jvara (fever), which burns up the sacrifice, puts the gods to flight, etc. On this Brahmā appears to Śiva, and promises that the gods shall henceforth give him a share in the sacrifice (*bhavato 'hi surāḥ sarve bhāgaṁ dāsyanti vai prabho*), and proposes that Jvara (fever) shall be allowed to range over the earth. Śiva is propitiated, and assents to Brahmā's proposal, and has ever afterwards obtained a share in the sacrifice (*ity ukto Brahmanā devo bhāge chāpi prakalpito | bhagavantaṁ tathety āha . . . parāṇcha prītim agamad utmayamścha Pināka-dhrik | avāpa cha tadā bhāgaṁ yathoktam Brahmanā Bhavaḥ*).

The second version of the story is as follows: vv. 10272 ff. Dakṣa formerly commenced a sacrifice at Gangādvāra in the Himālaya, which was attended by the various orders of divine beings, including Indra and Brahmā. Dadhichi, however, a votary of Rudra, was indignant that no worship was to be offered to that deity. 10283 ff. *Tān dr̥ṣṭvā manyunā "vishto Dadhichir vākyam abravīt | "nāyaṁ yajno na vā dharmo yatra Rudro na ijjate | badha-bandham prapannāḥ vai kinnu kālasya paryayaḥ | kinnu mohād na paśyanti vināśam paryupasthitam | upasthitam mahāghoraṁ na budhyanti mahādhvare"* | *Ity uktvā sa mahā-yogī paśyati dhyāna-chakshuḥ | sa paśyati Mādādevaṁ devīncha vara-dām kubhām | Nāradaṁcha mahātmānaṁ tasyāḥ devyāḥ samīpataḥ | santosham paramaṁ lebbe iti nischitya yoga-vit | eka-mantrās tu te sarve yoneṣo na nimantritaḥ*¹²⁵ | *tasmād deśād apākramya Dadhichir vākyam abravīt | apūjya-pūjanāchechaiva pūjyānāncāpy apūjanāt | nri-ghātaka-samam pūpaṁ śasvat prapnoti mānavaḥ*¹²⁶ | *anṛitaṁ nokta-pūrvam me na cha*

¹²⁵ A line similarly expressed occurs a little further on.

¹²⁶ The account of Dakṣa's sacrifice given in the Vāyu-purāṇa, and translated by Prof. Wilson, V.P. (vol. i., pp. 122 ff. of Dr. Hall's ed.), has a good many lines which correspond nearly with some in this passage of the Mahābhārata. Of these Dr. Hall was kind enough to send me copies. One of them agrees in sense with this verse.

*egkshye kadāchana | devatānām rishinām cha madhye satyam bravīmy aham |
agatam Pasubhartāraṁ sraṣṭāraṁ jagataḥ patim | adhware yajna-bhok-
tāraṁ sarveshām paśyata prabhum | Dakṣhaḥ uvācha | Santi no bahavo
Rudrāḥ śula-hastāḥ kapardīnāḥ | ekādasa-sthāna-gatāḥ nāhaṁ vedme Ma-
heśwaram*¹²⁷ | *Dadhīcher uvācha | sarveshām eva mantrō 'yaṁ yendāsau na
nimantritaḥ*¹²⁸ | *yathā 'ham S'ankarād ūrdhvaṁ nānyam paśyāmi dawa-
tam | tathā Dakṣasya vipulō yajno 'yaṁ na bhaviṣhyati | Dakṣhaḥ uvācha |
etan makheśāya suvarṇa-pūtre haviḥ samastaṁ vidhi-mantra pūtam | Viś-
ṇor nayāmy apratimasya*¹²⁹ | *bhāgam prabhur vibhuḥ chāhavanītya eśhaḥ |
Devy uvācha | kim nāma dūnaṁ viśhamaṁ tapo vā kuryām ahaṁ yena
patir namādya | labheta bhāgam bhagavān achintyo ardhham tathā bhā-
gam aitho tritīyam | eiam bruvāṇām bhagavān sva-patnīm prahrushṭa-
rūpaḥ kṣubhitām uvācha | na cetṣi mām devi kṛśodārūṅgi kim nāma yuk-
taṁ vachanam makheśe | ahaṁ vijānāmi viśāla-netre dhyānena hīnāḥ na
vidanty asantah | tavādya mohena cha sendra-dēvāḥ lokāḥ trayaḥ sarvataḥ
eva mūdhāḥ | mām adhware śaṁsītārāḥ sturanti rathanīnāṁ sāma-gāś
ohopagantī | mām brāhmaṇāḥ bi akṣma-vidō yajante mamādhiaryavah kalpa-
yante cha bhāgam | Devy uvācha | supṛākṛito 'pi puruṣo sarvaḥ strī-
janasaṁsadi | stauti garvāyate chāpi evam ātmānam na saṁśayaḥ |
Bhagavān uvācha | nātmānaṁ staumi dereśi paśya me tanu-madhyame |
yaṁ sraṣṭhyāmi carārohe yugārthe vara-carṇini |*

“Beholding them, Dadhīchi, filled with indignation, thus spake :
‘This is no sacrifice, nor a legitimate ceremony, in which Rudra is
not worshipped. [These gods] have become entangled in the bonds of
destruction. Is this the adverse influence of time? or is it through
delusion that they do not see that ruin is at hand? They perceive not
that a great calamity is impending at the sacrifice.’ Having so spoken,
this great devotee beheld with the eye of contemplation: he sees
Mahādeva and his boon-bestowing and auspicious goddess, and close to
her the great Nārada, and received the highest satisfaction. Dadhīchi,
versed in meditation, having ascertained that all the gods had adopted
a common resolution that they would not invite Mahādeva, issued

¹²⁷ A verse closely resembling this occurs in the Vāyu Purāṇa

¹²⁸ The corresponding line runs thus in the Vāyu Purāṇa *Sarveshām eka-mantrō
'yaṁ yenevo na nimantritaḥ*, which Prof. Wilson thus renders “The invocation that
is not addressed to Iśa is, for all, but a solitary (and imperfect) summons”

¹²⁹ Instead of *bhāgam*, etc., the Vāyu Purāṇa reads *sarvam pṛābhor vidhor hy āha-
vaniya-nityam*.

forth from that [sacrificial] ground, and spake thus: 'By worshipping that which ought not to be worshipped, and neglecting to worship that which ought to be worshipped, a man ever incurs sin equal to that of a murderer. I have never before uttered, neither shall I ever utter, falsehood. Among gods and rishis I declare the truth. Behold Paśubhartṛi (Śiva) arrived, the creator, the master of the world, the lord of all, the eater of the sacrifice.' Daksha replied: 'We have many Rudras, armed with tridents, and wearing spirally-braided hair, who occupy eleven places.¹³⁰ I know not Maheśvara.' Dadhīchi answered: 'This is a [preconcerted] plan of all [the gods] that he (Mahādeva) has not been invited. Since I perceive Śankara, and no other deity, to be supreme, therefore this sacrifice of Daksha shall not be prosperous.' Daksha spake: 'I offer to the lord of sacrifice (Viṣṇu), in a golden vessel, this entire oblation purified by rites and by texts, the share of the incomparable Viṣṇu: he is the lord, the all-pervading, the sacrificial fire.'¹³¹ Devī (who, without any preamble, is here introduced as speaking) said: 'What liberality or arduous austerity can I perform whereby my divine, incomprehensible husband may to-day obtain a share, a half-share, or a third?' The god, delighted in aspect, addressed his troubled wife who had thus spoken: 'Thou knowest me not, goddess, slender of waist and limb; nor what speech befits the lord of sacrifice. I know, O large-eyed; but the wicked, devoid of

¹³⁰ Compare the phrase *ekādaśātmanā* above, p. 367.

¹³¹ Prof. Wilson (p. 124 f) has the following note on the parallel passage of the Vāyu Purāṇa: "The Kūrma Purāṇa gives also this discussion between Dadhīcha and Dakṣa, and their dialogue contains some curious matter. Dakṣa, for instance, states that no portion of a sacrifice is ever allotted to Śiva, and no prayers are directed to be addressed to him, or to his bride (*sarveśhv etā hi yajneśhv na bhāgah parikalpitah | na mantīh bhūyayū sārđham Śankarasyeti neśhyate*). Dadhīcha apparently evades the objection, and claims a share for Rudra, consisting of the triad of gods, as one with the sun, who is undoubtedly hymned by the several ministering priests of the Vedas (*na stūyate sahasrāmśuh sāmāgūdhvāryu-hotrībhih | pasyamañ Vistakarmāṇāñ Rudraṁ mūrty-trayīmāyam*). Dakṣa replies that the twelve Ādityas receive special oblations, that they are all the suns, and that he knows of no other. The Munis, who overhear the dispute, concur in his sentiments (*ye etā dādaśādīstīyūh Āditya-yajna-bhāgmañ | sarve suryāh itī jneyāh na hy anyo vidyate ravih | evam ukte ts munayah samāyātāh dīdṛkṣahavah | vādham ity abruvan Dakṣam tasya sālhyā-kārṇaḥ*). These notions seem to have been exchanged for others in the days of the Padma P. and Bhāgavata, as they place Dakṣa's neglect of Śiva to the latter's filthy practices—his going naked, smearing himself with ashes," etc., etc. An abstract of the story as given in the Bhāgavata will be found in the text.

reflection, know not: and the three worlds, including Indra and the gods, are to-day altogether bewildered with thy bewilderment. Worshipers praise me at the sacrifice, singers of the sāma chant the rathantara, Brahmans, versed in the veda (*brahma*), adore me, and Adhvaryu (i.e. Yajurvedic) priests divide for me a portion.'¹³² Devī replied: 'Doubtless, every common man praises and magnifies himself in an assembly of women.' Mahādeva answered: 'I praise not myself, queen of the gods; behold, slender-waisted, beautiful-complexioned [goddess], what being I shall create.'" Mahādeva accordingly creates a dreadful being, who, attended by hosts of other frightful creatures, demolishes all Daksha's preparations for his sacrifice. Brahmā and the other gods humbly inquire of this destroyer who he is. He replies that he is neither Rudra nor Devī, but Virabhadra, sent to destroy the sacrifice, and exhorts them to submit to Mahādeva, whose wrath is better than the beneficence of any other god (*varaṁ krodho 'pi devasya vara-dānaṁ na chānyataḥ*). Upon this Daksha sings the praises of Maheśvara.¹³³ The latter then appears, and assents to Daksha's request that his preparations for sacrifice shall not be fruitless (vv. 10338 ff.). Daksha then celebrates him by reciting his eight thousand names.

The following is an abstract of the same story as told in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, book iv. sections 2-7, with a colouring different from that of the Mahābhārata, and some interesting illustrations of the hostility between the Śaivas and the Vaiṣṇavas, or between the former and the more orthodox adherents of the Vedas, which, not-

¹³² The text of the Vāyu Purāṇa as translated by Prof. Wilson (Vish. Pur., p. 65 =p. 128 of Dr. Hall's ed. vol. i.) differs somewhat from that of the Mahābhārata, as here given. The former text has been copied for me by Prof. Fitz-Edward Hall from the Guikowar MS. in the India Office Library, and is as follows: *Mamādhvare iamaitāḥ stuvanti rathantare sāma gūyanti geyam | abrahmāṇe brahma-satre yajante mamādhvaryavaḥ kalpayante cha bhūgam* | "At my sacrifice worshippers praise (me); in the rathantara they sing the sāma song; they adore (me) in a sacrifice of devotion without Brahmans; and the adhvaryus divide for me a portion." It is remarkable that Mahādeva's worship should be here described as performed "without Brahmans." But what are we to make of the word "advaryu"? Could it mean, in later times at least, anything else than the Brahmanical priest so called?

¹³³ In this passage (v. 10332) Mahādeva is called Viśvakarman (*Devo nābhūyate tatra Viśvakarmā Mahēśvaraḥ*). Compare the passage from the Rāmāyaṇa, above, p. 368 f., and note 131, p. 376. There appears to be some confusion in the narrative as given in verses 10331 ff. Though Daksha had already made his submission to Mahādeva, the story seems to be begun over again, or recapitulated.

withstanding the conciliation of the conflicting views introduced by the writer at the close of the story, no doubt had, and perhaps still has, a real existence in the minds of many of the sectaries. Satī, the wife of Siva, was the daughter of Daksha, as we are told in the same work (iv. 1, 47, 48): *Prasūtim Mānavīm Dakṣaḥ upayame hy Ajātmajāḥ | tasyām sasarja duhitṛiḥ śoḍaśūmāla-lochanāḥ | trayodaśādāḍ Dharmāya tathaikām Agnaye vibhuḥ | pitṛibhyaḥ ekām yuktēbhyo Bhavāyaikām bhava-chhīde |* "Daksha, the son of Aja (the 'unborn'—he is said [v. 11] to be the son of Bruhmā=Aja), married Prasūti, the daughter of Manu. From her he begot sixteen pure-eyed daughters. Of these this lord gave thirteen to Dharma, one to Agni, one to the meditative [or united, *saṁyatebhyo militebhyo vā*, Comm.] Pitṛis, and one to Bhava (Siva), the destroyer of existence." Satī, however, bore no children to Siva. i. 64. *Bhavyasya patnī tu Satī Bhavaṁ devam anuvratā | ātmanaḥ sadṛiṣam putraṁ na lebhe guṇa-śilataḥ |*

In the second section we are informed how enmity arose between Mahādeva and his father-in-law Daksha. It appears that the gods and rishis were assembled at a sacrifice celebrated by the Prajāpatīs. On the entrance of Daksha, all the personages who were present, rose to salute him, excepting only Virinchya (Brahmā) and Mahādeva. Daksha, after making his obeisance to Brahmā, sat down by his command; but was offended at the treatment he received from Siva (iv. 2, 8 ff.): *Prān nishanṇam Mṛidaṁ dṛishṭvā nāmṛishat tad-anā-dṛitaḥ | uvācha vāmaṁ chakshurbhṛyām abhivikṣhya dahann iva | śrūyatām brahmarshayo me saha-devāḥ sahāgnayaḥ | sādḥnām bruvato vṛittam nājnānūd na cha matsarāt | ayaṁ tu loka-pālānām yaśoghno nirapatrapaḥ | sadbhir ācharitaḥ panthāḥ yena stabdhena dūṣitaḥ | esha me śishyatām prāpto yan me duhitur agrahit | pūnim viprāgni-mukhataḥ sāvitṛyāḥ iva sādhu-vat | grihitvā mṛiga-śūvāksyāḥ pūnim markṭa-lochanaḥ | praty-utthānādbhivādārhe vāchā 'py akṛita nochitam | lupta-kriyāyūśuchaye mānina bhinna-setave | anichchann apy adām bālān śūdrāyevosattīm giram | pretāvūśeshu ghoreshu pretair bhūta-ganair vṛitaḥ | aṭaty unmattavā nagno vyupta-keśo hasan rudan | chitā-bhasma-kṛita-śnānāḥ preta-sraṇ nraṣṭhi-bhūṣaṇaḥ | śivōpadeśo hy aśivo matto matta-janapriyaḥ | patiḥ pramatha-bhūtānām tṛmo-mātrātmakātmanām | tasmai unmāda-nāthāya nashṭa-sauckāya durhṛide | dattā mayā vata sādho chodite parameshṭhinā | vinindyaiṣaṁ sa Gīriṣam apratipam avasthitam | Dakṣo 'thāpaḥ upa-*

*agrisya kruddhaḥ śaptam prācākrame | ayaṁ tu deva-yajane Indrapendrā-
dībhīr Bhavaḥ | saha bhūgaṁ na labhatām devav deva-gaṇādhamah |*
“Beholding Mṛiḍa (Siva) previously seated, Daksha did not brook his want of respect; and looking at him obliquely with his eyes, as if consuming him, thus spake: ‘Hear me, ye Brahman rishis, with the gods and the Agnis, while I, neither from ignorance nor from passion, describe what is the practice of virtuous persons. But this shameless being (Siva) detracts from the reputation of the guardians of the world,—he by whom, stubborn as he is, the course pursued by the good is transgressed. He assumed the position of my disciple, inasmuch as, like a virtuous person, in the face of Brahmins and of fire, he took the hand of my daughter, who resembled Sāvitrī. This monkey-eyed [god], after having taken the hand of [my] fawn-eyed [daughter], has not even by word shown suitable respect to me whom he ought to have risen and saluted. Though unwilling, I yet gave my daughter to this impure and proud abolisher of rites and demolisher of barriers, like the word of the Veda¹³⁴ to a Sūdra. He roams about in dreadful cemeteries, attended by hosts of ghosts and sprites, like a madman, naked, with dishevelled hair, laughing, weeping, bathed in the ashes of funeral piles, wearing a garland of dead men’s [skulls], and ornaments of human bones, pretending to be Siva (auspicious) but in reality Asiva (inauspicious), insane, beloved by the insane, the lord of Pramathas and Bhūtas (sprites), beings whose nature is essentially darkness. To this wicked-hearted lord of the infuriate, whose purity has perished, I have, alas! given my virtuous daughter, at the instigation of Brahmā.’¹³⁵ Having thus reviled Girisā (Siva), who

¹³⁴ *Uśatīm gīram*, which the commentator explains *veda-lakṣaṇām gīram*. It occurs also elsewhere in this same Puraṇa, as in m. 16, 13, where the Comm. renders it by *kamanīyām*, “to be loved.” See Bohtlingk and Roth, vol. v., p. 1204, s.e.

¹³⁵ The commentator gives as follows what he calls the real, esoteric, sense of this abuse.—*Vāstavaḥ tv ayam arthah | luptāḥ kṛiyāḥ yasmin para-brahma-rūpatvāt | atah eva nāsti śuclhr yasmat | amānina abhūna-setave it cha chhedah | tasya pareneśvarasya madīyā mānushī kanyā katham yogyā syād it lajjādīnā dātum anichhann api tat-sambandha-lobhena dattavān | ‘sūdrāyeti’ anarhatva-mūle dṛishṭānto na hīnatve pūrvōpara-eva-vachana-virodhāpatteḥ | etad uktam bhavati | yathā kaśchit sūdrāya vedam artha-lobhena dadāti | ‘preṭhivāśeshv’ ityādī sarvaśi vidambana-mātram it | evayam eva āha ‘unmatta-vad’ it | anyathā ‘unmattaḥ’ ity eva avakṣhyat | ‘asivah’ nāsti iṣvo yasmat | amattah | amatta-jana-priyah | it chhedah | ‘patih pramathabhūtinām’ it bhakta-vātsalyam āha | iāmasān api doṣham apantīya-pāti it | makhṣānām api śauclhām suddhīr yasmat | dushṣeśhv apy etc mayā anukampyāḥ it hīn mano yasya*

did not oppose him, Daksha having then touched water, incensed, began to curse him [thus]: 'Let this Bhava (Siva), lowest of the gods, never, at the worship of the gods, receive any portion along with the gods Indra, Upendra (Vishnu), and others.' Having delivered his malediction, Daksha departed. A counter-malediction, as follows, was then uttered upon him and the Brahmans who took his part, by Nandīśvara, one of the chief of Mahādeva's followers:

21 ff.—*Yah etam martyam uddīśya bhagavatī apratidruhi | druhyatī ajnāḥ prithag-dṛiṣṭis tattvato vimukho bhavet | griheṣu kṛtā-dharmeshu saktō grāmya-sukhechchayā | karma-tantrām vitanutū*¹³⁶ *veda-vāda-vipannā-dhīḥ | buddhyā parābhidyāyinyā viṣṇurītātma-gatīḥ paśuḥ | strī-kāmaḥ so 'stu nitarām Dakṣo vāta-mukho 'chirat | vidyā-buddhir avidyāyām karmamayyām asau jadaḥ | saṁsaranṭv iha ye chāmum anu Sarvavamā-ninam | girāḥ śrutāyāḥ puṣhpinyāḥ madhu-gandhena bhūriṇā | mathnā chonmathitātmanāḥ sammuhyantu Hara-dviṣaḥ | sarva-bhākṣhāḥ dvijāḥ vṛittiyai dhṛita-vidyā-tapo-vratāḥ | vitta-dehendriyārāmāḥ yūchakāḥ vicharantv iha |* "May the ignorant being who, from regard to this mortal (Daksha), and considering [Siva] as distinct [from the supreme

sa durhṛit tasmai | 'vata' iti harshe | Brahmano vākya[ī f] lajjā-bhayāndikam parityajya dattā ity arthaḥ | "The real meaning (of vv. 13 ff.) is this: 'He in whom works are destroyed, owing to his character of supreme Brahma; in consequence of which there is none purer than he.' Instead of *mānīne* and *bhinna-setave*, the division of words may also be *amānīne*, *abhinna-setave*, 'not proud,' 'not demolisher of barriers.' Though unwilling to give my daughter through modesty, etc., from a feeling that my human daughter could not be worthy of the supreme lord, I nevertheless gave her from a covetous desire of being connected with him. The words 'as to a S'ūdra' are merely an illustration to express unfitness, and not defectiveness, otherwise there would be a contradiction between his preceding and his following words. The sense is this: 'just as any one through covetousness of money gives the Veda to a S'ūdra.' The words 'in cemeteries,' etc., are a mere disguise. He himself says 'like a madman.' Otherwise he would have said 'a madman.' *Śiva*, inauspicious, means he than whom none is more auspicious. The words *matta* and *matta-jana-priya* should be so divided as to be preceded by a negative, and thus mean 'not insane,' 'beloved by the not-insane.' The words 'lord of Pramathas,' etc., intimate his love for those devoted to him. The sense is that, removing their faultiness, he cherishes even those who have the quality of darkness. *Nashṭa-sauchāya* means that from him comes purity to the depraved. *Durhṛit* means he whose heart, feeling, suggests that 'even these, although wicked, are to be compassionated by me.' *Vata* intimates joy. 'Owing to the injunction of Brahmā, abandoning modesty, fear, etc., I gave my daughter: 'such is the sense.'

¹³⁶ This is Burnouf's reading. It is an archaic, Vedic, form. The Bombay edition reads *vitanute*.

spirit],—hates the deity who does not return the hatred,—be averse to the truth. Devoted to domestic life, in which frauds are prevalent,¹²⁷ let him, from a desire of vulgar pleasures, practise the round of ceremonies, with an understanding degraded by Vedic prescriptions.¹²⁸ Forgetting the nature of soul, with a mind which contemplates other things, let Daksha, brutal, be excessively devoted to women, and have speedily the face of a goat. Let this stupid being, who has a conceit of knowledge, and all those who follow this contemner of Śarva (Śiva), continue to exist in this world in ceremonial ignorance. Let the enemies of Hara (Śiva), whose minds are disturbed by the strong spirituous odour and the excitement of the flowery words¹²⁹ of the Veda, become deluded! Let those Brahmans, eating all sorts of food, professing knowledge and practising austerities and ceremonies [merely] for subsistence, delighting in riches and in corporeal and sensual enjoyments, wander about as beggars!”

The wrath of Bhṛigu, one of the sages present at the sacrifice, is aroused by this curse :

27 ff.—*Tasyaivaṁ dadataḥ śāpaṁ śrutvā devya-lulāya vaḥ | Bhṛiguḥ pratyasṛjach chhāpam brahma-daṇḍaṁ duratyayaṁ | Bhara-vrata-dharāḥ ye cha ye cha tān samanuvratāḥ | pūṣhaṇḍinas te bhavantu sacchehāśtra-paripanthīnaḥ | nashṭa-śauchāḥ mūḍha-dhīyo jaṭā-bhasmāsthi-dhārīṇaḥ | viśantu Śiva-ḍīkshāyaṁ yatra daivaṁ surāsaṁ | brahma cha bīḥma-nāmś chaiva yad yūyam parimūḍaḥ | setum vidhāraṇam puṁśām ataḥ pūṣhaṇḍam āśritāḥ | osha eva hi lokānuṁ śivaḥ panthā sanātanaḥ | yam pūrve chānusaṁtasthur yat-pramāṇaṁ Janārdanaḥ | tad brahma paramaṁ buddhaṁ satām varīma sanātanaṁ | vigarhya yāta pūṣhaṇḍaṁ daivaṁ vo*

¹²⁷ The words so rendered, *griheṣhu kṛta-dharmeshu*, occur thrice in this Purāṇa (see Bohtlingk and Roth s v *kṛta-dharma*), viz, in iii. 30, 10, in iv. 25, 6, and in the verse before us. In his note on iii. 30, 10 (verse 9 in the Bombay edition) the commentator explains the word *kṛta-dharmeshu* as meaning houses “in which frauds, practices such as roguery in regard to money, etc., prevail” (*kṛtāḥ vitta-sāthyādi-bahulāḥ dharmāḥ yeshu*). In his remarks on the other passages he gives no explanation of the word. In his translation of iii. 30, 10, M. Burnouf renders the term by “sa maison où dominant le mensonge [et la misère,” *duhkhā-tantreshu*], in the verse before us by “attaché dans les maisons, à des vils devoirs”, and similarly in iv. 25, 6, by “au milieu des devoirs vulgaires d’un maître de maison.”

¹²⁸ This depreciation of the Vedas may have arisen from a consciousness on the part of the Śaivas, that their worship was not very consistent with the most venerated Scriptures of their own country.

¹²⁹ Compare the Bhagavad Gītā ii. 42 ff., quoted in the 3rd vol. of this work, p. 31 f.

yatra bhūta-rāṭ | "Hearing him thus utter a curse against the tribe of Brahmans, Bhṛigu launched a counter-imprecation, a Brahmanical weapon, hard to be evaded: 'Let those who practise the rites of Bhava (Mahādeva), and all their followers, be heretics, and opponents of the true scriptures. Having lost their purity, deluded in understanding, wearing matted hair, and ashes and bones, let them undergo the initiation of Śiva, in which spirituous liquor is the deity. Since ye revile the veda (*brahma*) and Brahmans, the barriers by which men are restrained, ye have embraced heresy. For this [veda] is the auspicious (*śiva*) eternal path of the people, which the ancients have trod, and wherein Janārdana (Viṣṇu) is the authority. Reviling this veda (*brahma*), supreme, pure, the eternal path of the virtuous, follow the heresy in which your god is the king of goblins.'"

On hearing this imprecation, Śiva departed with his followers, while Daksha and the other Prajāpatis celebrated for a thousand years the sacrifice in which Viṣṇu was the object of adoration.

The enmity between the father-in-law and son-in-law continues (sect. 3). Daksha being elevated by Brahmā to the rank of chief of the Prajāpatis, becomes elated. He commences a great sacrifice called Vṛihaspatisava. Seeing the other gods with their wives passing to this sacrifice, Sati presses her husband, Śiva, to accompany her thither. He refers to the insults which he had received from her father, and advises her not to go. She, however (sect. 4), being anxious to see her relatives, disregards his warning and goes; but being slighted by her father, Daksha, she reproaches him for his hostility to her husband, and threatens to abandon the corporeal frame by which she was connected with her parent. She then voluntarily gives up the ghost. Seeing this, Śiva's attendants, who had followed her, rush on Daksha to kill him. Bhṛigu, however, throws an oblation into the southern fire, pronouncing a Yajus text suited to destroy the destroyers of sacrifice (*yajna-ghna-ghnena yajushā dakṣhiṇāgnau juhāva ha*). A troop of Ribhus in consequence spring up, who put Śiva's followers to flight. Śiva is filled with wrath when he hears of the death of Sati (sect. 5). From a lock of his hair, which he tore out, a gigantic demon arose, whom he commanded to destroy Daksha and his sacrifice. This demon proceeds with a troop of Śiva's followers, and they all execute the mandate. 15 ff. *Rurujur yajna-pātrāṇi tatthaike 'gnin anāḥayan* |

*kundeshv amūtrayan kechid bibhidur vedi-mekhalāḥ | abādāhanta munin
 aṅge eke patnīr atarjayan | apare jagrihur devān pratyāsannān palāyitān |*
 . . . 19. *juhvataḥ sruva-hastasya śmaśrūṇi bhagavān Bhavaḥ | Bhṛigor
 luluncha sadasi yo 'hasat śmaśru darśayan | Bhagasya netre bhagavān
 pātitasya rushā bhuvi | ujjahāra sadāśtṛho 'kṣhṇā yaḥ śapantam asu-
 suchat | Pūshnāś chāpātayaḍ dantān Kālingasya yathā Balah | śapyamāna
 garimaṇi¹⁴⁰ yo 'hasat darśayan dataḥ |* 15. "Some broke the sacrificial
 vessels, others destroyed the fires, others made water in the ponds,
 others cut the boundary-cords of the sacrificial ground; others as-
 sailed the Munis, others reviled their wives; others seized the gods
 who were near, and those who had fled. . . . 19. The divine Bhava
 (Śiva) plucked out the beard of Bhṛigu, who was offering oblations
 with a ladle in his hand, and who had laughed in the assembly, show-
 ing his beard. He also tore out the eyes of Bhaga, whom in his wrath
 he had felled to the ground, and who, when in the assembly, had made
 a sign to [Daksha when] cursing [Śiva]. He moreover knocked
 out the teeth of Pūshan¹⁴¹ (as Bala did the king of Kalinga's), who
 (Pūshan) had laughed, showing his teeth, when the great god was
 being cursed." Tryambaka (Śiva, or Virabhadra, according to the
 commentator) then cuts off the head of Daksha, but not without some
 difficulty. The gods report all that had passed to Svayambhū (Brahmā),
 who, with Viṣṇu, had not been present (sect. 6). Brahmā advises
 the gods to propitiate Śiva, whom they had wrongfully excluded from
 a share in the sacrifice (v. 5. *athāpi yūyaṁ kṛta-kilviṣhāḥ Bhavaṁ
 ye barhiṣho bhūga-bhūjam parādūḥ*). The deities, headed by Aja
 (Brahmā), accordingly proceed to Kailāsa, when they see Śiva "bear-
 ing the linga desired by devotees, ashes, a staff, a tuft of hair, an
 antelope's skin, and a digit of the moon, his body shining like an even-
 ing cloud" (v. 35. *lingancha tūpasūbhīṣṭam bhasma-danḍa-jaṭājīnam |
 angena sandhyā-bhṛa-ruchā chandra-lekhāncha bibhratam*). Brahmā ad-
 dresses Mahādeva "as the eternal Brahma, the lord of Śakti and Śiva,
 who are respectively the womb and the seed of the universe,—who,
 in sport, like a spider, forms all things from Śakti and Śiva, who are
 consubstantial with himself, and preserves and reabsorbs them" (vv.

¹⁴⁰ *Garimaṇi gurutaro Rudre |* Comm.

¹⁴¹ See Taitt. Saṁhitā, ii. 6, 8, 3, and other texts quoted above, pp. 200 ff., for the older story.

41 f. *jāne tvām īśaṁ viśvasya jagato yoni-vijayoḥ | Śakteḥ Śivasya cha param yat tad Brahma nirantaram | tvam eva bhagavann etaḥ Chhivā-Saktyoḥ sarūpayoḥ | viśvaṁ srijasi pāsy atsi kṛdān ūna-paṭo yathā*). (A similar supremacy, as we shall see, is ascribed to Viṣṇu in section 7.) Brahmā adds that it was this great being who had instituted sacrifice, and all the regulations which Brahmans devoutly observe; and entreats him, who is beyond all illusion, to have mercy on those who, overcome by its influence, had wrongly attached importance to ceremonial works, and to restore the sacrifice of Dakṣha, at which a share had been refused to him by evil priests (v. 49. *Na yatra bhāgaṁ tava bhāgino daduḥ kuyajvinaḥ*). Mahādeva partly relents (sect. 7), and allows Dakṣha to have a goat's-faced head, Bhaga to see with Mitra's eyes, Pūshan to eat with the teeth of his worshipper, Bhṛigu to have a he-goat's beard, etc. (vv. 3 ff.) Dakṣha, after having had a goat's head fitted to his body, celebrates the praises of Śiva (vv. 8 ff.). The sacrifice is then recommenced, and in order to its completion, and to remove the pollution occasioned by the touch of Mahādeva's warriors, an oblation is made to Viṣṇu on three platters (v. 17. *Vaiṣṇavaṁ yajna-santatyai trikapālaṁ dvijottamāḥ | puroḍaśaṁ niravapan vira-saṁsarga-buddhaye*). Hari (Viṣṇu) being meditated on, then appears (v. 18), is saluted with the greatest reverence by the gods, headed by Brahmā, Indra, and Śiva (*Tryakṣa*); is lauded successively by Dakṣha, by the priests, by Rudra himself, etc., etc. (vv. 26 ff.), and at length expresses himself as follows, in such a manner as to demonstrate the futility of the dispute between Dakṣha and Mahādeva, and to show that he himself was the one supreme deity, of whom all the others were only the manifestations, though in reality one in their essence :

V. 50. *Śrī-Bhagavān uvācha | aham Brahmā cha Sarvaś cha jagataḥ kāraṇam param | ātmesvaraḥ upadrashṭā svayam̐dṛig aviśeṣaṇaḥ | 51. ātma-māyāṁ samāvīṣya so 'ham guṇamayīm dvija | srijan rakṣan haran viśvaṁ dadhre saṁjñāṁ kriyochitūṁ | 52. tasmīn Brahmaṇy advīṭye kevale paramātmani | Brahma-Rudrau cha bhūtāni bhedenājño 'nupaśyati | 53. yathā pumān na svūṅgeshu śiraḥ-pāny-ādīṣhu kvachit | pāraya-buddhiṁ kurute evam bhūteshu mat-paraḥ | 54. Trayāṇām eka-bhāvānām yo na paśyati vai bhīdām | sarva-bhūtātmanām Brahman sa śāntim adhigacchati | 50. "I am Brahmā and Sarva (Śiva), the supreme cause of the world, the soul, the lord, the witness, the self-manifesting (or, self-beholding),*

devoid of attributes. 51. Entering into my own illusion consisting of the [three] Guṇas (qualities)—creating, preserving, and destroying—I have assumed names corresponding to my several acts. 52. In that one and only Brahma, the supreme Spirit, the ignorant person perceives a distinction of Brahmā and Rudra, and creatures. 53. But as a man does not think of his own members, his head, hands, etc., as belonging to another, so the man who is devoted to me [does not look upon] created things [as distinct from me]. 54. He who beholds no distinction between the three gods who are one in essence, and the soul of all things, attains tranquillity.”

Dakṣha, after adoring Viṣṇu, worships the other gods, and offers to Rudra his proper share in the sacrifice (vv. 55 f.). Satī, the daughter of Dakṣha, who had abandoned her original body, is born again as the daughter of Himavat and Menā (v. 58. *vañ Dākṣhāyaṇī hitvā Satī pūrva-kalevaram | jajñe Himavataḥ kṣetre Menāyām iti śūsruma*).¹⁴²

The Śaiva compiler of the Linga Purāṇa takes his revenge on the Vaiṣṇava writers, who, like the author of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, have exalted Viṣṇu at the expense of Śiva, by narrating the following legend of an undignified dispute between Brahmā and Viṣṇu regarding their respective claims to superiority, and of the apparition of the

¹⁴² The same account of Satī's double birth is given in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, i. 8, 9 ff. *Evam-prakāśo Rudro 'sau Satīm bhāryām avindata | Dakṣha-kopāchcha tatyāya sū Satī svām kalevaram | Himavad-āhūtā sū 'bhūd Menāyām dīya-sattama | upayame punaś chomām ananyām bhagavān Bhavaḥ |* "Rudra, being of the character thus described (i.e. one of the eight forms of the son born to Brahmā—see above, pp. 339 ff.) obtained Satī for his wife. This Satī abandoned her body in consequence of the anger of Dakṣha. She then became the daughter of Himavat and Menā, and the divine Bhava again married Umā who was identical [with his former spouse]." In the preceding section (the 7th) of the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, Satī is mentioned as one of the twenty-four daughters of Dakṣha, but the husband, Bhava, to whom she is said to have been given in marriage, is enumerated (as is also Agni) among the Munis to whom Dakṣha's daughters were wedded: *Tābhyāḥ śiśṭāḥ kanyāsyāḥ ekādaśa sūlochanaḥ | Khyātāḥ Saty aṭha Sambhūtā Smṛitā Priyā Kṣamā tathā | Sannatā chānuṣṇyā cha Ūjā Svāhā Svadhā tathā | Bhṛguḥ Bhavo Marīchiḥ cha tathā chaivāṅgrūḥ munāḥ | Pulastyaḥ Pulahaḥ Kratuḥ charaḥ-varas tathā | Atriḥ Vasishṭho Vahnīḥ cha Pitaras cha yathā-kramam | Khyāty-ādyāḥ jagṛhuh kanyāḥ munayo muni-sattama |* "Younger than them (the other thirteen daughters of Dakṣha) were eleven virtuous and lovely-eyed damsels, Khyatā, Satī, Sambhūtā, Smṛitā, Priyā, Kṣamā, Sannatā, Anusūyā, Ūjā, Svāhā, and Svadhā. Bhṛgu, Bhava, Marīchi, the muni Angras, Pulastya, Pulaha, Kratu the excellent rishi, Atri, Vasishṭha, Vahnī (i.e. Agni or Fire), and the Pitaras,—these munis in order married Khyatā and the other maidens."

Linga to rebuke and humble them by pointing out the inferiority of both to the supreme Mahādeva :

Linga Purāṇa, i. 17, 5-52.—*Pitāmahaḥ uvācha | Pradhānaṁ lingam
ākhyātāṁ lingī cha paramēśvaraḥ | rakshārtham ambudhau mahyaṁ
Viṣṇoḥ tv āsīt surottamāḥ | vaimānike gate sarge jana-lokaṁ saharshi-
bhiḥ | sthītikāle tadā pūrṇe tataḥ pratyāhṛīte tathā | chatur-yuga-
sahasrānte satyalokaṁ gate surāḥ | vinū "dhipatyāṁ samatāṁ gate 'nte
Brahmaṇo mama | śuśhke cha sthāvare sarve tv anāvṛiṣṭyā cha sarvaśaḥ |
paśavo mānushāḥ vṛikṣhāḥ piśāchāḥ piśitāśanāḥ | gandharvādyaḥ kra-
menairā nirdagdāḥ bhānu-bhānubhiḥ | ekārṇave mahāghore tamo-bhūte
samantataḥ | pūṣṭe (?) hy ambhāsi yogātmā nirmalo nirupaplavaḥ |
sahasra-śīrṣhāḥ viśvātmā sahasrākṣaḥ sahasra-pāt | sahasrabāhuḥ sarva-
jñāḥ sarva-deva-bhavadbhavaḥ | Hiraṇyagarbho rajasā tamasā Sankaraḥ
svayam | sūttvena sarvago Viṣṇuḥ sarvātmate Mahēśvaraḥ | kālātmā
kāla-nābhas tu śuklāḥ kṛiṣṇas tu nirguṇaḥ | Nārāyaṇo mahābāhuḥ
sarvātmā sadasanmayāḥ | tathā bhūtam ahaṁ dṛiṣṭvā śayānam panka-
jekṣhaṇam | māyayā mohitas tasya tam avocharāṁ amarshitāḥ | kaś traṁ
vadeti hastena samutthāpya sanātanam | tadā hasta-prahāreṇa tīvreṇa
sa dṛidhena tu | prabuddho 'hīya-śayanāt samāstinaḥ kṣhaṇaṁ vaśi |
dadarsu nidrā-viklinnaṁ nīrajāmala-lochanaḥ | mām agre saṁsthitam
bhāsi'dhyāśīto bhagavān Hariḥ | āha chothhāya bhagavān hasan mām
madhuraṁ sakṛit | svāgataṁ svāgataṁ vatsa pitāmaha mahādyaute | tasya
tad vachanaṁ śṛutvā smita-pūrvaṁ surarashabhāḥ | rajasā viddha-cairaś
cha tam avochaṁ Janārdanam | bhūṣhase vatsa vatseti sarga-saṁhāra-
kāraṇam | mām ihāntaḥ-smitaṁ kṛitvā guruḥ śiṣhyam ivānagha | kartā-
raṁ jagatām sūkṣhāt prakṛiteścha pravartakam | sanātanam ajaṁ Viṣ-
ṇuṁ Tirinehiṁ viśva-sambhavam | viśvātmānaṁ vidhātāraṁ dhātāram
pankajekṣhaṇam | kimarthaṁ bhūṣhase mohād vaktum arhasi satvaram |
so 'pi mām āha jagatām kartā 'ham iti lokaya | bhartā hartā bhavān
angād avatīrṇo mamāvayayāt | vismṛito 'si jagannāthaṁ Nārāyaṇam
'anāmayaṁ | puruṣham paramātmānam puruḥṣāt puruṣhātutam | Viṣ-
ṇuṁ achyutam iśānaṁ viśvasya prabhavodbhavam | tavāparādho nāsty atra
mama māyā-kṛitaṁ tv idam | śṛiṇu satyaṁ chaturvaktra sarva-deveśvaro
hy aham | kartū netā cha hartā cha na mayā 'sti samo vibhuḥ | aham eva
param Brahma param tattvam pitāmaha | 'uham eva param jyotiḥ param-
ātmā tv ahaṁ vibhuḥ' yad yad dṛiṣṭaṁ śṛutaṁ sarvaṁ jagaty asmiṁś
charācharam | tat tad viddhi chaturvaktra sarvaṁ manmayam ity aha |*

mayā śriṣṭam purā vyaktaṁ caturviṁśatikam̐ svayam | nityāntāḥ hy
 āṇavo baddhāḥ śriṣṭāḥ krodhodbhavādayaḥ | prasādād hi bhavān anḍāny
 anekānīha līlayā | śriṣṭā bulldhir mayā tasyām ahankūras tridhā tataḥ |
 tanmātra-panchakam̐ tasmād mano dehendriyāṇi cha | akāśādini bhūtāni
 bhautikāni cha līlayā | ity uktavati tasmim̐ś cha mayi chāpi vacas tathā |
 āvayos̐ chādbhavad yuddham̐ sughoram̐ romaharshaṇam | pralayārṇava-
 madhye tu rajasā baddha-vairayoḥ | etasminn antare lingam abhavach
 chāvayoh purah | vivāda-samanārtham̐ hi prabodhārtham̐ tathā'vayoḥ |
 jvālā-mūla-sahasrādhyam̐ kālānala-śatopamam | kṣaya-vṛiddhi-vinirmuk-
 tam̐ ādi-madhyānta-varjitam | anaupamyam anirdeśyam avyaktaṁ viśva-
 sambhavam | tasya jvālā-sahasreṇa mohito bhagavān Hariḥ | mohitam
 prāha mām atra parīkṣhāvō 'gni-sambhavam | adho gamiṣhyāmy anala-
 stambhānyānupamasya cha | bhavan ūrdhvam prayatnena gantum arhasi
 (sic) satvaram | evam̐ vyāhṛitya viśvātmā svagrūpam akarot tudā | vārūham
 aham apy ūsu haṁsatvam prāptavān surāḥ | tadā-prabhṛiti mām āhur
 haṁsam̐ haṁso virūḍ iti | haṁsa haṁseti yo brūyād mām haṁsaḥ sa
 bhaviṣhyati | suśveto hy analūkṣhaḥ ha viśratuḥ pakṣha-saṁyutaḥ | mano-
 'nila-javo bhūtvā gato 'haṁ choradhvataḥ surāḥ | Nārāyaṇo 'pi viśvātmā
 nīlānjana-chayopamam | daśa-yojana-viśṭīrṇam̐ śata-yojanam̐ āyatam |
 Meru-parvata-varṣamūṇam̐ gaura-tikṣhṇāgra-dashṭrinam | kālūditya-samā-
 bhāsam̐ dīrgha-ghoṇam mahāśvanam | hrasva-pādam̐ vicitrāṅgam̐ jaitram̐
 dridham̐ anaupamam | vārūham̐ asitam rūpam̐ āsthāya gatarān adhaḥ |
 evam̐ varṣha-sahasram̐ tu tvaram̐ Viṣṇur adho gataḥ | nāpasyād alpam̐
 apy asya mūlam̐ lingasya sūkarah | tūvat kalam̐ gato hy ūrdhvam̐ aham
 apy arisūdanūḥ | satvaram̐ sarva-yatnena tasyūntam̐ jñātum ichhayā |
 śrūnto hy adṛiṣṭvā tasyūntam̐ ahankūrād¹⁴³ adho gataḥ | tathaiiva bha-
 gavān Viṣṇuḥ śrāntaḥ saṁtrasta-lochanah | sarva-deva-bhavas tūrṇam̐
 utthitah sa mahāvapuḥ | samūgato mayā sūrdham̐ pranīpatya mahā-
 manūḥ¹⁴⁴ | māyayā mohitah Sambhoḥ tathā saṁvigna-mānasah | priṣṭha-
 tah pūrṣvalas̐ chaiva chāgrataḥ parameśvaram | pranīpatya mayā sūrdh-
 am̐ sasmūra kim idam̐ tv iti | tadā samabhavat tatra nādo vai śabda-
 lakṣhaṇah | om om iti sūra-śreṣṭhāḥ svuyaktaḥ pluta-lakṣhaṇah | kim idam̐
 tv iti sanchintya mayā tiṣṭhan mahāśvanam | lingasya dakṣiṇe bhāge
 tadū 'pasyat sanātanam | ādyaṁ varṇam̐ a-kūram̐ tu u-kūram̐ chottaro
 tataḥ | ma-kūram̐ madhytas̐ chaiva nādāntam̐ tasya chom̐ iti |

¹⁴³ In a transcript of this passage made for me in India, and published in my *Mataparīkṣhā*, the reading is *aham̐ kālād*, which seems a preferable reading.

¹⁴⁴ *Bhayād muhuḥ*—reading in the *Mataparīkṣhā*.

"Pitāmaha (Brahmā, in answer to an inquiry of the gods and rishis) says: 'Pradhāna (nature) is called the Linga, and Parameśvara is called Lingin'¹⁴⁵ (the sustainer of the Linga). It arose for the preservation of myself and Vishṇu in the ocean, O deities. When the Vaimānika¹⁴⁶ creation had proceeded with the rishis to the Janaloka,¹⁴⁷ and when—the period of the continuance [of the world] having then been completed,—[all things] had been absorbed, at the end of the thousand sets of four yugas, and had departed to the Satyaloka—I, Brahmā, being at length reduced to a condition of equality [with other creatures] without dominion over them,¹⁴⁸ and all immovable things having become altogether dried up from want of rain,—beasts, men, trees, Piśāchas, flesh-eating goblins, Gandharvas, etc., were by degrees burnt up by the rays of the sun. The one awful ocean being everywhere enveloped in darkness, the great-armed Nārāyaṇa, the soul of all things, formed of existence and non-existence, sleeps¹⁴⁹ upon the water, plunged in contemplation, spotless, tranquil, thousand-headed, the soul of the universe, thousand-eyed, thousand-footed, thousand-armed, omniscient, the source of the existence of all the gods, he who is himself through passion (*rajas*) Hiranyagarbha, through darkness (*tamas*) Śankara, through goodness (*sattva*) the all-pervading Vishṇu, and in his universality Mahāśvara, having the character of time, having time for his centre,¹⁵⁰ white, black, free from the three qualities, the great-armed Nārāyaṇa, the universal soul, having the essence both of entity and non-entity. Beholding the lotus-eyed deity in this condition, sleeping, I, deluded by his illusion, touching the eternal being with my hand, impatient, said to him, 'Who art thou? speak.' Roused

¹⁴⁵ *Lingādhisṭhānam* | Comm.

¹⁴⁶ *Vaimānike sarge deva-sarge* | Comm.

¹⁴⁷ "The different accounts agree in stating that when the three lower spheres are consumed by fire, Maharloka is deserted by its tenants, who repair to the next sphere, or Jana-loka. Jana-loka, according to the Vāyu, is the residence of the rishis and demigods during the night of Brahmā," etc.—Wilson, Vishṇu Purāṇa, p. 213, note; see also the same work, p. 632, and note 7 (=pp. 227 ff., vol. ii., and pp. 192 ff., vol. v. of Dr. Hall's ed.).

¹⁴⁸ *Lit.* "the end of me, Brahmā, having come to equality without dominion."

¹⁴⁹ The reading of the Bombay text is here *pushte*; but some such word as *śete*, "sleeps," seems to be required by the sense.

¹⁵⁰ *Kālanabha* is the term in the original. Perhaps the proper reading may be Kālanātha, "the lord of time," which occurs in the Mahābhārata, Ś'antip. 10368. See Böhtlingk and Roth s.v.

by the strong and violent stroke of my hand from his snaky couch, sitting for a moment, self-restrained, the deity whose eyes are pure as the lotus looked up heavy with drowsiness. The divine Hari, invested by lustre, seeing me standing before him, rising up, said to me, sweetly smiling at the same time, 'Welcome, welcome, my child, the glorious Pitāmaha.' Hearing these words of his, accompanied by a smile, O deities, my illwill being excited by passion (*rajas*), I said to Janārdana (Vishṇu): 'Dost thou, O sinless god, like a teacher speaking to his pupil, smiling inwardly, address the words 'child, child,' to me [who am] the cause of creation and destruction, the undisputed maker of the worlds, and the mover of Prakṛiti (nature), the eternal, unborn, Vishṇu,¹⁸¹ Virinchi, the source and soul of all things, the disposer, the upholder, the lotus-eyed? Why dost thou foolishly address me thus? Tell me quickly.' He said to me, 'Perceive that I am the maker, the preserver, the destroyer of the worlds; thou hast issued from my imperishable body. Thou hast forgotten the lord of the world, the potent Nārāyaṇa, Puruṣa, the supreme Spirit, invoked of many, lauded of many, Vishṇu, the undecaying, the lord, the source and origin of the universe. In this there is no fault of thine: it arises from my illusion. Listen to the truth, O four-faced deity: I am the lord of all the gods, the maker, the director, the destroyer; there is none equal to me, all-pervading. I, even I, O Pitāmaha, am the supreme Brahma, the supreme reality, the supreme light, the supreme spirit, all-pervading. Whatever thing, movable or immovable, has been seen or heard of in this world, know, O four-faced deity, that it is all formed of me. By me of old has been created everything that is discernible, consisting of the twenty-four principles; the atoms, which in their ultimate [and most subtile] form are eternal, have been united; and the beings sprung from my wrath¹⁸² (Rudra), etc., have been created. From my complacency thou and numerous (mundane) eggs have been formed in sport. Intelligence (*buddhi*) has been created by me in sport, and then from it three-fold ahankāra: from it the five tanmātras, and thence mind, with the bodily senses, as also ether and the other elements, and things formed of the elements.' As soon as he and I had thus spoken, a direful and terrific fight arose

¹⁸¹ Brahmā here assumes this character as belonging to himself.

¹⁸² See above, pp. 230 and 266 f.

in the sea of universal dissolution ¹⁵³ between us twain, whose enmity had been roused by passion. At this time there appeared before us, to stay our contention and admonish us, a luminous Linga, encircled with a thousand wreaths of flame, equal to a hundred final mundane conflagrations, incapable of diminution or increase, without beginning, middle, or end, incomparable, indescribable, undefinable, the source of all things. Bewildered by its thousand flames, the divine Hari said to me (Brahmā) who was myself bewildered, 'Let us on the spot examine the source of [this] fire. I will go down the unequalled pillar of fire, and thou shouldst quickly proceed strenuously upwards.' Having thus spoken, the universal-formed took the shape of a boar, and I immediately assumed the character of a swan.¹⁵⁴ Ever since then men call me Hansa (swan), for Hansa is Virāj.¹⁵⁵ Whoever shall call me 'Hansa, Hansa,' shall become a Hansa (unimpassioned saint). Having become purely white, and fiery-eyed, with wings on every side, rapid as thought and as the wind, I went upwards. Nārāyaṇa too, the soul of all things, having taken the dark form of a boar, like a heap of blue collyrium, ten yojanas broad and a hundred yojanas long, bulky as mount Meru, with white sharp-pointed tusks, luminous as the sun of mundane destruction, long-snouted, loud-grunting, short-footed, wondrous-limbed, victorious, strong, incomparable, proceeded downwards. Speeding thus downwards for a thousand years, Viṣṇu, the boar, beheld no base at all of the Linga. For the same period I went rapidly upwards, O destroyers of your foes, with all my might, desirous of learning its end; but I descended from the lapse of time, without seeing its end; and so, too, the divine Viṣṇu of vast bulk, the source of all the gods, worn out, with affrighted look, ascended rapidly. Meeting with me, that magnanimous deity, prostrating himself, bewildered by the illusion of Sambhu (Śiva), and disturbed in mind, bowing, along with me, before Parameśvara (Śiva), behind, at the side, and in front, exclaimed, 'What is this?' Then, O chief of the gods, there arose there the articulate sound "om, om," distinct and protracted. Considering what this could be, he then, standing

¹⁵³ See the commencement of this extract.

¹⁵⁴ In the 5th and 6th sections of the Śiva-purāṇa "it is explained in a puerile and inept manner why Brahmā took the form of a swan and Viṣṇu of a boar." —Aufrecht's Catalogue of the Bodl. Sansk. MSS., p. 686.

¹⁵⁵ See the first volume of this work, pp. 9 and 36.

with me, beheld this eternal loud-resounding [monosyllable] upon the right side of the Linga; the first letter a-kāra, after it u-kāra, ma-kāra in the centre, and Om as the result of the sounds.'"

This is followed by a great deal of mysticism about the letters of the word om and the other letters of the alphabet, etc., etc.

The eighteenth section of the same Purāṇa contains a hymn addressed by Vishṇu to Rudra, which recites a list of the attributes of the latter deity. Mahādeva is gratified with this hymn, and tells Brahmā and Vishṇu that they had both sprung from him, offers them a boon, and touches them with his auspicious hands. Nārāyaṇa asks as a boon that they may both entertain an eternal devotion for him; which Mahādeva as a matter of course grants. I cite the verses which follow, in the original:

Linga Purāṇa, 19, 8 ff.—*Jānubhyam avasiṃ gatvā punar Nārāyaṇaḥ svayaṃ | prañipatya cha Viśveśam prāha mandatarāṃ vaśi |* "āvayor deva-
deveśa vivādam ati-sobhanam | ihāgato bhavān yasmād vivāda-samanāya
nau" | *tasya tad-vachanaṃ śrutvā punaḥ prāha Haraḥ Havim | prañipatya*
sthitam mūrdhnā kṛtānjali-puṣṭam smayan | Śrī-mahādevaḥ uvācha | pra-
laya-sthiti-sargūṇāṃ kartā tvaṃ dharanīpate | vatsa vatsa Hare Viṣṇo
pūlayaitach charāccharam | tridhā bhinnō hy ahaṃ Viṣṇo Brahma-Viṣṇu-
Bhavākhyayā | sarga-rakṣhā-laya-guṇair nishkalaḥ paramēśvaraḥ | sammo-
haṃ tyaja bho Viṣṇo pūlayainam Pitāmahaṃ | pādme bhaviṣyati sutaḥ
kalpe tava Pitāmahaḥ | tadā drakṣyasi mām chaivāṃ so 'pi drakṣyati
padma-jah | evaṃ uktvā sa bhagavāṃs tatraicāntaradhīyata | tadā pra-
bhṛīti lokeshu lingārchaḥ supratishṭhitaḥ | linga-vedī Mahādevī lingaṃ
sakṣhād Maheśvaraḥ | "The self-restraining Nārāyaṇa, falling on his
knees on the ground, and having made obeisance to Viśveśa (Śiva),
spoke gently thus: 'Our dispute, O god of gods, has proved most auspi-
cious,¹⁵⁶ since thou hast come hither to allay it.' Having heard these
words, Hara (Śiva), smiling, again said to Hari (Viṣṇu), who stood
making obeisance with his hands joined: 'Thou, lord of the earth, art
the author of the creation, continuance and destruction [of the uni-

¹⁵⁶ I cannot render this sentence, as it stands, otherwise than by taking *vivādam* for a neuter nominative, though nouns of this formation are masculine. The commentator explains *sobhanam* as meaning *ubhayaḥ api samā-balatvāch chhodhanānam*, "brilliant from the equal powers of the two combatants"; and supplies *śamaya*, "appease, or stop, it" (*ataḥ śamaya ity adhyūhāraḥ*).

verse]: my child, my child, Hari, Viṣṇu, preserve all this moving and stationary world. I, the undivided supreme lord, am divided in a three-fold manner under the names of Brahmā, Viṣṇu, and Bhava, possessing the attributes of creating, preserving, and destroying. Relinquish, Viṣṇu, thy delusion; cherish this Pītāmaha. He shall be thy son in the Pādma Kalpa. Then shalt thou behold me, and he also who sprang from the lotus (Brahmā) shall see me.' Having thus spoken, the deity vanished. Thenceforward the worship of the Linga has been inaugurated in the worlds. The pedestal of the Linga is Mahādevī (Umā), and the Linga is the visible Maheśvara."

The reader will probably be of opinion that this story does not throw much light on the real origin of the Linga-worship.

The Viṣṇu Purāṇa (i. 7, 6 ff.) does not assign a high rank to Rudra; but makes him the offspring of Brahmā (as the Mahābhārata, quoted above, p. 230 and 266 f., makes him of Viṣṇu): *Sanandanādayo ye cha pūrvam śriṣṭās tu Vedhasū | na te lokeshv asajjanta nirapekshāḥ prajāu te | sarve te chāgata-jñānāḥ vīta-rāgāḥ vimatsarāḥ | teshv evaṁ nirapeksheshu loka-śriṣṭau mahātmanaḥ | Brahmano 'bhūt mahākrodhas trailokyadāhana-kṣamaḥ | tasya krodhāt samudbhūta-jvālā-mālā-vīdīpitam | Brahmano 'bhūt tadā sarvaṁ trailokyam akhīlam mune | bhrukuṭi-kuṭīlāt tasya lalāṭāt krodha-dīpitāt | samutpannas tadā Rudro madhyāhnārka-samaprabhaḥ | ardha-nārī-nara-vapuḥ prachando 'ti-sarīravān | "vibhajātmānam" ity uktvā tam Brahmā 'ntardadhe punaḥ | tathokto 'sau dvīdhā strītvam puruṣatvaṁ tathā 'karot | bibheda puruṣatvaṁ cha dasadhā chaikadhā cha saḥ | saumyāsaumyais tathā śāntāśāntaiḥ strītvam cha sa prabhuḥ | bibheda bahudhā devaḥ svarūpāḥ asitaiḥ sitaiḥ | "Sanandana and the others who were before created by Vedhas (Brahmā) had no regard for the worlds, and were indifferent about offspring, for they had all attained to knowledge, and were free from love and from hatred. As they were thus indifferent to the creation of worlds, the mighty Brahmā was filled with fierce anger, sufficient to burn up the three worlds. The three worlds were illuminated in every part by the wreaths of flame engendered from the wrath of the god. From his forehead, wrinkled with a frown and inflamed with anger, Rudra then sprang forth, glorious as the noonday sun, his body half male and half female, fierce, and huge in bulk. Brahmā disappeared after saying to him, 'Divide thyself.' Being thus addressed, he severed himself into twain, into*

a male and a female body. The god then divided his male form into eleven portions, gentle and ungentle; and in like manner his female body into many forms black and white."¹⁸⁷

In the same way the Harivaṁśa says (v. 43): *Tato 'erijat punar Brahmā Rudraṁ roshātma-sambhavam* | "Then Brahmā next created Rudra, the offspring of his anger."

SECT. VII.—*Results of the preceding Sections.*

The various texts quoted in Sections i.-iv. (pp. 299-355) from the Rig-, the Yajur-, and Atharva-vedas, and from the Brāhmaṇas, relative to Rudra, compose the principal materials which we possess for forming an idea of the characteristics ascribed to that deity in the more ancient portions of Indian literature anterior to the composition of the Epic poems and Purāṇas. The Upanishads from which I have derived the mystical extracts given in the fifth section (pp. 355 ff.) are of uncertain date, and their contents throw but little light on the development of the worship of Rudra. The extracts which I have given from the Rāmāyaṇa and Mahābhārata in chapter ii. (pp. 176 f., 184 ff., 223-226, 230 ff., 240 f., 263, 266 ff., 278 ff., and 283-291), and in the last section, while they contain some of the earliest descriptions of which I am aware, of Rudra in the new, and very different, aspect in which he has been conceived in the later ages of Hindū mythology, since he has come to be identified with Śiva or Mahādeva, are yet unfitted to elucidate the process by which he became elevated to the highest rank in the Indian pantheon. I shall, however, draw from these texts a summary of the attributes which they respectively assign to Rudra, which will exhibit the modifications which the conception of this deity

¹⁸⁷ See Professor Wilson's notes on this passage, V. P., 2nd ed., vol. i., p. 103, ff. The Ś'antiparvan of the Mahābhārata also speaks (vv. 13723 ff.) of Mahādeva, the three-eyed, and the great devotee, as having sprung from the forehead of Brahmā, of his coming to visit his father on the mountain Vaijayanta, and of his saluting him respectfully, falling at his feet, and being raised up by him with his left hand. Brahmā then proceeds to unfold to him the nature of Puruṣa. (*Ata tatrāsataḥ tasya Chaturvaktrasya dhimataḥ | tatāṣa-prabhavaḥ putraḥ Ś'ivaḥ āgād yadṛichhayā | ākāśena mahāyogī purā trinayanaḥ prabhuḥ | tataḥ khād nīpapatānu dharaṇīdhara-mūrdhani | agrataḥ chādbhavat prīto vavande chūpi pūdayoḥ | tam pūdayor nipatitām dṛishṭvā savyena pūṇinā | utthāpāyāmasa tadā prabhuḥ ekaḥ Prajāpatiḥ | uvācha chainam bhagavāṁś chiraśyūgatam ātmajam.*)

undergoes in the later, as compared with the earlier, passages. To my own remarks on this subject, however, I shall prefix some observations by Professors H. H. Wilson, Weber, and Whitney, on the character of the Vedic Rudra.

The following remarks by Professor Wilson are extracted from the Introductions to the first and second volumes of his translation of the Rig-veda (published, vol. i., 1st ed., in 1850, and 2nd ed. in 1866; and vol. ii. in 1854):

"We have a Rudra, who, in after-times, is identified with Siva, but who, even in the Purāṇas, is of very doubtful origin and identification; whilst in the Veda he is described as the father of the winds, and is evidently a form of either Agni or Indra. The epithet *kapardḍin* which is applied to him appears, indeed, to have some relation to a characteristic attribute of Siva,—the wearing of his hair in a peculiar braid; but the term has probably in the Veda a very different signification—one now forgotten,—although it may have suggested in after-time the appearance of Siva in such a head-dress, as identified with Agni; for instance, *kapardḍin* may intimate his head being surrounded by radiating flame, or the word may be an interpolation; at any rate, no other epithet applicable to Siva occurs, and there is not the slightest allusion to the form in which, for the last ten centuries at least, he seems to have been almost exclusively worshipped in India, that of the *Linga* or *Phallus*: neither is there the slightest hint of another important feature of later Hinduism,—the *Trimūrṭti*, or Tri-une combination of Brahmā, Viṣṇu, and Siva, as typified by the mystical syllable *om*, although, according to high authority on the religions of antiquity, the *Trimūrṭti* was the first element in the faith of the Hindūs, and the second was the *Lingam*." ¹⁵⁶—(vol. i., pp. xxvi., xxvii.)

"Of Rudra also, the character is equivocal; but it may be doubted if it partakes in any remarkable degree of that fierceness and wrath which belong to the Rudra of a later date; he is termed, it is true, the slayer of heroes, but so is Indra: the effects of his anger upon men and animals are deprecated; but he is also appealed to as wise and bountiful, the author of fertility and giver of happiness, and his peculiar characteristics are evidently his presiding over medicinal plants and removal of disease, attributes of a beneficent, not of a malignant and

¹⁵⁶ Creuzer, *Religions de l'antiquité*, book i., chap. i., p. 140.

irascible deity. As above remarked, the Maruts, or winds, are termed his sons;¹⁵⁹ and this relationship would assimilate him to Indra. There is also a class of inferior deities, termed Rudras, who in one passage are worshippers of Agni, and in another are followers of Indra; being the same as the Maruts. So far, therefore, Rudra might be identified with Indra; but we have the name applied unequivocally to Agni in a hymn exclusively dedicated to that divinity (R. V. i. 27, 10). The term denotes, according to the Scholiast, the 'terrible Agni'; but there is no warrant for this in the text, and we may be content, therefore, with the latter, to regard Rudra as a form or denomination of fire."—(*Ibid.* pp. xxxvii. f.)

"Rudra is described, as in the first book, by rather incompatible qualities, as both fierce and beneficent; but his specific province is here also the tutelarship of medicinal plants, and administration of medicine, and he is designated as a physician of physicians (R. V. ii. 33, 4). With respect also to his presiding over medicinal plants, there occurs a passage worthy of note, as among the herbs are those, it is said, which Manu selected, alluding, most probably, to the seeds of the plants which Manu, according to the legend as related in the Mahābhārata, took with him into his vessel at the time of the deluge. There are more particulars of the person of Rudra than usual. He is sometimes said to be brown or tawny, but he is also said to be white-complexioned (R. V. ii. 33, 8); he is soft-bellied and handsome-chinned; he is armed with a bow and arrows, and brilliant with golden ornaments. He is also called the father of the Maruts. There is little, however, in all this, except his fierceness, to identify him with the Rudra of the Purāṇas."—(vol. ii., pp. ix. f.)

The following interesting and ingenious speculations of Professor Weber are translated from his *Indische Studien*, ii., 19–22 (published in 1853):

"In the beginning of the ninth book of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa (see above, p. 347 f.), we obtain a complete explanation of the Satarudriya (see above, p. 322 ff.). When the preparation of the consecrated place for kindling the fire is completed (*chity-upadhāna-parisamāpty-ānantaryam, Sayana*), and the fire has been kindled, and blazes up (*dīpyamāno*

¹⁵⁹ See the Section on the Maruts in the fifth vol. of this work, pp. 147 ff.

'*tishṭhat*'), the gods (*i.e.* the Brahmins¹⁶⁰) are terrified by it, *yad vai no 'yañ na himsyād iti* ('lest it should destroy us'): and with the view of appeasing this [howling, hungry] flame, which is conceived of as in the form of Rudra, *i.e.* to consecrate and propitiate the fire, they offer their adoration to Rudra, and to his supposed troop of associates, *i.e.* to all conceivable shapes of terror, and by this means render them favourable, and avert all their malevolent influences. Hence the Brāhmaṇa explains *śata-rudriya* by *śānta-rudriya* (as *gata* comes from the root *gam*); a double sense, which may perhaps have actually been, though indistinctly, contemplated, when the name was first given.¹⁶¹ In this application of Rudra as the god of fire (independently of the other contents of the *Satarudriya*), we may find an indication of the time when it was composed. Though Rudra originally signifies generally the howler, and consequently can stand as well for an epithet of the crackling fire as of the raging storm, yet in the earliest period the word had been more specially used to denote the latter signification, and is therefore frequently used in the *Rig-veda* in the plural as an epithet of the Maruts. The unbridled fury (*manyu*) of the storm, its roaring, its tearing up (*aufwühlen*) of heaven and earth,¹⁶² must have produced a strong and overpowering effect upon the Arian Indians in the high mountain valleys (perhaps of Kashmīr) in which we must conceive them to have lived at that early period; and it was thus in the natural course of things that they should connect everything terrible and horrible with the idea of the god of storms, and regard him as the lord, and the cause, of every evil:¹⁶³ numberless, indeed, were these aerial hosts, black, pierced only by the quivering gleams of the lightning, diffusing everywhere shuddering and horror.

"It is true that Rudra 'is also appealed to as wise and bountiful, the

¹⁶⁰ "In the Brāhmaṇas the thoughts of men are very frequently put into the mouths of the gods. For instance, when the gods go to Prajāpati, and request him to solve any difficulty, this is merely a transcendental expression for the fact of a few wise men applying for instruction to one still wiser than themselves."

¹⁶¹ "The Ārshādhyāya of the *Chārāyaṇīya* School of the Kāthaka also (ii. 17) says: *S'atarudriyañ devānāñ Rudra-śamanan*." 'The *S'atarudriya* is an appeasing of Rudra by the gods.'

¹⁶² "Hence in the R.V. i. 114, 5, he is also called *varāha*, "boar," as the storm-clouds too are elsewhere conceived under the same image" (*Ind. Stud.* i. 272, note).

¹⁶³ "In R.V. i. 114; ii. 33. Hence, too, seven verses from these hymns are incorporated in the *S'atarudriya*."

author of fertility, and giver of happiness;'¹⁶⁴ but it is only indirectly that he is so addressed, and merely because he departs, and directs his destroying arrows towards some other quarter, against the enemies of the suppliant, and leaves the latter himself in peace; the worshipper flatters him with fair words, as if he were purely benevolent, to pacify his anger, and to render him gracious (*śiva*); and he only appears directly beneficent in so far as he chases away clouds and vapours, purifies and clears the atmosphere; in reference to this he is called a physician, and moreover acquainted with healing herbs: but he carries also diseases and contagions themselves as arrows in his quiver, and slays therewith men and cattle.

"In the crackling flame of the fire, now, men thought that they heard again the wrathful voice of the storm, that in the consuming fierceness of the former, they perceived once more the destructive fury of the latter. In this way we have to explain how it happened that both deities became gradually identified, and lent their respective epithets to one another, particularly as at the same time the storm is, in bad weather, accompanied with gleaming and fiery lightnings. This identification seems to have extended not merely to Agni and Rudra themselves, but also to the Rudras, in so far as the latter, from being the raging and flaming companions of the storm, appear to have become the representatives of all sorts of terrific shapes in general, until in the epic period they retired completely into the background, while their ancient master, Rudra, in his combination with Agni, became continually more firmly condensed as the god of rage and destruction, and a new class of beings took the place of the Rudras as attendants upon him (in his capacity of *Śiva*).

"At the period when the Rudra-book (the Satarudriya) was composed, the blending of the two destructive deities (Storm and Fire) had evidently taken place; and the epithets which are there assigned to Rudra lead us back partly to himself, and partly to Agni. The epithets 'dweller in the mountains' (*giriśa*, *giriśaya*, *giriśanta*, *giritra*), and those of *kapardin*, *vyūpta-keśa*, *ugra*, and *bhīma*, *bhishaj* and *śiva*, *śambhu* and *śankara*, belong to the Storm, while on the other hand those of *nīla-grīva* (= *nīlakaṇṭha*, spoken of smoke), *śitikanṭha*, *hiraṇyabāhu* (of flame), *vilohita*, *śaśarākṣa* (of sparks), *paśupati* (of sacrificial

¹⁶⁴ Wilson, Introd. to Trans. of R. V., vol. i., quoted above, p. 394.

victims), *śarva* and *bhava*, etc., belong to Fire. Now almost all these epithets¹⁰⁵ are technical epithets and characteristics of the epic Śīva, and when applied to him are partially unintelligible, and become explicable only after they have been distinguished according to the two separate elements to whose combination this god owes his origin.¹⁰⁶ But as in the Rudra-book Rudra nowhere appears as Īśa or Mahādeva, and no character is assigned to him analogous to that of the epic Śiva; and as the word *śīva* is applied to him simply as an epithet (with its comparative *śivatara* annexed); the book in question must in any case be held to date from an earlier epoch of the Indian religion, whilst its elevation to the rank of an Upanishad may only have taken place in the epic period, and have been occasioned by the special worship of Śiva."

The following remarks of Professor Whitney on the same subject are taken from the Journal of the American Oriental Society, vol. iii., p. 318 f. (published in 1853); and are reprinted in the volume entitled "Oriental and Linguistic Studies," published by their author in 1873:

"To the second domain, the atmosphere, belong the various divinities of the wind and storm. God of the breeze, the gentler motion of the air, is Vayū (from the root *vā*, 'blow'). He drives a thousand steeds; his breath chases away the demons; he comes in the earliest morning, as the first breath of air that stirs itself at daybreak, to drink the soma, and the Auroras weave for him shining garments. The storm-winds are a troop, the Maruts or Rudras: the two names are indifferently used, but the former is much the more usual (the etymology of neither is fully established). They drive spotted stags, wear shining armour, and carry spears in their hands; no one knows whence they come nor whither they go; their voice is heard aloud as they come rushing on; the earth tremble and the mountains shake before them. They belong in Indra's train; are his almost constant allies and companions. They are called the sons of Rudra, who is conceived of as peculiar god of the tempest. As their father he is very often mentioned; as a divinity with independent attributes he is of much rarer occurrence; hymns addressed to him alone are but few.

¹⁰⁵ "And so of many other epithets found elsewhere: thus Śīva owes his epithet Tryambaka, and his wife Ambikā, to Rudra; and, on the other hand, his epithet Tripura, and his wife Kālī, Karālī, to Agni," etc.

¹⁰⁶ "Hence he is also called Kālāgnirudra, as in the Purāṇas, and in the Kālāgnirudra Upanishad."

He is, as might be expected, a terrible god: he carries a great bow from which he hurls a sharp missile at the earth; he is called the 'ruler of men,' *kshayadvira*; ¹⁶⁷ his wrath is deprecated, and he is besought not to harm his worshipper; if not in the R̥ik, at least in the Atharvan and Brāhmaṇas, he is styled 'lord of the animals,' as the un-housed beasts of the field are especially at the mercy of the pitiless storm. At the same time, to propitiate him, he is addressed as master of a thousand remedies, best of physicians, protector from harm: this may have its ground, too, partly in the beneficial effects of the tempest in freshening the atmosphere of that sultry clime. Rudra's chief interest consists in the circumstance that he forms the point of connexion between the Vedic religion and the later Īiva-worship. Īiva is a god unknown to the Vedas: his name is a word of not unfrequent occurrence in the hymns, but means simply 'propitious'; not even in the Atharvan is it the epithet of a particular divinity, or distinguished by its usage from any other adjective. As given to him whose title it has since become, it seems one of those euphemisms so frequent in the Indian religion, applied as a soothing and flattering address to the most terrible god in the whole Pantheon. The precise relation between Īiva and Rudra is not yet satisfactorily traced out. The introduction of an entirely new divinity from the mountains of the north has been supposed, who was grafted in upon the ancient religion by being identified with Rudra; or again a blending of some of Agni's attributes with those of Rudra to originate a new development. Perhaps neither of these may be necessary; Īiva may be a local form of Rudra, arisen under the influence of peculiar climatic relations in the districts from which he made his way down into Hindostan proper; introduced among, and readily accepted by, a people which, as the Atharvan shows, was strongly tending toward a terrorism in its religion."

The characters ascribed to Rudra in the hymns of the R. V. are most heterogeneous and frequently indefinite. I shall endeavour to gather from different places and to group together those epithets which have most affinity to each other. This god is described as wise, bountiful, and powerful (i. 43, 1; i. 114, 4), as the strongest and most glorious of beings (ii. 33, 3),¹⁶⁸ as lord (*isāna*) of this world, possessed of

¹⁶⁷ Compare the note on the sense of this word, above, p. 301 f.

divine power (ii. 33, 9), as unsurpassed in might¹⁶⁸ (*ibid.* 10), as the father of the world,¹⁶⁹ mighty, exalted, undecaying (vi. 49, 10); as cognizant of the doings of men and gods by his power and universal dominion (vii. 46, 2); as putting the waters in motion (x. 92, 5); as self-dependent (vii. 46, 1), and as deriving his renown from himself (i. 129, 3; x. 92, 9); as the lord of heroes (i. 114, 1, 3, 10; x. 92, 9); as the lord of songs and sacrifices (i. 43, 4), the fulfiller of sacrifices (i. 114, 4); brilliant as the sun, and as gold (i. 43, 5), tawny-coloured (this epithet is frequently applied), with beautiful chin (ii. 33, 5), fair-complexioned (*ibid.* 8), multiform, fierce, arrayed in golden ornaments (*ibid.* 9), youthful (v. 60, 5), terrible as a wild beast, destructive (ii. 23, 11), wearing spirally-braided hair (i. 114, 1, 5); and as the celestial boar (*ibid.* 5). He is frequently represented as the father of the Maruts or Rudras (i. 64, 2; i. 85, 1; i. 114, 6, 9; ii. 33, 1; ii. 34, 2; v. 52, 16; v. 60, 5; vi. 50, 4; vi. 66, 3; vii. 56, 1; viii. 20, 17). He is once identified with Agni (ii. 1, 6). He is described as seated on a chariot (ii. 33, 11), as wielding the thunderbolt (ii. 33, 3), as armed with a bow and arrows (*ibid.* 10, 14; v. 42, 11; x. 125, 6), with a strong bow and fleet arrows, with sharp weapons (vi. 74, 4; vii. 46, 1; viii. 29, 5). His shafts are discharged from the sky, and traverse the earth (vii. 46, 3). He is called the slayer of men (*nṛi-ghno*, iv. 3, 6).¹⁷⁰ His anger, ill-will, and destructive shafts are deprecated (i. 114, 7, 8; ii. 33, 1, 11, 14; vi. 28, 7; vii. 46, 3, 4). But he is also represented as benevolent (i. 114, 9), as mild, and easily invoked (ii. 33, 5), beneficent (*ibid.* 7), gracious (*śiva*, x. 92, 9), as the cause or condition of health and prosperity to man and beast (i. 114, 1). He is frequently described as the possessor of healing remedies, and is once characterized as the greatest of physicians (i. 43, 4; i. 114, 5; ii. 33, 2, 4, 7, 12, 13; v. 42, 11; vi. 74, 3;¹⁷¹ vii. 35, 6; vii. 46, 3; viii.

¹⁶⁸ Compare the similar epithets applied to Vishnu and Indra above: see pp. 97 f. and generally sections i. and ii., chapter ii. above. And yet in R.V. ii. 39, 9, Rudra is described in common with Indra, Varuna, Mitra, and Aryaman, as unable to resist the will of Savitṛi. See the fifth volume of this work, p. 163.

¹⁶⁹ *Bhuvanaśya pitaram*. Compare Raghuvansa i. 1, where Parameśvara (Śiva) and Pārvatī are styled the "parents of the world" (*jagataḥ pitarau*).

¹⁷⁰ In vii. 56, 17, it is similarly said of the Maruts, *āre gohū nṛihū vadho vo astu*: "Far be your kine-slaying, man-slaying bolt."

¹⁷¹ In this passage Soma is associated with Rudra as the dispenser of remedies.

29, 5). He is supplicated for blessings (i. 114, 1, 2; ii. 33, 6), and represented as averting the anger of the gods (i. 114, 4; ii. 33, 7). In R. V. vi. 74, 1 ff. he is connected with Soma in the dual, and entreated along with the latter to bestow good and avert evil.

On a review of these passages, and the hymns from which they are drawn, it appears that in most places Rudra has no very clearly defined function (such, for instance, as is ascribed to Indra and Agni, or even to Vishnu) as an agent in producing, or a representative of, the great phenomena of the physical world. It would be difficult to make out from the larger portion of the texts which I have cited to what region of the universe the activity of this god should be referred. It is true that he is repeatedly declared to be the father of the Maruts or Rudras (the winds or storms); and from this relation we might anticipate that he would be described as, still more eminently than they, the generator of tempests, and chaser of clouds. There are, however, few, if any, distinct traces of any such agency being ascribed to him. The numerous vague epithets which are constantly applied to him would not suffice to fix the particular sphere of his operation, or even to define his personality, as most of them are equally applied to other deities. This is the case with the terms "fierce," "tawny-coloured," "with beautiful chin"; and even the word *kapardin* ("with spirally-braided hair"), which at a later period became a common, if not distinctive, epithet of Mahādeva, is in the R. V. applied also to Pūshan (see above, p. 301, note 7). While, however, the cosmical function of Rudra is thus but obscurely indicated, he is described as possessing other marked and peculiar characteristics. It is, however, principally in his relation to the good and evil which befall the persons and property of men that he is depicted. And here there can be little doubt that, though he is frequently supplicated to bestow prosperity, and though he is constantly addressed as the possessor of healing remedies, he is principally regarded as a malevolent deity, whose destructive shafts, the source of disease and death to man and beast, the worshipper strives by his entreaties to avert. If this view be correct, the remedies of which Rudra is the dispenser may be considered as signifying little more than the cessation of his destroying agency (as Professor Weber remarks, see above, p. 397), and the consequent restoration to health and vigour of those victims of his ill-will who had been in danger of perishing. It may appear

strange that opposite functions should thus be assigned to the same god: but evil and good, sickness and health, death and life, are naturally associated as contraries, the presence of the one implying the absence of the other, and vice versâ; and in later times Mahādeva is in a somewhat similar manner regarded as the generator as well as the destroyer. We may add to this that, while it is natural to deprecate the wrath of a deity supposed to be the destroyer, the suppliant may fear to provoke his displeasure, and to awaken his jealousy, by calling on any other deity to provide a remedy. When the destructive god has been induced to relent, to withdraw his visitation, or remove its effects, it is natural for his worshippers to represent him as gracious and benevolent, as we see done in some of the hymns to Rudra.

From the above description, however, it will be apparent that the elder Rudra, though different in many respects from the later Mahādeva, is yet, like him, a terrible and destructive deity; while, on the other hand, the ancient Vishṇu, like the modern god of the same name, is represented to us as a preserver, of a benignant, or, at least, of an innocuous, character (R.V. i. 22, 18; i. 155, 4; i. 186, 10; viii. 25, 12).

In the Yajur-veda we find the same characteristics assigned to Rudra as in the Rig-veda. Thus both a healing virtue (iii. 59; xvi. 5, 49) and a destructive efficacy are ascribed to him, the latter being depicted in the liveliest colours, and deprecated in every variety of expression. Thus he is represented (iii. 61; xvi. 1, and elsewhere) as carrying a bow and arrows, and is earnestly supplicated (xvi. 9 ff., 51 ff.) to avert his shafts from the worshipper. Many of the epithets which are applied to him in the Rig-veda occur again here, such as "brown" or "tawny" (xvi. 6), the god "with spirally-braided hair" (*ibid.* 10), the "fierce" (*ibid.* 40), the "bountiful," the "gracious" (51), etc.; while a multitude of new appellations are heaped upon him (and his attendants), such as "blue-necked," "thousand-eyed" (*ibid.* 7), "thousand-quivered" (13), "clad in a skin" (iii. 61; xvi. 51), "the dweller in the mountains" (xvi. 2, 3, 4), and others far too numerous to repeat (xvi. 17-46). The imagination of the rishi runs riot in the invention of these epithets, which are of the most heterogeneous description. Some of the characteristics here attributed to Rudra are of a disgraceful nature, as where he is styled the "lord of thieves, the robber, the cheater, the deceiver, the lord of pilferers and robbers," etc. (xv. 20,

21). Several new names are ascribed to Rudra in this Veda, as Bhava, Śarva, Paśupati, etc., etc. (vv. 18, 28).¹⁷² Altogether an approximation is discernible in the epithets which occur in the Śatarudriya to the fierce, terrific, impure, and repulsive character of the later Mahādeva. Ambikā is mentioned for the first time in the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā (iii. 5), and is described not as the wife, but as the sister of Rudra.

In the Atharva-veda also reference is made both to the therapeutic character of Rudra and to the destructive arrows and lightnings of Bhava and Śarva (ii. 27, 6; vi. 93, 1; x. i. 23; xi. 2, 1, 12, etc.). Rudra is identified with Agni (vii. 87, 1); and again with Savitṛi (xiii. 4, 4). On the other hand, Bhava and Śarva, and again Bhava and Rudra, are spoken of in the dual (viii. 2, 7; x. i. 23; xi. 2, 1; xi. 2, 14, 16; xi. 6, 9; xii. 4, 17); and would thus appear to have been regarded by the rishi as distinct gods. Śarva is described as an archer, Bhava as a king (vi. 93, 2); and they, as well as Rudra, are said to have poisons and consumption at their command (vi. 93, 2; xi. 2, 26). In A. V. xi. 2, 2, 30, the devouring birds and dogs of Rudra are alluded to (compare Vāj. Sanh. xvi. 28). In another verse Bhava is said to rule over the sky and the earth, and to fill the vast atmosphere (A. V. xi. 2, 27).¹⁷³

In the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa (i. 7, 3, 8) Śarva, Bhava, Paśupati, and Rudra are said to be all names of Agni; and of these appellations Śarva is declared to be in use among the people of the east, and Bhava among the western tribe of the Bāhikas. Another passage (vi. 1, 3, 7 ff.) of the same Brāhmaṇa describes the birth of a boy (*kumāra*, a word applied to Agni in the Rig-veda, v. 2, 1), to whom the names of Rudra, Śarva, Paśupati, Ugra, Aśani, Bhava, Mahān-deva, and Īśāna were successively

¹⁷² In the same Veda, xxxix. 8, we have the following gods, or appellations of one god, specified, viz., Agni, Aśani, Paśupati, Bhava, Śarva, Īśāna, Mahādeva, Ugra-deva, etc. (*Agniṁ hṛdayena Aśaniṁ hṛdayāgreṇa Paśupatiṁ kṛtsna-hṛdayena Bhavaṁ yaknā | Śarvaṁ matasābhyām Īśānaṁ manyunā Mahādevam antahparivāgyena Ugraṁ devaṁ vanishṭhūnā ityādi*).

¹⁷³ The Nirukta i. 15, as I have already remarked, p. 355, note 98, contains the first words of a text relating to Rudra which is given at length by the commentator Durga, and is cited and translated above. After ascribing a martial character to Rudra in the first line, this text appears to assign to him, in the second, the threefold function of universal creator, preserver, and destroyer. As it is partially quoted in the Nirukta, this verse, though it does not appear whence it comes, must, unless interpolated, be of considerable antiquity.

given, all of them, according to the writer, representing different forms of Agni. In the somewhat different version of the same story given in the Sāṅkhāyana Brāhmaṇa (see above, pp. 343 ff.) the newly-born deity is not identified with Agni. But the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, in another passage (ix. 1, 1, 1 ff.) referred to by Professor Weber (see above, pp. 347 and 395 f.), appears again clearly to make this identification. Finally, traces of the early connexion of Rudra with Agni are discoverable, as I have already remarked (p. 349), in the legend of the birth of Kārttikeya, which I have quoted from the Mahābhārata.

Though, however, these deities may have at one time come to be thus identified, the distinctive epithets applied to Rudra in the Rīgveda appear sufficiently to prove that he was generally discriminated from Agni by his early worshippers. The tendency visible both in the hymns of the Veda and in the Brāhmaṇas (see above, R.V. ii. 1, 6, p. 306; A. V. vii. 87, 1, and xiii. 4, 4, pp. 333 and 338; Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, as quoted in p. 341; Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 1, 1, 5, p. 22) to identify the different deities with one another may have arisen from a vague conception of the unity of the divine principle by which all these several divinities were supposed to be diversely animated.

Between the texts which I have cited from the Brāhmaṇas relative to Rudra, and the earliest descriptions of the same deity which we discover in the Epic poems, a wide chasm intervenes, which, as far as I am aware, no genuine ancient materials exist (for the Upanishads I have quoted are of uncertain date) for bridging over. The Rudra of the Mahābhārata is not indeed very different in his general character from the god of the same name who is portrayed in the Satarudriya; but in the later literature his importance is immensely increased, his attributes are more clearly defined, and the conceptions entertained of his person are rendered more distinct by the addition of various additional features, and illustrated by numerous legends. Instead of remaining a subordinate deity, as he was in the Vedic era, Rudra has thrown Agni, Vāyu, Sūrya, Mitra, and Varuṇa completely into the shade; and although Indra still occupies a prominent place in the Epic legends, he has sunk down into a subordinate position, and is quite unable to compete in power and dignity with Rudra, who, together with Viṣṇu, now engrosses the almost exclusive worship of the Brahmanical world. * Ambikā, who was subsequently identified with the

spouse of Rudra, is in the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā (above, p. 321) spoken of as his sister. Umā or Pārvatī, with whom he was unconnected in the Vedic period, and of whom the earliest mention, as far as I know, occurs in the Kena Upanishad, and the Taittiriya Āraṇyaka,¹⁷⁴ is now his acknowledged consort.¹⁷⁵ In systematic mythology the function of destroyer is assigned to him, as that of creator is to Brahmā, and that of preserver to Viṣṇu; but he is also worshipped under the emblem of the "Linga" as the great generative power.

I have (above, pp. 192 f.) quoted a passage from the Mahābhārata in which the Linga is dwelt upon at length, though it is difficult to say to what age this passage may be referable. Comp. also the epithet "mahāśeṣa" in p. 191 f., which points to the same idea.

In the following passage of the same book, the Linga is again mentioned in verses which follow the last of those quoted above in p. 197 ff.:

Anuśāsana-parvan, v. 7510.—*Dahaty ūrdhvaṁ sthito yach cha prāṇān nṛṇāṃ sthiraś cha yat | sthira-lingas cha yan nityaṁ tasmāt Sthānūr iti smṛitaḥ | v. 7516. Nityancho brahmacharyeṇa lingam asya yadā sthitam | mahayanty asya lokāś cha priyaṁ hy etad mahātmanaḥ | vīgraham pūjayed yo vai līngam vā pi mahātmanaḥ | linga-pūjayitā nityam mahatīm śrīyam āsnute | rishayas chāpi devāś cha gandharvāpsarasas tathā | lingam evārohayanti sma yat tad ūrdhvaṁ samasthitam | ityādi |*
 "And since, standing aloft, he consumes the lives of men, and since he is fixed, and since his Linga is perpetually fixed, he is therefore called Sthānu. . . . 7516. And when his Linga remains constantly in a state of chastity, and people reverence it, this is agreeable to the great [god]. The worshipper of the Linga, who shall adore the image (*vīgraha*), or the Linga, of the great [god], enjoys continually great prosperity. It is the Linga, raised up, which the rishis, gods,

¹⁷⁴ These passages will be quoted in the next section.

¹⁷⁵ It appears (see Westergaard's Dissertation on the Oldest Period of Indian History, p. 82, note) that Pāṇini (4, 1, 49) gives a rule whereby, in addition to the names of the goddesses Indrāṇī and Varuṇāṇī, which are found in the Rīg-veda, the names of four others who are not found there, and who are all wives of Śiva (under his different appellations of Bhava, Śarva, Rudra, and Mṛida)—viz. Bhavāṇī Śarvāṇī, Rudrāṇī, and Mṛidāṇī—may be formed. (The rule is this: *Indra-Varuṇa-Bhava-Śarva-Rudra-Mṛida-himāranya-yava-yavana-māliāchāryāṇām ānuk*). It does not, however, follow that these last-named goddesses had risen into any importance in the time of Pāṇini. Indrāṇī and Varuṇāṇī were never of any significance.

Gandharvas, and Apsarases worship." Compare with this extract verses 9616 f., 9625 and 9631 of the Droṇa-parvan.

The Linga is also mentioned in the list of Śiva's names in another part of the same Anuśāsana-parvan, v. 1160 :

Ūrdhva-retāḥ ūrdhva-lingaḥ ūrdhva-sāyī nabhaḥ-sthitaḥ | v. 1191.
Lingādhyakṣaḥ surādhyakṣaḥ vījādhyakṣo vija-kartā

"He whose seed is raised up, whose Linga is raised up, who sleeps aloft, who abides in the sky." v. 1191. "The lord of the Linga, the lord of the suras (gods) the lord of seed, the former of seed."¹⁷⁶

We possess no records to show how this phallic emblem became connected with Rudra. But, as Dr. Stevenson (Journal R. A. S., viii. 330¹⁷⁷) and Professor Lassen (Ind. Ant., i. 2nd ed. 924) imagine, it

¹⁷⁶ In the Sautika-parvan it is related that Mahādeva had been appointed by Brahmā to create living beings. He proceeded to perform austerities, and continued doing so so long that Brahmā produced another creator, who performed his task. Mahādeva at last came, and seeing that the creation had already been effected, he became angry and split his Linga, which was then placed in the earth (v. 780 f. : *śhukroḍha bhagavān Rudro lingaṁ evaṁ chāpyavidhyata | tat praviddhaṁ tathā bhūmau tathaiva pratyatishṭhata*). I have not observed any mention of the Linga in the earlier part of the Rāmāyaṇa, but in the Uttara Kāṇḍa, sect. 31, v. 42 f., the following lines occur : *Yatra yatra cha yāti sma Rāvaṇa rākṣaseśvaraḥ | jāmbūna-damayaṁ lingaṁ tatra tatra sma nīyate* | 43. *Bāhukū-vedi-madhye tu tal lingaṁ śhūṇya Rāvaṇaḥ | archayāmāsa gandhaṁ cha pushpaṁ chāmṛita-gandhibhiḥ* | "Wherever Rāvaṇa, lord of the Rākshasas, went, a golden linga was carried thither. Placing that linga in the midst of a pedestal of sand, Rāvaṇa worshipped it with incense, and flowers of ambrosial odour." The commentator remarks on v. 43 : *Tal lingaṁ jāmbūnadamayaṁ nitya-pūjī-lingam | Aśvarya-kāmanayā hi tal-linga-pūjā Rāvaṇasya | Aśvarya-kāmanaya sauvarṇa-linga-pūjāyāś tantrośhukteḥ* | "That golden linga was intended for constant worship. He worshipped it from the desire of sovereignty. For it is prescribed in the Tantras that a golden linga should be worshipped when any one desires sovereignty."

¹⁷⁷ In this paper on "the Ante-Brahmanical Religion of the Hindus," the Rev. Dr. Stevenson asserts that the "worship of Śiva, especially under the form of the Linga," is one of the practices for which he considers modern Hinduism is indebted to the ante-Brahmanical religion of India, i.e. to local superstitions prevalent among the aboriginal tribes anterior to the development of the existing Brahmanical system. This opinion in regard to Śiva is grounded by Dr. Stevenson on the facts : (1) that Śiva is not named in the ancient Vedic hymns; (2) that Rudra does not occupy in those hymns the high position which the later Śiva holds; (3) that various particulars in the legend of Dakṣa (see above, pp. 372 ff.), such as the general indisposition to acknowledge Śiva's right to share in the sacrifice, and the circumstances that his rites required no Brahmanical priest (see above, p. 377, note 132), point to a recent introduction of Śiva's worship (comp. Mahābhārata, Vana-parvan, vv. 11001 ff., cited

is not impossible that it may have been at first an object of veneration among the aboriginal or non-Arian Indians; and that it was subsequently adopted by the Brahmans from them, and associated with the worship of Rudra.

This conjecture would acquire additional probability if we were justified in supposing that the word "śisnadeva," which occurs in two passages of the Rig-veda, had any reference to a worship of this sort existing among the barbarous tribes towards whom the authors of the hymns so often express hostility, as the followers of a different religion from their own. The texts in which the word in question is found have been already adduced and translated in the second volume of this work (p. 391, note 76). But I shall quote them again here with their obscure and difficult contexts, and endeavour to elucidate them further. The first passage is as follows:

R. V. vii. 21, 3 ff.—*Tvam Indra eravitavai apas kaḥ parishṭhitāḥ Ahinā śūra pūrvīḥ | tvad vāvakre rathyo na dhenāḥ rejante viśvā kṛitrimāṇi bhīṣhā |* 4. *Bhīmo viveśha āyudhebhīr eśhām apāṃsi viśvā naryāṇi vidvān | Indrah puro jarhṛishāno vi dūdhod vi vajra-hasto mahinā jaghāna |* 5. *Na yātavaḥ Indra jūjuvur no na vandanā śaviśṭha vedyābhīḥ¹⁷⁸ | sa śardhad aryo vishunasya jantor mā śisna-devāḥ api gur ṛitaṃ naḥ |* 6. *Abhi kratvā Indra bhūr adha jman na te vivyan mahimānaṃ rajāṃsi | svena hi Vṛitraṃ śavasā jaghantha na śatruṃ antaṃ vidad yudhā te |* 7. *Devās chit te asuryāya pūrve anu kshatrāya mamire sahāṃsi | Indro maghāni dayate vishahya Indram vājasya johavantu sātāu |* 8. *Kṛis chid hi tvām avase juhāva isāṇam Indra saubhagasya bhūreḥ | avo babhūtha śatam-ūte asme abhikshattus tvāvato varūtā |*

"3. Thou, heroic Indra, hast caused to flow the abundant waters which had been obstructed by Ahi. Through thee the cows (rivers,

in p. 284 of this volume); (4) that there is no connexion between the Linga and any of the ancient Brahmanical emblems; (5) that the principal seats of the Linga worship are to be found in the south and north-east of India, at a distance from the original Brahmanical settlements; (6) that in the Mahratta country no Brahman officiates as priest in a Linga temple, while, on the contrary, in the temples of Vishnu Brahmans alone officiate. [This distinction does not, I think, exist in Northern India. In the temple of Viśvesvara, at Benares, the officiating priests, if I am not mistaken, are Brahmans. The same is the impression of Prof. Fitz-Edward Hall, with whom I have communicated on the subject.—J. M.]

¹⁷⁸ For the sense assigned to this word in Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, see s.v. *vedyā*.

according to Śāyana) have rolled on like warriors in chariots. All created things tremble for fear. 4. The terrible [god], skilled in all heroic deeds, has with his weapons mastered these [cloud-demons]. Indra, exulting, has shattered their cities; armed with the thunder-bolt he has smitten them asunder by his might. 5. Neither demons impel us, Indra, nor, O puissant [deity], of a truth any evil spirits. The glorious [Indra] defies the hostile beings: let not those whose god is the 'śisna' approach our sacred ceremony. 6. Thou, O Indra, hast surpassed in power, when thou runnest thy course. The worlds have not comprehended within them thy greatness. By thine own might thou hast slain Vṛitra. No enemy hath attained the end of thee in battle. 7. The earlier gods have yielded to thy divine power; their powers have bowed before thy sovereign might.¹⁷⁹ Indra having conquered, dispenses wealth. Let men invoke Indra in the combat. 8. Indra, the bard hath invoked for protection thee, the lord of great prosperity. O thou who bringest a hundred succours, thou hast been a defence to us, a defender against the assailant of him who is devoted to thee."

R.V. x. 99, 1 ff.—*Kaṁ naś chitram ishanyasi chikitvān prithugmānaṁ vāsraṁ vāvṛidhadhyai | kat tasya dātu śavaso vyushṭau takshad vajraṁ Vṛitra-turam apinvat | 2. Sa hi dyutā vidyutā veti sāma prithuṁ yonim asuratvā "sasāda | sa sanīlebbhiḥ prasahāno asya bhrātūr na rite sapta-thasya māyāḥ | 3. Sa vājaṁ yātā apadushpadā yan svarshātā parishadat sanishyan | anarvā yat śata-durasya¹⁸⁰ vedo ghnān śisnadevān abhi varpasā 'bhūt | 4. Sa yahvyo avanīr goshu arvā ā juhōti pradhanyāsu sasriḥ | apādo yatra yuyjāso 'rathāḥ drony-āśvāsah irate ghṛitāṁ vāḥ | 5. Sa Rudrebhir aśasta-vāraḥ ṛibhvā hitvī gayam āre-avaḍyāḥ ā agāt | vāmrasya manye mīthunā vivavṛi annam abhītya arodḍyat mushōyan | 6. Sa id dāsaṁ tuvi-ravam patir dan śaḍ-akṣhaṁ tri-śīrshānaṁ damanyat | asya Tritō nu ojasā vṛidhāno vipā varāham ayo-agrayā han | 7. Sa druhvāne manushe ūrdhvasānaḥ ā sāvishad arśasūndya śarum | sa nritamo nahusho 'smat sujātaḥ puro 'bhīnad arhan dasyu-hatyē | "What wonderful, wide-travelling bull dost thou, perceiving, send to us for our delight! What an act of power does he display at the dawn! He has formed the*

¹⁷⁹ "Thre Kraft kommt dñiner Herrscherkraft nicht gleich,"—Böhtlingk and Roth s.v. mā+anu.

¹⁸⁰ This word in the locative plural also occurs in R.V. i. 51, 3.

Vṛitra-slaying thunderbolt, and has strengthened thee. 2. With gleaming light he comes to the goal; in his divine glory he hath seated himself on our broad place of sacrifice; with his allies he overcomes the delusions of him who pretends to be his seventh brother. 3. Proceeding to the conflict, and desiring to acquire them, he has gone to, and in hostile array besieged, inaccessible places, at the time when, irresistible, slaying those whose god is the 'śisna,' he by his craft conquered the riches of the city with a hundred gates. 4. The steed, coming among the cows conquered in battle, pours out the flowing rivers [in the place] where the allies, without feet or chariots, employing the clouds as their horses, send forth fertilizing water. 5. The great [Indra], who has indescribable treasures, and from whom evil is far removed, forsaking his house, has arrived with the Rudras. Coming and plundering their food, he has, I believe, made the two unsheltered (children) of Vamra to weep. 6. This lord subjugated the loud-voiced Dāsa with six eyes and three heads. Trita, increasing through his strength, struck the boar with his iron-tipped shaft. 7. Rising up, he has launched his arrow against the malignant and destructive man. He, the noble and potent hero, has shattered for us the cities of the enemy (or of Nahush) in the conflict with the destroyers (Dasyus)."¹⁸¹

The following is Sāyana's explanation of the word "śisnadeva" in the first of the preceding passages, R.V. vii. 21, 5, and repeated briefly in his note on the second passage: *S'isna-devāḥ | śisnena divyanti kṛṇḍanti iti śisna-devāḥ | abrahmacharyāḥ ity arthaḥ | tathā cha Yaskaḥ | . . . "śisna-devāḥ abrahmacharyāḥ" | . . . "Śisnadevāḥ" are those who sport with the śisna (membrum virile), i.e. unchaste men; as Yaska says, 'Śisnadevāḥ' means the unchaste.* Durga, the commentator on the Nirukta, as cited by Roth (Illust. of Nir. p. 47), gives the same explanation as Sāyana. He says that those men are called "śisnadeva" who "are always dallying carnally with prostitutes, forsaking Vedic observances" (*śisnena nityam eva prakīrṇābhiḥ strībhiḥ sakaṁ kṛṇḍantaḥ āsate śrautāni karmāny utaṛijya*). Roth, in the place I have cited, thinks the word is a sarcastic appellation for priapic or lustful demons, and translates it by "Schwanz-götter."

¹⁸¹ Prof. Aufrecht has given me much assistance in translating these two passages. —Note in first edition. I have made a good many alterations in the second edition.

It does not appear to me that Sāyana's interpretation has much to recommend it. There are some other words in the Veda in which the word "deva" forms the last member of the compound, as "anṛita-deva" (vii. 104, 14) and "mūra-deva" (vii. 104, 24).¹²² Sāyana explains "mūra-devāḥ" as—"māraṇa-kṛdāḥ," "those who make a sport of killing"; and he therefore takes "deva" there in the same sense as he does in "śisna-deva." But in the other word, "anṛita-deva," he takes "deva" in the usual sense of "god," and interprets it as "he whose gods are false" (*anṛitāḥ asatya-bhūtāḥ devāḥ yasya tādṛśāḥ*). In the same way he understands "anti-devam" in R.V. i. 180, 7, as meaning "near the gods." And though in Böhtlingk and Roth's Dictionary the word "anṛita-deva" is explained as signifying a "false player," this interpretation is afterwards withdrawn (in favour of that which Sāyana gives of this word) at the close of the article on the word "deva." Nor does the sense assigned by Sāyana to "śisna-deva" appear to be in itself a very probable one. For the epithet "lascivious" would not necessarily be a term of reproach in the mouth of an Indian poet of the Vedic age, when, though the institution of marriage was recognized and honoured, no great amount of reprobation could have been attached to unchastity in the case of men (compare R.V. i. 167, 4; ix. 112, 4; x. 85, 37, and x. 86, 16, 17, and the fifth volume of this work, pp. 307 f., 460 f). On the other hand, if the word "śisna-deva" is to be understood of human beings, and if it could be taken as describing any deviation from the contemporaneous Arian worship, it would find many parallels in the Rig-veda, as may be seen by a comparison of the words "akarmaṇ," "adavayū," "anṛich," "anindra," "anya-vrata," "apavrata," "avrata," "abrahman," "ayajvan" "ayajyu" | "without ceremonies, no worshippers of the gods, without hymns, without Indra, following other rites, averse to rites, without rites, without priests, or prayers, offering no sacrifices," in the passages quoted in the second volume of this work, pp. 359 f., 371 ff.

It is, however, objected that "śisna" cannot be taken as equivalent to "Linga," which means a sign, the phallus, and is therefore emblematic, while the "śisna" denotes not an image, but the male organ itself. "Śisna" has also the sense of "tail," as in R.V. i. 105, 8,

¹²² The word is explained by Böhtlingk and Roth *s.v.* as=*mūladeva*, and as denoting a species of goblins.

pointed out to me by Professor Aufrecht, where the words *mūṣhe na śīna vyadanti mā ādhyah* mean, "cares worry me, like mice gnawing their tails." The word "śīnadevāḥ," if understood of demons, may therefore mean, as Roth suggests, "tailed (or priapic) demons," and not "worshippers of the śīna." The same difficulty which we encounter in fixing the meaning of the word "daasyu," viz. whether it is to be understood of men or demons (see the second volume of this work, pp. 362 ff.; 388 ff.), recurs here. In the first of the passages quoted above (vii. 21, 5) it appears, so long as we are ignorant of the real sense of "śīna-deva," that it might be understood either of men or demons, either of whom would have been unwelcome visitors at an Arian ceremonial. Perhaps, as the word "yātavaḥ" (demons) precedes, it is most likely that the latter are intended: and the same remark may be held to apply to the second passage (x. 99, 3).

However interesting, therefore, it would be to find a proof of the existence of a phallic worship among the aboriginal tribes contemporary with the Vedic rishis, it must be confessed that the word "śīnadeva" does not supply this evidence.

In a passage (in the Preface to the tenth vol. of his Rāmāyaṇa, p. ix.) which I have adduced in the second vol. of this work (pp. 419 f.), Signor Gorresio expresses the opinion that the Southern race, whom he supposes to be symbolized under the appellation of Rākshasas, were specially addicted to the worship of "Rudra, or a terrible" and, as he believes, "a Hamitic deity." In note 35 (p. 291 of the same volume), on the destruction of Dakṣa's sacrifice, he says: "It appears to me that in this fact the struggle of the ancient religions of India is represented under a mythical veil. Śiva (a deity, as I believe, of the Cushite or Hamitic tribes which preceded on the soil of India the Arian or Indo-Sanskrit races) wished to have a part in the worship of the conquerors, and in their sacrifices, from which he was excluded; and by disturbing their rites, and by a display of violence at their sacrifices, he succeeded in being admitted to participate in them." Signor Gorresio, however, offers very little proof of his assertion in regard to the worship of Śiva being specially prevalent among the savage tribes of the south. In note 116, p. 370, of his ninth vol., indeed, he remarks as follows on a passage (Rāmāyaṇa vi. 19, 50 f.) where it is said that Indrajit, son of Rāvaṇa, had a golden serpent for

his banner: "The serpent was the special symbol in the worship of the Hamite races, and here therefore Indrajit, the black Rākshasa, the Hamite, sets it up as his banner. Thus in the seventy-eighth chapter of the Sundara Kāṇḍa it is said that Indrajit was in the habit of sacrificing especially to Siva, the Hamitic deity, who possesses all the attributes of the Hamitic religion, and who entered into the Indo-Sanskrit Olympus by one of those religious syncretisms of which traces are so frequently to be found in the ancient systems of worship."

The passage of the Sundara Kāṇḍa to which Gorresio refers occurs, in the Bombay edition, in the seventh section of the Yuddha Kāṇḍa, vv. 18 f. (=Sundara Kāṇḍa 78, 17, in Gorresio's ed.), and is as follows:

Tishṭha vā kim mahārāja śramena tava vānarān | ayam eko mahārāja Indrajit kshapayishyati | anāṇa cha mahārāja Māheśvaram anuttamam | iṣṭvā yajnaṁ varo labdho loka parama-durlabhaḥ | "Stay, great king, what need is there of thy exertions? This Indrajit alone will destroy the monkeys. For by him a boon, hard to be gotten, was obtained after he had offered an unequalled sacrifice to Mahādeva."

This passage is not sufficient to prove that Mahādeva was in a special degree the god of the savages of the South. We have already seen (pp. 184 ff., 283 ff.), by the cases of Arjuna, Jayadratha, Paraśurāma, and above all, of Jarāsandha, as recorded in the Mahābhārata, that the worship of Mahādeva (frequently for the purpose of obtaining some boon) was practised by the warriors of Northern India, just as it is here said to have been by Indrajit. Further, it is not Siva alone whom the Rākshasas worshipped for their own purposes. It appears from the passage of the Rāmāyaṇa (cited above in p. 167) that Rāvaṇa had obtained the gift of invincibility from Brahmā. At the same time it will be seen from a passage cited below from the Uttara Kāṇḍa 25, 9, that it was the sacrifice to Mahādeva, and not the one to Vishṇu which procured for Indrajit his magical powers.

The same worship of Brahmā is related in regard to Atikāya, one of Rāvaṇa's sons, in Rāmāyaṇa vi. 71, 31 f. (Bombay ed):

Etenārādhito Brahmā tapasā bhāvitātmanā | astrāni chāpy avāptāni ripavaś cha parājitāḥ | gurūsurair abadhyaivaṁ dattam asmaḥ Svayambhuvā | "By this contemplative (Rākshasa) Brahmā had been worshipped with austerities, and he had obtained weapons, and conquered

his enemies. [The privilege] had been bestowed on him by Svayambhū that he should be indestructible by gods or Asuras."

In verse 28 he is described as "reverent to the aged, and of renowned strength" (*vriddha-sevī śruta-balaḥ*¹⁸³). Rāvaṇa himself is represented in the Rāmāyaṇa as an observer of the Vedic ritual. Thus in Book vi. 93, 58 ff. (Bombay ed.=vi. 72, 62 ff. of Gorr.), his minister, Supārśva (Avindhya¹⁸⁴ in Gorr.), who is described as "virtuous and pure," is introduced as saying to him: *Veda-vidyā-vrataḥ snātas eva-karma-nirataḥ*¹⁸⁵ *tathā | śrīyāḥ kasmād badhaṁ vira manyase Rāksha-seśvara |* "Why dost thou, heroic Rāvaṇa, lord of the Rākshasas, who knowest the Veda, hast practised the prescribed discipline, and art an initiated householder, and devoted to thy duty, meditate the slaughter of a woman?" And Vibhīṣaṇa, in his eulogy on his brother after his death, says (vi. 111, 23, Bombay ed.=vi. 93, 30 of Gorr.): *Eśho hitāgnīḥ*¹⁸⁶ *cha mahātapaś cha vedāntagaḥ karmasu chāgrya-śuraḥ |* "He had placed the sacrificial fire, was very austere, had read the concluding treatises of the Veda, and was an eminent hero in rites."¹⁸⁷

¹⁸³ Instead of *śruta-balaḥ*, Gorresio's edition reads *śrutidharaḥ*, "an observer of the Vedas." In Manu vii. 38 the following verse occurs: *Vriddhāṁścha nityaṁ seveta viprān veda-vidāḥ śuchīn | vriddha-sevī hi natataṁ rakshobhir api pūjyate |* "Let [the king] constantly reverence old and pure Brahmans, skilled in the Vedas; for he who continually reverences the aged is honoured even by the Rākshasas." Can this verse refer to the character *vriddha-sevī* given to Atikāya in the passage (Rām. vi. 71, 28) quoted above? If so, the passage in Manu must be posterior in date to the Rāmāyaṇa. Or has this character been given to Atikāya in consequence of the verse of Manu? or have the two passages no connexion? The coincidence is at least curious.

¹⁸⁴ He is, as remarked by the commentator, also called Avindhya; and so in the (Rāmopākhyāna in the Vana-parvan of the) Mahābhārata (vv. 16148, 16492-6, and elsewhere).

¹⁸⁵ The commentator thus explains these words: *Veda-vidyā-grahāpekṣita-brahma-charya-vrata-pūrva-vidyām grihītā | snātaḥ | guru-kulāt samāvṛtītaś tadānantaṁ dāra-grahaṇa-pūrvaṁ nityāgnihoṭrādi-eva-karma-nirataḥ |* "One who has obtained a knowledge of the Veda after practising the discipline of continence required for the reception of such knowledge; and who, after returning from his preceptor's family, has married a wife, and continues devoted to the practice of the agnihotra and other indispensable rites." See Wilson's and Williams's Dictionaries, s.v. *snāta* and *snātaka*, and Kullūka's note on Manu iii. 2, referred to by the latter lexicographer.

¹⁸⁶ *Eśho hitāgnīr ity āśraḥ sandhiḥ | āhitāgnīr iti ehhodaḥ |* Comm.

¹⁸⁷ *Vedāntagaḥ | adhitapanāṭhaṭkaḥ | karmasu agnihotrādīṣu | agryaśuraḥ | paramānuhātāt parama-karmaḥ |* In some of the earlier lines of the same section Vibhīṣaṇa thus speaks of Rāvaṇa: *Gataḥ setuḥ śmītānām gato dharmasya vighraḥ | gataḥ satvasya sankṣepaḥ suhastānām gatir gatā | ādityaḥ patito bhūman*

Again, it is related in the hundred and thirteenth section (Bombay ed), that Rāvaṇa was buried with the usual Brahmanical ceremonies, though the commentator (in his note on verse 107) says that the Brahmans who were concerned in them were Rākshasa-brahmans (*Rākshasa-dvayāḥ*)

Rāmāyaṇa vi. 113, vv. 112 ff. (Bombay ed)—*Chitām chandana-kāsthaś cha padmakōṣṭira-chandanaiḥ | brāhmyā¹⁸⁸ saṁvartayātmāsukh-rāṅkavāstaraṇāvṛitām | prachakruḥ Rākshasendrasya pīṭrimeḍham anuttamam | vedīṁcha dakṣhiṇāprāchīm yathā-sthānancha pāvakam | pṛishadājyena sampurnam sruvam skandhe piachukṣipuh | pādāyoh śakhaṣam prāpur urvoś cholukhalaṁ tadā | dūru-pātrāni sarvāni arāṇīm ohottarāraṇīm | dattvā tu musalaṁ chānyāṁ yathā-sthānaṁ vicakramuḥ | śāstra-drishṭena vidhinā maharshi-ṛshitena¹⁸⁹ cha | tatra meḍhyam paśuṁ hatvā Rākshasendrasya Rākshasāḥ | paristaraniḥkām¹⁹⁰ rājno ghrīṭāktām samaveśayan | gandhair mālyair alankṛitya Rāvaṇaṁ dina-mānasāḥ | Vibhishhaṇa-sahāyāḥ te vastraiḥ cha vidhair api | lūjair avakṛanti sma vāṣṭha-pūrṇa-mukhās tathā | sa dadau pāvakaṁ tasya vidhi-yuktaṁ Vibhishhaṇaḥ | enāṭi chānūdra-astreṇa tilān darbha-ṛmīṣṛitān | udakena cha sammīṣrān pradāya vidhi-purakam¹⁹¹ |* “They formed,

magnas tamasi chandramāḥ | “The bulwark of the righteous is gone, gone is the image of virtue, gone is the summary of goodness [or strength, Comm], the lot of heroes has been gained by him The sun has fallen to the ground, the moon has been quenched in darkness,” etc And yet Vibhishhaṇa abuses his dead brother in the hundred and thirteenth section (Bombay ed), vv 93 ff.

¹⁸⁸ *Veda-marganugata-kṛiyayā* | Comm

¹⁸⁹ *Kalpa-sūtra-kṛid-rishi-ṛshitena* | Comm

¹⁹⁰ *Paristariyate mukham anayā iti paristaraniḥk vāpū | tām rākshasendrasya mukhe samaveśayan* | “*vāpū* ’nya mukham prauṇanti’ iti sūtrāt | Comm, who seems therefore to understand *paristaraniḥk* of fat (see Muller as cited in the article referred to in note 192) The commentator, however, gives also another reading and explanation which I quote *Tirthas tu anustaraṇikīm rājnah iti pathitoṇa anustaraṇikīm ūjagav īn tām ālabhya tachecharmanā yajamānam āstritavanti ity arthah* | “But Tirtha (a previous commentator) reads *anustaraṇikīm ūjnah*, and explains the sense thus having immolated a rajagavi (bos grunniens), they covered the sacrifice with its skin.”

¹⁹¹ I insert here part of Gorresio’s text for comparison (vi 96, 10 ff) • *Tatas te veda-viditānśas tam rājnah paśūhmanāḥ kṛiyāṁ | chakruḥ rākshasendrasya protameḍham anuttamam | vedīṁcha dakṣhiṇa-prāchyām yathā-sthānaṁ cha pāvakam | Vibhishhaṇas tu sampūrṇāya tūṣhṇīm samasṛjyāt sruvam | pṛishadājyasya sampūrṇān sruvān sarvān yathavidhi | Rāvaṇasya tadā sarve vāṣṭha-pūrṇa-mukhāḥ dvayāḥ | pādāyoh śakataṁ chakruḥ aṣṭarāv udukhalam | vānaspalyāni chānyāni antare ’pi oyadhāpayan | dattvā tu musalaṁ chava yathāsthanam mahātmanah | śāstra-drishṭena vidhinā maharshi-ṛshitena cha | tataś paśūṇi paśuṁ hatvā rākshasendrasya rākshasāḥ | āhīstaraṇikām sarvāṁ ghrīṭāktām samaveśayan |*

with Vedic rites, a funeral pile of faggots of sandalwood, with "padmaka" wood, "usīra" grass, and sandal, and covered with a quilt of deer's hair. They then performed an unrivalled obsequial ceremony for the Rākshasa prince, [placing] the sacrificial ground to the south-east and the fire in the proper situation. They cast the ladle filled with curds and ghee on the shoulder¹⁹² (of the deceased); they placed the ear on the feet, and the mortar between the thighs. Having deposited all the wooden vessels, the [upper] and lower firewood (*aranyā*), and the other pestle, in their proper places, they departed. The Rākshasas having then slain a victim to their prince in the manner prescribed in the Śāstras, and enjoined by great rishis, cast [into the fire] the coverlet of the king saturated with butter. They then, Vibhīṣhaṇa included, with afflicted hearts, adorned Rāvaṇa with perfumes and garlands, and with various vestments, and besprinkled him with fried grain, their faces being covered with tears. Vibhīṣhaṇa having bathed, and having, with his clothes wet, scattered in proper form "tila" seeds mixed with "darbha" grass, and moistened with water, applied the fire [to the pile]."¹⁹³

Gorresio remarks (note 94, p. 310, vol. x.) that the funeral rites of the Arian Brahmans are here introduced as practised among the Rākshasas, a race of different origin and worship, in the same way as Homer represents Grecian ceremonies as having been celebrated in Troy.

¹⁹² "According to Āpastamba (says the commentator), it should have been placed on the nose, this must therefore have been done in conformity with some other sūtras" (*yadyapi "nāṅke sruvū" ity Āpastambenoktaṁ tūkṛhṇī sūti ān'arūt skandho 'pi nūkshepaḥ sruvasya bodhyah*). Compare Professor Muller's article on the funeral ceremonies of the Brahmans in the Journal of the German Oriental Society for 1855, pp. vi ff.

¹⁹³ On this whole passage the commentator remarks: "*Tatyajas tam mahābhāgam pancha-bhūtūn Rāvaṇam | śarīra-dhātavo hy asya māṁsaṁ rudhiram eva cha | nesur brahmāstra-mṛdagāhāh na cha bhaṁṣy adṛśyata*" *iti Mahābhārata uktatvena kasya Vālmikīnū śmaśānāyana-pūrvakam dāhaḥ uktaḥ iti chen na | tasya Rāmā-vāṇa-tejo-varṇana-vishaye 'tyukty-alankāra-paratvād iti vadati* | "Since it is said in the Mahābhārata (Rāmopākhyāna, in Vana-parvan 16529 f.) that 'the five elements forsook the great Rāvaṇa, and the constituents of his body, flesh, and blood perished, when he was burnt up by the divine weapon (*brahmāstra*), and not even any ashes were seen,'—who is it that is here alleged by Vālmikī to have been brought to the cemetery and then burnt? If any one raises this objection, I deny that there is any difficulty, as in the description of Rāma's prowess the Mahābhārata makes use of the ornament of exaggeration."

Nor does it appear that in the rites described in the following passage (of Gorresio's edition) which are said to have been performed by Indrajit, the son of Ravana, there is anything, except the "Rākshasa texts," contrary to Brahmanical usages. As, however, the commentator (in the Bombay ed.), in his note on another passage, represents the worship at the Nikumbhilā as being offered to Kālī, and as the description is of some interest, I will quote it at length: ¹⁹⁴

Rāmāyaṇa vi. 19, 38 ff (Gorr) — *Indrajit tu tatas tena saṁyuge 'dbhuta-kārīṇā | nirjato Bālī-putreṇa krodhaṁ chakre sudārunam | so 'nta dhāna-gataḥ pāpo Rāvaṇaḥ raṇa-karṣaṣaḥ | nikumbhīlayāṁ vidhi-vat Pāvakaṁ juhuve 'stra-vat | juhvatas tasya tatrāgnau raktoḥṣṇīḥāmbara-mṛajāḥ | ājāhrus tatra sambhṛāntūḥ Rākshasāḥ yatra Rāvaṇaḥ | śāstrāni śitadhārāṇi samidho 'tha vibhītan | lohitanī cha vāsūṁśi sruvaṁ*

¹⁹⁴ The Bombay edition (vi. 44, 32 ff.) gives the first verse and the first half of the second nearly as they stand in Gorresio's edition, and the second half of the second, with its sequel, as follows *Brahma-datta vao viro Ravanaḥ krodha-murchhitah | adṛiṣyo nṛsin vānūn munochūṣani-tarchasah* | "The son of Ravana, to whom a boon had been given by Brahma, mad with rage, discharged sharp arrows, gleaming like lightnings. No mention is made of the sacrifice in the Bombay text. In Rāmāyaṇa, book v., sect 24 (Bombay ed.), it is related that the female Rākshasas had been threatening Sītā after her capture by Ravana, because she would not yield to his desires, and that one of them, Sūrpanakhā, acceding to a proposal to eat her, says (v. 44 f) *Surā chānṛyatūṁ kṣipraṁ sarva-śoka-vināṣiṇī | mūnushaṁ māṇsaṁ āśādyā nṛtyāmo 'tha nikumbhīlām* | "And let wine be quickly brought, which annihilates all sorrows. Enjoying human flesh, let us dance at the Nikumbhila." The comment on this passage states that the *Nikumbhīlā* was an image of Bhadrakālī on the west side of Lanka (*Nikumbhīlā nāma Lankāyāḥ paścīma-bhāga-vartinī Bhadrakālī | tāṁ nṛtyānuh tat-samīpaṁ gatā nṛtyamah*). In the Uttara Kāṇḍa (sect 25, v. 2) we are told that Ravana, with his attendants, entered "the Nikumbhīlā, a grove in Lankā" (*tato nikumbhīlā nāma Lankopavamaṁ uttamam*). The commentator says it was "a wood situated at the western gate of Lankā for the performance of rites" (*Lankā-paścīma-dvāra-deśa-varti-karma-siddhi-hiṣa-bhūtāṁ kṛānam*). His son Indrajit, with the aid of the Brahman Usanas, had been celebrating there the seven sacrifices, the "agnishtoma," "asvamedha," "rajasūya," "gomeda" (cow-sacrifice), the Vaishnava ceremonial, etc. When he had performed the Māheśvara offering, "which it is difficult for men to obtain," he obtained boons from Mahadeva, who appeared to him (*ibid.* verses 3 ff) (this is the ceremony alluded to above, in p. 412.) But he had also been performing the Vaishnava rite, which, however, is not said to have been productive of any results. Verses 76 ff. of this section are as follows *Yagnas te sapta putreṇa prāptas te bahu vistarāḥ | 8. Agnishtomo 'śvamedhas cha yajno bahuvarmakah | rajasūyas tathā yajno gomātho Vaishnavas tathā | 9. Māheśvare pravṛtte tu yajne puṣkībhūḥ sudurlabhe | varāṁśi te labhāvan putrah sūkṣhāt Pasupatiḥ cha* | Only six kinds of sacrifice are here mentioned, unless the word "Bahuvarmaka" stands for a seventh.

*kāśhāyasaṁ tataḥ | sarvato 'gniṁ samāstīrya śaraiḥ sa-prāśa-tomaraiḥ |
 • ohhāgalasyāpi kṛishṇasya kaṇṭhād ādāya jīvataḥ | soṇitaṁ tena vidhivat
 sa juhāva ranotsukaḥ | sakṛid eva samiddhasya vidhūmasya mahārohiṣaḥ |
 babhūvuḥ saṁnimittāni vijayaṁ yāny aveḍayan | pradakṣhiṇāvarta-tikṣha
 tapta-hāṭaka-sannibhaḥ | haviḥ tat pratijagrāha Pāvakaḥ svayam utthitaḥ |
 tato 'gni-madhyād uttasthau kānohanaḥ syandanottamaḥ | chaturbhiḥ kān-
 chanāpīḍair aśvair yuktaḥ prabhadrakaiḥ | anturdhāna-gataḥ śrīmān
 dīpta-pāvaka-saprabhaḥ | hutāgnim tarpayitvā oha daitya-dānava-rāksha-
 sūn | vāohayitvā tataḥ svasti prayuktūktir dvijātibhiḥ | āruroha rathaṁ
 śreeshṭham antar-dhāna-charaṁ śubham | sva-vaśyair vājibhir yuktaṁ
 śastraiḥ oha vividhair yutam . . . 50. Jāmbūnadamayo nāgas taruṇā-
 dītya-sannibhaḥ | babhūvendrajitaḥ ketur vaidūrya-samalankṛitaḥ | Hutaḥ
 'gniṁ Rākshasair mantrais tato vachanam abravīt |*

“But Indrajit, being conquered in the conflict by the miracle-work-
 ing son of Bālī, became inflamed with terrific anger. This wicked son
 of Rāvaṇa, fierce in battle, having become invisible, made an oblation
 to Pāvaka (Fire) in due form, on the sacrificial ground. When he was
 there throwing his oblation into the fire, wearing a red turban, gar-
 ments, and garland, the reverent Rākshasas brought thither sharp-
 edged weapons, logs of wood, and myrobalan, blood-red vestments, and
 a ladle of black iron. Having heaped the fire all over with arrows,
 darts, and iron maces, and having drawn blood from the throat of a
 live black goat, he offered it as an oblation, being eager for battle. At
 the same time there appeared from the brightly-burning and smokeless
 fire omens which portended victory. Pāvaka himself, rising, with his
 flame sweeping round to the right, and luminous as refined gold, received
 the oblation. Then from the midst of the fire there arose a magnificent
 golden chariot, drawn by four lucky horses with golden head-ornaments;
 but became invisible, while glorious and lustrous as burning fire. Having
 satiated the sacrificial fire, with the Daityas, Dānavas, and Rākshasas,
 having caused a benediction (*svasti*) to be pronounced, and been blessed
 by the Brahmans, [Indrajit] ascended the beautiful chariot, moving
 invisibly, drawn by self-directed horses, and furnished with various
 weapons. . . . 50. A golden serpent,¹⁸⁶ bright as the rising sun,
 and adorned with lapis lazuli,² formed the banner of Indrajit. Having
 made an oblation to Fire with Rākshasa texts, he then spake,” etc.

¹⁸⁶ See, in reference to this, the quotation from Signor Gorresio given above in p. 412.

The ceremony of Indrajit is again alluded to by Vibhīṣhaṇa in vi. 84, 14 ff. (Bombay ed.=vi. 63, 13, of Gorr. ed.):

Chaityaṁ nikumbhilām adya prāpya homaṁ karishyati | Hutavān upayāto hi devair api sa-vāsavaḥ | durādharṣo bhavaty eṣha saṅgrāṁ Rāvaṇātmanajaḥ | . . . 16. Sa-sainyās tatra gachhāmo yāvāt tan na samāpyate | . . . 23. Samāpta-karmā hi sa Rākshasārshabho bhavaty adṛśyaḥ samare surāsuraiḥ | yuyutsatā tena samāpta-karmaṇā bhavet surādām api saṁśayo mahān | "Having to-day resorted to the sacrificial ground, he will offer an oblation (*homa*). When he approaches after making this offering, this son of Rāvaṇa is invincible by gods and Vāsavas. . . . 16. Let us go thither with our hosts before that ceremony is completed. . . . 23. For when he has accomplished his rite,¹⁹⁶ that prince of the Rākshasas becomes invisible by either gods or Asuras in battle; and, even the gods would hesitate to encounter him if he desired to fight."

In the following section Vibhīṣhaṇa returns to the subject (vi. 85, 12, Bombay ed.=vi. 64, 11 of Gorr.):

Tena viroṇa tapasū vara-dānāt Svayambhuvaḥ | aṣṭam brahma-śiraḥ prāptaṁ kāmagaḥ cha turangamūḥ | sa eṣha saha sainyena prāptaḥ kila nikumbhilām | yady uttiṣṭhet kṛitam karma hatān sarvāṁś cha vidhī naḥ | nikumbhilām asaṁprāptam akṛitāgniṁ cha yo ripuḥ | tvām ātatāyinaṁ hanyāt Indrasatro sa te badhaḥ | "This hero has obtained through austerities, and by the gift of Svayambhū, a weapon called 'brahma-śiras,' and horses that go according to his will. He with his army has reached the sacrificial ground. If he rises after completing his ceremony, you may regard us all as destroyed. But if any foe slays thee, thou cruel tyrant (Indrajit), before thou hast reached that ground,¹⁹⁷

¹⁹⁶ It is related in the Uttara Kāṇḍa 30, 12 ff., that after his victory over Indra, Indrajit asked, and obtained, this boon as the condition of releasing his captive foe. For a summary of the story of Indra and Indrajit, see the Appendix.

¹⁹⁷ Explained by the commentator as *nikumbhilām tad-yāga-bhūmim mahākūṭi-kṣhetraṁ tad-ākhyā-nyagrodha-mūla-rūpam* | "That sacrificial ground, the sacred precinct of the great Kūṭi—viz. the root of the nyagrodha tree so called." This tree is mentioned in vi. 87, 2 ff., Bombay ed. (=vi. 66, 2, Gorr. ed.): . . . *praviśya tu mahad vanam | adarśayata tat-kurma-Lakṣmaṇāya Vibhīṣhaṇaḥ | nīla-jimūṭa-śaṅkhāṁ nyagrodham bhīmādarāṇam | tejnvi Rāvaṇa-bhrātā Lakṣmaṇāya nyavedayat | ihopahāram bhūtūṇām balavān Rāvaṇātmanajaḥ | upahṛitya tataḥ paśchāt saṅgrāmaṁ abhivartata | adṛśyaḥ sarva-bhūtānām tato bhavati Rākshasaḥ | nihantī samare śatṛvān badhātī cha śrottaṁ* | *tam apraviṣṭaṁ nyagrodham balinaṁ Rāvaṇātmanajam | vidhī mānaya śarair dīptair ityādi |*

and kindled the fire, this, O enemy of Indra, is the manner of thy death," etc.

It is related in the following section (86, 14, f., Bombay ed.=65, 12 Gorr.) that he rose before his rite had been completed :

Swam anikāṁ viṣaṇṇaṁ tu drishṭvā śatrubhir ardistam | udatisṭhata dūrdharśah sa karmāṇy ananushṭhite | vrikshāṇdhakārād nurgamya jāta-krodhah sa Rāvaṇah | ityādi | "Hearing that his army was harassed by their enemies, and dispirited, the irresistible (Rākshasa) arose while his ceremony was unaccomplished Issuing forth from the gloom of the tree, the son of Rāvaṇa, incensed, mounted his chariot," etc.

Again, in a passage of the Sundara Kāṇḍa, or Fifth Book, sect 89, vv. 22 ff (only found in Gorresio's, not in the Bombay ed.), which forms the sequel to the one given above, p 370, Mahādeva is represented as receiving Vibhīṣhaṇa with favour, after he had deserted his brother Rāvaṇa Now if the author of the poem had intended to represent Śiva as an especial object of adoration to the Rākshasas, he might have been expected to describe this deity as repaying their worship with especial favour and affection; but it is inconsistent with this that he should represent Śiva as receiving favourably a deserter from the Rākshasa camp.

There is a section (the forty-first) of the Yuddha Kāṇḍa, or Sixth Book (which, however, is to be found only in Gorresio's ed), wherein Rāvaṇa defies Viṣṇu at great length But I do not consider this as any proof that the poet intended to attribute to the speaker any especial hostility to Viṣṇu's worship (particularly as Indra, Śiva, and Brahmā are also slightly spoken of), but rather as a demonstration called forth by the poetical necessities of the argument Even while the poet represented Rāma as the incarnation of Viṣṇu, it was of course natural to make the arrogant Rāvaṇa defy him. The fact is, that the traits ascribed to the Rākshasas in the Rāmāyaṇa must be regarded as poetical far more than historical The poet assigns to his personages such characteristics as he considered at the moment to be most conducive to the interest, and effective with a view to the action, of his poem. These characteristics are sometimes absolutely contradictory, as when Rāvaṇa is described both as an observer of the Vedas and at the same time as a persecutor of Brahmans and polluter of their sacrifices. I do not therefore see that the Rāmāyaṇa supplies any

sufficient grounds for regarding the non-Arian tribes of Southern India as being especially addicted to the worship of Siva.¹⁹⁸

SECT. VIII.—*The earlier and later representations of Umā, the wife of Siva.*

We have already seen (p. 267) that in the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā (3, 57) Ambikā, who at a later period is identified with the wife of Rudra, is declared to be his sister.¹⁹⁹

The earliest work, as far as I am aware, in which the name of Umā occurs, is the Talavakāra, or Kena Upanishad. In the third section of that Treatise (see Dr. Roer's translation in the Bibliotheca Indica, vol. xv., p. 83 ff.) it is mentioned that on one occasion Brahma gained a victory for the gods. As, however, they were disposed to ascribe the credit of their success to themselves, Brahma appeared for the purpose of disabusing them of their mistake. The gods did not know him, and commissioned first Agni, and then Vāyu, to ascertain what this apparition was. When, in answer to Brahma's inquiry, these two gods represented themselves, the one as having the power to burn, and the other as able to blow away, anything whatever, he desired them to burn and to blow away, respectively, a blade of grass; but they were unable to do this, and returned without ascertaining who he was. Indra was then commissioned (Kena Up. iii. 11, 12; and iv. 1, 2):

¹⁹⁸ It is also related in the Uttara Kāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa (sections 4-8, of which I shall give the substance in the Appendix) that a Rakshasa named Sukeśa had formerly received a boon from Mahadeva and Pārvatī, and that his three sons, the lords of Lankā, had made an attack upon the gods, but had been driven back and defeated by Viṣṇu, and compelled to take refuge in Pātala. But neither does this, nor even the Linga-worship attributed to Rāvaṇa in the Uttara Kāṇḍa 31, 42 f., suffice to prove any special adoration of S'iva among the southern races more than among the northern.

¹⁹⁹ Rodaśī is his wife according to the Nirukta xi. 49; and xii. 46; *Rodaśī Rudraśya patnī*. Sāyaṇa, however, on R.V. i. 167, 4 and 5, says that she is the wife of the Maruts. On v. 4 his words are. *Tasya (Rudraśyo) strī Rodaśī iti kachid āhuḥ | apare tu Maru ṁ Rodaśī strī nāmadheyam ity āhuḥ | ayam eva pakṣho yuktah uttaratra evaṁ vyavahārāt |* "Some say Rodaśī is Rudra's wife. Others say Rodaśī is the name of the wife of the Maruts. This is the correct view, from the word being so applied afterwards" (in the next verse). On verse 5 Sāyaṇa says *Rodaśī Maruḥ-patnī vidyud vā*. "Rodaśī is the wife of the Maruts, or Lightning." In this verse she receives the epithet of *viśiṣṭa-stulā*, "having distinguished hair;" and is said to seek the society of the Maruts (*Joshad yad im asuryā sachadhyas viśiṣṭa-stulā Rodaśī nṛmanāḥ*). I doubt if she is much, if at all, noticed in the later literature. See the fifth volume of this work, pp. 148 and 345.

Atha Indram abruvan "Maghavann etad vijānīhi kim etad yakṣham" iti | "tāhā" iti tad abhyadravat tasmāt tirodadhē | 12. Sa tasminn eva ākāśe striyam ājagāma bahu śobhamānām Umām Haimavatīm | tāṁ ha wācha kim etad yakṣham iti | iv. 1. Sā Brahma iti ha wācha Brahmano vai etad-vijaye mahīyadhvam iti | tato ha eva vidānchakāra Brahmoti | "They then said to Indra, 'Maghavan, ascertain what this apparition is.' He replied, 'So be it;' and approached that being, who vanished from him. In that sky he came to a woman who was very resplendent, Umā Haimavatī. To her he said, 'What is this apparition?' She said, 'It is Brahma. In this victory of Brahma, exult.' By this he knew that it was Brahma."²⁰⁰

In his remarks²⁰¹ on this passage of the Kena Upanishad (Ind. Stud. ii. 186 ff.), Professor Weber supplies an interesting and ingenious contribution to the mythological history of Umā. He says: "The representation in sections 3 and 4 indicates that the Kena Upanishad was produced at a time when,—in place of the three principal gods, Agni, Vāyu, and Sūrya,²⁰² who had become developed into the conjoint representatives of the divine principle on earth, in the atmosphere, and in heaven,—Agni, Vāyu, and Indra were regarded as such. Those are properly only two, since Indra is essentially identical with Vāyu. Though I have found numerous examples of the first triad, especially in the two Yajur-vedas, I have noticed only one other of the second triad, which is properly only a duad, viz. in the Rik-text of the Purusha Sukta (R.V. x. 99, 13). Nor am I able to give a satisfactory

²⁰⁰ This is explained by the commentator *Tasya Indrasya yakoḥ bhaktim buddhvā Vidyā Umā-rūpiṇī prādurbhūt stri-rūpā | sa Indras tām Umām bahu śobhamānām sarveshām hi śobhamānānām śobhanatamām Vidyām tadā "bahu śobhamānā" iti vidakṣham upaṇnam bhavati. | Haimavatīm hema-kṛtūbharaṇavatīm eva bahu śobhamānām ity arthaḥ | athavā Umā eva Himavato duhitā Haimavatī nityam eva sarvaśama Iśvareṇa saha vartate iti jñātum samarthā iti kṛtvā tām upāyagāma Indras tām ha Umām kila wācha pāprachha kim etad darśayitvā turobhūtam yakṣham |* "Knowing Indra's devotion to this apparition, Knowledge, in the form of a woman, Umā, appeared. Indra [came] to her who was very resplendent, to Knowledge who is the most resplendent of all the resplendent beings, and whose epithet 'very resplendent' is then established. 'Haimavatī' means that she was very resplendent like a female with ornaments made of gold. Or, it was Umā Haimavatī, the daughter of Himavat, who from continually dwelling with the omniscient Iśvara (Mahādeva) is able to know. With this belief Indra approached Umā, and said to her, 'What is this apparition which appeared and vanished?'"

²⁰¹ Already translated by Dr. Roer (Bibl. Ind. xv. 84 ff.).

²⁰² See above, pp. 163 and 298.

explanation of it. On the other hand, the totality of the divine was already comprehended in Brahman (neuter), and it is the object of the legend here to make clear and to enforce the supremacy of Brahma over all temporary divine manifestations, and even over the triad of such.

"But how shall we explain the position of Umā Haimavatī, who comes forward as mediatrix between the eternal Brahman and the gods? According to Sankara, she is Vidyā (knowledge) who appears Umā-rūpiṇī (in the form of Umā) to Indra. The same explanation is found in Sāyana, who (on Taitt. Ār. x. 1, 150, p. 787 of the text in the Bibliotheca Indica), when interpreting the word *soma*, cites this passage, and remarks: *Himavat-putryāḥ Gauryāḥ brahma-vidyābhimānī-rūpatvād Gaurī-vāchakaḥ Umā-śabdo brahma-vidyām upalakshayati | ataḥ eva Talavakāropanishadi brahma-vidyā-mūrti-prastāve brahma-vidyā-mūrtiḥ paṭhyate* "bahu sobhamānām Umāḥ Haimavatīḥ tāḥ ha uvācha" iti | tad-vishayaḥ Paramātmā²⁰³ Umayā saha vartamānatvāt Somaḥ | "[Since Gaurī, the daughter of Himavat, is the impersonation of divine knowledge, the word Umā, which denotes Gaurī, indicates divine knowledge. Hence in the Talavakāra Upanishad, in the passage on the impersonation of divine knowledge, the impersonation of divine knowledge is introduced in these words: "He said to the very resplendent Umā Haimavatī. The supreme Spirit, who is the object of this Divine Knowledge, from his existing together with Umā, is called Soma (i.e. *Sa+Uma*.)"]'²⁰⁴ And again in the same commentary on Anuvāka 48, it is said: *Umā brahma-vidyā tayā saha vartamāna Soma paramānman |* 'Umā is divine knowledge: thou who existest with her, O Soma, supreme spirit,' etc. Further in the same commentary on Anuvāka 18, in explanation of the term *Ambikā-pataye*, we have the words: *Ambikā jaganmātā Pārvatī tasyāḥ bhāratr |* 'Ambikā is Pārvatī, the mother of the world,—to her husband,' etc.; and the word *Umāpataye* (which stands in the Drāviḍa, but not in the Āndhra, text of the Taitt. Ār.) is thus interpreted: *Tasyāḥ eva brahma-vidyātmako dehaḥ Umā-śabdano-ahyate tasyāḥ svāmīne |* 'Her (Ambikā's) body, consisting of divine knowledge, is designated by the word Umā—to her (Umā's) husband,'

²⁰³ [The word *Paramātmā* is not in the text as given by Weber.]

²⁰⁴ [The same explanation of Soma is given in the Atharvasīras Upanishad. See above, p. 302.]

etc.²⁰⁵ This last passage is the only one in the circle of the Vedic writings in which—with the exception of that in the Kena Upanishad—I have as yet directly met with the name Umā; for the expression ‘Umā-sahāya’ in the Kaivalya Upanishad (see above, p. 363) no longer belongs to the Vedic period; and further, though the commentaries in other places also²⁰⁶ explain ‘soma’ by ‘Umayā sahita,’ ‘accompanied by Umā’ (as Sāyana has done in the passage above cited), such an interpretation is just as groundless as in the texts commented on by Sāyana, where the word signifies simply the Soma-libation. From the considerations just stated, therefore (i.e. partly from the unanimity of the commentaries, and partly from the very position which Umā here assumes in the Kena Upanishad), the signification of this word might seem to be fixed with tolerable certainty as denoting ‘Brahma-vidyā,’ ‘divine knowledge,’ and Umā might appear to be directly related to Sarasvatī, the divine word, and we might even be tempted to bring her into etymological connexion with the sacred word ‘om.’ There are, however, some additional points which seem to place the original signification of Umā in quite a different light. First of all, why is she called Haimavatī? What has she to do with the Himavat? Is it that the Brahma-vidyā (divine knowledge) came originally from the Himavat to the Arians dwelling in Madhyadeśa (the central region of Hindustan)? We have learnt from the Kaushītakī Brāhmaṇa (Ind. Stud. i. 153) that the north of India was distinguished by greater purity of speech, and that students travelled thither to learn the language (*vāchaṁ śikṣhitum*), and on their return thence enjoyed great consideration and authority.* Now it would have been quite natural if this state of things had not been confined to language, but had become extended to speculation also, and if the knowledge of the one, eternal Brahma, had been sooner attained in the peaceful valleys of the Himālaya than was possible for men living

²⁰⁵ [The entire text of the Anuvāka, and the part of its commentary which refers to the terms *Ambikūpataye* and *Umāpataye*, as given in the Bibl. Indica, are as follows: Text: *Namo hiraṇyabāhave hiraṇyavarṇāya hiraṇyarūpaya hiraṇyapataye Ambikūpataye Umāpataye paśūpataye namo namaḥ* | Comm.: *Ambikā jagannūtā Pārvatī | tasyāḥ pataye bhartre | tasyāḥ eva Ambikūyāḥ brahma-vidyātmako dehaḥ Umāśabdona uchyate | tādṛśyāḥ Umāyāḥ pataye svāmīne Rudrāya punaḥ punaḥ namaḥkāro 'stau.*]

²⁰⁶ e.g. Mahidhara on Vāj. S. 16, 39, and Bhaṭṭa Bhāskara, Miśra on the corresponding passage of the Taitt. Saṁhitā.

in Medhyadeśa, where their minds were more occupied by the practical concerns of life. Such a view of Umā Haimavatī appears to me, however, to be very hazardous. For—not to say that in our explanations of the ancient Indian deities we act wisely when we attach greater importance to the physical than to the speculative element—we are by no means certain that Umā actually does signify divine knowledge (*brahma-vidyā*); and, moreover, her subsequent position as Rudra's wife (in the Taitt. Ār.), and so Śiva's, would thus be quite inexplicable. Now there is among the epithets of this latter goddess a similar one, viz. Pārvatī, which would lead us in interpreting the word Haimavatī, to place the emphasis not upon the Himavat, but upon the mountain (*parvata*): and with this I might connect the epithets of Rudra which we have learnt from the Satarudriya (see above, p. 322), Girīśa, Girīśanta, Girīśaya, Giritra, in which we recognize the germ of the conception of Śiva's dwelling on Kailāsa. He is the tempest, which rages in the mountains, and his wife is therefore properly called Pārvatī, Haimavatī, 'the mountaineer,' 'the daughter of Himavat.' At the same time it is not clear what we have to understand by his wife;³⁰⁷ and further she is, perhaps, originally not his wife, but his sister, for Umā and Ambikā are at a later period evidently identical, and Ambikā is Rudra's sister (Ind. Stud. i. 183).³⁰⁸ Besides, this identification of Umā with Ambikā leads us to a new etymology of the former. For as

³⁰⁷ Indian mythology, however, assigns wives to the gods, without always, or even generally, ascribing to the wives any specific cosmical function. Weber adds in a note: "Does she perhaps denote the streams and torrents, poured forth by Rudra, the Storm, from the mountains and clouds? and does the name Ambikā stand in direct relation thereto? 'In the same way Sarasvatī also, the goddess of streams and of speech, is called Ambitamā, is addressed with the word 'Amba,' and is said to be 'produced on the highest peak on the mountain top' (*uttame śikhare jātā parvata-mūrdhani*). According to this view, Umā and Sarasvatī, Ambikā and Ambitamā, Pārvatī and the *parvata-mūrdhani jātā*, would perhaps have been originally identical, and have only become gradually separated, in such a way that in the one the violent and destructive energy of nature had become concentrated, and in the other the harmonious music of the streaming waters? And should we thus have to seek in the Umā of the Kena Upanishad and, on the other hand, in the Varadā of the Taitt. Ār. two examples of the original identity of both? Kuhn, at least, as he has informed me, holds Ambikā to be decidedly identical with Sarasvatī." [Is not a certain confirmation of this supposed original connexion of Umā and Sarasvatī to be found in the fact that in the mythology of the Rāmāyaṇa i. 26, 13 (quoted below in p. 430) Umā is the younger, while the river Gangā is the elder daughter of Himavat?—J.M.]

³⁰⁸ See above, p. 321.

Ambikā, 'mother,' appears to be merely an euphemistic and flattering epithet, employed to propitiate the cruel goddess (see Mahidhara on Vāj. S. 3, 57,²⁰⁰—just as Rudra was called Siva), in the same way it appears that we must derive Umā from the root 'u,' 'av,' 'to protect.' It is true that a final vowel before 'ma' commonly takes 'guṇa,' or is lengthened, but the words 'sima' and 'hima' show that this is not necessary, and the name of Rumā is perhaps (unless we derive it from 'ram') a perfectly analogous formation. It certainly remains a mystery how we are to conceive the cruel wife of Rudra coming forward here in the Kena Upanishad as the mediatrix between the supreme Brahma and Indra, for on that supposition this Upanishad would have to be referred to a period when her husband, Rudra, was regarded as the highest god, the Īśvara, and thus also as Brahma; i.e. it would belong to the period of some Śaiva sect. But since this remains questionable and improbable, we must first of all hold to the view that the conception entertained by the commentators of Umā as representing 'divine knowledge' rests solely upon this passage of the Kena Upanishad, unless indeed the original identity of Umā with Sarasvatī, which in the last note was regarded as possible, is here again visible.

"I consider the present opportunity a favourable one for speaking of some other names of Siva's spouse. As in Siva, first of all two gods, Agni and Rudra, are combined, so too his wife is to be regarded as a compound of several divine forms,²¹⁰ and this becomes quite evident if we look over the mass of her epithets. While one set of these, as Umā, Ambikā, Pārvatī, Haimavatī, belong to the wife of Rudra, others, as Kālī, Karālī (see Ind. Stud. i. 287) carry us back to the wife of Agni, while Gaurī and others perhaps refer to Nirṛiti, the goddess of all evil.

²⁰⁰ [The words of Mahidhara here referred to are: *Yo 'yaṁ Rudrākhyāḥ krūro devas tasya virodhinaṁ hantum icchā bhavati tadā anayā bhaginyā krūradevatayā sādhanabhūtayā taṁ hinasti* | "This cruel god called Rudra desires to slay his enemy. Then by the instrumentality of this sister, a cruel goddess, he destroys him." Then follow the words quoted above in p. 321, note 40, at the end.]

²¹⁰ "The most remarkable instance of this is to be found in Mahābhārata iv. 178 ff., in the hymn of Yudhishtira to Durgā, where he calls her *Yasodā*, *Kṛishṇā*, 'born in the cowherd family of Nanda,' 'sister of Vāsudeva,' 'enemy of Kansa,' and 'having the same features as Sankarshana,' etc., etc. However late the date of this hymn may be, it is still in the highest degree remarkable."

"The Tenth Book of the Taittiriya Āraṇyaka, in which she is several times invoked under different names, is particularly important for a knowledge of her character. The principal passage in which these invocations occur has been already noticed above (Ind. Stud. i. pp. 75 and 228²¹¹). It is, like the prayers which precede it, an imitation of the Gāyatrī, and runs thus: *Kātyāyanāya vidmahe Kanyākumārī*²¹² *dhīmahi | tan no Durgīḥ prachodayāt |* ['We think on Kātyāyana and meditate on Kanyākumārī; may Durgi advance us.']

. . . "Now it is certainly difficult grammatically to find in this text the sense which Sāyaṇa puts into it,²¹³ and which must have been traditionally connected with it, as that sense is the basis of the modification of the passage as found in the Atharva collection of Upanishads.

²¹¹ In the first of these passages (Ind. Stud. i. 75) the author remarks that the Nārāyaṇīya Upanishad (the part of the Taitt. Ār. in which the verse in question occurs) is also found among the Upanishads of the Atharva-veda, "but with remarkable variations, which indicate a later period. Thus the words quoted above according to the reading in the Taitt. Ār., viz. *Kātyāyanāya vidmahe Kanyākumārīm dhīmahi tan no Durgīḥ prachodayāt*, are, in the Upanishad as it is given in the Atharva collection, changed into *Kātyāyanāyai vidmahe Kanyākumārīm dhīmahi tan no Durgā prachodayāt |* This agrees with the sense which Sāyaṇa, in his interpretation, puts on the words." In the passage of the Linga Purāṇa ii. 48, of which the commencement is given in the third volume of this work, p. 263 f., this invocation of Durgā occurs as follows in verse 26: *Kātyāyanāyai vidmahe Kanyākumārīyai dhīmahi tan no Durgā prachodayāt |*

²¹² The author observes here that in Ind. Stud. i. 75, he had incorrectly given *Kanyākumārīm* as the proper reading. The text in the Bibl. Ind., p. 770, has *Kanyākumārī*.

²¹³ Sāyaṇa's interpretation, as given by Weber i. 228, note, and here, is as follows: *Paśehād Durgā-gāyatrī | Hema-prakhyām indu-khaṇḍāṅka-maulīm [-āntamaulīm, in Bibl. Ind.] ity āgama-prasiddha-mūrti-dhārām [-rīṣṭ, B. I.] Durgām prārthayate "Kātyāyanāya" iti | kṛtīm vate iti Kātyo [Kārttyo, B. I.] Rudrah | . . . sa eva ayanam adhiṣṭhānaṁ yasyāḥ sū Kātyāyanī [Kārttyayani, B. I.] Athavā Kāṭasya rīṣi-viśeṣasya apatyāṁ Kātyāḥ | . . . Kutsitam anishṭham mārāyati iti kumārī kanyā dīpyamānā chāśau kumārī cha Kanyākumārī | Durgīḥ Durgā | līṅgādi-vyatyayaḥ evatra cchūṇḍaso drakṣavyaḥ |* [There are other variations in the text as given in the Bibl. Ind.] . . . "Then follows Durgā's gāyatrī. In the words 'Kātyāyanāya,' etc., he supplicates Durgā, bearing the form celebrated in the śāstras 'as bright as gold, and having for a diadem the ornament of a section of the moon.' Kātya is he who wears a skin, Rudra . . . and Kātyāyanī is she whose path, support, is Kātya. Or, Kātya is the offspring of Kāta, a particular rishi. . . . Kumārī is she who destroys what is bad, undesirable. She who is both Kanyā, 'shining,' and Kumārī, is Kanyākumārī. Durgi is Durgā. Diversity in forms is to be seen everywhere in the Vedas."

All the other gods who are invoked are male—viz. Rudra, Mahādeva, Danti, Nandi, Shagmukha, Garuḍa, Brahman, Viṣṇu, Nārasinha, Āditya, Agni; and it must therefore surprise us if we are to regard the twelfth deity as feminine, especially as the form is masculine. On the other hand, the sense of the words seems to compel us to adopt the traditional explanation. . . . Moreover, Kātyāyanī, Kanyākumārī, and Durgā, are already well known to us as names of Śiva's consort: and, indeed, they all appear to carry us back to the flame of fire. It is true that as regards Kātyāyanī this is somewhat difficult; though when we consider the great importance of the Kātya family in reference to the sacrificial system of the Brahmans, it does not seem very improbable that a particular kind of fire, which perhaps was introduced by one of the Kātyas, was called after him, and that this name was then associated with Kālī, Karālī, and Durgā, which are originally mere appellations of fire. Kanyākumārī, or 'the maidenly,' is a very fitting epithet of the holy, pure, sacrificial flame; and even at the time of the Periplus, i.e. of Pliny, we find her worship extended to the southernmost point of India, to the Cape which was then, as now, called after her Cape Comorin: but does it not appear that she was then no longer worshipped as the sacrificial flame, but as the wife of Śiva himself (whose name Nīlakaṇṭha Lassen [Ind. Ant. i. 194] finds rendered in the Νελοκόνθα of the Periplus)? The hymn to Agni in the second anuvāka of the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka (Āndhra recension) seems pretty decisive in favour of our connecting Durgā with the sacrificial fire. It is there said²¹⁴ in the second verse [Bibl. Ind., p. 788]: *Tām agnivarṇāṁ tapasā jvalantīm vairo-chaṇīm karma-phaleṣhu juṣṭām | Durgāṁ devīm śaraṇam aham prapadye sutarasi tarase namaḥ |* '[I seek as my refuge the goddess Durgā, who is of the colour of fire, burning with austerity (or heat), daughter of the sun (or of fire), who is sought after for the reward of rites: adoration be to thy energy, O impetuous [goddess].]' The five following verses repeat (as does also the Durgā-stava in the Pārisiṣṭa) the same thought, which is also expressed in R.V. i. 99,²¹⁵ that Agni

²¹⁴ "This verse is also found in the *Durgā-stava* of the *Rātri-pariṣiṣṭa* between the fourteenth and fifteenth divisions of the seventh section of the eighth Aṣṭaka of the R.V." (i.e. between Maṇḍala x. 127 and 128). See note in the Appendix.

²¹⁵ This verse is as follows: *Jātavedase sunavāma somam avāṇīyato nidāhāti vedaḥ | sa naḥ parashad atī durgāni vidvā nāvova sindhūm dūrītā 'ti Agnīḥ |*

would help the suppliant over all 'durga' and 'durita' (difficulties and evils). Verse second could certainly be understood as if the worshipper turned to the personified Durgati (Evil) herself, and sought her protection, so that thus Durgā would have arisen out of Nirṛiti. But it appears to me better to understand the passage of the violent flame of the fire, which, like the fire itself, delivers, atones, and frees from all 'durga' and 'durita,' is a 'durgā,' a protecting fortress, against them; so that this name would belong to the same class as Ambikā, Siva, Umā. If at a later period Durgā decidedly appears to have taken the place of the evil goddess Nirṛiti, this is no proof that the case was so from the beginning, but only shows that the original signification had been lost; which is in so far quite natural, as the consort of Siva bore a terrific character, both from her connexion with Rudra and also with Agni (compare Karālī).

"The last name of Siva's consort which I find in the Taitt. Ār. x. is Varadā, in anuvākas 26 and 30. It is true that there it appears rather to be the name of Sarasvatī, not of Durgā, when it is said: *Āyātu varadā devī aksharam brahma-sammitam | gāyatrīm [gāyatrī, Bibl. Ind.] chhandasām mātā idam brahma jushasva me | . . . sarvavarṇe mahādevī sandhyā-vidye Sarasvatī* |²¹⁶ But the words in anuv. 30 are not so clear: *Uttame śikhare jātā bhūmyām parvata-mūrdhani | brāhmaṇeḥbhyo 'bhyanuḥjātā gachha devī yathāsukham | stuto (=stutā u) mayā varadā veda-mātā prachodayanti pavane devījātā*,²¹⁷ etc.; where especially the first strophe reminds us of Pārvatī and Haimavatī, and one does not rightly comprehend how Sarasvatī obtains such an epithet (unless we are to understand the 'waters streaming from the hills, since Sarasvatī is, as is well known, at once a river goddess and the goddess of speech). In the same way the names Mahādevī and Sandhyāvidyā (see Wilson under Sandhyā) belong at a later period exclusively to the consort

²¹⁶ [The sense of these words, according to the reading in the Bibl. Ind., is: "May the boon-bestowing goddess (or the goddess Varadā) come: do thou, the mother of the Vedas, the letter equivalent to the Veda, the gāyatrī, receive with favour this my prayer . . . O thou who hast all letters, great goddess, Twilight-science, Sarasvatī." The latter portion of this quotation is not found in the text in the Bibl. Ind.]

²¹⁷ [The sense is: "Born on the highest peak, on the earth, on the summit of the mountain, dismissed from the Brahmins, go, goddess, wherever thou wilt. Praised by me, the boon-bestowing goddess, the mother of the Veda, twice born in the air, stimulating us," etc. The latter part of this quotation does not occur in the text as given in the Bibl. Ind.]

of Siva. The other names, however, 'sarva-varṇā,' 'chhandasām mātā,' 'veda-mātā,' and finally 'Sarasvatī' itself, conduct us to Sarasvatī; and so does also the liturgical usage, and the sense itself of anuvākas 26-30. Thus there only remains to us the possibility of assuming here a blending (and so a reminiscence of the possible original identity) of both goddesses; as we may perhaps also assume in the case of Umā Haimavatī in the Kena Upanishad, agreeably to the conjecture intimated above, p. 189" (see p. 424, note 207, above).

Two of the names alluded to in the above extract from the Indische Studien, which were afterwards applied to the consort of Siva, viz. Kālī and Karālī, occur in a passage of another of the Upanishads (the Muṇḍaka i. 2, 4), where they are appellations of two of the different tongues of fire: *Kālī Karālī cha Manojavā cha Sulohitā yā cha Sudhūmravarṇā | Sphulinginī Vīśvarūpī cha devī lēlayamānāḥ iti sapta jīhvāḥ* | which is thus translated by Dr. Roer (Bibl. Ind. xv. 153): "The seven flickering tongues [of the fire] are—Kālī (the black one), Karālī (the terrific one), Manojavā (swift as the mind), Sulohitā (the very red one), Sudhūmravarṇā (of purple colour), Sphulinginī (emitting sparks), and the Vīśvarūpī (all-shaped) goddess." The words "of the fire" are not in the original. The commentator, however, briefly remarks: *Kālī Karālī Manojavā cha Sulohitā cha yā cha Sudhūmra-varṇā Sphulinginī Vīśvarūpī cha devī lēlayamānāḥ dahanasya jīhvāḥ | Agner havir-āhuti-grasanārīhūḥ etāḥ sapta jīhvāḥ* | "Kālī, Karālī, Manojavā, Sulohitā, Sudhūmravarṇā, Sphulinginī, and the goddess Vīśvarūpī, are the seven flickering tongues of fire. These are the seven tongues which Agni has for 'devouring oblations of butter.'"

On this passage Prof. Weber has the following remarks in his Indische Studien i. 286 f., which are thus of an earlier date than those above cited: "The first two of these names were at a later period personified, and came to represent Durgā (the consort of Siva, who was developed out of Agni, who (Durgā), as is well known, became the object of a bloody sacrificial-worship under the names Kālī (the dark, black), Karālā, Karālavadanā, Karālānanā, Karālamukhī. It is evident that a considerable time was required for the sense of the word to become developed from that of the 'dark, terrific, tongue of fire' to that of a goddess Kālī, Karālā, worshipped with bloody sacrifices: and since

we find the latter in the drama of 'Mālati-Mādhava,' by Bhavabhūti, who is assigned by Wilson to the eighth century, the Muṇḍaka Upanishad must be considerably older; unless, indeed, the ancient signification of these names maintained itself at a later period alongside of the popular one. The worship of Durgā, Umā, and Pārvatī, may be shown in its beginnings, if not from this passage, at all events from the Upanishads of the Yajus, see Ind. Stud. i. p. 78." In a note Weber adds: "The third name (Manojavā) reminds us of Manojavas, the appellation of Yama, the god of death, in the Vāj. S. 5, 11. Does it at a later period denote his wife? for Yama too, like Siva, is one stage of Agni, the older, certainly, while Siva is the more recent."

In the passages quoted from the Bhāgavata and Viṣṇu Purāṇas in section vi. (pp. 378, 385), the spouse of Mahādeva is said to have been originally the daughter of Dakṣha, and to have become the daughter of Himavat only when she was born the second time after her voluntary death at Dakṣha's sacrifice. The following passage of the Rāmāyaṇa says nothing of this double birth and parentage:

Rāmāyaṇa i. 36, 13 ff. (ed. Schl. = Bombay ed. 35, 13 ff; Gorresio's ed. 37, 14 ff.).—*Sailendro Himavān nāma dhātūnām ākaro mahān | tasya kanyā-dvayaṁ jātāṁ rūpenāpratimam bhuri | yā Meru-duhitā Rāma taylor mātā sumadhyamā | nāmnā Menā manojā vai patnī Himavataḥ priyā | tasyāṁ Gangeyam abhavaj jyeshṭhā Himavataḥ sūtā | Umā nāma dṛitīyā 'bhūt kanyā tanyaiwa Rāghava | . . . 19. Yā chānyā Saila-duhitā kanyā' sīd Raghu-nandana | ugraṁ sū vratam āsthūya tapas tepe tapo-dhanā | ugrēṇa tapasā yuktām dadau Saila-varaḥ sūtām | Rudrāyāpratirūpāya Umām loka-namaskṛitām | Ity ete Saila-rājasya sūte Rāma bābhūvatuḥ | Gangā cha saritām śrāḥṭhā devīnām chūpy Umā varā |* "To Himavat, the chief of mountains, the great mine of metals, two daughters were born, in beauty unequalled upon earth. The daughter of Meru, Menā by name, the pleasing and beloved wife of Himavat, was their slender-waisted mother. Of her was born Gangā, the eldest daughter of Himavat; and his second daughter was called Umā. . . . 19. The other daughter of the mountain, rich in austere observances, having undertaken an arduous ritē, fulfilled a course of severe austerity. This daughter, Umā, distinguished by severe austerity, adored by the worlds, the chief of mountains gave to the matchless Rudra.

These, Rāma, were the two daughters of the king of mountains, Gangā, the most eminent of rivers, and Umā, the most excellent of goddesses."

The Harivamśa (vv. 940 ff.) gives the following history of Umā, which differs in some points from that of the Rāmāyaṇa, as it assigns three daughters to Himavat and Menā, among whom the Gangā is not included :

*Eteshām mānasi kanyā Menā nāma mahāgireḥ | patnī Himavataḥ
bṛeṣṭhā . . . 943. Tisraḥ kanyās tu Menūyām janayāmāsa S'aila-rāṭ |
Aparnām Ekaparnām cha tritīyām Ekapāṭalām | tapaś charantyaḥ su-
mahad duścharaṁ Deva-Dānavaiḥ | lokān samtāpayāmāsus tās tisraḥ
sthāṇu-jangamūn | āharam eka-parṇena Ekaparnā samācharat | pāṭalā-
pushpam ekaṁ cha ādadhāv Ekapāṭalā | eka tatra nirūhārā tām mātā
pratyashedhayat | "u mā" iti nishedhanti mātṛi-snehena duḥkṛitā | sā
tathoktā tada mātṛā devī duśchara-chārinī | Umety evābhavat khyātā
trishu lokeṣu sundarī | tathaiva nāmnā teneha viśrutā yogadharmīnī |
etat tu trikumārikāṁ jagat sthāsyati Bhārgava | tapaḥ-śarīrās tāḥ sarvās
tisro yoga-bālānvitāḥ | sarvās cha brahma-vādīnyaḥ sarvās chaivordhva-
retasaḥ | Umā tū sūm varishṭhā cha jyeshṭhā cha vara-varṇinī | mahāyoga-
balopetā Mahādevam upasthitā | Asitasyaikaparnā tu Devalasya mahāt-
manaḥ | patnī dattā mahābrahman yogāchāryūya dhimate | Jaigishavyāya
tu tathā viddhi tām Ekapāṭalām |*

940. "Their (the Pitṛis') mental daughter was Menā, the eminent wife of the great mountain Himavat. . . . 943. The king of the mountains begot three daughters upon Menā—viz. Aparṇā, Ekaparnā, and Ekapāṭalā. These three, performing very great austerity, such as could not be accomplished by gods or Dānavas, distressed [with alarm] both the stationary and the moving worlds. Ekaparnā ('One-leaf') fed upon one leaf. Ekapāṭalā took only one pāṭalā (Bignonia) for her food. One (Aparṇā) took no sustenance, but her mother, distressed through maternal affection, forbade her, dissuading her with the words *u mā* ('O don't'). The beautiful goddess, performing arduous austerity, having been thus addressed by her mother on that occasion, became known in the three worlds as Umā. In this manner the contemplative goddess became renowned under that name. But this world shall remain [distinguished by] having these three maids. All these three had mortified bodies, were distinguished by the force of contemplation, and were all chaste, and expounders of divine knowledge. Umā was

the eldest and most excellent among the three. Distinguished by the force derived from deep contemplation, she obtained Mahādeva [for her husband]. Ekaparnā was given as a wife to the great Asita Devala, the wise teacher of the Yoga. And know that Ekapātālā was in like manner bestowed on Jaigishavya."

The following is the commencement of the hymn of Arjuna to Durgā which, as has been mentioned in p. 205, he uttered at the suggestion of Krishna: ²¹⁸

Mahābhārata, Bhīṣma-parv. vv. 796 ff — *Arjunaḥ uvācha | namas te Siddhasenāni ārye mandata-vāsini | Kumāre Kālī Kāpālī Kapilā Krishṇa-pīṅgalā | Bhadrakālī namas tubhyam Mahākālī namo 'stu te | Chāṇḍī Chāṇḍī namas tubhyam Tārini Varavarṇini | Kātyāyanī mahābhāge Karālī Vijayā Jaye | śikhī-piśha-dhvaṇa-dhare nānābharaṇa-bhūṣite | aṭṭa-śula-praharaṇe khadga-khetaka-dhārini | gopendrasyaṇuje jyeshṭhe Nandagopa-kulodbhave | Mahāśūrak-priye nityaṁ Kausikī pīla-vāsini | aṭṭa-hāse loka-mukhe namas te 'stu raṇa-priye | Ume Sūkambharī Svete Kṛṣṇe Kaiṭabha-nāśini | Hiranyakṣe Virūpākṣe Dhūmrākṣe cha namo 'stu te | Veda śruti mahūpānye brahmaṇye Jātavedasī | Jambūkaṭaka-chaityeṣhu nityaṁ sannihitālaye | traṁ brahma-vidyā vidyānām mahānidrā cha dehīnām | Śāṇḍha-mātara bhagavati Durgē kāntāra-vāsini | . . . Svāhākūrah Svadhā chana lalā kṣhīḥ Sarasvatī | Sāvitrī Veda-mātā cha tathā. Vedāntu uchyate (uchyase ?) | stutā 'nī team Mahādevī issuddhenāntarātmanā | Jayo bhavatu me nityaṁ tat-prasādād raṇājire | kāntāra-bhaya-durgeshu bhaktānām pūjaneshu cha | nityaṁ vasaṁ pātūle yuddhe jayaṁ danavān | traṁ Jambhānī Mohinī cha Māyā Hriḥ Sris'tathana cha | Sandhyā prabhavati chāwa Sāvitrī Jananī tathā | Tushṭih Puṣṭir Dhrīṭir Dīptī chandrāditya-varādhinī | bhūtar bhūtatām saṁkhye vikhyase siddha-śārāṇaḥ |*

"Reverence be to thee, Siddhasenānī (Generaless of the Siddhas), the noble, the dweller on Mandara, Kumārī, Kālī, Kāpālī, Kapilā, Krishṇa-pīṅgalā. Reverence to thee, Bhadrakālī, reverence to thee, Mahākālī; reverence to thee, Chāṇḍī, Chāṇḍā, reverence to thee, O Tārini (deliveress), O Varavarṇini (beautiful coloured), O fortunate Kātyāyanī, O Karālī, O Vijayā, O Jayā (victory), who bearest a peacock's tail for thy banner, adorned with various jewels, armed with many spears, wield-

²¹⁸ The Bhagavadgītā, in which Krishna himself is so highly extolled and glorified, begins shortly afterwards in the twenty-fifth section of the Bhīṣma-parvan, vv. 830 ff.

ing sword and shield, younger sister of the chief of cowherds (Kṛishṇa), eldest, born in the family of the cowherd Nanda, delighting always in Mahisha's blood, Kauśikī, wearing yellow garments, loud-laughing, wolf-mouthed, reverence to thee, thou delighter in battle, O Umā, Śikambharī, thou white one [or Svētā], thou black one [or Kṛishṇā],²¹⁹ O destroyer of Kaiṭabha. Reverence to thee, O Hiranyākshī, Virūpākshī, Dhūmrākshī (golden-, distorted-, dark-eyed), O Vedaśruti (tradition of the Veda), most pure, devout, Jātavedasī (female Agni), who dwellest continually near to (. . . . ?) mountain-precipices and sepulchres. Of sciences thou art the science of Brahma (or of the Veda), the great sleep of embodied beings, O mother of Skanda, divine Durgā, dweller in wildernesses. Thou art called Svāhā, Svadhā, Kalā, Kāsthā (minute divisions of time), Sarasvatī,²¹⁹ Sāvitrī, mother of the Vedas, and the Vedānta (or end of the Vedas). Thou, great goddess, art praised with a pure heart. By thy favour let me be ever victorious in battle. In deserts, fears, and difficulties, and in the preservation of thy devout servants, and in Pātāla, thou constantly abidest; and conquerest the Dānavas in battle. Thou art Jambhānī (destroyer?), Mohinī, Māyā, Hṛī, Śrī, Sandhyā,²²⁰ the luminous, Sāvitrī, the mother, Tusṭī (contentment), Pusṭī (fatness), Dhṛiti (constancy), Dīpti (light), increaser of the sun and moon, the power of the powerful in battle,—[all this] thou art seen by the Siddhas and Chāraṇas [to be]."

In another part of the Mahābhārata, (fourth or) Virāṭa-parvan, 178 ff., there is another hymn (already referred to above, p. 425, note) addressed by Yudhishṭhira to Durgā, and very similar to the preceding. Among other things, she is there said to "have her perpetual abode on the Vindhya mountains, and to delight in spirituous liquor, flesh, and sacrificial victims" (*Vindhye chaiva naga-śreṣṭhe tava sthānaṁ hi śāśvatam | Kālī Kālī Mahākālī śidhu-māṁsa-paśu-priye*).

In the Harivaṁsa, vv. 3236 ff., it is related by Vaiśampāyana that with the view of defeating the designs of Kansa in regard to the destruction of Devakī's offspring, Viṣṇu descended into Pātāla, where he sought the aid of Nidrā Kālā, rūpinī (Sleep in the form of Time); and

²¹⁹ Compare what has been said by Prof. Weber on the relation of Umā and Sarasvatī, above, p. 424, note, and p. 428.

²²⁰ See above, p. 428.

promised her in return that through his favour she should be a goddess adored in all the world (v. 3242). He desires her to be born as the ninth child of Yaśodā on the same night on which he was to be born as the eighth child of Devakī (3247), when he would be carried to Yaśodā and she to Devakī. He tells her that she would be taken by the foot, and cast out upon a rock; but would then obtain an eternal place in the sky, becoming assimilated to himself in glory; would be installed by Indra among the gods (3251 ff.), received by him as his sister under the name of Kauśikī, and would obtain from him (Indra) a perpetual abode on the Vindhya mountain, where, thinking upon him (Vishṇu), she would kill the two demons Sumbha and Niśumbha, and would be worshipped with animal sacrifices (*tatraiva tvām bhaginy-arthe grahīṣhyati sa Vāsavaḥ | Kuśikasya tu gotreṇa Kauśikī tvam bhaviṣhyasi*²²¹ | *sa te Vindhye naga-sreṣṭhe sthānaṁ dāsyati śāśvatam | ityādi*). Vaiśampāyana then (vv. 3268 ff.) repeats a hymn to Āryā (Durgā) which had been "uttered by rishis of old," beginning *Nārāyaṇīm mamasyāmi devīm tribhuvaneśvarīm* | "I bow down before the goddess Nārāyaṇī, the mistress of the three worlds." She is here called by many of the names which we have already met in Arjuna's hymn (above, p. 432 f.), such as Śrī, Dhṛitī, Kīrti, Hṛī, Sandhyā, Kātyāyaṇī, Kauśikī, Jayā, Vijayā, Tushṭī, Puṣṭī (3269 f.). She is also called the eldest sister of Yama (*jyeshṭhā Yamasya bhāginī*, v. 3271); and it is worthy of remark that she is said to be worshipped by the [savage tribes of] Sāvaras, Varvaras, and Pulindas (*S'avarair Varbaraiś chaiva Pulindaiś cha supū-jitā*, v. 3274). She is also described as fond of wine and flesh (*surā-māṁsa-priyā*, v. 3279), the goddess of wine (*surā-devī*, v. 3286), as being Sarasvatī in Vālmīki (comp. pp. 424 f., 428 f.), and Smṛitī (memory) in Dvaipāyana, i.e. Vyāsa (*Sarasvatī cha Vālmīke Smṛitir Dvaipāyane tathā*, v. 3285), and among sciences, the science of Brahma or the Veda (*vidyānām brahma-vidyā*, v. 3291), and as pervading the entire world (*tvayā vyāptam idaṁ sarvaṁ jagat sthāvara-jangamam*, v. 3293).

The object of this passage seems to be to take Durgā and her worship (the extensive prevalence of which could not be ignored by the Vaiṣṇavas) under the protection and patronage of Vishṇu.

²²¹ Kauśika is applied as an epithet to Indra in R.V. i. 10, 11. See the first volume of this work, p. 347 f., and the fifth volume, p. 219.

A hymn addressed to Durgā by Pradyumna, the son of Kṛishṇa, is also to be found in *Harivaṁsa* vv. 9423 ff.; and another uttered by Aniruddha, son of Pradyumna and grandson of Kṛishṇa, occurs in vv. 10235 ff. of the same work. The latter hymn is repeated by Vaiśampāyana after he had made obeisance to the "infinite, imperishable, celestial, eternal primeval-god Nārāyaṇa" (*anantam akshayaṁ divyam ādi-devaṁ sanātanam | Nārāyaṇaṁ namaskṛitya*, 10232); and he talks of the goddess as being "adored by rishis and gods with flowers of eloquence" (*ṛishibhir daivatais chaiva vāk-pushpair architūṁ subham*, 10234). The hymn addresses Durgā as the sister of Indra and Viṣṇu (*Mahendra-Viṣṇu-bhaginīm*, v. 10235), as Gautamī, and by many of the names which we have already found in the preceding hymns, as well as by many new appellations, and goes on thus (v. 10256 ff.): *Brahmā Viṣṇus cha Rudraś cha Chandra-sūryāgni-mārutāḥ | . . . kṛitenaṁ jagad idam proktaṁ devyāḥ nāmānukīrtanāt |* "Brahmā, Viṣṇu, Rudra, the sun, moon, and wind . . . all this world is pronounced by uttering the name of this goddess."

The worship of this goddess reaches its climax in such works as the *Devī-mahātmya* in the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa*, sections 81 ff.; where it is remarkable that she is connected with Viṣṇu, and not with her proper consort, Mahādeva. She is there called *Mahāmāyā* (the great Illusion), *Yoganidrā* (the Sleep of meditation), etc. It is there said of her (v. 47 ff.): *Nityaiva sā jagan-mūrtir tayā sarvam idaṁ tatam | tathāpi tat-samutpattir bahudhā śrūyatām mama | devānāṁ kārya-siddhy-artham āvirbhavati sā yadā | utpannoti tadā loka sū nityā 'py abhidhīyate |* "She is the eternal form (or substance) of the world; by her all this [universe] is stretched out; and yet hear from me her manifold birth. Whenever she is manifested to effect the purposes of the gods, she, though eternal, is said in the world to be born." The narrative then proceeds, that when Viṣṇu was sunk in this sleep of contemplation (*Yoganidrā*) at the end of the Kalpa, two demons, Madhu and Kaiṭabha, sprang from his ear and were about to kill Brahmā; when the latter, seeing Viṣṇu asleep, with the view of arousing him, began to celebrate the praises of *Yoganidrā*, "his divine sleep who was abiding in his eyes, the mistress of the universe, the support of the world, the cause of its continuance and destruction" (*Hari-notra-kṛitālayām | vibhūsvarīm jagaddhātṛīm sthiti-sāmhāra-kāri-*

nīm | *nīdrām bhagavatīm Viṣṇoḥ*). Some of the functions assigned to her are as follows (v. 56): *tvayaiva dhāryate sarvaṁ tvayaitat sṛijyate jagat | tvayaitat pālyate devi tvam atsy ante oha survadā |* "By thee the universe is upheld; by thee the world is created, by thee it is preserved; and thou always devourest it at the end." Again, it is said of her (v. 68 ff.): *Yachcha kinchit kvachid vastu sad read vā 'khlātmake | tasya sarvasya yā śaktiḥ sā tvam kiṁ stūyase tadā | yayā tvayā jagat-sraṣṭā jagat-pātā 'tti yo jagat | so 'pi nīdrā-vaśaṁ nītaḥ kas tvām stotum iheśvaraḥ | Viṣṇuḥ sarīra-grahaṇam aham Īśāna eva cha | kārītās te yato 'tas tvām kaḥ stotum śaktimān bhavet |* "Thou art the power (*śakti*) of whatever substance, existent or non-existent, anywhere is, O thou soul of all things: why art thou, then, lauded [by us who are unequal to the task]? Who is able to magnify thee by whom the Creator of the world, the Preserver of the world, and the Devourer of the world, have been subjected to sleep? Since thou hast caused Viṣṇu, and me (Brahmā), and Īśāna (Śiva) to become incorporate, who has the power to praise thee?"

The following is the beginning of a hymn addressed to her after her destruction of the demon Mahisha :

Mār. Pur. sect. 84, 1 ff.—*S'akrādayaḥ sura-gaṇāḥ nihate 'tivrīye tasmin durātmani surārībale cha devyā | tāṁ tushṭvoh praṇati-namra-śirodharāṁśāḥ vāgbhiḥ praharṣha-pulakoḍgama-chāru-dehāḥ | devyā yayā tatam idaṁ jagad ātma-śaktyā niḥśeṣha-deva-gaṇa-śakti-samūha-mūrtyā | tāṁ Ambikām akhila-deva-maharshi-pūjyām bhaktyā natāḥ sma vīda-dhātu śubhāni sā naḥ | yasyāḥ prabhāvam atulam bhagavān Ananto Brahmā Haraś cha na hi vaktum alam balancha | sā Chaṇḍikā 'khila-jagat-paripālānāya nāśāya chāśubha-bhayasya matiṁ karotu |* "When the goddess had slain this very powerful and malignant [demon] and the host of the enemies of the gods,—the deities, headed by Indra, with their necks and shoulders bowed down in obeisance, and their bodies beautified by horripilation, delighted, landed her with [these] words: 'We bow down with devotion before that goddess Ambikā, who stretched out this world by her own power, in whom are impersonated the various energies (*śakti*) of all the gods, who is to be adored by all the deities and rishis: may she confer upon us blessings. May Chaṇḍikā, whose unequalled majesty and might neither the divine Ananta (Viṣṇu), nor Brahmā, nor Hara (Śiva) is competent to express, de-

termine upon the preservation of the world, and the destruction of the fear of evil."

These specimens may suffice to show the dignity to which this goddess has eventually been elevated in the estimation of her worshippers; and a comparison of the characteristics which are here assigned to her with the descriptions quoted above from the *Rāmāyana*, *Mahābhārata*, etc. (pp. 364, 373 ff., 430 f.), will show that she has now attained a higher rank in the Indian pantheon than was originally enjoyed by the daughter of Daksha and Himavat.

APPENDIX.

NOTE A.—Page 33, line 19.

In the Uttarakāṇḍa, too, of the Rāmāyaṇa (iv. 9, Bombay ed.), it is said: *Prajāpatiḥ purā sṛishṭvā apaḥ salīla-sambhavaḥ | tāsāṃ gopāyane sattvān asṛijāt padma-sambhavaḥ* | “The lotus-born Prajāpati, sprung from the waters (or the source of the waters), having formerly created the waters, created beings to protect them;” who, from agreeing to undertake this function, were called Rākshasas (from the root *rakṣh*, “to protect”).

On this verse the commentator remarks: “*Apaḥ sṛishṭvā*” *bhūmer adho-bhāga-vaṛtinīr apaḥ sṛishṭvā ity arthaḥ | tatra “salīla-sambhavaḥ” Prajāpatir abhūd ity anvayaḥ* | “‘Having created the waters:’ the sense is having created the waters existing beneath the earth. In them the water-born Prajāpati arose: such is the connexion.” He then quotes Manu i. 8 (see p. 30, above), and two other texts from the Veda. See above, p. 24, note.

NOTE B.—Page 65, line 25.

In the description of the regions to which the monkeys were sent to search for Sītā after she had been carried off by Rāvaṇa, which is given in the Kishkindhā Kāṇḍa or fourth book of the Rāmāyaṇa, the following reference occurs to the three steps of Viśṇu; and it is of such a character as to preserve some trace of Aurnabhāva’s interpretation of those steps:

Sect. 40, vv. 54a ff. (Bombay ed.)¹—*Tataḥ paraṃ hemamayāḥ śrīmān Udaya-parvataḥ | tasya kaṣṭir divaṃ sṛishṭvā śata-yojanam āyatā | jātā-*

¹ Gorresio, iv. 40, 59 ff., has several various readings in this passage. I have noted those which occur in the most important verses.

*ṛupamayī divyā virajati sa-vedikā | . . . 57. Tatra yojana-vistāram uchhritaṁ daśa-yojanam | śringaṁ Saumanasam nāma jātarūpamayāṁ dhruvam | 58. Tatra pūrva-padaṁ kṛtvā purā Viṣṇus trivikrame (trivikramaḥ, Gorr.) | dvitīyaṁ śikhare Merōḥ cakāra puruṣhottamaḥ | 59. Uttareṇa parikramya Jambūdvīpaṁ divākaraḥ | drīṣyo bhavati bhū-
viśiṣṭhaṁ śikharaṁ tad mahochhrayam (drīṣyo bhavati bhūtānāṁ śikharaṁ tam upāśritaḥ, Gorr.) | 54. "Beyond that is the glorious, golden, Udaya parvata [mountain over which the sun rises]; the divine and golden peak of which shines, touching the sky, a hundred yojanas long, and supported by a basement. . . . 57. There stands the firm, golden Saumanasa peak, a yojana broad and ten yojanas high. When Viṣṇu, the chief of spirits, formerly strode three paces, he planted his first step there, and his second on the summit of Meru. When the sun has circled round Jambūdvīpa by the north [or, with his last (step)], he is mostly visible on that lofty peak;" (or, 'he is visible to living beings, resting upon that peak,' Gorr.).*

The commentator remarks on vv. 57 and 58: *Tatra śata-yojana-dīrghe Udaya-giri-śikhare | 58. Tatra Saumanase śringe trivikrame tribhūḥ padaiḥ trilokyāḥ ākramaṇa-prastāve prathamam padaṁ tatra kṛtvā dvitīyam padam Merōḥ śikhare cakāra | On v. 59: Astānantaram uttareṇa Jambūdvīpam parikramya tan mahochhrayaṁ śikharam Saumanasā-khyam prāpya sthilo divākaro Jambūdvīpa-vartinām bhūviśiṣṭhaṁ drīṣṭo bhavati Saumanasa-śikhare ity arthaḥ | idam satya-yugābhiprāyaṁ tretāyāṁ kṣhīra-sāgara-madhya-gasya dvāpare suroda-madhya-gasya kalau Lankā-madhya-gasya Jambūdvīpa-stha-manushya-drīṣyatāyāḥ anyatroktatvāt |* "There, on this summit of the Udaya-giri, a hundred yojanas long. 58. 'There,' on that peak Saumanasa, in his triple stride, on the occasion of his traversing the three worlds with three steps, [Viṣṇu] placed his first step, and his second on the summit of Meru." On v. 59 he observes: "After sunset, when the sun has circled round Jambūdvīpa by the north [or, with his last (step)], he is mostly seen by the inhabitants of that dvīpa standing on the lofty summit called Saumanasa. This refers to the Satya yuga. For it is said in other books that in the Tretā age the sun is beheld by the men of Jambūdvīpa to go through the ocean of milk, in the Dvāpara through the ocean of wine, and in the Kali through Lankā."

The three steps of Viṣṇu are mentioned in other parts of the Rāmā-

yana. Thus in book vi. 39, 21 (Bombay ed.), it is said: *Prasādaśoḥa viśānais̄ cha Lankā parama-bhūṣitā | ghanair ivātopāpāye madhyamaṁ Vaiṣṇavam padam* | “Lankā was beautifully adorned with temples and palaces, as the middle step (or position) of Viṣṇu, with clouds, at the departure of the hot season [and commencement of the rains].” The commentator explains the middle position of Viṣṇu by *ākāśa*. This passage appears to refer to the zenith.

NOTE C.—Page 134, line 34.

It will be observed that in the text of the Bombay edition the two parts of the story, viz. (1) the request of the gods to Viṣṇu that he would assume the form of a dwarf, and (2) the petition of Kaśyapa to the same deity that he would become the son of himself and Aditi, are more closely connected than they are in Schlegel's edition by the insertion of the words, “Bestow the boon which Aditi, the gods, and I solicit,” which are wanting in Schlegel's text. Further, in the Bombay edition Kaśyapa is made to allude to “the hermitage where the work was accomplished,” as if he was himself present there, of which nothing is said in Schlegel's edition. And again, as already noticed in note 129, p. 130, by the omission of the words “thus addressed by the deities,” which occur at the beginning of verse 17 of Schlegel's text, the Bombay edition harmonizes the two parts of the story, and removes the appearance of interpolation which Schlegel's text exhibits.

NOTE D.—Page 175, line 33.

In this note I shall adduce some further evidence tending to confirm the supposition that Rāma may not have been originally represented in the Rāmāyana as an incarnation of Viṣṇu.

In the summaries of the poem, contained in sections 1 and 3² of

² It is worthy of remark, that in the third section the poet is said to have “seen” all that he narrates in the poem; just as the Vedic rishis are said to have “seen” their hymns (see Nirukta ii. 11² *Rishir darśanāt | stomān dadarśa ity Aupamanyavaḥ* | “‘Rishi comes from seeing: he is one who saw the hymns,’ so says Aupamanyava.” See the second volume of this work, pp. 195 and 196; also the third vol., p. 86). Rāmāyana i. 3, 3: *Rāma-Lakṣmaṇa-Sitābhīṣṭ rājñā Dadarathena cha* |

the First Book, as given in the Bombay edition and in Schlegel's, no allusion is made to the divine origin of Rāma; and the same is the case in the first and third sections in Gorresio's edition also. In the fourth section, however, of the last-named recension (which the others do not contain), the plan pursued by the gods for the destruction of Rāvāṇa, and the divine fluid through which the sons of Daśaratha were produced, are distinctly referred to (vv. 14, 15: *Rāvāṇasya badhopāye mantraṇāṃ samudāhṛitam* | 15. *Svargāvatarāṇāṃ chaiva surāṇāṃ samudāhṛitam* | *divyā cha pāyasotpattiḥ putra-janma nripasya cha*). In the first of the two summaries in Rāmāyaṇa i. 1, 13 and 18 (Bombay ed.), Rāma is described as "glorious like Prajāpati" (*Prajāpati-samāh śrīmān*, v. 13), and as "resembling Viṣṇu in vigour, and pleasant to behold, like the Moon" (*Viṣṇunā sadṛśo vīrye soma-vat priyadarśanaḥ*, v. 18). The first of the epithets in the last line would imply that he was not Viṣṇu. Otherwise, what necessity for the comparison? The commentator remarks thus on the expression in v. 18: *Yadyapi Rāmo Viṣṇur eva sarva-rūpāḥ cha tathāpi mānushopādhi-bhedāt sarvatra sādṛśyaṃ draśṭavyam* | *yadvā Viṣṇunā sadṛśaḥ sty ananvayāṅkalakārah* | "Although Rāma was no other than Viṣṇu, still, from the seeming distinctness of his humanity, resemblances may be regarded as existing in all points [between the one and the other]. Or, the comparison may be regarded as coming within the class of improper similes (*ananvayāṅkalakāra*).” See Professor Goldstucker's Dictionary under this word. In regard to the other epithet, "glorious like Prajāpati," v. 13, the commentator similarly observes: *Yadyapi Rāmo Brahma eva tathāpi mānusha-dharmāṇāṃ loka-mohadinām māyikānāṃ tatra darśanena aupādika-bhedam ādāya tat-samatvoktiḥ* | *Bhārgava-loka-pratibandha-rūpāj*

sabdhāryeṇa sarāḥṣṭreṇa yat prāptaṃ tatra tattvataḥ | 4. *Hasatam bhāṣitaṃ chaiva gātr yūvaḥ cha cheshtitam* | *tat sarvaṃ dharmā-vīryeṇa yathāvat samprapadyati* | 5. *Stri-tritīyeṇa cha tathā yat prāptaṃ charatā vane* | *satyasandhina Rāmeṇa tat sarvaṃ chānāvavaskhata* | 6. *Tataḥ paśyati dharmātmā tat sarvaṃ yogaṃ āsthitāḥ* | *purā yat tatra nirvṛttam pūṇāv āmalakāṃ yathā* | 7. *Tat sarvaṃ tattvato draśṭvā styādhi* | 3. "Whatever actually occurred to Rāma, Lakshmana and Sītā, to king Daśaratha with his wives and domestics, (4) their laughing, their talking, their fates and their endeavours—all that he sees exactly by the power of righteousness. 5. He also beheld all that happened to the truthful Rāma while travelling in the forest with his wife as the third. 6. Then the righteous (bard), falling into a state of contemplation (*yoga*), sees all that had formerly happened, like an "āmalaka" fruit in his hand. 7. Seeing all this exactly," etc.

*Jaṭāyu-mokṣha-pradāna-rupāt eva saha sarvāyodhyā-vāsi-janasya sa-
 śarīrasya Brahma-loka-nayana-rūpāḥ cha karanāt tat-samatvam |*
sarvathā svatantrasya eva īdriśeshu योग्यत्वāt | “Although Rāma
 was no other than Brahma, still, owing to the circumstance that grief,
 delusion, and other illusory human attributes, were seen in him,—in
 reference to this apparent distinctness,—a resemblance is predicated.
 From the fact that he deprived Bhārgava (Paraśurāma, see also
 p. 177) of his celestial abode, that he conferred final emancipation on
 Jaṭāyu (Rāmāyaṇa, Bombay ed., iii. 68, 37), and that he took with him
 to Brahmā’s paradise the whole of the inhabitants of Ayodhyā in an
 embodied state, there is a similarity (between Rāma and Prajāpati);
 since only a being who was in all respects independent of others could
 be capable of such acts.” As instances of Rāma’s “illusory human
 attributes,” I may mention his ignorance of Sītā’s locality when she
 had been carried off by Rāvaṇa (Ār. Kāṇḍa 58, 1 ff., Bombay ed.=
 Gorr. sect. 65), and the consequent search instituted for her discovery
 (Kishkindhā K. 40, 11 ff., Bombay ed.=Gorr. ed. 40, 9 ff.), and his
 doubt regarding her purity after she had been rescued from the
 Rākṣhasa’s palace (Bāla Kāṇḍa 1, 81 ff., Bombay ed.). There are
 some phrases in the summary of the poem, in the first chapter of the
 first book, which are of a hyperbolic character, and do not neces-
 sarily point to a divine character in Rāma. Thus, in verse 4 the hero
 about whom inquiry is made is described as one of whom the gods
 are afraid (*kasya bibhyati devās cha*). In v. 84 Rāma is said to have
 been honoured, or worshipped, by all the gods (*pūjitaḥ sarva-devataiḥ*);
 while on the other hand he is said, v. 86, to have received a boon
 from the gods (*devatābhyo varam prāpya*). In verse 32 Rāma and
 his party, while living at Chitrakūṭa, are compared to gods and
 gandharvas (*deva-gandharva-sankṣāḥ*). In section 2, verse 32, the
 epithets *dharmātmano bhagavataḥ*, and *dhīmataḥ*, “righteous,” “divine
 or venerable” (an epithet constantly applied to Kṛishṇa, as well as
 to Buddha), and “wise,” are assigned to Rāma. “Bhagavat” need
 not necessarily mean “divine.”

In the text, pp. 170 ff. (see also pp. 165 ff.), following Lassen, I
 have pointed out that the second sacrifice described in the fourteenth
 section in Schlegel’s edition has some appearance of not having formed
 a portion of the original poem. It will also be seen from note 164

fourth part of Vishṇu. 14. Then Sumitrā bore two sons, Lakshmaṇa and Śatrughna, heroes, skilled in all weapons, who had [each] the half [of the fourth] of Vishṇu.⁴ 15. But Bharata, of tranquil mind, was born under the lunar mansion Pushya and the sign of Pisces; while the sons of Sumitrā were born under Śarpa (or the ninth lunar mansion), when the sun had risen in Cancer. 16. The four great sons of the king were separately born, possessing great qualities, resembling one another, and in brilliancy like the constellation Proshṭhapadā.”

fourth parts [*i.e.* were, together, the fourth part] of Vishṇu. From the other fourth part there was born (17) to Kaikeyī, one son named Bharata, of real valour, righteous, high-souled, renowned for power, and energy. . . . 19. Daśaratha, surrounded by his four sons of high destinies, was highly pleased, like Pitāmaha, attended by the gods. 20. Rāma, devoted to the good of the worlds, was, like a banner, the most eminent among them, like Svayambhū among the gods, and impartial to all.”

The Bombay edition has not the verse which is found as the fifth in Schlegel's edition, and the thirteenth in Gorresio's, but it, equally with the others, asserts in its eleventh verse (which is not in Schlegel's edition) that the half of Vishṇu was incarnate in Rāma. The same remark which in p. 175 I have made on the passage as given in Schlegel's edition, applies to this recension also—viz. that the verses which refer to Daśaratha's sons being incarnations of Vishṇu might be omitted with little injury to the connexion. The account of Bharata, Lakshmaṇa, and Śatrughna, given in vv. 13–15 (as they now stand), has a certain awkwardness, inasmuch as after leaving Bharata, and introducing (v. 14) Lakshmaṇa and Śatrughna, the narrator recurs (v. 15) to Bharata, to give further particulars of his birth, and then goes back again to the other brothers. If, however, vv. 13 and 14 have been interpolated, it is possible that some other lines, which seem necessary to complete v. 15, and to tell the name of Bharata's mother, and the names of Sumitrā's sons (which that verse does not contain), may at the same time have been left out. In Gorresio's text of this passage, the verses describing the astrological influences under which Daśaratha's

⁴ Which had been communicated to their mother. See sect. 15, 21, Schlegel.

sons were born, are left out; though these are not unlikely to have formed part of the original text of the poem.⁵ The twelfth verse of this (as well as the corresponding verses of the other two recensions), where Rāma is compared to Indra,⁶ and also the fourteenth verse (Gorr.), in which he is said to be not inferior to Indra and Vishṇu [these two verses, I say, if original portions of the poem, as is not unlikely], sound somewhat strangely as part of a work in which the incarnation of Rāma was originally contemplated, as it would not exalt the reader's conception of the dignity of the hero (supposed to be an incarnation of Vishṇu) to compare his might to that of Indra, an inferior god. On this subject Gorresio remarks, in note 90, p. 423 f. of his sixth volume, as follows: "This is one of the passages in the poem from which it might be inferred that the avātara of Vishṇu in Rāma was an interpolation in the epopee. If Rāma was a corporeal manifestation of Vishṇu, and consequently Vishṇu himself in a human form, the epithet 'not inferior to Vishṇu,' which is here assigned to him, has neither appropriateness nor sense. It would be as if it were said to any one that he was not inferior to himself. But we shall not anticipate the judgment of a question which has need to be maturely considered."

Again, it is related in the Āraṇya K., or Third Book, 30, 20 ff. of Gorresio's edition, that when the Rākshāsas were about to attack Rāma, the gods and other beings became very anxious about his safety: *Tato devorshi-gandharvāḥ siddhāś cha saha chāraṇaiḥ | ūchuḥ parama-santrastāḥ guhyakāś cha parasparam | chatur-daśa sahasrāṇi rakshasām bhīma-karmānām | ekaś cha Rāmo dharmātmā kathāṁ yuddham bhaviṣyati | Rāmo no vidīto yo 'yaṁ yathā cha vasudhām gataḥ | manushyatvaṁ tu matvā 'sya kārūṇyād vyathitam manāḥ | nardantīva chamūś teshāṁ rakshasāṁ kāmā-rūpiṇām | nānā-vikṛita-veśānām Ramāśramam upāgamat |* "Then the gods, rishis, Gandharvas, Siddhas, Chāraṇas, and Guhyakas, being greatly terrified, spoke thus among themselves: 'There are fourteen thousands of Rākshasas, terrible in their deeds, and the righteous Rāma is but one: how shall they fight together? We know who

⁵ Signor Gorresio, on the other hand, thinks they are superfluous (Preface, vol. I., p. lii.).

⁶ In the Āraṇya Kāṇḍa 68, 38 (Bombay ed.), Rāma and Lakshmaṇa are compared to the chiefs of the gods, Vishṇu and Vāsava (Indra, *surendrāv iva Vishṇu-vāsavaḥ*). The commentator makes no remark on this.

this Rāma is, and how he went to the earth; but considering his human nature, our minds are distressed from compassion. The army of these Rākshasas, who take any shape they will, and who have assumed various disguises, has approached the hermitage of Rāma, as if shouting.'"

In the Bombay ed. iii. 24, 19 ff., however, most of the words ascribed to the gods, etc., are quite different: *Tato devāḥ sa-gaṇḍharvāḥ siddhāś cha saha chāraṇaiḥ | sameyuścha mahātmāno yuddha-darśana-kāṅkshayā |* 20. *Rishayaś mahātmāno loka brahmarshi-sattamāḥ | sametya chochuḥ sahītās te 'nyonyam punya-karmaṇaḥ'* 21. *Svasti go-brāhmaṇānānoha lokānām cheti samsthitāḥ*⁸ | *jayatām Rāghavo yuddhe Paulastyān rajanī-charān |* 22. *Chakra-hasto yathā yuddhe sarvān asura-pungavān | evam uktvā punaḥ prochuḥ ālokyā cha paraspāram |* 23. *Chaturdaśa sahasrāṇi rakshasām bhīma-karmaṇām | ekas cha Rāmo dharmātmā kathām yuddham bhaviṣyati |* 24. *Iti rājārshayaś siddhāḥ sa-gaṇḍās cha dvijārshabhāḥ | jāta-kautūhalās tasthur vimāna-sihās cha devatāḥ |* 25. *Āviṣṭām tejasa Rāmam sangrāma-śīrasi sthitam | dṛiṣṭvā sarvāṇi bhūtāni bhayaḍ vivyathire tadā |* 26. *Rūpam apratimam tasya Rāmasyākliṣṭa-karmaṇaḥ | babhūva rūpam kruddhasya Rudrasyeva mahātmanaḥ |* 35. *Tasya ruṣṭasya rūpam tu Rāmasya dadṛṣe tadā | Dakṣhasyeva kratuḥ hantum udyatasya Pinākinaḥ*⁹ | 19. "Then the great gods, Gandharvas, and Siddhas, with the Chāraṇas, (20) and the great rishis, the most excellent Brahman rishis, assembled in the world, eager to witness the battle: and being assembled, these holy beings thus spoke to one another: 21. 'Blessings be upon cows and Brahmans, and upon the worlds! May Rāma conquer in battle the Rākshasas, the descendants of Pulastya, (22) as the god who bears the discus (Vishṇu) [overcame] the chiefs of the Asuras.' Having thus spoken, and looked at each other, they said again: 23. 'There are fourteen thousands of Rākshasas, terrible in their deeds, and the righteous Rāma is but one:

⁷ *Adīrghatvam ūrṣham* | Comm.

⁸ The following is the commentator's note on the last four words of this line, of which it is difficult to make any sense as they stand. "*Lokānām ye 'bhīṣangatāḥ'*" *iti pāṭhe lokānām lokapālānām sangatāḥ havir-homādi-dvārā upakāraṇāḥ ity arthaḥ.* "According to another reading, *lokānām ye 'bhīṣangatāḥ*, the sense is, 'and upon those guardians of the world who have arrived, who aid us by means of oblations, sacrifices,' etc."

⁹ This verse, as given in Gorresio's edition, will be found above, p. 373, note.

how shall they fight together?' 24. [Having] thus [spoken], the royal Asuras, Siddhas, and Brahman rishis with the [other] hosts, stood in curious expectation, together with the gods in aerial cars. 25. Beholding Rāma, full of might, standing in the front of the battle, all creatures were agitated with fear. 26. The unparalleled form of Rāma, vigorous in action, was like that of the great Rudra when incensed. . . . 35. The form of Rāma, incensed, was beheld then, like that of Pinākin (Rudra) when prepared to destroy the sacrifice of Dakaha."

From a comparison of these passages, as given in the two different recensions, it appears probable that the speech which is put into the mouths of the gods and other spectators, in the Bombay edition, is the most ancient and original, as no mention is there made of the divine nature of Rāma, the reference to Vishnu in the twenty-second verse being introduced only by way of illustration, in the same way as the allusions to Rudra in the twenty-sixth and thirty-fifth verses. In Gorresio's edition, on the other hand, there is a distinct reference to the divine nature of Rāma; and I therefore conjecture that the short speech which it contains has been substituted for the other somewhat longer one, by a subsequent editor in support of this later conception.

The career of Rāma in his conflicts with the Rākshasas was not entirely unchequered by reverses. In the forty-fifth section of the sixth, or Yuddha Kāṇḍa, Bombay ed. (corresponding to section 20 of Gorresio's recension), it is related that both he and his brother Lakshmaṇa were severely wounded and rendered senseless by a cloud of serpents transformed into arrows, which were shot by Indrajit, son of Rāvaṇa.

In the following citations I shall use the Bombay edition only, except when I specially refer to Gorresio's. In vv. 7 ff. (sect. 45) it is said: *Rāma-Lakshmaṇayor eva sarva-deha-bhidaḥ śarāṇ | dhṛīṣam āveśa-yāmāsa Rāvaṇiḥ samitinjayat | nirantara-śarīrau tu tāv ubhau Rāma-Lakshmaṇau*¹⁰ *kruddhenendrajitā vīrau pannagaḥ śaratām gataiḥ | tayorḥ kaṭa-ja-mārgaṇa eusṛāva rudhīram bahu | . . . 16. Baddhau tu śara-bandhena tāv ubhau raṇa-mūrdhani | nimeshāntara-mātrena na śekatur apśakhetum | . . . 22. Papāta prathamam Rāmo viddho marmasu mārgaṇaiḥ | krodhād Indrajitā yena purā Sakro 'pi nirjitaḥ |* "The son of

¹⁰ Instead of *tāv ubhau Rāma-Lakshmaṇau*, Gorresio's edition (vi. 20, 8) reads *kṛitau tau sāyakais tadā*.

Rāvaṇa, victorious in battle, discharged numerous arrows which pierced the whole bodies of Rāma and Lakshmaṇa. Both of these two heroes had their bodies [wounded] in every spot by the incensed Indrajit with serpents¹¹ which had taken the form of arrows. Much blood flowed through the openings formed by their wounds. . . . 16. Bound by the chain of these arrows in the front of the battle, those two could not look up even for a moment.¹² . . . 22. Rāma first fell, pierced in the most vital parts, in anger, by Indrajit, by whom even Indra had formerly been conquered."¹³ Their allies the monkeys arrive and find the two brothers lying helpless. Sect. 46, 3 ff. . . . *Anvaśoohanta Rāghavaṇ | acheshtau manda-nisvāsau soṇitena pariplutau | sara-jālāchitau*¹⁴ *stabbhau kayānau sara-talpa-gau | nisvasantau yathā sarpaṇ nisheshhtau dīna-vikramaṇ | ityādi* | "They bewailed the two descendants of Raghu, incapable of effort, breathing slowly, bathed in blood, encompassed with a net of arrows, stiff, lying on a bed of arrows, breathing like serpents, helpless, their vigour quelled," etc. Vibhishana comforts the monkeys by saying that the good fortune of Rāma and Lakshmaṇa would not forsake them (vv. 38 ff.): *Athavā rakshyatām Rāmo yāvat sanjñā-viparyayaḥ | labdha-sanjñau hi Kakutsthau bhayaṇ nau vyapaneshyataḥ | nartat kinchana Rāmasya na cha Rāmo munūrshati | na hy enaṇ hāsyate Lakshmīr durlabhā yā gatūyushām* | "Or, let Rāma be guarded while his insensibility continues. When the two descendants of Kakutstha have recovered their senses, they shall remove our fear. This [mishap] of Rāma is nothing; he is not about to die: for Good Fortune (Lakshmi), who is beyond the reach of the dead, will not abandon him."

¹¹ The edition of Gorresio (see preceding note) supplies the word "arrows." Böhtlingk and Roth, v. v. *svrantara*, translate the clause thus "There was no spot on their bodies in which an arrow was not sticking."

¹² On this the commentator, in conformity with his dogmatic views regarding the divine nature of the two heroes, remarks: *Na śekatur arakshitum | tūdrisāo iva sthitau manushyatva-naśanāya stī bodhyam* | "'Could not look up:' remained, as it were, in this condition. This is to be understood as done to act (i.e. simulate) humanity (i.e. that they were mere men)."

¹³ Indrajit's victory over Indra is related in the Uttara Kāṇḍa, section 27. He was originally called Meghanāda, but after he had taken Indra captive, he received from Brahmā the name of *Indra-jit*, or the "conqueror of Indra," *ibid.* section 30. A summary of the story will be found further on.

¹⁴ Gorresio's ed. reads *sara-jālāvritau*.

It will be observed that nothing is here said of the divine nature of Rāma; and nothing is said of Lakshmi being his spouse, though she is regarded in Hindu mythology as the consort of Nārāyaṇa (see the commentator's remark on Uttara Kāṇḍa, 17, 35, which will be quoted below).

In the next section (the forty-seventh) of the Yuddha Kāṇḍa it is related that Rāvaṇa sent Sītā on his car Pushpaka, with the Rākshasī Trijatā (v. 14), to the spot where Rāma and Lakshmaṇa were lying wounded and helpless; and that on seeing these brothers, "powerful as the sons of the gods" (*deva-suta-prabhāvan*, v. 23), she broke out into lamentations, supposing them to be dead. The forty-eighth section contains her lament, in the course of which she says: 16. "Did not the two sons of Raghu possess the supernatural weapons of Varuṇa, Agni, Indra, and Vāyu, and the Brahma-sīras?¹⁵ 17. My two lords (though I am now lordless), Rāma and Lakshmaṇa, the equals of Indra, have been slain in battle by an unseen foe, by enchantment. 18. For no foe, though swift as thought, could return living, after he had once been beheld by Rāma in the fight. 19. Nothing can counterbalance the power of Time, and Fate is invincible" (vv. 16 ff: *Nanu Vāruṇam Agneyam Aindraṁ Vāyavyam eva cha | astraṁ Brahma-sīras chaiva Rāghavaṁ pratyapadyata |* 17. *Adṛśyamānena rane māyayā Vāsatoṇmanau | mama nāthāṁ anāthāyāḥ nihataṁ Rāma-Lakshmaṇau |* 18. *Na hi drishti-patham prāpya Rāghavasya rane rūpāḥ | jīvan pratinnivarteta yadyapi syād manojavaḥ |* 19. *Na Kālasyātibhāro 'sti kṛtāntas cha sudurjayaḥ*). Sītā is then consoled by the Rākshasī Trijatā, who tells her (v. 22) that her husband is not dead; and explains why she thinks so. In vv. 30 f., she says: *Nemau śakyaṁ Rāne jetaṁ sendraṁ api surāsurāḥ | tādṛśaṁ darśanam drishtvā mayā chodiritaṁ tava | idaṁ tu sunahach chitraṁ śaraiḥ paśyasva Maithilī | viṣṇunau patitāṁ etaṁ nava Lakshmiṁ vimunohati | prāyeṇa gata-sattvānāṁ puruṣhūnāṁ gatāyushāṁ | drisyamāneshu vaktreshu param bhavati vaikṛtam |* "These two cannot be conquered in battle even by the Suras and Asuras, Indra included. Such a sight I have seen, and declared to thee. But behold this great wonder, that though they are lying senseless from the arrows, Fortune (Lakshmi)

¹⁵ The commentator says on this verse: *Pratyapadyata pratyapadyetām | eka-va-chaṇam ārahaṁ |* "nau" staḥ pūrvam tat kim idānīm na smṛitam ite śeṣaḥ.

does not abandon them. There is generally a great change in the countenances, when beheld, of men who have lost their lives, and whose breath has departed." While the monkeys were watching Rāma, he recovers his consciousness (sect. 49, v. 3): *Etasminn antare Rāmo pratyabudhyata viryavān | sīhiraivāt satva-yogāchoha*¹⁶ *śaraṇḥ sandānito 'pi saṁ |* "In the mean time the heroic Rāma awoke, owing to his firmness and robustness of frame, though he had been bound by the arrows." He then begins to lament the loss of his brother Lakshmaṇa, whom he supposes to be dead; and ascribes the misfortune to his own bad generalship (v. 18: *Imām adya gato 'vasthām mamānāryasya durnayaiḥ*).

In sect. 50, Vibhishana laments the condition of Rāma and his brother, and the disappointment thereby caused to his own hopes of becoming king of Lankā; but is comforted by Sugrīva, who says to him (vv. 21 f.): *Rājyam prāpsyasi dharma-jna Lankāyām neha saṁśayaḥ | Rāvaṇaḥ saha putreṇa eva-kūmaṁ neha lapyate |* 22. *Garuḍa-dhṛṣṭhīstāv etāv ubhau Rūghava-Lakṣhmaṇau | tyaktvā moham badhiśhyeta sa-gaṇaṁ Rāvaṇaṁ rage |* "Thou, O [prince], well skilled in duty, shalt without doubt obtain sovereignty in Lankā; but Rāvaṇa and his son shall not obtain the object of their desire. 22. Both Rāma and Lakshmaṇa are watched over by Garuḍa: having escaped from their swoon, they shall slay Rāvaṇa with his hosts." Sugrīva, however, proposes to his father-in-law Sushena, to remove Rāma and Lakshmaṇa from the scene of action to Kishkindhā; and promises that he himself will slay Rāvaṇa, his sons and kinsmen, and bring back Sītā, as Indra recovered the lost Sṛī (24 f.: *Saha śūraiḥ harigaṇair labdha-sanyāv anidamau | gachha tvam bhṛātaraugrihya Kishkindhām Rāma-Lakṣhmaṇau | ahaṁ tu Rāvaṇaṁ hatvā sa-putraṁ saha-bāndhavam |* *Matthilīm ānayishyāmi Sakro nashṭum iva Sṛiyam*).¹⁷

Sushena, however, then relates (vv. 26-32) that once when the gods had been wounded with arrows and rendered senseless, in a combat with the Dānavas, they had been cured by Brihaspati by his knowledge and the use of herbs aided by sacred texts; and suggests that some of the monkeys should be sent to the ocean of milk to bring

¹⁶ *Mahā-bala-yuktatvāt* Comm.

¹⁷ In Gorresio's edition fifteen more verses (vi. 25, 27-41) follow, in which Sugrīva boasts further of what he will accomplish; but they are not found in the Bombay ed.

these herbs: The Bombay edition then goes on at once in vv. 33 ff. to relate that a tempest arose, attended with lightnings, and announces the arrival of the celestial bird Garuḍa for the purpose of curing Rāma and his brother. In Gorresio's text the following verses are introduced between those which correspond to the thirty-second and thirty-third of the Bombay edition:

Gorresio, sect. 26, vv. 8, 9, 10, 11a.—*Athainam upasangamya Vāyuh karnṇe vacho 'bravit | Rāma Rāma mahābāho ātmānaṁ smara vai hrīdā | Nārāyaṇas tvam bhagavān Rākshasārthe 'vatāritaḥ | smara sarpa-bhujāṁ devaṁ Vainateyam mahābalaṁ | sa sarpa-bandhād ghorāt tu yuvāṁ sammochayishyati | sa tasya vachanaṁ śrutvā Rāghavo Raghu-nandanaḥ | saṁsāra Garuḍaṁ devam bhujagānām bhayāvahanam |* "Then Vāyu, approaching him, spoke this word in his ear: 'Rāma, Rāma, great-armed, recollect thyself in thy heart: thou art the divine Nārāyaṇa, who hast descended [to earth] on account of the Rākshasas. Call to mind the snake-devouring god, the strong Vainateya (the bird Garuḍa); he shall deliver you twain from the dreadful bonds of the serpents.' Hearing Vāyu's words, Rāma called to mind the god Garuḍa, the terrifier of serpents."

The absence of these verses from the Bombay edition renders it probable that they formed no part of the original Rāmāyaṇa. But in addition to this fact, another proof to the same effect is to be found in the circumstance that in the verses which follow shortly after in both recensions Rāma, after being cured by Garuḍa, is represented as inquiring, and consequently, as being ignorant, who his benefactor is, although, according to Gorresio's edition, he had just before called Garuḍa to mind, i.e. summoned him. It is true Rāma had been senseless; but he had regained his consciousness so far as to call upon Garuḍa: so that in Gorresio's text it must be implied,—unless we are to suppose it to be inconsistent with itself,—that he again became unconscious. The verses in which this is shown are as follows (Bombay ed. 50, 37 ff. =Gorr. ed. 26, 16 ff.): *Tam āgatam abhipreksya nāgās te vipradu-druvūḥ | yais tu tau puruṣau baddhau śara-bhūtair mahābalaiḥ | tataḥ Suparnaḥ Kakutsthau aprīṣṭvā pratyabhinandya cha | vimamarśa cha paṇibhyāṁ mukhe chandra-sama-prabho | Vainateyena saṁsprīṣṭās tayoḥ samrurukhu¹⁸ vranāḥ | suvarṇe cha tanū snigdha tayor āsū babhūvatuḥ |*

¹⁸ *Yathā-pūrvam saṁrūḍha-māṁsāḥ abhūvan |* Comm.

40. *Tyo vīryam balaṁ chaurjāḥ utsāhascha mahāguṇaḥ | pradarsanāncha buddhiścha smṛtiś cha dviguṇā*¹⁹ *tayoḥ | tāv utthāpya mahātejaḥ Garuḍo Vāsavopamau | ubhau cha savajo hṛiṣṭo Rāmaś chainam vadaḥ ha | bhavat-prasādād vyasanāṁ Rāvaṇi-prabhavam mahat | upāyena vyati-krāntau śighraṁ cha balinau kṛitau | yathā tātaṁ Daśarathāṁ yathā 'jancha pitāmahaṁ | tathā bhavantam āsādyā hṛidayam me prasīdati |*
 44. *Ke bhavān rūpa-sampanno divya-srag-anulepanaḥ* (The last line is identical with that in Gorresio's edition) | "Beholding him arrived, the powerful serpents by whom, in the form of arrows, these two heroes had been bound, took to flight. Then Garuḍa, having touched and saluted the descendants of Kakutstha, soothed with his hands their faces brilliant as the moon. Touched by Garuḍa, their wounds closed up, and their bodies became speedily sleek and of a beautiful colour. 40. Their fire, strength, force, vigour, and energy became many degrees greater, and their insight, understanding, and memory, were doubled. The powerful Garuḍa raised up and embraced those two [princes] resembling Indra; and Rāma, delighted, thus addressed him: 'By thy favour, and through thy appliances, we have quickly got over the great calamity inflicted by the son of Rāvaṇa, and have become strong. Since I have found thee, who art as my father Daśaratha, and my ancestor Aja, my heart rejoices. 44. Who art thou,²⁰ distinguished by beauty, adorned with celestial garlands, and unguents?' " etc.

¹⁹ In his remarks on vv. 40, 41, the commentator, in the Bombay ed., explains this as follows: *Dviguṇā Vānateya-sparśāt pūrvato 'py adhikā | atra anyair devair avatīrya bhagavato Rāmasya mūla-mūrtier ājñayā upakāraḥ sampādito Garuḍena tu eva-rūpataḥ eva iti bodhyam |* . . . "Though formerly great, their insight, etc., became doubled from the touch of Garuḍa. Here it is to be understood that the assistance was rendered by the command of the divine Rāma, the root [of all things] by other gods descending to the earth, but by Garuḍa in his own form."

²⁰ In his remarks on this verse, the same commentator says. "*Ko bhavān*" *ity ayam praśno 'pi manuṣhya-śarīrochhīta-vyavahāraḥ eva tat-satyatva-pratyāpanārthaḥ | atra Rāma-samīpāgamana-paryantam pakṣhy-ākāreṇaiva āgatya sannīdhi-mātreṇa nāga-bandhananacha nirasya Rāghava-sparśanādy-artham puruṣhākāreṇa vyavahṛitavān iti bodhyam |* "This question 'who art thou?' also harmonizes with [Rāma's assumption of] a human body, and is designed to convince men of its reality. Here it is to be understood that the author accommodated to Rāma's human character the entire narrative from [Garuḍa's] appearance in the form of a bird, his removal, by his mere proximity, of the fetters of the snakes, and his touching Rāma, and ending with his near approach to the latter," etc.

The corresponding passage in Gorresio's edition (sect. 26, vv. 16 ff.) does not, as I have intimated, differ materially from the above, and in it, in like manner, Rāma is distinctly represented as inquiring who Garuḍa is.

In reply to Rāma's question, Garuḍa tells him (vv. 46 ff.) who he is, says he is his friend, and that no one but himself, whether god or Asura, could have delivered Rāma from the bonds of the serpents, which had been turned into arrows by the magic art of Indrajit. He warns him that in dealing with the treacherous Rākshasas he must proceed warily, and finally assures him that he shall slay Rāvaṇa and recover Sītā; and then departs after walking round and embracing him (v. 60: *Pradakṣiṇaṁ tataḥ kṛtvā parishvajya cha*).²¹

There is another passage in Gorresio's edition (book vi., sect. 33) in which it is related that after the fall of Prahasta, one of the Rākshasas, Mandodarī, Rāvaṇa's queen, went into the assembly to dissuade her husband from contending any further against Rāma, when she is introduced as saying (v. 25 f.): *Na cha mānusha-mātro 'sau Rāmo Dasarathātmanjah | kena yena vai pūrvam bahavo rākshasāḥ hatāḥ |* "Nor is this Rāma a mere man, he by whom singly many Rākshasas have formerly been slain." The same idea is repeated in the two following verses, where the number of the slain and the names of some of them are given.

The passage in which these verses occur is not, however, to be found in the corresponding section (the fifty-ninth) of the Bombay edition, which omits verses 6-51 of the thirty-third, and the whole of the thirty-fourth sections of Gorresio's edition.

In the fifty-ninth section of the same book (Bombay ed.) it is related that Lakshmaṇa was wounded by Rāvaṇa with an iron lance given to the latter by Brahmā (v. 105-7); but that when Rāvaṇa tried to lift his fallen foe, he was unable (v. 109 f.): *Himavān Mandaro Merus trailokyam vā sādhumaraiḥ | śakyam bhujābhyām uddhartuṁ na śakyo Bharātamanjah | śaktyā brāhmyā tu Saumitris tādṛṣto 'pi stanāntare | Viśṇor amīmāṁsya-bhūgam ātmānam pratyānuamarat |* "Himavat, Mandara,

²¹ From this last circumstance the commentator infers the divine nature of Rāma. His words are: *Pradakṣiṇaṁ kṛtvā itī anena divya-devatāveśtāro Rāmaḥ itī sarvān prāṇīta-kapīn praty api bodhītam |* "By these words, 'having walked round him, with the right side towards him,' it is intimated even to all the ordinary monkeys that Rāma was an incarnation of a celestial deity."

Meru, or the three worlds with the immortals, might be lifted by him with his arms, but not the younger brother of Bharata. But Lakshmana, though smitten on the chest with the lance given by Brahmā, recollected himself to be an incomprehensible portion of Vishṇu."²² Similar words are again ascribed to him in v. 120: *Vishṇor bhāgam amīmāṃsayam ātmānam pratyānusmaram*. Expressions of the same purport occur in the parallel verses in Gorresio's edition, sect. 36, vv. 86, 88, and 98. The words in v. 88 are *Vishṇor achintyo go bhāgo mānushaṁ deham āsthitah* | "The inconceivable portion of Vishṇu residing in a human body." The expressions, however, may be later interpolations in both editions. In vv. 122 f. of the same section

²² The commentator's note on v. 110 is as follows. *Amoghayā Brahma-dattayā śānāntare āhataḥ Saumitriḥ Vishṇor amīmāṃsayam nīlāmśaya-Vishṇu-bhāgavavantam iyattayā chintayitum aiakyaṁ vā Vishṇor bhāgam ātmānam pratyānusmarat anva-smarat | na hi svīyaṁ evaṁ kunasty ity ālayena Brahma-dakti-mūlaya (?) trūṇārtham bhāgavat-tejo' mīśaḥ eva aham asmi itī dhyātavān | naṣa-vad angūkrīta-manushyatvasya itarehaṁ drīḍha-praīṭy-ārtha-parāṁ na sarvadā tathā dhyānam | evaṁ cha Brahma-bhāvanayā Lakshmanena eva-śarīrasya garīyastvam āpādītam ity uktam bhavati* | "Being struck on the breast with the unfailing (dart) given by Brahmā, Lakshmana recollected himself to be indubitably a portion of Vishṇu, or to be a portion of Vishṇu which could not be conceived of as being of such and such magnitude. With reference to the principle that nothing destroys that which belongs to itself, he reflected, with a view to his preservation from the lance of Brahmā (?), that he was a part of the divine energy. As he had, like an actor, assumed the human form, this reflection of his had the object of confirming the belief of others, and it is not (to be imagined) that he always so reflected. And so too by conceiving himself as Brahma, he made his body very ponderous." It is afterwards said in verse 117 that Hanumat took Lakshmana in his arms and carried him to his brother, and that, though he could not be moved by his enemies, he made himself light to Hanumat in consequence of the latter's friendship and devotion. On this the commentator remarks: *Idaṁ cha bhakta-mātra-sugrahatvam bhāgavato bhāgavad-avatārūnāṁ cha svabhāva-siddham eva itī bodhyam | evaṁ cha Rāma-Lakshmanayor ajnāna-śaktimatva-tātparyatayā bhāsamānāni vaśānāni mānusha-vesha-nirvahaṇa-mātra-parūṇi itī bodhyam | tad uktam Bhāgavate* | "Martyāvatāras te śha martya-śikhaṇāṁ rakṣo-badhāyaiva na kevalaṁ vidhoḥ | kuto 'nyatāḥ syuḥ ramatāḥ sva ātmanāḥ Sītā-kṛtāni vyasanūnīśvaraṣya" | "This capability of being taken up by a devoted person alone is to be understood as resulting from the nature of the Deity and of His incarnations. And so it is to be understood that the expressions which seem to ascribe the capability of ignorance to Rāma and Lakshmana are only intended to serve the purpose of carrying out their characters in their human disguise. This is declared in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa (the verse occurs in v. 19, 6, as I learn from Böhtlingk and Roth's reference, s.v. *śikhaṇa*), 'The Lord's incarnation as a man on this earth was meant for the instruction of men, and had not merely in view the slaughter of the Rākshasa. Otherwise, how could the Lord, the Spirit, whose delight is in himself, have undergone the sufferings arising from Sītā?'"

(fifty-ninth, Bombay ed.) Hanumat tells Rāma to mount on his back, as Vishṇu on that of Garutmat or Garuḍa (*Vishṇur yathā Garutmantam āruhya*); and in verse 125, Rāma is said to have rushed on Rāvaṇa as Vishṇu rushed on Vairochana (*Vairochanāṁ iva kruddho Vishṇur ityādi*).

In the same sect. (59, 135 ff., Bombay ed.) it is related that Rāvaṇa was defeated by Rāma, but spared, and sent back to Lankā. After his return he thus speaks (sect. 60, v. 5 ff.): *Sarvaṁ tat khalu me moghaṁ yat taptam paramaṁ tapaḥ | yat samāno Mahendreṇa mānuṣheṇa vimirjitaḥ | 6. Idam tad Brahmaṇo ghorāṁ vākyaṁ mām abhyupasthitam | "mānuṣhebhyo vijānīhi bhayaṁ tvam iti tat tathā | 7. Deva-dānava-gaṇḍharvair yaksha-rākṣasa-pannagaiḥ | ābadhyatvam mayā proktam mānuṣhebhyo na yāchitam" | 8. Tam imam mānuṣham manye Rāmaṁ Dāśarathātmanjam | Ikṣhvāku-kula-jātena Anaranyena²³ yat purā | 9. "Utpatsyati hi mad-vaṁśe puruṣo rākṣasādhama | yas tvāṁ sa-putraṁ sāmātyam sa-balaṁ sāśva-sārathim | 10. Nihanishyati sangrāme toṣṭh kulādhama dūrmate" | taptō'ham Vedavyatyaḥ cha yathā sā dhareḥkīlā purā | 11. Seyaṁ Sitā mahābhāgā jātā Janaka-nandinī | Umā Nandīśvaraś cāpi Rambhā Varuṇa-kanyakā | 12. Yathoktās²⁴ tan mayā prāptaṁ na mīthyā rishi-bhāṣhitam | etad eva samāgamya yatnaṁ kartum ihārhatḥ | "All the extreme austerity that I have undergone is then vain, since*

²³ See Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, p. 371. "Whose (Sambhūta's) son was Anaranyā, who was slain by Rāvaṇa in his triumphant progress through the nations" (*tato 'naranyas | taṁ Rāvaṇo dig-vijaye jaghāna*). Here, and in the legend related in the second volume of this work, p. 421, note 129, a set of events different from those narrated in the earlier books of the Rāmāyaṇa, is referred to.

The story of Anaranyā is, however, told in the Uttara Kāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa, section 19. Dushkanta (sic), Suratha, Gādhi, Gaya, Purūravas (though, as the commentator remarks, they lived at different periods [*bhūna-bhūna-kāla-vartino 'pi Dushkantādayaḥ sva-sva-kāle Rāvaṇam prati jitaiva-vadāṁ vara-dānād uktavantaḥ*], yet they all in their own times) submitted, without fighting, acknowledging themselves conquered, to Rāvaṇa on his victorious march through the world in consequence of the boon Brahmā had given to him (v. 5). Anaranyā, a descendant of Ikṣhvāku, and king of Ayodhyā, however, when called upon either to fight, or acknowledge himself conquered, prefers the former alternative (v. 9); but his army is overcome, and he himself is thrown from his chariot (v. 21). When Rāvaṇa triumphs over his prostrate foe, the latter says that he has been vanquished, not by him, but by fate, and that Rāvaṇa is only the instrument of his overthrow (v. 26); and he predicts that Rāvaṇa should one day be slain by his descendant Rāma (v. 29: *Utpatsyate kule hy amina Ikṣhvākūṇāṁ mahātmanām | Rāmo Dāśarathīr nāma yas te prāyaṇa karishyati*).

²⁴ *Yathoktapantaḥ . . . yad ūchus tan mayā iti pāṭhāntaram | Comm.*

I, though the equal of Indra, have been overcome by a man. This is the direful word of Brahmā that has now reached me, [when²⁵ he said]: 'Know that thy great cause of apprehension is from men. I have decreed thy indestructibility by gods, Dānavas, Gandharvas, Yakshas, Rākshasas, and Pannagas: but thou hast asked no [security] from men.' This man I consider to be Rāma, the son of Daśaratha, since I was formerly thus cursed by Anarāya of the race of Ikshvāku; 'There shall arise among my posterity a man who shall slay thee in battle, thou lowest of Rākshasas, and wicked wretch, along with thy sons, ministers, hosts, and charioteers.' And I was also cursed by Vedavati when she was insulted by me: it is she who has been born as the great Sitā, the gladdener of Janaka. And that which Umā, Nandīśvara, Rambhā, and the daughter of Varuṇa²⁶ (Punjikasthalā) uttered, has befallen me. What has been spoken by rishis²⁷ is never falsified. Wherefore, ye must assemble, and make exertions."

In this passage it will be observed that there is no express reference to the divine nature of Rāma: and it is conceivable that the original legend may have represented him as being, even in his human capacity, of sufficient prowess to slay the king of the Rākshasas.

[Most of the stories referred to in the preceding passage are given in the Uttara Kāṇḍa, and I shall supply an abstract of them here. That of Anarāya will be found in note 23.]

The rather pretty story of Vedavati is related in the seventeenth section of that book, vv. 1 ff., as follows: Rāvaṇa, in the course of his progress through the world, comes to the forest on the Himālaya, where he sees a damsel of brilliant beauty, but in ascetic garb, of whom he straightway becomes enamoured. He tells her that such an austere life is unsuited to her youth and attractions, and asks who she is, and why she is leading an ascetic existence. She answers that she is called Vedavati, and is the Vocal daughter (*vāñmayī kanyā*) of Vrihaspati's son, the rishi Kuśadhvaja, sprung from him during his constant study of the Veda. The gods, gandharvas, etc., she says, sought to woo her, but her father would give her to no one else than

²⁵ The stories connected with all these names are briefly referred to by the commentator.

²⁶ The commentator remarks here: *Rishi-padena tapo-yuktāḥ uchyante* | "The word 'rishi' denotes persons distinguished by austerity." It would thus refer to Vedavati and others.

to Viṣṇu, the lord of the world, whom he desired for his son-in-law (v. 12: *Pitṛas tu mama jāmātā Viṣṇuḥ kila suresvaraḥ | abhipratas trilokēśas tasmān nānyasya me pitā | dātum iṣṭhaḥ tasmāi tu*). This resolution provoked Sambhu, king of the Daityas, who slew her father, Kuśadhvaja, while sleeping, on which her mother (whose name is not given), after embracing his body, entered into the fire (15). Vedavati then proceeds (v. 16): *Tato manoratham satyam pitur Nārāyaṇam prati | karomiti tam evāhaṁ hṛdayena samudvahe | iti pratīyān āruhya chardāmi vipulāṁ tapaḥ | . . . 18. Nārāyaṇo mama pātur na tv anyah puru-
shottamāt | āśraye nyamam ghoraṁ Nārāyaṇa-paripsayā |* "In order that I may fulfil this desire of my father in respect of Nārāyaṇa, I wed him with my heart." Having entered into this engagement, I practise great austerity. Nārāyaṇa, and no other than he, Puru-
shottama, is my husband. From the desire of obtaining him, I resort to this severe observance." Rāvaṇa's passion is not in the least diminished by this explanation, and he urges that it is the old alone who should seek to become distinguished by accumulating merit through austerity; prays that she who is so young and beautiful will become his bride; and boasts that he is superior to Viṣṇu (v. 24). She rejoins that no one but he would thus contemn that deity. On receiving this reply, he touches the hair of her head with the tip of his finger (27). She is greatly incensed, and forthwith cuts off her hair, and tells him that as he has so insulted her, she cannot continue to live, but will enter into the fire before his eyes. She goes on (v. 31 ff.): *Yasmāt tu dharṣṭā chūhaṁ tvayā pāpātmanā vane | tasmāt tava bādharikaṁ hi samutpatsyaty aham (samutpatsyati samut-
patsye ity arthaḥ | Comm.) punaḥ | nahi śakyah śrīyā hantum puruṣaḥ
pāpa-niśchayaḥ | śāpe tvayā mayotsrīṣṭe tapasāś cha vyayo bhavet |
yadi tv asti mayā kincit kṛitaṁ dattaṁ hutaṁ tathā | tasmāt tv ayoṇi-
jā sādho bhaveyam dharmīṇaḥ sūtā | evam uktvā pravieṣṭā sā jvaliṣṭā
jātavedasam | papāta cha divo divyā pushpa-vriṣṭik samantataḥ | saishā
Janaka-rājasya prasūtā tanayā prabho | tava bhāryā mahābāho Viṣṇus-
teṣāṁ hi sandānāḥ | pūrvaṁ krodha-hataḥ śatrur yayā 'sau nihatas tayā
upāśraytvā śailābhas tava vīryam amānusham |* "Since I have been
insulted in the forest by thee who art wicked-hearted, I shall be born

²² This language offers an exact parallel to that of devout female ascetics in other parts of the world.

again for thy destruction. For a man of evil designs cannot be slain by a woman; and the merit of my austerity would be lost if I were²⁰ to launch a curse against thee. But if I have performed, or bestowed, or sacrificed, aught, may I be born the virtuous daughter, not produced from the womb, of a righteous man.' Having thus spoken, she entered the blazing fire. Then a shower of celestial flowers fell from every part of the sky. It is she, lord, who (having been Vedavati in the Kṛita age, v. 38) has been born (in the Tretā age, v. 38) as the daughter of king Janaka, and [has become] thy bride; for thou art the eternal Viṣṇu. The mountain-like enemy who was [virtually] destroyed before by her wrath, has now been slain by her, after she had associated herself with thy superhuman energy." On this the commentator remarks: *Anena Sitā eva Rāvaṇa-bādhe mukhyaṁ kāraṇam Rāme tu hantritvaṁ āropitam iti sūchitam* | "By this it is signified that Sitā was the principal cause of Rāvaṇa's death; but the function of destroying him is ascribed to Rāma." On the words "thou art Viṣṇu," in the preceding verse, the same commentator remarks: *Anena Sitāyāḥ Lakṣmītvam sphuṭam evoktam | tad uktam Parāśareṇa "Rāghavato 'bhavat Sitā Rukmiṇī Kṛiṣṇa-janmani" iti* | "By this it is clearly affirmed that Sitā was Lakṣmī. Parāśara says: 'In the god's life as Rāma, she became Sitā, and in his birth as Kṛiṣṇa [she became] Rukmiṇī.'"

I have not noticed in the Uttara Kāṇḍa any separate legend about Umā, but the commentator²¹ connects this allusion to her in the preceding passage (vi. 60, 11) with the following story about Nandīśvara, which is thus told in the sixteenth section of the Uttara Kāṇḍa (v. 1 ff.):—After his victory over Kuvera, Rāvaṇa went to Saravaṇa, the birthplace of Kārttikeya. Ascending the mountain, he sees another delightful wood, where his car Pushpaka stops, and will proceed no further. He then beholds a formidable dark tawny-coloured dwarf, called Nandīśvara, a follower of Mahādeva, who desires him to halt, as that deity is sporting on the mountain, and has made it inaccessible to all creatures, the gods included (v. 10). Rāvaṇa angrily

²⁰ His words are: *Tatra Umā-śāpaḥ | Karṇāśa-śikhara-chālana-vatāyām Rāvaṇasya strī-nimittam maraṇam ity evaṁ-rūpam ity āhuh* | "They say that at the time when he shook the summit of Kailāsa, a curse was pronounced on Rāvaṇa that he should die on account of a woman."

demands who Sankara (Mahādeva) is, and laughs contemptuously at Nāndīśvara, who has the face of a monkey. Nandīśvara, who was another body (*aparā tanuḥ*) of Śiva, being incensed at this contempt of his monkey form, declares that beings, possessing the same shape as himself, and of similar energy, monkeys, shall be produced to destroy Rāvaṇa's race (v. 17: *Tasmād mad-vīrya-saṃyuktāḥ māḍ-rāpa-sama-tejasāḥ | utpatayanti badhārthaṃ hi kulasya tava vānarāḥ*). Nandīśvara adds that he could easily kill Rāvaṇa now, but that he has been already slain by his own deeds (v. 20). Rāvaṇa threatens (v. 23 ff.) that as his car has been stopped, he will pluck up the mountain by the roots, asking in virtue of what power Śiva continually sports on that spot, and boasting that he must now be made to know his danger. Rāvaṇa then throws his arms under the mountain, which, being lifted by him, shakes, and makes the hosts of Rudra tremble, and even Pārvatī herself quake, and cling to her husband (v. 26: *Chachāla Pārvaṭi chāpi tadā śhastā Mahēśvaram*). Śiva, however, presses down the mountain with his great toe, and along with it crushes the arms of Rāvaṇa, who utters a loud cry, which shakes all creation. Rāvaṇa's counsellors then exhort him to propitiate Mahādeva, the blue-throated lord of Umā, who on being lauded will become gracious. Rāvaṇa accordingly praises Mahādeva with hymns, and weeps for a thousand years. Mahādeva is then propitiated (v. 35), lets go Rāvaṇa's arms, says his name shall be Rāvaṇa from the cry (*rāva*) he had uttered, and sends him away, with the gift of a sword bestowed on him at his request (v. 43).

The legend of Rambhā is narrated in the twenty-sixth section of the Uttara Kāṇḍa. Rāvaṇa goes with his army to Kailāsa, to conquer the gods. He there sees the Rambhā, the most beautiful of all the Apsarases, and is smitten with her charms (v. 20). She says she is properly his daughter-in-law, being the wife of Nalakūvara (son of his brother Kuvera), with whom she has an assignation, and cannot therefore receive his addresses (v. 34). Rāvaṇa says the Apsarases are mere courtezans, without any husbands, and ravishes her (v. 41). She goes and reports the outrage to Nalakūvara (46), who, after touching all his organs of sense (*chakṣur-ādīndriya-gaṇaṃ sarvaṃ* | Comm.) with water, launches the following curse against Rāvaṇa: v. 54. *Akāmā tena yasmāt tvam balād bhadre pradharṣitā* | 55. *Tasmāt sa*

*yuvatīm anyāṁ nākamām upayāsyati | yadā hy akāmāṁ kamārta
dharahayishyati yoshitam | mūrkhā tu saptadhā tasya sakalībhavitā tacāḥ |*

"Since thou, kind lady, who hadst no passion for him, hast been forcibly insulted by him, he shall not approach any other damsel who does not reciprocate his passion. For when through passion he shall ravish any woman who has no passion for him, his head shall split into seven fragments." Hearing of this curse, Rāvaṇa resolves to abstain from offering violence to women.

I have not noticed in the Uttara Kāṇḍa any story about the daughter of Varuṇa, but the commentator on the text (vi. 60, 11) explains the allusion to her thus: *Varuṇa-kanyakā Punjikasthalā tan-nimittam brahma-śāpaḥ strī-dharśhaṇe maraṇa-rūpaḥ |* "The daughter of Varuṇa was Punjikasthalā. On her account, a curse of Brahmā, involving the penalty of death, [was pronounced] on the rape of women."]

After expressing himself as above (p. 458), Rāvaṇa desires his brother Kumbhakarna (a monster who, owing to the curse of Brahmā,²⁹ slept for six months at a time, and remained awake for a single day) to be awakened. This is with immense difficulty effected. Kumbhakarna asks (book vi., sect. 60, Bombay ed., vv. 67 ff.) why they have awakened him, and is told that they stand in dread, not of the gods, but of a man, Rāma (v. 72: *Mānushān no bhayaṁ rājan tumulaṁ samprabādhate | ityūdi*); when he assures them that he will destroy their foes, and himself drink the blood of Rāma and Lakshmaṇa. After drinking two thousand jars of liquor, he goes to see and consult with his brother Rāvaṇa; who, in answer to his inquiry, describes to him (sect. 62) the present position of affairs, and the necessity there is to obtain his assistance. Kumbhakarna, in reply, delivers (sect. 63, Bombay ed., vv. 2-21) a moral discourse on the wickedness of Rāvaṇa's conduct, such as we should scarcely have expected from the speaker's antecedents;²⁹ and is told by Rāvaṇa in answer (vv. 23-27) that this is not the time for such laboured lectures, but for action, to which he calls upon him to proceed, if he has any regard for him, or pretensions to valour. Kumbhakarna then promises (vv. 30 ff. of the same section) to destroy the enemies of his brother. But before this last speech of Kumbhakarna, which is given in the forty-second section of Gorresio's recension, that text introduces another speech of

See sect. 61, vv. 19 ff.

the same personage, which occupies vv. 30-53¹ of the fortieth section, and a further speech of Rāvaṇa which fills the forty-first section; both of which are wanting in the Bombay edition, and even in one of the MSS. consulted by Signor Gorresio, as we learn from his Preface, vol. v., p. xlii.; and might, as he thinks, be omitted without detriment, or perhaps with advantage, to the connexion of the ideas, and the march of the poem. Some mention must, however, be made of this speech, as in it Kumbhakarna gives the same account of the divine origin of Rāma, as we have already met with in the earlier part of the poem (see p. 168 ff., above). He says that one day he had seen the divine sage Nārada, who had told him that he had just returned from an assembly of the gods who had met to take counsel for the destruction of the Rākshasas, on which occasion Brahmā had spoken as follows (sect. vi. 40, 44 ff., ed. Gorr.): *Evam ukte tu vachane Brahmā devān avācha ha | abadhyatvam mayā dattam deva-daityaischa rākshasaiḥ | mūnushēbhyo bhayaṁ tasya vānarebhyascha devatāḥ | surā-sura-samūhe 'pi badhas tasya na vidyate | tasmād esha Hariḥ devaḥ padma-nābhas trivikramaḥ | putro Daśarathasyāstu chaturbāhuḥ sanātanaḥ | bhavanto vasūdhamā gatvā Viṣṇor asya mahātmanaḥ | vānurāṇām tanuṁ kṛtvā sahāyutvam karishyatha* | “When [the priest of the gods Vṛihaspati] had thus spoken, Brahmā said to the gods: ‘I have conferred [on Rāvaṇa] indestructibility by gods, Daityas and Rākshasas: he has, O gods, to fear men and monkeys. Nor can he be killed by all the Suras (gods) or Asuras. Wherefore let this god (devaḥ) Hari (Viṣṇu), from whose navel sprang a lotus, who is thrice-striding, four-armed, and eternal, become the son of Daśaratha. You, gods, repairing to the earth, and assuming the form of monkeys, shall assist the mighty Viṣṇu.’” Kumbhakarna says that Viṣṇu has taken the human form of Rāma, and come to slay them. He therefore advises that Sītā should be restored, and peace made with Rāma, before whom the three worlds bow'down.

In reply to this exhortation, Rāvaṇa utters the following defiance of Viṣṇu (sect. 41, 2 ff., ed. Gorr.): *Ko 'sau Viṣṇur itī khyāto yasya team tāta bibhyase | devato na namasye tam tathā 'nyān devatā-gaṇān | manushyatvam gate tasmin kim bhāyam tvām upasthitam | nityam samara-bhī-tās tu mānushāḥ sumahābala | khādayitvā tu tūn pūrvaṁ katham paśchād namāmy aham | pranāmya mānushaṁ Rāmaṁ Sītāṁ datvā tu tasya vai |*

*kāśya-bhūtas tu lokānām anuyāsyāmi prishhatah | Rāghavāṁ tam mahā-
 bāho dina-rūpo 'tha dāsa-vat | piddhiṁ cha paśyamāno 'sya katham śāntā-
 yāmi jīvītum | hrītvā tasya purā bhāryām mānaṁ kṛtvā sudāruṇam |
 prajāmed Rāvaṇo Rāmam osha te buddhi-nirṇayaḥ | yadi Rāmaḥ svayaṁ
 Viṣṇur Lakshmaṇo 'pi Satakratuḥ | Sugrīvas Tryambakaḥ sākshāt evayam
 Brāhmā tu Jāmbavān | aho śāstrāṇy adhitāni yasya te buddhir idṛśī |
 atitāśraminaṁ Rāmaṁ yo namaskartum icchasi | devatvaṁ yaḥ parityajya
 mānushīṁ yonim āśritaḥ | asmān hantum lhalāyātāḥ sa sandheyah katham
 mayā | yadi vā Rāghavo Viṣṇur vyaktaṁ te śrotram āgataḥ | devatānāṁ
 hīlārthaṁ tu pravishṭo mānushīṁ tanum | sa vānarāṇāṁ rājānaṁ Sugrī-
 vaṁ śaraṇāṁ gataḥ | aho 'sya sadṛiṣaṁ sakhyāṁ tiryagyoni-gataiḥ saha |
 vīrya-hīnas tu kiṁ Viṣṇur yaḥ śṛitaḥ ṛiksha-vānarūn | athavā vīrya-
 hīno 'sau yena pūrvam mahāsuraḥ | vāmanaṁ rūpam āsthāya yūchitas
 tripadaḥ padam | Balis tu dīkshito yajne tena tvaṁ sakhyam icchasi | yena
 dattā mahi sarvā sa-sāgara-vanāṛṇavā | upachūra-kṛitā pūrvam sa baddho
 yajna-dīkshitaḥ | upakārī hatas tena so 'smān rakshati vairiṇaḥ | yadā me
 nirjitāḥ devāḥ svargaṁ gatvā tvayā saha | tadā kim nāsti Viṣṇutvaṁ tasya
 devasya Rākshasa | sāmprataṁ kutaḥ āyūtaḥ sa Viṣṇur yośya bibhyyase |
 śāstra-rakshanārthāya brūshe tvaṁ vākyam idṛśam | nāyaṁ klīvayitūṁ
 kālaḥ kūlo yoddhūṁ niśūchara | svāmīyam Pitāmahāt prāptaṁ trailokyam
 vasa-gaṁ kṛitam | Rāghavam prajāme kasmād hīna-vīrya-parākramam |
 tad gachha śayaniyam tvam pīva tvam vigata-jvaraḥ | śayamānaṁ na
 hanyāt tvāṁ Rāghavo Lakshmaṇas tathā | ahaṁ Rāmam badhishyāmi
 Sugrīvancha sa-Lakshmaṇam | vānarāṁścha hanishyāmi tato devān mahā-
 rane | Viṣṇunchaiva badhishyāmi ye cha Viṣṇv-anuyūyinaḥ | gachha
 gachhasva tat kshetraṁ vīraṁ jīva sukhī bhava | bhṛtaraṁ tv evam uktvā
 'sau Rāvaṇaḥ Kāla-choditaḥ | sāvalepaṁ sa-garjancha punar vacchanam
 abravīt | jānāmi Sitāṁ dharāṇī-prasūtāṁ jānāmi Rāmam Madhusū-
 danancha | etad hi jāne tv aham asya badhyas tenāhṛitā me Janakātma-
 jaishā³⁰ | na kāmāchokaiva na krodhād dharāmi Janakātmajāṁ | nihato
 gantum icchāmi tad Viṣṇoḥ paramam padam |*

³⁰ A verse resembling this in most of its clauses had previously occurred in a
 similarly defiant speech of Rāvaṇa's in sect. 34, 7, of Gorresio's recension: *Jānāmi
 Sitāṁ Janaka-prasūtāṁ jānāmi Rāmam Madhusūdanaṁ cha | Etad hi jānāmi aham
 asya badhyas tathāpi sandhūṁ na karomy anena* | "I know Sitā to be Janaka's
 daughter, and Rāma to be Madhusūdana; and I know this that I shall be slain by
 him; and yet I cannot make peace with him." Gorresio regards both passages as of
 doubtful authenticity. "In explanation of the epithet *dharāṇī-prasūtā* applied to
 Sitā, I may quote these lines from the Rāmāyaṇa (Bombay ed.) i. 66, 13 ff., where

“Who is that being called Vishṇu, whom thou fearest? In his divinity I reverence neither him, nor any of the other hosts of gods: what fear is this, then, which has seized you, now that he has become a man? Men are always afraid of battle. When I have formerly eaten them, how can I afterwards bow down before them? Paying reverence to the mortal Rāma, and restoring Sītā, how could I,—an object of derision to the universe,—follow behind Rāghava in humility like a slave? and beholding his prosperity, how could I live? This is thy opinion, that after carrying off Rāma's wife, and manifesting terrible haughtiness, Rāvaṇa should bow down before him! Even if Rāma were Vishṇu himself, and Lakshmaṇa were Indra, if Sugrīva were Tryambaka (Śiva), and if Jāmbavat were Brahmā—O thou hast [well] studied the Sāstras, thou who so thinkest, and who desirest to make obeisance to Rāma who stands without the four orders of society; who, abandoning his divine nature, has entered into a mortal womb! How can I make peace with him who has come to kill us? Or if it has distinctly reached thy ears that Rāma is Vishṇu, and has entered into a mortal body for the welfare of the gods, [still] he has resorted [for help] to Sugrīva the king of the monkeys. How suitable is his friendship with brutes! Is then Vishṇu destitute of valour that he has sought [the aid of] bears and monkeys? Or, he is [certainly] devoid of valour who formerly assuming the form of a dwarf, demanded of the great Asura Bali three paces of ground, while he was consecrated for the sacrifice: with such a person thou desirest friend-

Janaka says of his daughter *Atha me kṛṣhataḥ kṣhetraṁ lāṅgalād utthitā tataḥ* | 14. *Kṣhetraṁ śodhayatā labdhā nāmnā Sītā viśvātā bhūtalād utthitā sā tu vya-vardhata mamātmanā* | etc. 13. “Now as I was ploughing my field, there sprang from the plough (a girl), (14), obtained by me while cleansing my field, and known by name as Sītā (the furrow). This girl, sprung from the earth, grew up as my daughter.” In the next verse she is styled *ayonyā*, “not born from the womb.” The commentator quotes the following lines from the Padma-purāṇa on the same subject *Atha lokaśvari Lakṣmī Janakasya puri svataḥ* | *śubha-kṣetre halotkṣāte tāre chottara-phūlguṇi* | *ayonyā padma-karā bālā kaśata-sannibhā* | *Sītā-mukhe samutpannā bālā-bhāvena sundarā* | *Sītā-mukhodbhavūt Sītā ity ayaḥ nāma chākarot* | *tato 'bhūd auśi tasya Urmilā nāma kanyakā* | *iti* | “Now Lakṣmī, the mistress of the worlds, was born by her own will in the city of Janaka, in a beautiful field opened up by the plough, under the star in the second half of the month Phalguṇa. She sprang from the womb of no female, with a lotus in her hand, like a hundred young suns, but arose from the opening of the furrow, beautiful, in the form of a child. He gave her the name of Sītā, because she sprang from the opening of the furrow (*sītā*). Then his daughter Urmilā was born by ordinary generation.”

ship! He (Bali) who formerly presented to him the whole earth with its oceans, forests, and seas, was bound by him when consecrated for sacrifice! A benefactor was destroyed by him, and he is to deliver us who are his enemies!³¹ When I went to heaven with thee and conquered the gods, had not this god then his character of Vishṇu? Whence has this Vishṇu now come, whom thou fearest? Thou speakest in this strain to save thy body [from injury in battle]. This is not the time for timidity, Rākshasa, but for fighting. I have obtained dominion from Brahmā; the three worlds are subject to me; why should I bow down before Rāma who is destitute of energy and valour? Go, therefore, to thy couch; drink, free from disquiet. Neither Rāma nor Lakshmaṇa will kill thee when thou art sleeping. I shall slay Rāma, and Sugrīva, and Lakshmaṇa, and the monkeys, and then the gods also in a great battle. I shall kill Vishṇu too, and all Vishṇu's followers. Go, go then to thy abode, live long, live at ease.' Having thus, impelled by fate, spoken to his brother with arrogance and in a loud tone, Rāvaṇa said again: 'I know Sītā to be sprung from the earth; I know Rāma to be Madhusūdana. And this I know, that I am to be slain by him; and therefore have I carried off this daughter of Janaka. It is not from passion or from anger that I retain her: I desire, being slain, to go to that highest abode of Vishṇu.' Compare the quotation from the Vishṇu Purāṇa, given above, regarding Sīsūpāla, pp. 215 f., note 212.

The change of tone in this last short speech is remarkable. The defier of Vishṇu all at once acknowledges his deity and becomes his humble worshipper. This looks like a still later addition to the preceding part of the section, inserted by some editor who considered the earlier portion to be too blasphemous to be allowed to stand without some qualification, or recantation.

Again, after Rāvaṇa's death, Mandodarī, the highest in rank of his queens, in the lament which she utters for her husband's loss, speaks as follows (sect 113, 5 ff., Bombay ed.): *Sa tvam mānusha-mātrena Rāmeṇa jādhi nirjitaḥ | na vyapatrapase rājan kim idaṁ rākshaseśvara |* 6. *Katham trailokyam ākranya śriyā vīryeṇa chānvitam | aviśahyaṁ jaghāna tvam mānuṣo vana-gocharaḥ |* 7. *Mānushānāṁ aviśhaye charataḥ kāmā-rūpinaḥ | vināśas tvaṁ Rāmeṇa saṁyuge nopapadyate |* 8. *Na chaṇitāt*

³¹ Such is the sense—apparently not a very suitable one—of the words.

*karma Rāmasya braddadhāmi chamū-mukhe | sarvataḥ samupetasya tava
tenābhimarshaṇam | 9. Athavā Rāma-rūpeṇa Kṛitāntaḥ svayam āgataḥ |
māyāṁ tava vināśāya vidhāyāpratitarkitām | 10. Athavā Vāsavena tvam
dharashito 'si mahābala | 11. Vāsavasya tu kā śaktis tvāṁ draśṭum api
saṁyuge | Mahābalaṁ mahāvīryaṁ deva-śatrum mahaujasam | 12. Vy-
ktaṁ esha mahāyogī³³ paramātmā sanātanaḥ | an-ādi-madhya-nidhana
mahataḥ paramo mahān | 13. Tamasah paramo dhātā śankha-chakra-gaḍa-
dharaḥ | 14. Śrīvatsa-vakṣaḥ nitya-śrīr ajayyaḥ śāsvato dhruvaḥ | mā-
nushaṁ rūpam āsthāya Viṣṇuḥ satya-parākramaḥ | 15. Sarvaiḥ pari-
vṛito devair vānaratvam upāgatuiḥ | sarva-lokeśvaraḥ śrīmān lokānāṁ
hita-kāmyayā | sa-rūkṣasa-parivāraṁ deva-śatrum bhayāvaham | 16.
Indriyāni purā jitvā jitam tribhuvanaṁ tvayā | smaradbbhir iva tad
vairam indriyair eva nirjitaḥ | 17. Yadaiva hi Janasthāne Rūkṣasair
bahubhir vṛitaḥ | Kharas tu nihato bhrātā tādā Rāmo na mānushaḥ |*

"5. Art not thou ashamed, O king, to have been conquered by Rāma, a mere man? What is this, lord of the Rūkṣasas? 6. How did a man frequenting the forests slay thee who hadst assailed the three worlds, who wast distinguished by good fortune and heroism, and unconquerable? 7. That thou who movedst at will, invisible to men, shouldst have been destroyed by Rāma, is inconceivable. 8. I do not credit this act of Rāma in the front of the battle, the overthrow by him of thee who wast endowed in every way. 9. Either Death (*Kṛitānta*) came in the form of Rāma, applying an unimagined magic for thy destruction, (10) or thou hast been overwhelmed by Vāsava (Indra). 11. But what power had Vāsava in battle even to look at thee, who wast the mighty in force and heroism, the glorious enemy of the gods? 12. This was manifestly the great contemplator (*Mahāyogin*),³³ the supreme spirit, the eternal, without beginning, middle, or end, the great Being superior to the great (or to Mahat,³⁴ i.e. Prakṛiti or matter), (13) superior to darkness,³⁵ the sustainer, the wielder of the shell, the discus, and the club, (14) who bears the śrīvatsa on his breast, who

³³ *Svābhāvika-sarva-śakti-yuktaḥ* | Comm.

³⁴ This knowledge of the truth, says the commentator, was derived by Mandodari from the divine favour (*satyam gnam Mandodari jānīte Bhagavat-kṛipayā*).

³⁵ The commentator does not say in what sense the word *mahat* should be taken.

³⁶ The commentator says that *tamasah* paramaḥ means *prakṛiteḥ pravartakāḥ*, "he who causes the activity of Prakṛiti (or matter)." Instead of *tamasah*, he adds, some read *tapasaḥ*.

enjoys perpetual prosperity, the invincible, everlasting, unchanging, Vishṇu, of genuine prowess, who had assumed a human form, (15) and was attended by all the gods in the shape of monkeys, the glorious lord of all the worlds, who desired the good of all the worlds. [He akw thee],³⁶ the terrific enemy of the gods, with thy attendant Rākshasas. 16. Formerly, by subduing thy senses, thou didst subdue the three worlds; but thou wast [afterwards, i.e. when thou didst carry off Sītā, etc.] overcome by thy senses, which, as it were, remembered³⁷ [and revenged] that [former] hostility [of thine towards them]. 17. For since thy brother Khara, attended by many Rākshasas, was slain [by Rāma] in Janasthāna, Rāma is not a mere mortal."

If this quotation from the Bombay edition be compared with the corresponding passage of Gorresio's text (sect. 95), it will be found that, on this occasion, the former is more diffuse than the latter. Verses 5-8 are nearly the same in both recensions; but instead of two verses (the ninth and tenth) affirming the divine character of Rāma, which we find in Gorresio's edition, there are in the Bombay recension seven verses, in most of which, at least, the same idea is enforced. The ninth and tenth verses of Gorresio's edition are as follows: 9. *Athavā Rāma-rūpeṇa Viṣṇuś cha vrayam āgataḥ | tava nāsāya māyābhīḥ praviśyānupalakṣitaḥ* | 10. *Yadaiva hi Janasthāne rākṣasair bahubhirvṛitaḥ | Kharas tava hato bhrātā tadavāśau na mānushhaḥ* | "Or Vishṇu himself came in the form of Rāma, having entered into him unperceived, through supernatural powers, for thy destruction. 10. For since thy brother Khara, attended by many Rākshasas, was slain by [Rāma] in Janasthāna, Rāma is not a mere mortal." It will be observed that here a verse (the tenth), which corresponds to the seventeenth of the Bombay edition, immediately succeeds the ninth, and that consequently there is in Gorresio's text no such development of the idea contained in the ninth verse as we find in vv. 10-15 of the other edition. Now if we are to suppose that the original text of the Rāmāyaṇa made no allusion to Rāma being an incarnation of Vishṇu, it might at first sight seem as if the ninth and tenth verses of the Bombay text,

³⁶ It is necessary (with the commentator, who says *hatavān iti ślokaḥ*) to supply the words in brackets, or some others of a similar tenor, in order to make sense.

³⁷ This clause the commentator explains thus: "Purā" *Bhagavad-uddēśena tapo-nushthāna-kāle* | "*tad eva aṁ*" *svajaya-nimittaṁ vairaṁ smaraḍbhīr indriyair akāma-pravṛitti-sampādantia nijaḥ* |

which represent Death (*Kṛitānta*), or Indra, as taking the form of Rāma, were more genuine than the corresponding verse of Gorresio's edition, which declares that Viṣṇu assumed the form of that hero. In this case, verses 12 ff. of the Bombay edition, which represent Rāma as an incarnate deity, would be a subsequent interpolation. But the twelfth and following verses appear, on examination, to hang well enough together with those which precede; and if the entire passage thus forms one connected whole, we can only (on the hypothesis that Rāma's divine nature was foreign to the original poem) suppose that the interpolation, or alteration, has extended over a wider surface. It is worthy of remark that the hundred and thirteenth section of the Bombay edition is in other parts also more developed than Gorresio's. Thus after verse 40 of the Bombay edition, corresponding to verse 28 of Gorresio's, eighteen verses are inserted which are not in the latter, and after verse 59 of the Bombay edition=verse 29 of Gorresio's, twelve verses are found which are wanting in the latter. From this it would appear that both recensions have, in different places, received developments after they began to be separately handed down, unless, indeed, we are to assume that that followed by Gorresio omitted passages which had previously existed in the common source of both.

In the passage which I shall next quote, the legend makes no mention of the incarnation of Viṣṇu, but specifies the birth of Sītā as the means whereby Rāvaṇa is to be destroyed. After the Rākshasas had been defeated by Rāma and driven back into Lankā, their females loudly bewailed the calamities by which their race had been overtaken. In the course of this lament they say (sect. 95, vv. 25 ff., Bombay ed.=sect. 74, vv. 27 ff., Gorresio): *Rudro vā yadi vā Viṣṇur Mahendro vā Śatakratuḥ | hanti na Rāma-rūpeṇa yadi vā svayam Antakaḥ | 26. Hata-pravirāḥ Rāmeṇa nirāśūḥ jivite vayam | apaśyanto³⁸ bhayaśyāntam anāthāḥ śilapāmahe | 27. Rāma-hastād Dasagrivaḥ śūro datta-mahā-varaḥ | idam bhayam mahāghoraṁ samutpannam na budhyate | 28. Tam na devāḥ na gandharvāḥ na piśācāḥ na rākhasāḥ | upaśriṣṭam³⁹ paritrātuṁ śaktāḥ Rāmeṇa saṁyuge | 29. Utpātūśchāpi drīśyanta Rāvaṇasya rane rane | kathayanti hi Rāmeṇa Rāvaṇasya nibarhaṇam |*

³⁸ *Apasanto 'pasantiyaḥ | Comm.*

³⁹ *Upaśriṣṭam haṭtum ārabhaṁ | Comm.*

30. *Pitāmahena prītena deva-dānava-rākshasaiḥ* | *· Rāvaṇasyābhayaṁ dattam manuṣebhyo na yāchitam* | 31. *Tad idam mānuṣham mñhye 'prāptaṁ nīḥsaṁśayam bhayam* | *jīvitānta-karaṁ ghoraṁ rākshasāṁ Rāvaṇasya cha* | 32. *Pīḍyamānās tu balinā vara-dānena rākshasā* | *diṣṭais tapobhir vibudhāḥ Pitāmaham apūjayan* | 33. *Devatānāṁ hitārthāya mahātmā vai Pitāmahaḥ* | *uvācha devatās tushṭāḥ idam sarvāḥ mahad vachāḥ* | 34. *Adya-prabhṛiti lokāṁs trīn sarve dānava-rākshasāḥ* | *bhayena prabhṛitāḥ nityaṁ vicāriṣhyanti sāsvatam*⁴⁰ | 35. *Daivatais tu samāgamyā sarvaiś chendra-purogamaiḥ* | *vṛiṣha-dhṛvajas Trīpura-hū Mahādevaḥ pratoshitāḥ* | 36. *Prasannas tu Mahādevo devān stad vacho 'bravīt* | *utpatsyati hitārthaṁ vo nārī rākshāḥ-kṣhayāvahā* | 37. *Eṣhā devaiḥ prayuktū tu kṣud yathā*⁴¹ | *dānavān purā* | *bhākṣha-yiṣhyati naḥ sarvān rākshasa-ghnī sa-rāvaṇūn* | 38. *Rāvaṇasyāpanītena*⁴² | *durvinitasya durmatīḥ* | *ayaṁ niṣṭūnako*⁴³ | *ghoraḥ śokena samābhīplutaḥ* | 39. *Tan na paśyāmahe loka yo naḥ śaraṇa-do bhavet* | *Rāghavenopasṛiṣṭānāṁ kāleneva yugakṣhaye* | 25. "Either Rudra, or Viṣṇu, or the great Indra Śatakratu, or Death himself, slays us in the form of Rāma. 26. Having had our heroes destroyed by Rāma, we despair of life. Seeing no end of our apprehension, we lament, deprived of our protectors. 27. The heroic Daśagrīva (Rāvaṇa), who had received a great boon [from Brahmā] does not perceive this great cause of alarm which [comes] from the hand of Rāmā. 28. Neither Gods, nor Gandharvas, nor Piśāchas, nor Rākshasas, are able to deliver him when assailed by Rāma in fight. 29. Portents, too, regarding Rāvaṇa are seen in every battle, which foretell his destruction by Rāma. 30. Pitāmaha, gratified, granted to Rāvaṇa security against Gods, Dānavas and Rākshasas, but he did not ask [to be secured] against men. 31. This dreadful danger from men has now, I think, without doubt arrived, which shall

⁴⁰ These words are thus explained by the commentator. *Dānavāḥ rākshasāś cha bhayena prabhṛitāḥ devebhyo bhayam bibhrūnāḥ eva vicāriṣhyanti* | *devāḥ svataḥ parato vā 'smān pīḍayiṣhyanti ity arthaḥ* | "The Dānavas and Rākshasas shall roam about entertaining fear of the gods: viz. that the gods themselves, or through others, could distress them." This verse is thus given in Gorresio's edition (74, 36 f.): *Adya-prabhṛiti lokeshu ye bhūtāḥ bhaya-varyutāḥ* | *bhayārtāś te punar iha vicāriṣhyanti* | *rākshasāḥ*.

⁴¹ "Purā" *pūrva-kalpe* | *devāḥ dānava-nāśārtham prayuktū kṣud yathā dānavān harati sma* | Comm. "As formerly," in a former Kalpa, Hunger, being appointed by the gods for the destruction of the Dānavas, carried them off."

⁴² *Apānītena anayena* | Comm.

⁴³ *Niṣṭūnako nāśaḥ* | Comm.

terminate the life of Rāvaṇa and the Rākshasas. 32. Now the gods, when oppressed by the Rākshasa (Rāvaṇa), who was mighty through the boon which [Brahmā] had conferred on him, worshipped Pitāmaha (Brahmā) with ardent austerities. 33. The great Pitāmaha, pleased, addressed this great word to all the deities for their benefit: 34. 'From this day forward all the Dānavas and Rākshasas shall roam continually through the three worlds, influenced by fear.' 35. But all the gods, with Indra at their head, assembled and propitiated Mahādeva, whose banner is a bull, and who destroyed Tripura (or, the three castles). 36. He, being pleased, thus spake to them: 'For your benefit there shall arise a female who shall bring destruction to the Rākshasas.' 37. This female slayer⁴⁴ of Rākshasas, being commissioned by the gods, shall [now] devour all of us, including Rāvaṇa; as Hunger formerly [devoured] the Dānavas. 38. Through the folly of the misguided and wicked Rāvaṇa this dreadful destruction, accompanied by affliction, has come upon us. 39. We see no one in the world who shall afford protection to us assailed by Rāma, as it were by Time at the end of the ages."

Compare with the preceding passage the story of Devavatī, extracted above (p. 458 ff.) from the *Uttara Kāṇḍa*. Both of those forms of the legend appear to regard *Sitā*, and not *Vishṇu*, as the real destroyer of Rāvaṇa.

In an earlier part of the poem it is related that after Rāma had slain the Rākshasa Khara, he was congratulated by the gods in a way which, strictly speaking, is scarcely consistent with the idea that the poet regarded him as an incarnation of *Vishṇu*: *

Āraṇya Kāṇḍa (or Third Book) 30, v. 27 ff. (Bombay edition = section 35, vv. 93 ff., Gorresio's edition). — *Sa papāta Khara bhūmau dahyamānaḥ śarāgninā | Rudreṇeva vinirdagdhaḥ Svētaraṇye yathā 'ntakaḥ |* 28. *Sa Vṛitraḥ iva vajreṇa phenena Namuchir yathā | Balo vendrāṣani-hato nipapāta hataḥ Kharaḥ |* 29. *Ētaṣminn*

⁴⁴ The commentator remarks here: *Evam Brahmanāḥ prāsādāt sabhayatva-mātram prāptam | samhārādadhikṛita-Rudra-prasādena tu nāsaḥ evūsmākam ity āhuḥ |* "Thus by the favour of Brahmā, the gods only obtained that the [Dānavas, etc.] should be terrified: but through the favour [granted to them] by Rudra, whose function is destruction, we shall be destroyed."

⁴⁵ Said to be *Sitā*, according to the commentator (ॐ eṣā Sītā eva ity āhuḥ). Gorresio's text has *Saieḥā daiva-prasādieṣā tu kṣudhītā Janakātmaḥ*, etc.

*antare devās chāraṇaiḥ saha sangatāḥ | dundubhīmśohābhiniḡhantaḥ
 puṣpa-varṣhaṁ samantataḥ |* 30. *Rāmasyopari saṁhṛīṣṭāḥ cavarakū
 ̐smitās tadā | ardhādhika-muhūrtena Rāmeṇa nīṣitaiḥ śaraiḥ |* 31. *Chaturdaśa sahasrāṇi rakṣasāṁ kāma-rūpinām | Khara-Dūṣhaṇa-
 mukhyānāṁ nihatāni mahāmṛdhe |* 32. *Aho bata mahat karma Rāmasya
 viditātmanaḥ | aho vīryam aho dārdhyaṁ Viṣṇor iva hi dṛśyate |* 33. *Ity evam uktvā te sarve yayur devāḥ yathāgatam |* 27. "Burnt up by
 the fire of the arrow, Khara fell like Antaka, who was formerly con-
 sumed by Rudra in the Sveta (white) forest."⁴⁶ 28. He fell like Vṛitra
 smitten by the thunderbolt, like Namuchi by the foam,⁴⁷ or like Bala
 by the lightning of Indra. 29. At this moment the gods, joined with
 the Chāraṇas, beating kettle-drums, delighted, (30) rained on Rāma
 a shower of flowers all round, and [said] in astonishment: 'In a
 muhūrta and a half (two hours) (31) fourteen thousand Rākshasas,
 changing their shapes at will, headed by Khara and Dūṣhaṇa, have
 been slain by Rāma with sharp arrows in a great fight. 32. O what
 a mighty exploit of Rāma, who knows himself!⁴⁸ O, his valour and
 his firmness are seen to be like those of Viṣṇu!' 33. Having thus
 spoken, all those gods went as they came."

If the writer of these verses regarded Rāma as an incarnation of
 Viṣṇu, it would seem to have been superfluous to compare him with
 that deity. In the corresponding section of Gorresio's edition (the
 thirty-fifth) the several classes of ṛishis are introduced as [among

⁴⁶ On this legend the commentator informs us as follows: *Andhakāsuraḥ S'vetā-
 ran̐ye Rudreṇa hataḥ ̐ti purāṇa-prasiddham |* . . . "S'vetāranye yathā 'ntakaḥ"
*̐ti prachurāḥ pūṭhah | tatra Kūvī-tīra-vartini S'vetāranye Mārkaṇḍeya-charajivūt-
 vāya Antaka-saṁhāro Rudreṇa kṛtāḥ ̐ti tan-māhātmye prasiddhiḥ | Kaurme tu
 uttarakhande S'vetasya rājarsheḥ paramasāvāsya Kālānjare parvate tapasy abhi-
 ratasya mārāṇāya āgatasya Antakasya S'ivena vāma-pāda-prahāreṇa saṁhārah kṛtāḥ
 ̐ti śaṭtrīṁśe 'dhyāye uktam |* "The asura Andhaka was slain by Rudra in the
 S'veta forest, as is well known from the Purāṇas. . . . The reading, 'as Antaka in
 the S'veta forest,' is frequently met with. Regarding him it is told in the Glorifica-
 tion of Mārkaṇḍeya that, to prolong the life of that sage, Antaka (the Ender, Death)
 was destroyed by Rudra. But in the latter part of the Kūrma-purāṇa, sect. 36, it
 is related that Antaka, who had come to kill the royal ṛishi S'veta, an eminent votary
 of Śiva, who was addicting himself to austerities on the Kālānjara mountain, was
 destroyed by a blow of Śiva's left foot." Compare *al.V. xi. 2, 7*, quoted above,
 p. 336, where Rudra is called "the slayer of Ardhaka."

⁴⁷ See above, p. 261, and note 259.

⁴⁸ *Viditātmanaḥ*. This epithet is not explained by the commentator.

other things] applauding Rāma for displaying the qualities of a Kṣatriya (*dharmajna vardhase dīkṣtyā kṣatra-dharmena Rāghava*, v. 99), and as saying to him (vv. 105 ff.) that all the gods, Gandharvas, etc., were saluting him with congratulations on his victory (*jayāśrībhiḥ*), and that Brahmā and Mahādeva were paying him honour. Rāma is then said to have "made obeisance to the gods whom he saw not far off standing on their celestial cars" (*namāś chakre vimānasthān dṛiṣṭvā 'dūre divaukasaḥ*).

The following is another passage of the sixth or Yuddha Kāṇḍa occurring in the Bombay edition, but not in Gorresio's, in which Rāma, when about to engage in battle with Rāvaṇa, is recommended by Agastya to utter a hymn to the Sun, which will insure his victory over his enemy. Not a word is said of Rāma's own divinity, and in fact the use of such a prayer does not seem to harmonize with such a character :

vi. 106, 1 ff. (Bombay ed.): *Tato yuddha-parīśrāntaṁ samare chintayā sthitaṁ | Rūvaṇaṁ chāgrato dṛiṣṭvā yuddhāya samupasthitaṁ | 2. Daivatais̄ cha samāgamyā dṛaṣṭuṁ abhyūgato raṇaṁ | upagamyābravīd Rāmam Agastyo bhagavāṁs tadā | 3. Rāma Rāma mahābāho śṛṇu guhyaṁ sanātanaṁ | yena sarvān arīn vatsa samare vijayishyase | 4. Āditya-hṛdayam puṇyaṁ sarva-śatru-vināśanaṁ | jayāvahaṁ japan nityam akṣayaṁ paramaṁ śivaṁ | 5. Sarva-maṅgala-māṅgalyaṁ sarva-pāpa-praṇāśanaṁ | chintā-śoka-praśamanaṁ āyurvardhanaṁ uttamaṁ | 6. Rāsmimantaṁ samudayantaṁ devāsura-namaskṛitaṁ | pūjayasva Vivas-vantaṁ bhāskaram bhuvaneśvaraṁ | 7. Sarva-devātmako hy eṣa tejasvī rāsmi-bhātaṇaḥ | eṣa devāsura-gaṇān lokān pāṭi gabhastibhiḥ | 8. Eṣa Brahmā cha Viṣṇuḥ cha Śivaḥ Skandaḥ Prajūpatiḥ | Mahendro Dhanadaḥ Kālo Yamaḥ Somo hy Apūmpatiḥ | 9. Pitaro Vasavaḥ Sādhyāḥ Āsvinau Maruto Manuḥ | Vāyur Vahnīḥ prajāḥ prāṇaḥ ṛitu-kartū prabhākaraḥ | 10. Ādityaḥ Savitā Sūryaḥ kha-gaḥ Pūṣā gabhastimān | suvarṇa-saḍṛiśo bhānur hr̥anya-retūḥ⁴⁹ divākaraḥ | . . . 26. Pūjayasvainam ekāgro deva-devaṁ jagat-patim | etat triguṇitaṁ japtvā yuddhesu vijayishyati | 27. Āmin kṣaṇe mahābāho Rūvaṇaṁ tvaṁ jahishyasi | evam uktvā tato 'gastyo jagāma sa yathūgatam | 28. Etach chhṛutvā mahātejāḥ nashṭa-soko 'bhavat tadā | dhārayāmāsa supṛito Rāghavaḥ prayatātmaṁ | 29. Ādityam prekṣhya japtvedam paraṁ haraḥḥm avāṅgataṁ | trir āchamya*

⁴⁹ Akṣarādhikyam 'Arsham | Comm.

*śuohir bhūtvā dhanur ādāya vīryavān | 30. Rāvaṇam prekṣhya kṛṣṇātma
jayārtham samupāgamat | sarva-yatnena mahatā vṛitas tasya badhe 'bhūvat |*
31. *Atha ravar avadad nirīkṣhya Rāmam mudita-manāḥ paramam pra-
kṛṣhyamāṇaḥ | nīśīcharapati-sankṣayaṁ viditvā sura-gaṇa-madhya-gato
vachas tvaṛoti |*

"The divine Agastya then beholding [Rāma] fatigued with the conflict, standing anxious⁵⁰ in the battle, and in his front Rāvaṇa, who had drawn near to the combat, [Agastya, I say], (2) who had arrived to see the conflict, joining the gods, and coming near to Rāma, said: 3. 'Rāma, Rāma, great-armed, hear the eternal mysterious [prayer], by which, my son,⁵¹ continually muttering it,—(4) the holy Āditya-hṛdaya ('heart of the sun'), which destroys all enemies, brings victory, is undecaying, supreme, beneficent, (5) the auspiciousness of all auspicious things, the destroyer of all sins, the allayer of anxieties and sorrows, the prolonger of life, the most excellent—thou shalt conquer all thine enemies in battle. 6. Worship the rising Vivasvat,⁵² the radiant sun, adored by gods and Asuras, the lord of the world. 7. For he possesses the essence of all the gods, is fiery, the producer of rays. He by his beams sustains the gods, the Asuras, and the worlds. 8. He is both Brahmā and Viṣṇu, Śiva and Skanda, Prajāpati, Indra, Kuvera, Kāla (Time), Yama, Soma, and the lord of waters (Varuṇa), (9) the Pitṛis, Vasus, Sādhyas, Aśvins, Manu, Vāyu, Agni, created beings, breath, the former of the seasons, the producer of light, (10) Āditya, Savitṛi, Sūrya, moving in the sky, Pūshan, the radiant,

⁵⁰ The commentator will not allow this apprehension to be real: *Evam bhaya-nāṣanam tan-mūlakam Agastyā upadeśa-grahṇam lokanugrahāya lokasya jaya-sādhana-vastu-prakāśanārtham iti tattvam |* "The truth is that this acting (or simulation) of fear, and the acceptance of instruction from Agastya founded thereon, originated in kindness to mankind, and in a desire to reveal to them the means of gaining victory."

⁵¹ See above, p. 389, how much Brahmā was offended by having this appellation, *vatsa*, "my son," applied to him by Viṣṇu. If, then, the poet here intended to represent Rāma as possessing a divine nature, he must have conceived of Viṣṇu as less susceptible than Brahmā, when he makes Agastya address him thus.

⁵² Compare the hymn to Sūrya in the Mahābh. iii. 166 ff., of which some specimens are given in the fifth volume of this work, p. 161. It is there said, v. 190: *Tvām Indram ūhuḥ tvām Viṣṇuḥ tvām Rudraḥ tvām Prajāpatiḥ | tvām Agniḥ tvām manāḥ sūkṣmaṁ prabhuḥ tvām Brahmā sūsvatam |* "They call thee Indra; thou art Viṣṇu, Rudra, Prajāpati: thou art Agni, the subtle Mind, thou art the lord, the Eternal Brahma."

of golden hue, the shining, who has golden seed, the maker of the day.* Then follow (vv. 11-15) many other titles of the Sun, succeeded (vv. 15-21) by invocations addressed to him under various appellations, among which is (v. 19) *Brahmesānāchhyuteśāya*,⁵³ "to the lord of Brahmā, Īśāna (Śiva), and Achyuta (Vishṇu)." After some further eulogies of the Sun, Rāma is again exhorted to worship this deity (vv. 26 ff.): "Worship with fixed mind this god of gods, the lord of the world. Having thrice muttered this [hymn], a man shall conquer in battles. 27. In this moment, O great-armed, thou shalt slay Rāvaṇa.' Having thus spoken, Agastya went as he had come. 28. After hearing this, the vigorous Rāma became then freed from grief; and, with well-governed spirit, bore it in his memory. 29. Beholding the Sun, and muttering this hymn, he attained the highest joy. Having thrice rinsed his mouth, and become pure, the here took his bow. 30. Beholding Rāvaṇa with gladdened spirit, he approached to vanquish him; and with great intentness became bent upon his slaughter. 31. Then the Sun, with rejoicing mind, exceedingly exulting, looking upon Rāma, knowing the [approaching] destruction of the chief of the Rākshasas, and standing in the midst of the gods, uttered the word 'speed.'"

This extract, as I have said above, is entirely wanting in Gorresio's edition, in which a verse (the last of its eighty-ninth section) corresponding with the last in the hundred and fifth section of the Bombay edition, is succeeded immediately by one (Gorr. 90, 1) corresponding to the second half of the fourth verse of the hundred and seventh section of the Bombay edition. The whole of the matter which is wanting in Gorresio may be omitted without detriment to the connexion; and in fact the recurrence at the beginning of the hundred and seventh section (Bombay ed.) of an expression repeating in substance what had been said at the close of the hundred and fifth might

⁵³ *Brahmesānāchhyutānām vṛiṣṭi-saṁhāra-sthiti-kartṛiṇām īśāya svāmīnaḥ* | "*vṛiṣṭi-sthity-anta-karaṇīm Brahma-Vishṇu-Ś'vātṛmukām sa sanjñām yāti bhagavān ekaḥ eva Janārdanaḥ*" *iti smṛiteḥ* | "To the lord of Brahmā, Īśāna, and Achyuta, who are the authors of the creation, destruction, and continuance (of the world); according to the Smṛiti text: 'The divine Janārdana alone receives the conjoint title of Brahmā, Vishṇu, and Ś'iva, representing the causes of the creation, continuance and end (of the universe).'" Such is the manner in which the commentator chooses to explain away his text.

lead to the conclusion that the whole of the hundred and sixth section was interpolated. On the other hand, it seems strange that a passage which appears to militate against Rāma's divine character should be a later addition. The only conceivable motive for such an interpolation would be to glorify the Sun by the insertion of this hymn in celebration of his praise, an object which does not bear upon the main design of the Rāmāyaṇa.

The following is, on the other hand, a passage which may be understood as ascribing a superhuman nature to Rāma. After Vibhishana had deserted his brother Rāvaṇa, and come over to Rāma's side, a consultation took place among the friends of the latter, whether the deserter was deserving of confidence or not. Some regarded him with suspicion, but Rāma himself was in favour of receiving him with open arms. In the course of the conversation he asks (Yuddha Kāṇḍa 18, 22 f., Bombay ed.): *Sa duṣhṭo vā'py aduṣhṭo vā kim eṣha rajanīcharaḥ | sūkṣhmaṁ apy ahitaṁ kartum mama śaktaḥ kathanchana | piśāchān dānavān yakṣhān prithivyāṁ chaiva rākṣasūn | anguly-agreṇa tām hanyām ichhan hari-gaṇeswara |* "Whether the Rākshasa be good or bad, what, even the smallest, injury can he do to me in any way? If I wish, I can destroy Piśāchas, Dānavas, Yakshas, and Rākshasas on the earth, with the tip of my finger." ⁵⁴ This mode of expression

⁵⁴ On this the commentator remarks: *Anena sankalpa-sādhir aiśvaraṁ chihnam uktam | yady evaṁ asmadūdi-sangraha vyarīhas tatra āha "ichhann" iti | svasya nīratīśaya-mahimānaṁ tūttevikam Brahma-bhūvaṁ prakaṣikartum ichhan yadi syām tadā taihaiva kuryām | samprati tu deva-bhūvopeta-nija-vilāsair āśeshair "abadhyatvam asya māyaiva dattam" iti tat-paripūlanūya sva-divya-bhūvaṁ sva-śaktyā eva antārāhāya mānuṣa-maryādūyām śhityā tad-bhāva-prakaṣanūya eva Sitā-viyoga-prayukta-rodana-vad bhavādāśīsa-sahāya-melanam | vastuto na svātīrikta-sahāyāntarāpekṣhū mama | manushyāṇāṁ saṁsāra-maṇḍā-jnāpanaṁ tad-vyavahāra-phalam iti bhāvaḥ |* "By this [phrase 'with the tip of my finger'] the accomplishment of an intention is declared to be the mark of the Deity. If thus the efforts of persons such as we [men] are, be vain,—in regard to this the author says, 'If I wish.' If I be desirous to manifest my own surpassing greatness, my real character as Brahmā, then I can do this. But now, with the view of maintaining my fiat, [declared in the words] 'I have conferred [on Rāvaṇa] indestructibility,' which I issued agreeably to all the sportive manifestations of my divine nature, suppressing that celestial nature through my own power by remaining within the limits of humanity, with the view of displaying that character, I have associated with myself such allies as you, (Sugrīva), just as I went for my separation from Sitā. In reality I have no need for any other ally but myself. To show to men the limitations of worldly existence is the fruit of my so acting. Such is the purport." The meaning of this passage is clear, though I may not have succeeded in accurately rendering all the phrases in it.

rather points to an inherent divine power. In Gorresio's edition the expression is somewhat different. Rāma there says (Sundara K. 91, 3) that he could destroy all those beings "forthwith, and by the power of a divine weapon" (*śakto 'haṁ sahasā hantūṁ divyenāstra-balena cha*), which may be understood of a derived power. However this may be, it turned out upon trial that Rāma was unable to dispose of his enemies so summarily, as we have seen above in the case of his conflict with Indrajit (p. 383 ff.).

The termination of Rāma's terrestrial career is thus told in sections 103 ff. of the Uttara Kāṇḍa.⁵⁵ Time, in the form of an ascetic, comes to his palace-gate (103, 1 ff.), and asks, as the messenger of the great Rishi (Brahmā), to see Rāma. He is admitted and received with honour (v. 8), but says, when asked what he has to communicate, that his message must be delivered in private, and that any one who witnesses the interview is to be slain by Rāma (v. 11 f.). Rāma promises to abide by this, informs Lakshmana of it, and desires him to stand outside (v. 13 f.). Time then tells Rāma (104) that he has been sent by Brahmā to say that when he (Rāma, i.e. Viṣṇu), after destroying the worlds, was sleeping on the ocean, he had formed him (Brahmā) from the lotus springing from his navel, and committed to him the work of creation (vv. 4-7); that he (Brahmā) had then entreated Rāma to assume the function of Preserver, and that the latter had in consequence become Viṣṇu, being born as the son of Aditi (v. 9 f.), and had determined to deliver mankind by destroying Rāvaṇa, and to live on earth ten thousand and ten hundred years (v. 11 f.): that period, adds Time, was now on the eve of expiration (v. 13), and Rāma could either, at his pleasure, prolong his stay on earth, or ascend to heaven and rule over the gods (v. 14 f.). Rāma replies (v. 18) that he had been born for the good of the three worlds, and would now return to the place whence he had come, as it was his function to fulfil the purposes of the gods. While they are speaking, the irritable Rishi Durvāsa⁵⁶ comes to visit Rāma, and when Lakshmana asks him to wait a little, insists on being introduced into the presence of the former immediately, under a threat, if refused, of cursing Rāma, his city, kingdom,

⁵⁵ All the references to this Kāṇḍa apply to the Bombay edition. I have not seen Gorresio's edition of this book.

⁵⁶ Compare p. 196, above.

and all his family (105, 1 ff.). Lakshmana, preferring to save his kinsmen, though knowing that his own death must be the consequence of interrupting the interview of Rāma with Time, enters the palace, and reports the rishi's message to Rāma (v. 9). Rāma dismisses Time, comes out, and receives Durvāsas, and when the sage has got the food he wished, and departed, Rāma reflects with great distress on the words of Time, which require that Lakshmana should die (vv. 10-16). Lakshmana, however (106, 2 ff.), exhorts Rāma not to grieve, but to slay him, and not break his own promise. The counsellors who are consulted concurring in this advice (vv. 5 ff.), Rāma abandons Lakshmana, (v. 13) who goes to the river Sarayū, suppresses all his senses (*nigrihya sarva-srotāṁsi*), and after the gods had showered down flowers upon him, is conveyed bodily by Indra to heaven (vv. 15 ff.). The gods are delighted by the arrival of the fourth part of Vishṇu (v. 18). Rāma then resolves to install Bharata as his successor, and retire to the forest and follow Lakshmana (107, 1 ff.). Bharata, however, refuses the succession, and determines to accompany his brother (v. 5 f.). Rāma's subjects are filled with grief, and say they also will follow him wherever he goes (vv. 9 ff.). Kuśa and Lava, Rāma's two sons,⁶⁷ are then installed as kings of the Southern and Northern Kośalas (vv. 17 ff.). Messengers are sent to Satrugna, the other brother, at Madhurā, and he also resolves to accompany Rāma (108, 1-14); who at length sets out in procession from his capital with all the ceremonial appropriate to the "great departure" (*mahā-prasthāna*, 109, 1 ff.), silent, indifferent to external objects, and to ease, with Śrī on his right, the goddess Earth on his left, Energy in front, attended by all his weapons in human shapes, by the Vedas in the form of Brahmans, by the all-protecting Citāyatrī, the Omkāra, the Vashaṭkāra, by rishis, by earthly divinities (*i.e.* Brahmans, *mahisurāḥ*), by his women, female slaves, old and young, eunuchs (*varshavarāḥ*), and servants. Bharata with his wives, and Satrugna, follow, together with Brahmans bearing the sacred fire, and accompanied by their families, with the ministers of state, and the whole of the people of the country, and even with animals, and birds, etc., etc. Rāma, with all these attendants, comes to the banks of the Sarayū (sect. 110). Brahmā, and all the gods, in innumerable celestial cars, now appear,

⁶⁷ See Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, vol. iii. p. 318 (Dr. Hall's ed.).

and all the sky is refulgent with the divine splendour of their ap-
 partition. Pure, fragrant, and delightful breezes blow, a shower of
 flowers falls, thrown by the gods. While hundreds of musical instru-
 ments sound, and the air is crowded with Gandharvas and Apsarases,
 Rāma enters the waters of the Sarayū; and Brahmā utters a voice
 from the sky, saying: "Approach, Viṣṇu; Rāghava, thou hast
 happily arrived, with thy god-like brothers. Enter whatever body
 thou pleasest, thine own body as Viṣṇu, or the eternal ether. For
 thou art the abode of the worlds (*loka-gatiḥ*): no one comprehends
 thee, the inconceivable and imperishable, except the large-eyed Māyā,
 thy primeval spouse." Hearing these words, Rāma enters the glory
 of Viṣṇu (*Vaiṣṇavaṁ tejas*) with his body and his followers; and
 is worshipped by the gods, rishis, etc. He then asks Brahmā to find
 an abode for the people who had accompanied him from devotion to
 his person, and Brahmā appoints them a celestial residence accordingly
 (*lokān santānakān*).⁶⁸

Instead of describing any such resumption of his divine nature, the
 Mahābhārata, which in the Droṇa-parvan 2224-2248, refers to Rāma
 as one of the great kings of old, merely speaks in v. 2246 of his going
 to heaven with four kinds of creatures (*chaturvidhāḥ prajāḥ Rāmaḥ
 svargaṁ nitvā divaṁ gataḥ*). He is, however, celebrated in the most
 hyperbolical language, as where he is said (v. 2235) to "have trans-
 cended all beings, rishis, gods, and men" (*Ati sarvāṇi bhūtāni Rāmo
 Dāśarathir babhau | ṛṣiṇāṁ devatānāṁ cha mānuṣhānāṁ cha sarvasaḥ*),
 but no reference is made to his being an incarnation of Viṣṇu. The
 word *īśvara* applied to him in v. 2242 may mean only "lord," and
 need not be employed in the sense of "god." (This passage is re-
 ferred to in Professor M. Williams's Indian Epic Poetry, p. 104.)
 The Rāmopākhyāna (see further on) in the Mahābhārata does not
 describe the apotheosis of Rāma at all.

The probability that many of the verses in the preceding passages
 which I have above suspected to be spurious may really be such, is

⁶⁸ These worlds are explained by the commentator as realms an abode in which
 gradually leads to final liberation by the attainment of Brahmā's heaven (*Kramaṇa
 Brahma-loka-prāpti-dvārā mukti-janakān*).

greatly strengthened by the fact that the commentators on the poem themselves note various texts which they regard as interpolated. Thus the commentator an Kishk. K., sect. 43 (Bombay ed.), remarks on 46 ff. : *Itaḥ uttaram kechit ślokāḥ* "ramante satataṁ tatra nārībhiḥ bhāṣvara-prabhāḥ" (v. 50) *ity antāḥ ślokāḥ prakṣiptāḥ prāchīna-pustakeshu dñupalambhād iti Katakāḥ* | "Kataka (a previous commentator) says that after this some verses ending with the words (in the fiftieth verse) 'They sport there resplendent, along with their women,' are rejected, because they are not found in the old copies."

At the end of the twenty-third section of the Uttara Kāṇḍa the commentator remarks: *Itaḥ param pancha-sargāḥ prakṣiptāḥ bodhyāḥ* | "After this five sections are to be regarded as rejected." On these sections, to which he assigns separate numbers, he gives no commentary. In the first of these sections, v. 42, Kansa is mentioned by anachronism.

At the end of the thirty-seventh section of the same book the commentator furnishes the following piece of sensible criticism: *Etad-uttaram Bāli-Sugrīvotpattitihāso Rāvaṇasya Svetadvīpa-gamanotihāsaś cha latipayaśiḥ sargair Agastyokṛtayaḥ kvachit pustakeshu drīṣyante* | *te tu pūrva-sargānto eva Agastyasya svāśrama-gamana-kathanād asangatāḥ Kataka-Tīrthādy-anādṛitatvāch cha mayā 'pi na vyākhyātāḥ* | "That which follows—viz. the tale of the birth of Bāli and Sugrīva, and the story of Rāvaṇa's journey to Sveta-dvīpa—is found in some copies, as being related by Agastya in several sections. But as these sections are inconsistent with the account [given] at the end of the previous section (36, vv. 51, 58 f.) of Agastya's departure to his hermitage, and have not been received by Kataka, Tīrtha, and other [previous commentators], I also have left them uncommented." These sections are accordingly without any commentary.

Again, at the close of section 59, he remarks: *Etad uttaram svamātur akhyānaṁ grāhrolūlākhyānancha kvachid drīṣyate* | *Tīrtha-Katakādy-asprīṣṭatvena prakṣiptam iti na vyākhyātam* | "The story of the dog's mother and that of the vulture and owl which follow, are found in some copies: but as they are left untouched by Tīrtha, Kataka, and others, they are rejected, and consequently have not been explained."

From these extracts it is clear that various passages which are still preserved in the Rāmāyaṇa were regarded by the commentators as

spurious because they were not to be found in the oldest MSS. extant in their day, or because they contained something inconsistent with the context in which they occur. The judgment of these commentators is no doubt correct, especially as they must have been well acquainted with the habit which, we need not hesitate to assume, prevailed in their day, of interpolating legendary works such as the Purāṇas and Itihāsas, the style of which, from its simplicity, offers the greatest facilities for imitation. But if such interpolation be admitted by the commentators as practised in their time, it is natural to suppose that it must have been practised at an earlier period also. And the example of the Mahābhārata confirms this supposition.

After reviewing most of the passages, which I have cited above, in which Rāma's divine character is alluded to, as they are given in his own edition, and, in addition, the section which I have cited in p. 180 ff.,⁹⁹ Signor Gorresio remarks as follows (vol. v., Preface, p. xlvii. f.): "What are we to conclude from all this? Notwithstanding the citations adduced, I would not yet venture to pronounce a definitive judgment on this question" (whether the idea of the incarnation of Viṣṇu in Rāma was an original part of the conception of the poem, or interpolated). "The passages quoted only prove that the interpolation, if it be such, has been made with great study and much art. But in order thoroughly to elucidate this question, we must have recourse to other documents, and seek for other proofs and indications than the poem itself supplies. Our sentence, therefore, remains suspended."

The Mahābhārata also contains a history of Rāma, (Rāmopākhyāna) which is told to Yudhishtira by the sage Mārkaṇḍeya, in the Vana-parvan, vv. 15872-16602. In this episode it is briefly related (v. 15878 f.) that Daśaratha had four sons, born of his three queens.

⁹⁹ On this passage he observes (p. xlvii.): "Among the names here assigned to Viṣṇu some of a sufficiently suspicious character are found, such as that of Kṛishṇa, which I do not recollect to have discovered in any other part of the poem. Besides, this chapter has no close bond to connect it with the context, and might be removed without the least injury to the poem."

The birth and history of Rāvaṇa and his brothers are described in much greater detail (vv. 15881-15928), and many particulars are given which do not occur in the earlier part of the Rāmāyaṇa, though the Uttara Kāṇḍa contains a similar account. According to the episode in the Mahābhārata, Brahmā had a mental son Pulastya, who again had a son Gaviputra Vaiśravaṇa (v. 15883). The latter deserted his father and went to Brahmā, who as a reward made him immortal and appointed him to be the god of riches, with Lankā for his capital, and the car Pushpaka for his vehicle (vv. 15886 ff.). His father, Pulastya, however, being incensed at this desertion of himself, reproduced the half of himself in the form of Viśravaṇa, vv. 15884 (*tasya kopāt pitā rājan asarjātmanānam ātmanā | sa jāno Viśravāḥ nāma tasyātmārdhena vai dvijaḥ* | and again, v. 15889: *Pulastyasya tu yaḥ krodhād ardhadeho 'bhavad muniḥ | Viśravāḥ nāma ityādi*). This Viśravaṇa looked upon Vaiśravaṇa with indignation. The latter strove to pacify his father⁶⁰ (v. 15890 ff.), and with this view gave him three elegant Rākshasīs to attend on him: Pushpotkaṭā, who had two sons, Rāvaṇa and Kumbhakarna; Mālinī, who bore Vibhīṣaṇa; and Rākā, who bore Khara and Sūrpaṇakhā. These sons were all valiant, skilled in the Veda, and observers of religious rites; but perceiving the prosperity of Vaiśravaṇa, they were filled with jealousy. They accordingly (except Khara and Sūrpaṇakhā) began to practise austerities to propitiate Brahmā, and at the end of a thousand years Rāvaṇa cut off his own head and threw it as an oblation into the fire (v. 15908). Brahmā then appeared to stop their austerities and offer them boons (except that of immortality).⁶¹ He ordained that Rāvaṇa should have heads and shapes at will, and should be invincible, except by men; that Kumbhakarna, who was influenced by the quality of darkness (*tamas*), should, according to his request, enjoy long sleep⁶² (*sa vaure*

⁶⁰ Viśravaṇa is here meant, although according to v. 15883 ff. Pulastya reproduced himself as Viśravaṇa after the birth of Vaiśravaṇa, and in consequence of the latter having deserted his father in his original form as Pulastya. Vaiśravaṇa means the son of Viśravaṇa, and in v. 15925, Vaiśravaṇa (Kuvera) is said to be the brother of Vibhīṣaṇa, who must have been the son of Viśravaṇa, as his brother Rāvaṇa is called in v. 15930.

⁶¹ See above, p. 223 and p. 484 below.

⁶² This disagrees with the statement in the Rāmāyaṇa (quoted above, p. 482) that he was doomed to long sleep as a curse. *

mahatā nidrām tamasā grasta-chetanah, v. 15916). Vibhishana asks, that even in the greatest misfortunes he may never meditate any unrighteousness, and that the Brāhman's weapon may become manifest to him without being learned.⁶³ Brahmā promises him immortality. Having obtained the power above described, Rāvaṇa expels Vaiśravaṇa (Kuvera) from Lankā (v. 15920). The righteous Vibhishana follows his brother⁶⁴ (v. 15925) Kuvera, who had retired to Gandhamādana (v. 15921). Rāvaṇa having been installed as king, and begun to exercise his power tyrannically, the rishis resort for deliverance to Brahmā (v. 15929 ff.), who promises that as Rāvaṇa could not be killed either by gods or Asuras, the four-armed Viṣṇu, the chief of

⁶³ *Asikṣhitaneha bhagavan Brahmūstram pratibhātu me* | See the second volume of this work, 2nd ed., p. 416, where the sense of the line is not correctly rendered. See the note on a similar line from the Uttara Kāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa below in p. 489. In v. 15897 Vibhishana is said to be the handsomest of Pulastya's sons (*rūpeṇa sarvebhyo 'bhyadhikaḥ*), and a protector of righteousness, and practiser of religious rites (*dharma-goptā kṛyūratiḥ*).

⁶⁴ In v. 16157 f. Vibhishana is said to dwell, shaded by a white umbrella, and with white garlands, on the S'vetapārvata, or, "white mountain," attended by his four counsellors, and apart from his disreputable brothers Kumbhakarna, etc., who, naked, with dishevelled hair, and red garlands, frequented the south. In v. 16314 f. he is said to join Rāma, and it is not mentioned whence he comes; but as his treachery is at first suspected by Sugrīva, it might appear to be implied that he came from Lankā, as is expressly related in the Rām., vi. 17, 1, Bombay ed. In Gorr. ed. (*Sundara Kāṇḍa*, 89, 1-43) forty-two verses are introduced between the two lines which make up the first verse of the 17th section of book sixth in the Bombay ed. That verse states that after addressing some harsh words to Rāvaṇa, Vibhishana came immediately to Rāma. Gorrasio's text adds that after leaving his brother, Vibhishana first tells his mother all that had happened, and then went through the air to Kailāsa, the residence of Vaidravana (Kuvera, v. 4). Before his arrival, however, Mahādeva had gone with Umā and his attendants to the abode of Kuvera (vv. 6 ff.), had dismounted from his bull, and entered the assembly; when the two gods embraced each other, sat down, and began to play at dice. At this juncture Mahādeva sees Vibhishana approaching, and tells Kuvera that he has come to seek his protection, but that he ought to go to Rāma, who would install him as monarch of the Rākshasas (vv. 11 ff.). Vibhishana arrives, kneels and touches the ground with his forehead, when the two gods give him the advice which Mahādeva had proposed (vv. 21 ff.). Vibhishana remains thoughtful (v. 36). Mahādeva again addresses him (v. 37), and tells him to "rise and resort to the ancient lord, the imperishable, the support of all beings, the eternal, the irresistible, the treasury of righteousness, the refuge of those who seek him, the root of the whole world, Rāma" (v. 39) (*Tasmād uttiṣṭha gaccha tvam purāṇam prabhum avyayam | ādhārām sarva-bhūtānām śāśvataṁ niracagraham*)⁴⁰. *Sa hi dharmā-nidhānaś cā gaur gatimatāṁ varaḥ | kṛtsnasya jagato mūlām tasmād gacchava Rāghavam*). Vibhishana hereupon rises, makes obeisance to the two gods, and goes to Rāma through the sky (vv. 41 ff.).

warriors, should, by his (Brahmā's) appointment, descend to earth for his destruction (*tad-artham avatirno 'sau man-niyogāḥ dhaturbhiḥ* | *Viṣṇuḥ praharatām treshṭhaḥ sa tat karma karishyati*). No account is, however, given of the way in which Viṣṇu was to become incarnate in one or more of the sons of Daśaratha; or how this was accomplished. Brahmā also desired Indra and the other gods to be born on earth, and beget on the she-bears and she-monkeys sons who should assist Viṣṇu, which they accordingly did. He also gave injunctions and instructions to a Gandharvī called Dundubhī, who was born on earth as the hunchbacked Mantharā, and stirred up enmity by urging Kaikeyī to claim the succession to Daśaratha's throne for her own son Bharata (vv. 15934 f., and 15960 ff.).

Whether the portion of the episode which relates the earlier history of Rāvaṇa, and the means adopted by Brahmā for his destruction, formed an original part of the poem, I need not attempt to decide; but an allusion is afterwards made in a later part of it to the monkeys of Rāma's army having been begotten by the gods (v. 16309), where Sāgara, the Ocean, who had appeared to Rāma, is introduced as saying: *Asi tatra Nalo nāmo vānarah śilpi-sammataḥ | Tvashṭur devasya tanayo balavān Viśvakarmaṇaḥ* | "There is there a monkey called Nala, approved by artizans, the strong son of the god Tvashṭri Viśvakarman."

The main incidents in this episode agree, as far as I have examined them, with those of the Rāmāyaṇa: though there are some minor points in which there is a difference between the two. Thus the larger poem appears (as far as I have looked into it) to say nothing of Mantharā being the incarnation of a Gandharvī, though this is alluded to by the commentator in ii. 7, 1 of the Bombay edition, in these words: *Atiha Sītāyāḥ Lankā-pura-praveśam Ānā Rāvaṇa-bādhasyāśak-yatayā tat-siddhaye devaiḥ preritāyāḥ kṛita-kubjā-veshayāḥ Mantharāyāḥ Rāmābhisheka-vighna-pravṛttim vaktum upakramate* | "Now since Rāvaṇa could not be killed unless Sītā entered into Lankā,—with a view to the accomplishment of that, he (the poet) begins to relate how Mantharā, who had been sent by the gods, and had taken the disguise of a hunchback, threw obstacles in the way of Rāvaṇa's inauguration, etc." Again, as we have already seen, long periods of sleep are said, in the larger poem, to have been inflicted by Brahmā on Kumbhakarna as a curse, but in the episode to have been granted as a

boon.⁶⁵ The account which will be given below from the Mahābhārata is a sort of reconciliation of these two statements. Another discrepancy, noticed by the commentator has been already cited above, p. 415, note 193.

In the sequel of the story, as given in the Mahābhārata, it is said that, after the destruction of Rāvaṇa, and the appearance of the gods to persuade Rāma to take back his wife Sītā, Brahmā offered Rāma any boons he might choose, and that Rāma accordingly desired that he might continue steadfast in righteousness, and unconquered by his enemies; and solicited the resurrection of the monkeys who had been killed by the Rākshasas (vv. 16570 ff.). The poet, who represents Rāma as consenting to receive these boons from Brahmā, could scarcely have regarded him as the Supreme Spirit, as he is declared in some parts of the Rāmāyaṇa to have been (see above, p. 180 ff.). The last act of his which is described (vv. 16600 f.) is the celebration of ten aśvamedhas. No reference is made to his death.

As I have noticed above, the Uttara Kāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa contains an account of the birth, and a sketch of the earlier history, of Rāvaṇa and his brothers, which varies in some particulars from the narrative in the Mahābhārata. We are there told how after Rāma had returned to Ayodhyā, and taken possession of the throne, the rishis assembled from the east, west, north, and south, to greet him (1, 1 ff.), and Agastya, in answer to his questions, recounted many particulars regarding his old enemies. In the Krita Yuga (or Golden Age) the austere and pious Brahman-rishi Pulastya, a son of Brahmā, and who was like his father, being teased with the vicinity, sports, singing, and dancing of different dārgsels, who interrupted his austerities,⁶⁶ proclaimed that any one of them whom he again saw near his hermitage, on the side of Mount Meru, should become pregnant. The others kept

⁶⁵ The story of Rambhā, which is related in the passage referred to above (461 f.), is in this episode briefly sketched in these words (v. 16151 ff.): *Nalakūvara a-iṣṇena rakṣitā hy asi nandini | śapto hy eṣha purā pāpo badhūm Rambhām parūmrishan | na śakno'ny evaśūm nārīm upastum qitendriyaḥ* | "Thou art protected, charming one, (i.e. Sītā) by the curse of Nalakūvara. For this wicked being of unrestrained passions (Rāvaṇa), having formerly been cursed when insulting his (N.) wife Rambhā, is unable to approach a helpless woman." See also v. 16563 f.; and p. 461 f., above.

⁶⁶ "Not intentionally," says the commentator on v. 8, "but like (dried) grass and fire" (*trīṇāgni-nyūyama na tu budhā-pūrvam*).

at a distance, but the threat had not been heard by the daughter of the royal-rishi Tṛiṇavindu, who one day came into Pulastya's neighbourhood, and her pregnancy was the result (sect. 2, vv. 14 ff.). After her return home, her father, seeing her condition, took her to Pulastya, who accepted her as his wife, and she bore a son who received the name of Viśravas (v. 32). This son was, like his father, an austere and religious sage. He married the daughter of the muni Bharadvāja, who bore him a son, to whom Brahmā gave the name of Vaiśravaṇa = Kuvera (sect. 3, vv. 1 ff.). The latter performed austerity for thousands of years, when he obtained from Brahmā as a boon, that he should be one of the guardians of the world [along with Indra, Varuṇa, and Yama] and the god of riches (vv. 11 ff.). He afterwards consulted his father Viśravas about an abode, and, at his suggestion, took possession of the city of Lankā, which had formerly been built by Viśvakarman for the Rākshasas, but had been abandoned by them through fear of Viṣṇu, and was at that time unoccupied (vv. 23 ff.). Rāma then (sect. 4) says he is surprised to hear that Lankā had formerly belonged to the Rākshasas, as he had always understood that they were the descendants of Pulastya, and now he learns that they had also another origin (v. 4. *Pulastya-vaṁśād udbhūtāḥ rākshasāḥ iti naḥ śrutam | idānim anyataś chūpi sambhavaḥ kīrtitas tvayā*). He therefore asks who was their ancestor, and what fault they had committed that they were chased away by Viṣṇu. Hearing the polished (*saṁskārāṅkṛitam*)⁶⁷ words of Rāma, Agastya replies (vv. 9 ff.) that when Brahmā created the waters, he formed certain beings—some of whom received the name of Rākshasas—to guard them.⁶⁸ The first Rākshasa kings were Heti and Praheti (v. 14). Heti married Bhayā, the sister of Kāla (Time). She bore him a son Vidyutkeśa (v. 17), who in his turn took for his wife Sālankaṭankaṭā, the daughter of Sandhyā (v. 21). She bore him a son Sukeśa (v. 32), whom she abandoned (v. 24), but he was seen by Śiva, as he was passing by with his wife Pārvatī (v. 27 ff.), who made the child as mature as his mother, and immortal, and gave him a city which moved through the ether. Pārvatī, too, gave as a boon to the Rākshasa women the power of immediate conception and parturition, and to their children instant maturity equal

⁶⁷ See the second volume of this work, pp. 157–159.

⁶⁸ See Note 1, p. 439.

to that of their mothers (v. 30 ff.). Sukeśa married a Gandharvī called Devavatī (sect. 5, v. 3), who bore three sons, Mālyavat, Sumālī, and Mālī (v. 6). These sons practised intense austerities (v. 9), when Brahmā appeared (v. 12), and conferred on them invincibility and long life (15). They then harassed the gods and Asuras (16). Viśvakarman, at their request, gave them a city, Lānkā, on the mountain Trikūṭa, on the shore of the southern ocean, which he had built (vv. 18 ff.). They marry the three daughters of the Gandharvī Narmadā. Mālyavat's wife, Sundarī, bears Vajramuṣṭī, Virūpāksha, Durmukha, Suptaghna, Yajnakopa, Matta, Unmatta, and one daughter Anala (v. 35 ff.). Sumālī's wife, Ketumatī, bears Prahasta, Kampana, Vikāṣa, Kalikāmukha, Dhūmrāksha, Daṇḍa, Supārśva, Sanhrādi, Praghosa, Bhāsakarna, and four daughters, Bākā, Pushpotkāṭā, Kaikāṣī, and Kumbhīnāsī (vv. 39 ff.). Mālī's wife, Vasudā, bore Anala, Nila, Hara, and Sampātī (v. 43). The three Rākshasas, Mālyavat and his two brothers, with their sons, continue to oppress the gods, rishis, etc. (v. 44), who (sect 6, v. 1 ff.) in consequence resort for aid to Mahādeva, "the creator and destroyer of the world, the unborn, imperceptible, the support of all worlds" (*Jagat-sṛiṣṭy-anta-kartāram ajam avyakta-rūpiṇam | ādhāraṁ sarva-bhūtānām*), who, having regard to his protégé Sukeśa (the father of Mālyavat, etc., see above), says that he cannot kill the Rākshasas (v. 10); but advises the suppliants to go to Viṣṇu, which they do (v. 12), and receive from him a promise that he will destroy their enemies (v. 21). One of the three Rākshasa kings, hearing of this, informs his brothers, and, after consultation (v. 23 ff.), they proceed to heaven to attack the gods (v. 46), unterrified by the portents which were manifested (vv. 53 ff.). Viṣṇu prepares to meet them (v. 63). The battle is described in the seventh section. The Rākshasas are defeated by Viṣṇu with great slaughter, and driven back to Lānkā, one of their leaders, Mālī, being slain (vv. 42 ff.). Mālyavat remonstrates with Viṣṇu, who was assaulting the rear of the fugitives, on his unwarriorlike conduct (*na jānīṣhe kṣātraṁ dharmam purātanam*),⁶⁰ and wishes to renew the combat (sect. 8, v. 3 ff.).

⁶⁰ The next verse (4) adds: *Parūṇmukha-vadhām pāpam yaḥ karoti sureśvara | sa hanāṁ na gataḥ svargaṁ labhate punya-karmṇām* | "The slayer who wickedly slaughters foes who have turned their backs, after his death does not attain to the heaven of the meritorious."

Vishnu replies that he must fulfil his promise to the gods by slaying the Rākshasas, and that he would destroy them even if they fled to Pātāla (v. 7 ff.). The battle is renewed, but Mālyavat and Sumālī are driven into Lankā (v. 20), and being unable to withstand Vishnu, at length retire to Pātāla (v. 22). These Rākshasas, Agastya says, were more powerful than Rāvaṇa, and could only be destroyed by Nārāyaṇa, *i.e.* by Rāma himself, the eternal indestructible god (v. 24 ff.). Sumālī with his family lived for a long time in Pātāla, while Kuvera dwelt in Lankā (v. 29). In section 9 it is related that Sumālī once happened to visit the earth, when he observed Kuvera going in his chariot to see his father Viśravas. This leads him to consider how he might restore his own fortunes. He consequently desires his daughter Kaikaśī to go and woo Viśravas (v. 12), who receives her graciously (vv. 18 ff.). She becomes the mother of the dreadful Rāvaṇa (v. 29) whose birth was succeeded by portents, of the huge Kumbhakarna (v. 34), of Sūrpanakhā, and of the righteous Vibhishana, who was the last son (v. 35),⁷⁰ and whose nativity was followed by a shower of celestial flowers, by the sound of celestial drums, and exclamations of delight in the air (v. 36). These children grow up in the forest. Kumbhakarna goes about eating rishis (v. 38). Vibhishana lives in the practice of duty, the study of the Veda, and temperance, and controls his senses (v. 39). Kuvera comes to visit his father (v. 40), when Kaikaśī takes occasion to urge her son Rāvaṇa to strive to become like his brother (Kuvera) in splendour. This Rāvaṇa promises to do (v. 45). He then goes to the hermitage of Gokarna with his brothers to perform austerity (v. 47). In section 10 their austere observances are described. After a thousand years' penance, Rāvaṇa throws one of his heads as an offering into the fire (v. 10). He performs this oblation nine times at equal intervals, and is about to do it the tenth time, when Brahmā appears (v. 12 ff.), and offers a boon. Rāvaṇa asks immortality, but is refused (17). He then asks that he may be indestructible by all creatures more powerful than men, etc.; which boon is accorded by Brāhmā (v. 22), together with the recovery of all the heads he had sacrificed, and the power of assuming any shape he pleased. Vibhi-

⁷⁰ This account varies from that of the Mahābhārata (above, p. 482), according to which the mothers are different, and Khara (who is not named here) is also a son of Viśravas.

shana (nearly as in the Mahābhārata, see above, p. 483) asks as his boon (v. 30 f.) that "even amid the greatest calamities he may think only of righteousness, and that the Brahman's weapon may become manifest to him without being learned; and that in every stage of life his aims may be righteous" (*paramāpad-gatasyāpi dharmo mogha matir bhavet | asikshitancha brahmāstram bhagavan pratibhātu me*¹¹ | *yā yā me jāyate buddhir yeshu yeshu āśrameṣu cha | sā sā bhavatu dharmishṭhā taṁ taṁ dharmam cha pālaye*). The god grants his request, and adds the gift of immortality. When Brahmā is about to offer a boon to Kumbhakarna, the gods interpose (v. 35 ff.), as, they say, he had eaten seven Apsarases and ten followers of Indra, besides rishis and men; if he has done this without receiving any boon from Brahmā, he would, if he should obtain such a favour, devour the three worlds; and they end by suggesting that under the guise of a boon stupefaction should be inflicted on him (v. 39). Brahmā thinks on Sarasvatī, who arrives (v. 40), and by Brahmā's command (v. 42. *Vāṇi tvam Rākha-saendrasya bhava vāg-devatepsitā*) enters into Kumbhakarna, that she may speak for him. Under this influence he asks, when desired to choose a favour, that he may receive the boon of sleeping for many years, which is granted (v. 45).¹² When, however, Sarasvatī has left him, and he recovers his own consciousness, he perceives that he has

¹¹ The commentator explains these last words thus. *Asikshitaṁ sad-gurūpadesaṁ vināpity arthah | brahmāstram brahma-vidyā | etad varāṇam aśeṣa-brahma-vidyā-viddhi-pratibandhaka-niruttaye* | "Unlearned, that is, [may it appear to me] even without the instruction of a good teacher. The Brahman's weapon is the science of Brahma (or of the veda). This choice of a boon seeks the removal of all obstacles to the attainment of divine knowledge." The commentator also says that by *dharme* ("righteousness") in the first line is meant Nārāyaṇa (Vishnu), according to the saying, 'Rāma is the incarnate righteousness': as looking to what follows, the passage would otherwise be tautological (*"Dharme" Nārāyaṇe matir bhavet* | *"Rāmo vigrahaṁ dharmam" ity uktor atra dharmā-padena Nārāyaṇaḥ | anyattha "sā sū bhavatu dharmishṭhā" ity anena paunaruktyāṁ syāt* |

¹² The commentator remarks here: *Evam iti | atra śaṇ-mānād arvāk jāgarāṇaṁ na iti nyamaḥ | tad-adhikā 'pi nidrā tu bhavaty eva iti vara-svarūpam bodhyam | ataḥ eva śaṇ-mānān evāpiti iti pūrvam Vibhīṣhanoktyā varāṇy anekāni iti Kumhaka-ropoktyā cha pūrvoktasya na virodhaḥ* | "In these words of Brahmā (v. 45) there is no condition that Kumbhakarna should wake after six months, but it is understood as the nature of the boon that he might sleep for even a longer time. Wherefore, although it was formerly said by Vibhīshana that 'he sleeps six months,' and Kumbhakarna here speaks of sleeping many years, there is no discrepancy between the latter and the former."

been deluded (v. 47). Kuvera, on the demand of Rāvaṇa, and by his father's advice, gives up the city of Lankā to Rāvaṇa (sect. 11, v. 39 ff.).

The Uttara Kāṇḍa, sect. 36, vv. 44 ff., contains in its description of the monkey Hanumat's history the following testimony to his literary merits: 44. *Asau punar vyākaraṇaṁ grihishyan sūryonmukhaḥ praśṭu-manāḥ kapīndraḥ | udyad-girer asta-giriṁ jagāma granthaṁ mahad dhārayan aprameyaḥ |* 45. *Sa-sūtra-vṛitty-ārtha-padam mahārthaṁ sa-sangrahaṁ sidhyati vai kapīndraḥ | na hy asya kaśchit śadrīṣo 'sti śāstre vaiśārade chhanda-gatau tathaiva | sarvāsu vidyāsu tapo-vidhāne praspar-dhate 'yaṁ hi guruṁ surāṇām |* 44. "Again the chief of monkeys (Hanumat), measureless, seeking to acquire grammar, looking up to the sun, bent on inquiry, went from the mountain where the sun rises to that where he sets, apprehending the mighty collection—(45) viz. the aphorisms (*sūtra*), the commentary (*vṛitti*), the vārttika (*ārtha-pada*), the Mahārtha, and the Sangraha [of Vyāḍi]. The chief of monkeys is perfect, no one equals him in the śāstras, in learning, and in ascertaining the sense of the Scripture, [or in moving at will]. In all sciences, in the rules of austerity, he rivals the preceptor of the gods."

The following is the commentary on the above passage: *Udyad-girer udaya-girer mahad granthaṁ dhārayan arthataḥ pāṭhataḥ cha grihṇan | dhārayan aprameyaḥ iti nuḍ-abhāva ārshaḥ | sūrya-sūmmukhyārthaṁ tāvad gamanam |* 45. *Ko 'sau granthas tatrāha "sa-sūtra" iti | sūtram aṣṭādhyāyī-lakṣhaṇam | vṛittis tātkalika-sūtra-vṛittih | ārtha-padam sūtrārtha-bodhaka-padaḥ vārttikam mahārtham mahābhāṣyam Pa-tanjali-kṛitam | "sa-sangrahaṁ" Vyāḍi-kṛīṣa-sangrahaḥkhyā-grantha-sahitam | "sidhyati vai" siddho bhavati śāstrāntareshe apīty arthaḥ | tad evāha | na hy asya śadrīṣaḥ śāstre kaśchit "chhanda-gatau" pūrvo-ttara-mīmāṃsā-mukhena vedārtha-nirṇaye "vaiśārade" vqīduṣhye | viśiṣhya navama-vyākaraṇa-kartā Hanūmān iti cha prasiddhir iti Katakāḥ |* "From the mountain where the sun rises, 'holding,' apprehending in sense and in text 'the great collection.' The absence of the reduplicated *n* in *dhārayan aprameyaḥ* is vedic (*ārsha*). He went to face the sun. 45. In the words 'with the sūtras,' etc., he describes what the book was. The sūtras mean the eight books of Pāṇini (*aṣṭādhyāyī*). The *vṛitti* is the contem-

poraneous gloss on the sūtras (*sūtra-vṛtti*). The *artha-pada* is the *vārttika*, containing sentences explaining the sense of the sūtras; the *Mahārtha* is the Mahābhāṣya composed by Patañjali. "With the *sangraha*" means with the book called Sangraha, composed by Vyāḍi. "He is perfect" means he excels in other śāstras also, as the author goes on to say: 'for no one is like him in the śāstras, in ascertaining the sense,' in determining the meaning of the Veda by the mouth of the Pūrva and Uttara Mīmāṃsā. 'In skill,' i.e. in learning. When specifying, it is well known that Hanumat was the ninth author of Grammar; such is Kataka's explanation."

The other eight grammarians are mentioned by Colebrooke—Essays, ii., pp. 39, 48 (ed. 1837).

NOTE E.—Page 261, note ²⁵⁹, line 3 from bottom.

With this compare the Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa xiv. 11, 28, where it is said: *Indro Yatīn sālāvṛikobhyaḥ prāyachhat | tam aślīlā vāg abhyavadat | so 'suddho 'manyata | sa etat suddhāsuddhiyam apaśyat | tena aśudhyat* | "Indra gave up the Yatīs to the jackals. An evil voice addressed him" [charging him with the murder of Brāhmanas, according to the Commentator]. "He recognized himself as unclean. He beheld this 'Suddhāsuddhiya,' [a particular sāman text] and became purified." The story is repeated further on in the same Brāhmaṇa xviii. 1, 9, where it is said that instead of beholding the "Suddhāsuddhiya," Indra went to Prajāpati, who gave him the "Upahavya" (*Prajāpatim upādāvat | tasmai etam upahavyam prāyachhat*). This story of Indra and the Yatīs is alluded to in Ait. Br. vii. 28, which is quoted in the first volume of this work, pp. 437 f. It is also referred to in the Tāṇḍya Br. viii. 1, 4, and xiii. 8, 17. The latter passage is as follows: *Indro Yatīn sālāvṛikobhyaḥ prāyachhat | teshāṃ trayasḥ udayishyanta Prithuraśmir Bṛihadgiriḥ Pāyovajāḥ | te 'bruvan "ko naḥ imān putrān bharishyati" iti | "aham" iti Indro 'bravīt | tān adhinidhāya parichārya oharan vardhayaṃ tān vardhayitvā 'bravīt "kumārakāḥ varān vrinidhvam" iti | "kshatram mahyam" ity abravīt Prithuraśmiḥ | tasmai etena pāthuraśmena kshatram prāyachhat | kshatrakāmaḥ etena stuvitṛḥ | kshatrasya iva asya prakāśo bhavati | "Brahmavarchasam mahyam" ity abravīt Bṛihadgiriḥ | tasmai etena bṛihadgireṇa brahmavarchasam prāyachhat | brahmavarchasa-kāmaḥ etena stuvitṛḥ | bṛihadgiriḥ bhavati | "paśūn mahyam" ity abravīt*

Rāyovājāḥ | tasmai stena rāyovājīyena paśūn prāyachhat | paśukāmaḥ stena stuvīta | paśumān bhavati | 18. Pārtharaśmaṁ rājanyāya brahma-sāma kuryāt bārhadgiram brāhmaṇāya rāyovājīyaṁ vaiśyāya | svena sva enāṁś tad-rūpeṇa samardhayati stomaḥ | “Indra gave up the Yatis to the jackals. Three of them were left, Pṛithuraśmi, Bṛihadgiri, and Rāyovāja. They said, ‘Who will cherish these persons, us, as sons?’ ‘I,’ said Indra. Having placed them [on his car, according to the comm.], he went on tending and rearing them. When he had reared them, he said, ‘Youths, choose boons.’ Pṛithuraśmi said, ‘May regal power be mine!’ He accordingly gave him regal power by means of this ‘pārtharaśma’ sāman. Let the man who desires regal power offer praise with this sāman; and he obtains distinction like that of regal power. Bṛihadgiri said, ‘May Brahmanic lustre be mine!’ He gave him Brahmanic lustre by means of this ‘bārhadgira’ sāman. Let him who desires this characteristic offer praise with this sāman; and he obtains it. Rāyovāja said, ‘Let me have cattle!’ He gave him cattle by means of this ‘rāyovājīya’ sāman. Let him who desires cattle offer praise with this sāman; and he obtains them. 18. Let a ‘pārtharaśma’ be the ‘brahma-sāman’ performed for a Rājanya, a ‘bārhadgira’ that for a Brahman, and a ‘rāyovājīya’ for a Vaiśya. The ‘stoma’ thus brings prosperity to each of them after his own fashion.” The Yatis are declared by the commentator on Tāṇḍya Br. viii. 1, 4, to be persons “who practised observances contrary to the Veda” (*veda-viruddha-niyamopetān*); on xiii. 4, 17, to be “the persons so called who were hostile to sacrifices” (*etat-sañjakān yajna-virodhi-jaṇān*); on xiv. 11, 28, to be “persons hostile to rites” (*karma-virodhi-jaṇān*); and on xviii. 1, 9, to be “Brahmans who did not celebrate the jyotiṣṭoma and other sacrifices, but lived in another way” (*jyotiṣṭomādy akṛitvā prakārantareṇa vartamānām brāhmaṇān*). The Yatis are also mentioned in the Taitt. Saṁhitā ii. 4, 9, 2, in these words: *Yatinām adya-mānānām śirśhāni parāpatan | te kharjūrāḥ abhavan |* “The heads of the Yatis who were being eaten fell off. They (the Yatis) became date-trees.” In the same Saṁhitā, vi. 2, 7, 5, they are again referred to thus: *Indro Yatīn sālāvṛikebhyāḥ prāyachhat & tān dakṣhinataḥ uttaravadyāḥ ādan |* “Indra gave up the Yatis to the jackals: they devoured them on the south side of the northern altar.” On the former of these texts the commentator remarks as follows: *Pāramahāṁsya-rūpaṁ cā-*

*turthāśramam prāptānāṃ yeshāṃ Yatīnāṃ mukhe Brahmātmaka-pratī-
pādako vedānta-śabdo nāsti tān Yatīn Indraḥ āraṇyebhyaḥ śvabhyaḥ
prāyachhat | tathā Kaushītaki-brāhmaṇopaniṣhadi Indrasya pratijñā
samāmnāyate “Arunmukhān Yatīn sūlāvṛikebhyaḥ prāyachham” iti |
patitātīvāt teshāṃ tathātvaṃ yuktam | tathā cha smaryate “nitya-karma-
parityajya vedānta-bravaṇaṃ vinā | vartamānas tu sannyāsī pataty eva
na saṁśayaḥ” iti | teshāṃ cha sūlāvṛikair bhakṣhaṇaṃ shashṭha-kūṇḍe
samāmnāyate . . . iti | vedānta-bravaṇa-vāñchhāṃ vinā nitya-karma-
parityaktavatāṃ bhavatām api idṛśī gatiḥ iti darśayitūṃ vedi-samīpe
bhakṣhaṇam eva | “Indra gave up to the wild dogs those Yatīs in
whose mouth (although they had attained the fourth stage of life
[āśrama], that of Paramahāṁsas) the word of the Vedānta [or
Upanishads] which sets forth that the soul is Brahma, was not found.
Accordingly Indra’s declaration that he ‘gave up the Arunmukha Yatīs
to the jackals is recorded in the Kaushītaki Brāhmaṇa Upanishad”
(iii. 1; see p. 161 of Prof. Cowell’s translation in the Bibliotheca
Indica). “In consequence of their fallen condition, it was fit that
this should have been done: according to the text of the Smṛiti, ‘A
Sannyāsīn who lives in the neglect of the fixed observances, and with-
out hearing the Vedānta [or Upanishads], sinks without doubt into a
fallen condition.’ And the fact of the Yatīs being eaten by jackals
is recorded in the sixth book (of this Saṁhitā, as quoted above). The
circumstance of their being devoured near the altar is intended to show
that the same fate awaits you gentlemen also, who live without desiring
to hear the Upanishads, and in the neglect of the fixed ceremonies.”
From Prof. Cowell’s note in the Kaushītaki Br. Up. transl., p. 161,
it appears that Sāyaṇa, the commentator on the Ait. Br. vii. 28,
regarded the Yatīs there mentioned as being Asuras in the disguise of
devotees, and the Arurmaghas referred to there as being Asuras in the
form of Brahmans. Prof. Cowell adds in a second note that the com-
mentator (in the Kaush. Br. Up.) “explains the Arunmukhas” (there
mentioned) “as those in whose mouths the reading of the Vedas is
not;” and observes that “they and the Arurmaghas of the Ait. Br.
are equally obscure.” See the remainder of the note, and Prof. Haug’s
note on the latter passage in his translation of the Ait. Br., p. 483 f.
He thinks the Arurmaghas “were no doubt a kind of degraded Aryas,
very likely a tribe of the ancient Iranians,” etc.*

NOTE F.—Page 310, note ¹⁹.

In regard to this note I have been favoured with a communication from Prof. Roth, who is of opinion that there are two substantives *śravas*, as there are two roots *śru*. There is not only, he considers, a root *śru*, "to hear," but a second *śru*=*sru*; and there are, he adds, a number of passages where the sense "renown," traditionally ascribed to *śravas*, however wide this idea is, and in however forced a manner it may be applied, does not suffice. The forthcoming fasciculus of his Lexicon will, Prof. Roth informs me, supply details on this subject.

Wilson, Westergaard, and Williams, in their Dictionaries, give a second *śru* as equivalent to *sru*, "to move," "to flow," etc. Prof. Aufrecht is of opinion that in addition to *śru*, "to hear," there is another root *śru*, with the meaning "to quake," "to shake," "to tremble." This root, he states, occurs only twice in the whole Vedic literature which we have before us. The passages in which it is found are R.V. i. 127, 3: *Ṛṣiḥ chid yasya samṛitau śruvad vaneva yat sthūram* | "Even the strong quakes at his attack, and even the firm shakes like trees;" and R.V. i. 39, 6: *Ā vo yāmāya prathivī chid aśṛot* | "Even the earth trembled before your rush." From this root is derived *grona*, "lame." Prof. Aufrecht does not think that in any Vedical passage the root *śru* has the meaning of *śravati*, "to flow." In his note on the former of these two passages, Sāyana explains *śruvat* by *gachhet*, *śīryeta*, i.e. "will move," "will crumble."

NOTE G.—Page 412, line 19.

In her lamentation for Rāvaṇa (Rām., Bombay ed. vi. 113) his queen Mandodari, among other attributes which she ascribes to him, speaks of him (v. 49) as *jetūraṁ lokapālānāṁ ksheptūraṁ S'ankarasya cha*, "conqueror of the guardians of the world, and castor down (or, contemner) of Sankara." Sankara could not therefore have been looked on by the writer of this as the Supreme Deity. From the story of Nandīśvara, quoted in the Appendix, above, p. 460 f., it will have been seen, however, that Rāvaṇa was really no match for Sankara.

NOTE H.—Page 418, note ¹⁰⁰.

The following is a summary of the story of Indra and Indrajit, as

given in the twenty-seventh and following sections of the Yuddha Kāṇḍa. Rāvaṇa in the course of his expeditions goes to Indra-loka. Indra tells the gods to get ready for battle; but, being afraid, resorts to Viṣṇu (sect. 27, 6), whom he glorifies as the Creator and the Being into whom all things are absorbed at the end of the world, and asks his advice (v. 13). Viṣṇu reassures him; but says that he could not interfere without killing Rāvaṇa,—which he is unable to do on account of the boon conceded to the Rākshasa chief by Brahmā (v. 18); but he would slay him at the proper time (v. 20). Meanwhile he tells Indra to fight with Rāvaṇa (v. 21). A battle takes place between the gods and Rākshasas (v. 26 ff.). The eighth Vasu Sāvitra comes on the field (vv. 34 and 43), fights with Sumāli, one of the Rākshasas, and grandfather of Rāvaṇa, who had routed the gods, kills him, reducing to ashes his bones and all the rest of him (v. 50), and puts the Rākshasas to flight. They are, however, rallied by Indrajit (sect. 28, 1 ff.), and the gods repulsed. Indra's son, Jayanta, enters the fray (vv. 6 ff.). The gods are furiously assailed by Indrajit. Both sides, in the confusion, smite their own warriors (vv. 17 f.). Jayanta is carried off by his grandfather, his mother Sachī's father, Puloman, the Daitya, who enters with him into the sea (vv. 19 f.). The gods, thinking that Jayanta had been killed, take to flight (v. 21), and are pursued by Indrajit. Indra himself now comes upon the scene (v. 23), and is opposed by Rāvaṇa (vv. 29 ff.), whom he eventually captures (sect. 29, v. 18 f.). Meghanāda (son of Rāvaṇa), afterwards called Indrajit, becoming invisible by his magical power, which he had obtained from Mahādeva, binds Indra and carries him off (v. 27). The gods, headed by Brahmā, follow them to Lankā (sect. 30). Brahmā praises Meghanāda's valour, and declares that he shall be called Indrajit ("the conqueror of Indra," v. 5). Brahmā then asks that Indra shall be released (v. 7). Indrajit, as a condition, requires the boon of immortality (v. 8). This Brahmā refuses (v. 9).⁷³ Indrajit then says, v. 11: *Śrāya-tām vā bhavet siddhiḥ Satakratu-vimokshaṇe* | 12. *Mameshṭam nityaśo havyair mantraiḥ sampūjya Pāvakaṃ* | *sangrāmam avatartuṃ cha śatru-nirjaya-kāṅkshinaḥ* | 13. *Āśva-yukto ratho mahyam uttiṣṭhet tu Vibhāvasoḥ* | *tat-sthasyāmaratā syād me osha me niśchito varaḥ* | 14. *Tasmin yady asaṃāpte cha japyahome Vibhāvasau* | *yudhyeyaṃ deva-sangrāme*

⁷³ See similar cases above, pp. 223 and 482.

tadā me syād vināśanam | 15. *Sarvo hi tapasā deva vṛiṇoty amaratām gumān* | *vikrameṇa mayā tv etad amaratoam pravartitam* | 16. *Kvām astv iti taṁ dhāḥ vākyaṁ devaḥ Prajāpatiḥ* | *muktas chendrejita Sakro gatās cha tridivaṁ surāḥ* | 11. "Listen: or let me attain perfection by releasing Satakratu (Indra). 12. My wish is,—desirous as I am of conquering my enemies,—to enter into battle after constantly worshipping Agni with texts and oblations: (13) and the boon I have fixed to ask for is that (whenever I shall do so) a chariot with horses may rise up for me out of the Fire, and that while I stand in it I may remain immortal: (14) and if I fight in it against the gods before I have finished my prayers and oblations to Agni, let me perish. 15. For, O god, every man desires by austerities to attain immortality. And by my valour I have sought for this immortality. 16. 'So be it,' said Brahmā. Then Indra was released by Indrajit, and the gods went to heaven." Brahmā then tells Indra (vv. 17–48), who was standing humiliated and thoughtful, that he had incurred this misfortune because he had corrupted Ahalyā (v. 46), the first woman, whom Brahmā had made and had given to the sage Gautama (v. 27), as a reward for his austere virtue. For this he had been cursed by the sage (vv. 31 ff.). Ahalyā, too, was reprehended by the sage, expelled from his hermitage, and condemned to lose her prerogative of being the only beautiful woman in the world (vv. 36 ff.). She excuses herself by saying that Indra had assumed the form of her husband, and thus deceived her, and that she had not yielded to illicit passion (vv. 40 f.). She is then assured that she would be restored to purity by the vision of Vishṇu incarnate in Rāma, and received again by her husband (vv. 41 ff.); and Indra himself was enjoined to offer a Vaishṇava sacrifice by which he would be purified (v. 47 f.).⁷⁴ (Compare the forty-eighth and forty-

⁷⁴ The commentator remarks on verse 49, where the performance of this sacrifice is mentioned: *Devānām na yajneshu adhikāraḥ sti Jaiminy-uktaṁ tu pramādaḥ iti nirūpitam prāk* | "The saying of Jaimini that the gods have not the prerogative of sacrificing has been before determined to be founded on an inadvertence." The end of the remarks on Rāmāyaṇa i. 29, 7, quoted above, p. 131, note 131, may be here referred to by the commentator. Besides the text cited in p. 262, note, mention is elsewhere found of sacrifice being offered by Indra. See the story of Nahusha adduced in the first volume of this work, pp. 307 ff., where such a sacrifice is referred to (p. 310). The lines of the Udyog-parvan (414 f.) in which this is mentioned are as follows: *Mām eva yajatām Sakraḥ pāvayishyāmi vajriṇam* | *punyena hayamedhena mām iṣṭvā Pākāśasanaḥ* | *punar eṣhyatḥ devānām indratvam akutobhayaḥ* | Vishṇu

ninth sections of the first book of the Rāmāyaṇa, Bombay ed., the note in p. 49, above; and a similar purification of Indra for another sin, above, p. 262, note, and the beginning of Note E., p. 491.) I quote the verses in which Brahmā here describes the creation of the first woman Ahalyā:

Sect. 30, 19 ff.—*Amarendra mayā buddhyā prajāḥ eṣiṣṭās tatha prabho | eka-varṇāḥ samābhāṣhāḥ eka-rūpās cha sarvaśaḥ |* 20. *Tāsmā nāsti viśeṣho hi darśane lakṣhaṇe 'pi vā | tato 'haṁ ekāgra-manās tāḥ prajāḥ samachintayam |* 21. *So 'haṁ tāsmā viśeṣhārthaṁ striyam ekāṁ vinirmame | yad yat prajānām pratyangaṁ viśiṣṭaṁ tat tad uddhṛitam |* 22. *Tato mayā rūpa-guṇair Ahalyā strī vinirmita | Halaṁ nāmeḥa vairūpyaṁ halyaṁ tat-prabhavam bhavet |* 23. *Yasyāḥ na vidyate halyaṁ tenāhalyeti viśruta | Ahalyety eva cha mayā tasyāḥ nāma prakīrtitam |* 19. "O chief of immortals (Indra), all creatures were by my understanding formed by me of one caste, of the same speech, and of one form in every respect. 20. There was no distinction of them in appearance or characteristic (sexual) mark. I then, with intent mind, reflected on these creatures. 21. In order to distinguish them, I formed one woman. Whatever there was most distinguished (excellent) in the several members of [different] creatures was taken [to compose her]. 22. A woman faultless (*ahalyā*) in form was then fashioned by me. *Hala* means ugliness, and *halya* that which springs from ugliness. 23. She who has nothing sprung from ugliness (*halya*) is known as 'Ahalyā.' And I have made her known by this name."

NOTE I.—Page 427, line 7 from the foot.

Professors Aufrecht and Müller have been good enough to furnish me with the text of this Durgā-stava, or Rātri-sūkta, which, in the Sanhitā MSS. of the R.V., follows a hymn addressed to Night (the 127th of the Tenth Maṇḍala=Ashṭaka viii. 7, 14). I will first give the text, with a translation, of the genuine hymn to Night (R.V. x. 127), and then quote the Parisiṣṭa:

R. V. x. 127.—1. *Rātri vi akhyad āyati purutrā devī akṣabhiḥ | viś-vāḥ adhi śriyo 'dhita |* 2. *Ā uru aprāḥ amartyā nivato devī udvataḥ |*

speaks: "Let Śakra (Indra) worship me: I will purify the thunderer. Having sacrificed to me with a pure horse sacrifice, he shall again obtain the headship of the gods, and be delivered from fear."

jyotishā bādhaṭe tamaḥ | 3. *Nir ū svasāram askrīta ushasam devī āyati* | *apa id u hāsate tamaḥ* | 4. *Sā no adya yasyāḥ vayasā ni te yāmann avikāśmāhi* | *vrikoṣe na vasatiṃ vayasā* | 5. *Ni grāmāso avikshata ni padvanto ni pakṣhiṇaḥ* | *ni śyenāsai chid arthinaḥ* | 6. *Yavaya vrikyaṃ vrikam yavaya stonaṃ ūrmye* | *atha naḥ sutarā bhava* | 7. *Upa mā pepīsat tamaḥ kṛishṇaṃ vyaktam asthita* | *ushaḥ riṇā iva yātaya* | 8. *Upa te gāḥ iva ā akaraṃ vṛniṣhva duhitar divaḥ* | *rātri stomaṃ na jigryuṣe* | “The divine Night arriving, hath shone in many places with her eyes; she has assumed all her splendours. 2. The immortal goddess has widely filled the lower and the upper regions: by light she destroys the darkness. 3. Arriving, the goddess has driven away her sister the Twilight: the darkness departs. 4. Be to-day [favourable] to us who have gone to rest at thy coming, as birds to their nests in a tree. 5. Men, cattle, and even suppliant hawks, have gone to rest. 6. Drive away, O Night, the she-wolf and the wolf: drive away the thief; and carry us safely across [thyself]. 7. Darkness adorned [with stars], black, and yet illuminated, has approached me: do thou, Ushas, drive it away like one who is bound [to do so]. 8. I have brought for thee a hymn, as it were an offering of cows, like [an encomium] for a conqueror. Receive it, O Night, daughter of the Day.”

1. (=Nir. iv. 29; A.V. 19, 47, 1; and Vāj. S. 34, 32)—*Ā rātri pārthivaṃ rajaḥ pitur aprāyi dhāmabhiḥ* | *divaḥ sadāmsi bṛihatī vi tishṭhase ā tveshaṃ vartate tamaḥ* | 2. (A.V. 19, 47, 3) *Ye te rātri nṛichakshaso yuktāso*⁷⁵ *navatir nava* | *asītiḥ santv ashtū uto te sapta saplatiḥ* | 3. *Rātrim prapadye jananiṃ sarva-bhūta-niveśaniṃ*⁷⁶ | *bhadrām bhagavatiṃ kṛishṇāṃ viśvasya jagato nīśām* | 4. *Saṃveśaniṃ saṃyamaniṃ graha-nakshatra-māliniṃ* | *prapanno 'haṃ śivāṃ rātrim bhadre pāram aśimahi bhadre pāram aśimahi oṃ namaḥ* | 5. *Stoṣhyāmi prayato devīm śaraṇyām bahvṛicha-priyām* | *sahasra-sammitūṃ Durgāṃ Jāta-vedaso sunavāma somam*⁷⁷ | 6. *Sūnty-arthaṃ divijātīnām piśibbhiḥ samapāsritāḥ (samupāsritā^p)* | *ṛig-vede tvam samutpannā 'rātīyato nidaḥti vedaḥ* | 7. *Ye tvāṃ devī prapadyante brāhmaṇāḥ havya-vāhanim* |

⁷⁵ For *yuktāso*, the A. V. reads *drashtūrah*, “seers.”

⁷⁶ This, Professor Aufrecht remarks, is imitated from R.V. i. 35, 1: *Rātrim jagato niveśaniṃ*.

⁷⁷ The final pādas of this and the three following verses are, as Prof. Aufrecht observes, borrowed from R.V. i. 96.

*anidyāḥ bahuvidyāḥ vā sa naḥ parashā ati durgāni viśat | 8. Agni-varṇāṁ
 kṛtāṁ saumyāṁ kīrtayishyanti ye dvijāḥ | tān tārayati durgāni nāsova
 sindhūṁ duritā 'ty Agniḥ | 9. Durgeshu viśame ghoro sangrāme ripṣ-
 sankato | agni-chora-nipāteshu duṣṭa-graha-nivārane | 10. Durgeshu
 viśameshu tvāṁ sangrāmeshu vaneshu cha | mohayitvā prapaḍyante
 teshāṁ me abhayaṁ kuru teshāṁ me abhayaṁ kuru om namaḥ | 11. Keśi-
 nīm sarva-bhūtānāṁ pañcamīti cha nāma cha | sū mām samāḥ nīdāḥ devī
 sarvataḥ parirakshatu sarvataḥ parirakshatu om namaḥ | [v. 12 is the
 same as the verse quoted by Weber in the text, beginning tām
 agni-varṇāṁ, etc.] | 13. Durgā durgeshu sthāneshu śaṁ no devīr abhish-
 ṭaye | yaḥ imaṁ Durga-stavam puṇyam rātrau rātrau sadā paṭhet | rātriḥ
 kṛtikāḥ saubhāro rātri-stavo gāyatrī | rātri-suktaṁ japed nityaṁ tat-
 kalam upapaḍyate |*

I am indebted to Professor Aufrecht for assistance in correcting the corrupt text and in explaining parts of this composition.

1. "O Night, the terrestrial atmosphere was filled with thy father's night. Thou, the mighty one, pervadest the celestial mansions, and awful darkness returns. 2. Night, may the man-beholders which are united with thee⁷⁸ be 99, 88, or 77. 3. I attain to Night, the mother, who brings rest to all creatures, kind, divine, dark, the night of the whole world. 4. I have attained the auspicious Night, who causes men to rest, who composes [them], who is invested with a garland of planets and stars. May we reach the other side in safety! may we reach the other side in safety! 5. Intent, I will praise the divine Durgā, who affords a refuge, who is beloved by the Bahvṛichas (priests of the Rig-veda ceremonial), who is equal to a thousand. Let us pour forth soma to Jātavedas (Fire). 6. For the tranquillization of the twice-born, thou art resorted to by rishis, and hast thy origin in the Rig-veda. May [Agni] burn up the wealth of him who seeks to hurt us! 7. The Brahmins, learned or ignorant, who resort, O goddess, to thee, the carrier of oblations,—may he transport us over all difficulties. 8. Agni transports over all evils [though] hard to be traversed,—as in a boat across the ocean,—those twice-born men who shall celebrate the fire-coloured, auspicious, beautiful goddess. 9. In difficulties, in dire perplexity, in battle, in trouble from enemies, in

⁷⁸ Or, according to the reading of the A. V., "May thy man-beholders, lookers be," etc.

visitations of fire, and thieves, for the prevention of inauspicious planets, (10) in difficulties, perplexities, battles, and forests, men, bewildered, resort to thee. Give us security from these things, give us security from these things! 11. [I praise] her the long-haired, and whose name among all creatures is Panchamī. May this goddess every night preserve me in every way. (12. The same as the verse already quoted in the text, p. 427, line 26.) 13. May the divine Durgā be propitious for our good in difficulties. He who always every night reads this holy Durgā-stava,—(the night, Kuśika, Saubhara, the rātri-stava, gāyatri),—he who continually mutters the rātri-sūkta, arrives at that time.”

It will be seen that the sense of some parts of this production is not very clear, but to ascertain it is of little consequence.

NOTE J.—Page 429, lines 13 f.

These same tongues of fire are also mentioned in a hymn to Agni, in the Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa, sect. 99, vv. 52 ff. : *Yā jihvā bhavataḥ Kālī kālā-nishīdhā-karī prabho | bhayān naḥ pāhi pāpēbhyah aihikāchcha mahā-bhayāt |* 53. *Karālī nāma yā jihvā mahā-pralaya-kāraṇam | tayā na pāhi ityādi |* 54. *Manojavā cha yā jihvā laghimā guṇa-lakṣaṇā | tayā ityādi |* 55. *Karoti kūmam bhūtebhyo yā te jihvā Sulohitā | tayā ityādi |* 56. *Sudhūmra-varṇā yā jihvā prāṇināṃ roga-dāyikā | tayā ityādi |* 57. *Sphulinginī cha yā jihvā yataḥ [yā te?] sakalā-pudgalā | tayā ityādi |* 58. *Yā te Viśvā sadā jihvā prāṇināṃ sarma-dāyinī | tayā ityādi |* 52. “By thy tongue Kālī, the final destroyer [of the world], preserve us from sins and from great present alarm. 53. By thy tongue Karālī, the cause of the great mundane dissolution, preserve us, etc. 54. By thy tongue Manojavā, which is distinguished by the quality of lightness, preserve us, etc. 55. By thy tongue Sulohitā, which accomplishes the desires of creatures, preserve us, etc. 56. By thy tongue Sudhūmra-varṇā, which inflicts diseases on living beings, preserve us, etc. 57. By thy tongue Sphulinginī, the loveliest of all, preserve us, etc. 58. By thy tongue Viśvā, which always bestows blessings on living beings, preserve us, etc.”

In the course of this hymn to Agni he is said (v. 41) to have been formed eightfold : *Tvāṃ aṣṭadhā kālpayitvā yajnam ādyam akalpayan |*

“Having formed thee in eight ways, they performed the earliest sacrifice.” This seems to refer to the legend from the Brāhmanas given in pp. 339–347. Again, we are reminded of some characteristics which are ascribed to Rudra in the Satarudriya vv. 2 and 11 (above, pp. 322 f.) by the expressions which are applied to Agni in the seventyeth verse of this hymn: *Yat te Vahnē śivam rūpaṁ ye cha te sapta hotayaḥ | taiḥ pāhi naḥ stuto deva pitā putram ivātmajam |* “When thou art lauded, Agni, preserve us by thine auspicious form, and by thy seven shafts, as a father preserves his own son.”

In v. 63 Agni is said to have “stretched out the whole universe, and, though one, to exist in manifold shapes” (*tvayā tataṁ viśvam idaṁ charācharam Hutāśanaiko bahudhā tvam atra*).

ADDITIONAL NOTES AND CORRECTIONS.

i. Page 6, note 13.

See further R.V. ii. 33, 1; and Dr. Bollensen's remarks on the word *sandris* in the Journal of the German Oriental Society, vol. xxii., p. 588.

ii. Page 9, line 11.

See Tāndya Mahābrāhmaṇa, viii. 2, 1 f.

iii. Page 19, line 3 from the top and line 11 from the foot.

I learn by a communication, dated some months ago, from Professor Aufrecht, that *anvāsaye* is not a substantive, as I had understood it, but the third person singular present, from the root *śi + anu + ā*. He would translate the whole verse thus: "With which body has Skambha entered the past, and which body of his rests over the future? When he divided his one body into a thousand bodies, with which of them did he enter there?" And he thinks that the second half of verse 8 has exactly the same sense. *S'aye* is, he adds, a very common Vedic form for *śete*. See also the fasciculus of Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon (recently received), s.v. *śi*, where also *śaye* is stated to be the 3rd pers. sing.; and the scholiast on Pāṇini vii. 1, 41, is referred to in proof. In the same work the root *śi + anu + ā* is explained as, in this passage, signifying "to stretch over."

iv. Page 28, line 8.

I find from Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, s.v. *śatabāhu*, that the words here referred to occur in the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka x. 1, 8. I quote in full the verse in which they occur, as well as that which precedes it: *Aśvakrānte rathakrānte Viśvukrānte vasundharā | śirasa dhārāyishyāmi rakshasā mām pade pade | bhūmir dhenur dharaṇī lokadhāraṇī | uddhṛitā 'oi varāhena kṛishṇena śatabāhuna |*

v. *Page 28, line 14.*

See Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa, xx. 14, 2 ff.; the commencement of which corresponds with the text from the Panchaviṃśa Brāhmaṇa, quoted in the fifth volume of this work, p. 392.

vi. *Page 29, line 9.*

See Tāṇḍya Br. iv. 1, 4.

vii. *Page 39, line 17.*

For "vi. 2, 42," read "vi. 2, 4, 2."

viii. *Page 39, line 23.*

Ahañ durgād āhartā. Compare R.V. i. 61, 7, and viii. 66, 10, in pp. 67 and 91, and the quotation from Sāyaṇa's commentary given in p. 92 f., above.

ix. *Page 44, line 22.*

For "5, 32," read "5, 34."

x. *Page 45, line 5.*

See Tāṇḍya Br. viii. 2, 10.

xi. *Page 56, line 11.*

Compare Tāṇḍya Br. vii. 4, 2; where it is told that the gods failed to gain heaven by either the Gāyatrī, the Trishtubh, the Jagatī, or the Anushtubh metres, but gained it by the Brihatī.

xii. *Page 58, last line of the text.*

Compare Tāṇḍya Br. vii. 5, 11; 6, 5; xii. 5, 23; 9, 21; 13, 27 f.

xiii. *Page 61, line 5.*

See the discussion among the gods about a formula in Tāṇḍya Br. vii. 8, 1 f.

xiv. *Page 67, line 18.*

On the word *mātri*, "measurer," Böhtlingk and Roth have the following explanation: "Sāyaṇa brings under this head the verse 1, 61, 7, making the word equivalent to 'the world-creating (-sustaining) sacrifice.' Benfey translates 'carpenter,' But Vṛitra's mother may be here spoken of."

xv. Page 78, line 11 from the foot.

See also Tāṇḍya Br., xx. 15, 6, f.

xvi. Page 80, line 5 from the foot.

Vishṇu is also mentioned in R.V. v. 49, 3: *Indro Vishṇur Varuṇo Mitro Agnir ahāni bhadrā janayanta dasmāḥ* |

xvii. Page 81, line 27.

In R.V. viii. 12, 8, Indra is said to have eaten a thousand buffaloes and to have in consequence gained in vigour (*yadi pravṛiddha eatpato sahasraṃ mahishān aghaḥ*) | *ād it te indriyam mahi pra vavṛidhe*).

xviii. Page 85, line 13.

"The Aśvins," etc. Read "Ye, Aśvins, have come by a path which yields enjoyment."

xix. Page 88, lines 16, 22 and 28.

For "*yan na*" read "*yan naḥ*:" and in line 22, for "tellest not" read "tellest to us."

The passage of the Taitt. San. referred to in p. 88, line 28, viz. ii. 5, 5, 2 (p. 585 of Bibl. Ind., vol. ii.), gives the following explanation of the words Vishṇave Sipivishṭāya: *Yajno vai Vishṇuḥ | paśavaḥ śipīḥ | yajnaḥ eva paśuḥ pratishṭhāti* | " 'Vishṇu' means sacrifice, and 'Sipi' means victims; for sacrifice depends upon victims." See also the Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa ix. 7, 9 ff. R.V. vii. 100, 6, is translated by Prof. Roth in his Illustrations of the Nirukta, p. 59. I am indebted to Prof. Aufrecht for the following remarks on "Sipivishṭa:" "This attribute of Vishṇu occurs only in R.V. vii. 99, 6 (a verse which ought to have stood only at the end of hymn 100, as hymn 99 is devoted to the celebration of Indra and Vishṇu), and in the only important verses vii. 100, 5 and 6. The A.V. does not know the word, and in the other Sanhitās and Brāhmaṇas it has been, as in other cases, adopted from the R.V. It is perfectly clear that something opprobrious was expressed by the epithet, for vii. 100, 6, means: 'Why should any one, O Vishṇu, have found a subject for reproof when thou didst say, "I am Sipivishṭa"? Do not conceal even that shape of thine from us, as thou wearest another form in public.' Now Aupamanyava says clearly that 'Sipivishṭa' is 'kutatīrthīya' (has a bad,

or contemptuous, sense).⁷⁹ The commentator on the Taittiriya Sanhita, ii. 2, 12, 5 (vol. ii., p. 390) says that it is used for *atyanta-rogin*.⁸⁰

⁷⁹ The complete words of Āupamanyava are as follows: *Śipivishṭo Viśṇur iti Viśṇor dve nāmanī bhavataḥ | kutsit-arthīyam pūrvam ity Āupamanyavaḥ* | “Āupamanyava says that there are two names of Viśṇu, Śipivishṭa and Viśṇu: of which the former has a bad sense.”

⁸⁰ I quote the commentator's remarks on the verse (vii. 100, 6, of the R.V.) at length: *He* “*Viśṇo*” *tvam* “*yad*” *yasmāt kṛāṇat* “*Śipivishṭo asmi*” *iti prakaraṇe* “*evavakṣhe*” *punaḥ pumar vakṣhi tasmāt* “*te*” *tava manasi* “*kim it pari-chakṣhyam bhūt*” *kim idam garhaṇīyam abhūt* | *na etad garhaṇīyam vṛtiḥ ova tava lajjā ity abhiprāyaḥ* | *yadyapy etan nāma loke atyantarogin* | *udghāṭita-guhyatva-vimūḍhaiḥ prayujyate* “*Śipivishṭo 'yam*” *iti tathāpy avayavārthasya brāhmaṇena vyākhyātatvād nāsty atra tava lajjā-kāraṇam* | *tasmād* “*etad varpo*” *varishṭham nāma* “*asmad mā apagūhaḥ*” *asmākam agre guḍham mā kuru* | “*yad*” *yasmāt tvam gūhanūya eva samitḥ yuddhe kavacha-śīraṇyābhyām gūḍho* “*anyarūpo babhūtha*” *babhūvīṭha* | *tad anyathā yathātathā vā bhavatu tathāpy asmad-vṛiddhau* (quere *buddhau* ?) *prastāntam idam mā gopūya ity arthaḥ* | “*O Viśṇu, since thou repeatedly sayest I am Śipivishṭa, how, then, is this, in thy mind, matter of reproach?* It is not matter of reproach; thou art needlessly ashamed: such is the purport. Although this word is in common language applied to diseased persons, to those whose nakedness is uncovered, and to fools, by those who say ‘so and so is Śipivishṭa,’ yet as the sense of its component parts is expounded in this Brahmana (ii. 5, 5, 2, see above), thou hast no occasion for shame. Do not therefore conceal from us thy most excellent name (so the commentator understands *varpas*). Inasmuch as in the battle thou hast for the sake of concealment been covered by a coat of mail and a helmet,—whether the fact be so or otherwise, do not conceal that which in our estimation deserves praise.”

The word “Śipivishṭa” also occurs in the Ś'atarudriya (Vijas. Sanhita 16, 29); and is thus commented on by Mahīdhara on the verse: *Śipivishṭāya Viśṇurūpāya* | “*Viśṇuḥ Śipivishṭaḥ*” *iti śruteḥ* | *yadvā śipīḥ paśuḥ viśṭaḥ pravishṭaḥ* | “*paśavo vai śipī*” *iti śruteḥ* | *sarva-praṇishṭo antaryāmitayā sthītā ity arthaḥ* | *yadvā* “*yajño vai śipī*” | *yajne* ‘*dhīdevatāṁ praviṣṭaḥ*’ | *śipīr ādityo vā maṇḍatādhiṣṭhātā ity arthaḥ* | *taṁai namaḥ* | “*śipī*” *tra rāmayah uchayante tair āviṣṭo bhavati*” *iti Yāskakteḥ* (Nirukta, 5, 8). “To Śipivishṭa, i.e. to him who is in the form of Viśṇu: for the Veda says Śipivishṭa is Viśṇu. Or, according to the Vedic text, that ‘śipī’ means cattle, Śipivishṭa will mean, he who enters into cattle, i.e. who is present in all creatures, pervading them. Or ‘Śipī’ means sacrifice; and so Śipivishṭa may signify him who has entered into sacrifice as its presiding deity. Or, ‘śipī’ is the sun who presides over the circle of the sky—to him be reverence; according to what Yāska says (Nirukta 5, 8) ‘Śipī’ means rays; by them he is pervaded.”

Professor Weber has the following notice of ‘Śipivishṭa’ in his Indische Studien ii. 37 f., note. This is one of those words which already gave trouble to Yāska (Nirukta 5, 9). Bhaṭṭa Bhāskara Miśra has the following: *Nirvachita-śeṣāya* (śepāya ?) | *sarvadā devadāru-vana-pradeśādau vā yathā ādityātmane* | *yathā Skanda-purāṇe Sāityachhamaṭayorjād* (?) *vā śipī vāri prachakṣate* | *taṭpānād raketāṇāṁ vā 'pi śipī* *raṁmayo matāḥ* | *tesu pravishṭaḥ, savitā Śipivishṭa ihochyate* | *yadvā paśavaḥ śipīyah* “*yajño vai Viśṇuḥ paśavāḥ śipī*” *iti śruteḥ sarva-praṇādy-antaryāmitvena pravishṭaḥ ity arthaḥ* | [Prof. W. then quotes the passage of the Mahābhārata, 13229]. “‘Śipī’ is akin to ‘śepa,’ ‘śipra,’ Kiefer, hip, Hüfte, cippus.”

This piece of information is taken from the Amarakosha, where it is said, *S'ipivishṭas tu khalatau duśccharmaṇi mahesvare*. Halāyudha and Hama-chandra have the same. Amara must have taken the two first meanings ('bald-headed' and 'leprous') from actual use; and there is no reason to doubt that even in the Vedic passages 'S'ipivishṭa' means either bald-headed, or one who has a skin disease. So long as the sense of 's'ipi' is undetermined, it will be difficult to choose between the two. The word 's'ipi' is not found used separately. For what the Taittiriya Sanhitā ii. 5, 5, 2 (quoted above) says, *yajno vai Viṣṇuḥ | pasavaḥ s'ipih* (Tāṇḍya Br. xviii. 6, 26⁸¹), and all that the modern Hindu commentators say, about 's'ipi,' is worthless. A glimmer of light is cast upon 's'ipi' by 's'ipitam,' 'defective,' in the Satap. Br. xi. 1, 4, 4.⁸²

xx. Page 91, note ⁸⁷.

See also R.V. viii. 22, 1.

xxi. Page 95, line 1.

For "ix. 166," read "ix. 100."

xxii. Page 95, line 10.

Another verse in which Viṣṇu is mentioned is one in the funeral hymn, R.V. x. 15, 3: *Ā ahaṇ pitrīm suvidatrān avitsi napātāṃ cha vikramanaṃ cha Viṣṇoḥ* | "I have found the beneficent Fathers, and the path and the stride of Viṣṇu." *Napāt* is explained by Mahidhara in Vāj. S. 19, 56, thus: *Nāsti pāto yatra sa napāto deva-yāna-pātho yatra gatānām pāto nāsti*.⁸³ "Napāta means that on which there is no

⁸¹ This passage is as follows: *Eṣhā vai Prajūpateḥ pasuṣṭhā tanūr yat S'ipivishṭaḥ | prūṇo bṛihat | prūṇaḥ eva pasuṣuḥ pratishṭhatai* | "This S'ipivishṭa is that body of Prajāpati which abides in victims (or beasts). The Bṛihat is breath: and it is breath which abides in victims." On which the commentator remarks: "*Yajno Viṣṇuḥ | pasavaḥ s'ipir*" iti śruty-antarāt | *Viṣṇoḥ Prajūpatitvāt S'ipivishṭaḥ iti* | "For another Vedic text says that Viṣṇu is sacrifice, and s'ipi denotes victims. Since Viṣṇu has the character of Prajāpati, he is S'ipivishṭa," etc.

⁸² The Commentator's note on this passage is as follows: *Akālā niruptaṃ haviḥ s'ipitam | tad-āśrito doṣa-viśeṣaḥ | tad-yuktam eva yajnasya taritram dhavati* | Prof. Aufrecht proposes to correct this as follows: *Akālā—s'ipitam | s'ipitām tano-āśrito doṣa-viśeṣaḥ*, etc. According to this corrected reading the sense will be: "An oblation offered at a wrong time is 's'ipita.' Now 's'ipita' means a particular defect residing in the body. With it the body of the sacrifice becomes affected, as it were."

fall, the path leading to the gods, on which those who go along it do not fall." Sāyaṇa on R.V. x. 15, 3 makes the word=*vināśābhāva*, "the absence of destruction."

xxiii. Page 114, line 14.

For "verse" read "sense."

xxiv. Page 119, note ^{ms}.

As regards the question whether or not ether (*ākāśa*) is eternal, see the first volume of this work, pp. 130 and 506, and the third vol., pp. 70, 106, and 164.

xxv. Page 127, line 4 from the foot.

For "*pravinakti*" read "*pravṛinakti*."

xxvi. Page 128, line 5.

The Commentator on the Taitt. Ār. (Bibl. Ind.), p. 372, explains *utkara* thus: *Veder uttara-bhāge pāṃśu-triṇādayo yatra prakshipyante so 'yam utkaraḥ* | "The *utkara* is the place on the north side of the Vēdi (altar) where dust, grass, etc., is thrown."

xxvii. Page 129, line 13.

This passage is identical with Tāṇḍya Br. vii. 5, 6, vol. i., p. 433.

xxviii. Page 262, line 6 from the foot.

The Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa xii. 6, 8, also relates that Indra, after thus treacherously slaying Namuchi, was followed by the head or something else which cried, "Slayer of a hero, thou hast injured me, thou hast injured me." This he could not destroy, either by *ṛich*, or *sāman*, but by a *Hārivarṇa* " (*tad enam pāpīyaṃ vāchaṃ vadad anavartata vira-hann adruho 'druhaḥ* " *iti* | *tad na ṛichā na sāmā apahantum asaknot* | *tad hārivarṇasya eva nidhanena apāhata*)

xxix. Page 297, line 18.

To the word "*Jarāsandha*" at the beginning of the line, prefix "582."

xxx. Page 300, line 6.

For "x. 70," read "v. 70."

xxxi. *Page 302, line 15.*

Prof. Whitney has since given up this interpretation. See p. 399.

xxxii. *Page 303, line 7.*

For "ii. 2, 29," read "xi. 2, 29."

xxxiii. *Page 303, line 22.*

For "commentorial," read "commentatorial."

xxxiv. *Page 306, line 26.*

See Wilson's *Vishṇu Purāṇa*, Dr. Hall's ed., vol. ii., pp. 77 f.

xxxv. *Page 319, line 2.*

For "x. 26," read "xii. 26."

xxxvi. *Page 400, line 11.*

For "ii. 23," read "ii. 33."

xxxvii. *Page 421, line 24.*

For "x. 99," read "x. 90."

xxxviii. *Page 471, line 12.*

For "Devavatī," read "Vedavatī."

xxxix. *Page 491, line 27.*

For "xiii. 8, 17," read "xiii 4, 17."

INDEX.

A.

Abhyagni, 320
Achhāvaka priest, 84
Aditi, 11 ff., 80, 84, 114 f., 133 f., 136, 229, 306, 365 etc.
Adhvaryu priest, 66, 160
Adhvaryu Brāhmaṇa, 14
Āditeya, 117
Aditya, 14, 26 f., 46, 65, etc.
 — is lord of **Brahmā**, **Vishṇu** and **Rudra**, 475
Āditya-hridaya, a hymn, 474
Ādityas, 14 f., 54, 114 ff.
Æschylus, **Prometheus Vincetus**, 66
Agastya, 473, 480, 485
Agnāyi, 161
Agni, 9, 22 f., 26, 28 f., 46, 58, 61, 66, 70, 76, etc.
 — texts in praise of, 111
 — one of triad of gods, 66, 70, 160 ff.
 — breaks down castles, 312
 — his eight forms and names, 340 ff.
 — enamoured of **Rishis'** wives, 352 ff.
 — his tongues, 429, 497
Agnihotra, 57
Agni Purāṇa iv., 5—161
Ahalyā, 48, 496
Ahankāra, 42 f.
Āhavanīya fire, 359
Ahi, 82, 101
Āhṛiti, 253
Āindra-vaiṣṇava oblation, 79
Air, 46
Āitareya Brāhmaṇa—
 i. 1—129
 — 30—129
 ii. 8—289
 iv. 22—9
 vi. 15—84, 123
 — 33—319
Āitadā, 319

Āitadā-pralāpa, 320
Āitiḥāsikas, 92
Aja, 378, 383 (see **Brahmā**)
Ākāśa (ether), 33, 119
Ākhaṇḍala (appellation of **Indra**), 196
Amaravati, 246
Ambikā, 321, 422
 — is sister of **Rudra**, according to the **Yajurvedas**, 321. See **Umā**.
Ambitāmā, 424
Amśa, or **Amśu**, 14, 115
Ānakadundubhi (name of **Vasudeva**), 273
Anarāyaṇa, 457 f.
Andhaka, 336, 472
Angas, 246
Angiras, 91
Angirases, 107, 116
Anuruddha, grandson of **Kṛishṇa**, 435
Anṛita-deva, 410
Antaka, 336, 472
Anukramanikā, 77
Anuṣṭubh, 162
Āpāh. See **Waters**
Āparnā, 431. See **Umā**
Apsarases, obtained by **Kṣatriyas** slain in battle, 277
Apsarases, 461
Āramati, sense of the word, 317
Arbuda, 107
Ardhaka, 336
Arjuna, 161 and passim
Arjuna (**Kārtavīrya**), 177, 253
Ārthavādas, 131
Arundhati, 354
Arunmukha Yati, 493
Arurmaghas, 493
Āryas, 76
Ārya Bhaṭṭa, 110
Āryaman, 14, 68, 78
Āsani, 342, 347
Asita Devala, 432
Asura (the Spirit), 109
Asuras, 26 f., 40, 64, 68 ff., etc.

Asuras, their castles, 203, 223 ff.
Āsuri, 123
Āsvatthāman, 186
Āśvamedha, or horse-sacrifice, 167 ff.
Āśvins, 46, 48, 68, 76, 128, etc.
Atharva-sīras, 166, 172
 — quoted, 356
Atharva-veda, quoted or referred to—
 2, 1, 3—6
 — 27, 6—332, 403
 3, 16, 1—313
 — 20, 4, 7—96
 4, 2, 1—8—16 f., 18
 — 21, 7—312
 — 28, 1 ff.—332
 — 30, 5—318
 5, 3, 3—96
 — 21, 11—333
 — 25, 5—96
 — 26, 7—65
 6, 93, 1, 2—333, 403
 — 141, 1—333
 7, 26, 1—3—68
 — 26, 4—7—63
 — 42, 1, 2—313
 — 44, 1—83
 — 50, 6—106
 — 79, 4—16
 — 80, 3—16
 8, 1—333, 368, 403
 — 2, 7—333, 403
 — 5, 10—333
 — 8, 11—337
 9, 2—4
 — 6, 29—63
 — 7, 7—334
 — 10, 17—76
 10, 1, 23—334, 403
 — 2, 7—23
 — 3, 9—11
 — 7, 25—11
 — 7, 7 ff.—18 f.
 — 8, 2, 11, 44—19
 — 8, 29—258
 11, 2, 1—31—334 ff., 403
 — 6, 2—115
 — 6, 9—338, 403

Atharva-veda, continued—

- 12, 1, 8—24
 — 4, 17—338, 403
 12, 2, 26—5
 — 4, 4, 28 ff.—338, 403 f.
 16, 6, 1-7—338
 18, 1, 40—308
 19, 10, 9—84
 — 53, 10—27
 20, 17, 6—106
 — 87, 3—103
 — 89, 9—106
 — 99, 2—104
 — 106, 26—89
 — 111, 1—89
 — 114, 1—104
 — 126, 1—106

Atigrāhyas, 62

Atikāya, son of Ravana,
 412

Aufrecht (Prof. Th.), his
 aid acknowledged, 7, 59,
 78, 81, 84, 90 f., 102,
 106, 117, 152, 232, 281,
 302, 306, 310, 314, 409,
 411, 494, 502, 504

— his Catalogue of
 Sanskrit MSS., 151, 188,
 228, etc.

Āpamanyava, 88, 505

Āurnavābha, 64 ff., 97,
 156, 439

Avindhya, Minister of Rā-
 vana, 413

B.

Babru, 212

Badari, 188, 232, etc.

Bāhikas, 328, 339

Bahvrich Śruti, 144

Balarāma or Baladeva,
 245, 249, 258, 260

Balarāma incarnation, 156

Bali, 133 ff., 155, 465

Banerjee's (Rev. K. M.)
 dialogues on Hindu phi-
 losophy, 49

Bangaa, 246

Benfey's (Prof. Th.) Glos-
 sary to Sāma-veda, 11,
 81 f., 102

— translation of Sāma-
 veda, 63 f., 87, 89

— of Rīgveda, in
 Orient und Occident,
 63 f., 68, 102, 229, 302,
 315 f.

Bhadra, 212

Bhadrakālī, 416

Bhaga, 14, 80, 115

— his eyes knocked
 out by Rudra, 200, 268,
 383

Bhagavadgītā, 169, 381

— 3, 20 ff., and 4,
 7 f., quoted, 53, 153

Bhāgavata Purāṇa quoted

1, 3, 7—36

— 3, 1 ff., & 26 f.—156

— 3, 16—27

2, 5, 34—44

— 6, 21 ff.—10

— 10, 10—44

3, 12, 28 ff.—47

— 20, 12 ff.—43

— 26, 50 ff.—43

— 30, 10—381

4, 1, 47 ff.—378

— Sects. 2-7—377 ff.

— 5, 20—202

— 25, 6—381

5, 19, 5—456

6, 6, 24, 36—121

— 6, 41—202

8, Sects. 15-23—137 ff.

— 23, 29—72

— 24, 4 ff.—39

10, 1, 21 ff.—254

— 33, 27 ff.—49 f., 182, 253

— 34, 8—249

— Sects. 43 ff.—215

— 64th and previous sect-
 ions—178

— 74, 34—206

Bhagīratha, 365

Bharadvāja, 96, 486

Bharata, epithet of Agni, 28

Bharata, brother of Rāma,
 175, 445 f.

Bhūva, 43, 328, 332

Bhavas, 331

Bhavāntī, 405

Bhavitra, 81

Bhīmasena, 211

Bhīshma, 206

Bhīshmarka, 215

Bhogavati, 253

Bhoja, 253

Bhrigu, 177

— reviles Rudra, 382

— his beard plucked
 out by Rudra, 383

Bhrigus, 140

Bhū, 14

Bhūr, Kauyah, svar, 25

Bhūtādi, 42 f.

Bhuvana, 9, 369

Boar, or Varāna, 39, 67

Boar incarnation, 27, 33 f.,
 36 ff., 156, 390

Böhtlingk and Roth's
 Lexicon, 13, and passim

Bollensen's (Dr.) articles
 in Jour. Germ. Or. Soc.,
 and Benfey's Orient und
 Occident, 306 f.

Bombay edition of Rāmā-
 yana, 33, 131, & passim
 Brahma, 7, 19 f., 29 f., and
 passim

Brahma (the Veda), 22
 Brahṁā, 10, 18, 31 f., and
 passim

— born in an egg, 31 f.

— sprung from the

waters and ether, 33

— becomes a boar, 33, 39

— takes the form of a

fish, 38

— called Nārāyana, 31,

37, 39, 164

— springs from a lotus
 issuing from Viṣṇu's

navel, 43, 230, 267, 477

— his passion from his

own daughter, 47 f.

— the first god in the

Trimūrti, 163, 280

— grants boons to Rā-
 vana and Atikāya, etc.,

167, 412, 458, 470

— informs Rāma of his

divinity, 181

— created by Rudra,

188, 194

— created by Kṛishṇa,
 or Viṣṇu, 230, 267,
 273

— worships Linga and
 Rudra, 192 f.

— acts as charioteer to

Rudra, 222, 226

— grants boon to Tā-
 rakā's sons, 223

— praises Kṛishṇa in a
 hymn, 236

— is son of Vāsudeva,
 237

— mediates between
 Viṣṇu, or Kṛishṇa,

and Rudra, 240, 279

— promises to Rudra a
 share in sacrifices, 374

— is present at sacri-
 fices, 167, 374, 378

— is father of Dakṣha,
 378

Brahmā, his dispute with Vishnu allayed by the *Liṅga*, 388
 — is a form of Rudra, 392
 — Rudra springs from his forehead, 392
 — identified with the soul of the Universe, 367 f.
 — curses Kumbhakarna, 462
 — his promise to the gods, 471
 — Aditya called his lord, 475
 — asks Vishnu to become Preserver, 477
 — welcomes Rāma to heaven, 479
 — is mental father of Pulastya, 485
 — offers boons to Rāma, 485
 — creates the first woman, 496. (See *Hiraṇyagarbha*, *Prajāpati*, *Viśvakarma*).
Brahma-kalpa, 85
Brahman (priest), 66
Brahmapati, 12, 77, 162
Brahmavaivarta Purāṇa, 182
Bṛihadāranyaaka, 3, 22, 24, 29
Bṛihaddevatā, i., 13—163
Bṛihadgiri, 492
Bṛhaspati, 66, 96, 152, 154, 162
Bṛihat, 96, 162
Burnouf's Bhāgavata Purāṇa, 39, 147
Buddha, 212
 — incarnation, 156

C.

Chaitraratha forest, 230, 252
Chandakapsika riṣi, 292
Charaka Brāhmaṇa, 92
Chāraṇa, 177
Chārvāka, Rākhaṣa, friend of Duryodhana, 204 f.
Chāsturnasya, 57
Chākeśusha Manyantara, 120
Chedia, 205, 215, 246
Chandas, 163
Chāndogya Upanishad quoted, 12, 26, 183

Churning the ocean for Amṛita, 50, 365
Colebrooke's (Mr. H. T.), *Essays*, 66, 110, 245, etc.
Cowell's (Prof. E. B.), *Maitri Upanishad*, 267
 — translation of the *Kaushitaki Upanishad*, 493

D.

Dadhichi, 240, 374
Dadhikrū, 85
Daityas, 110
Daityasenā, 350
Dakṣha, 12 ff., 28, 115, 117 f.
 — his sacrifice disturbed, 200, 240, 372 f.
 — reviles and curses Rudra, 379 f.
 — his daughters, 385
Dambhodbhava, 236
Dānavas, or *Danujas*, 39, 110, 167
Darsa, 67
Daśaratha, 167, 171 ff.
Dasyus, 248
Dattātreyā incarnation, 156
Dawn, daughter of *Prajāpati*, 45
Death, personified, 55, 57 f.
Devakī, mother of Krishna, 181, 183, 257 ff.
Devārāta, 177, 372
Devasenā, 350
Devavatī, 487
Devayāni, 154
Devī. See *Umā*
Devībhāgavata quoted, 267
Devīnāhatmya quoted, 435 f.
Dhammapada, referred to, 201
Dhanvantari incarnation, 156
Dharma, 156, 239, 241, 378
Dhātṛi, 14, 96 f., 115, 204
Dhūrjati, 205
Diti, mother of *Daityas*, 237, 305, 365
Dravinodas, 95
Dandubhī, a *Gandharvī*, 484
Durgā, 426. See *Umā*
Durgachārya, commentator on the *Nirukta*, 65, 74, 117, 161, 355, 409

Durgā-stava, 427, 498
Durgati, 428
Durvāsa, 199, 204, 245, 275, 477
Duryodhana, disbeliever in Krishna's supernatural character, 216 ff., 220 ff.
 — desires to celebrate *Rājastūya* sacrifice, 283, 293
 — celebrates *Vaiṣṇava* sacrifice, 293 f.
Dūshana, 472
Dustakanta, 457
Dvārakā, 214, etc.
Dwarf incarnation, 66, 107 f., 130 ff., 156
Dyaus, 46, etc.

E.

Earth, the goddess, 38, 46, 80, 161
 — her burthen lightened, 215, 255. Compare p. 161
Egg, mundane, 23 ff., 30, 41 ff.
Ekalavya, 249
Ekapānā, 431
Ekapātālī, 431
Ekavīmśa-stoma, 162
Emūsha, 28
Entity and Non-entity, 4
Eurypides, his *Helena* and *Orestes* quoted, 255
Evayāmarut, 81

G.

Gada, 246
Gandhamādana, 240, 252
Gandhāras, 245, 249
Gandharva, 6, 112, 165
Gaṇeśa, 278
Gangā, 270, 430
 — her descent, 365
Gangādāra, 374
Garuda, 189, etc.
Garudī, 353
Gaṇi, 359, 422. See *Umā*
Gautama, 49, 496
Gaviputra, 482
Gayatrias, 65
Gāyatrī, 123, 161
Genesis, Book of, 48
Gharma, 96, 126
Ghora Āngirasa, 183
Girivraja, 288
 'Gods, how they become immortal, 54

Gods, how they became superior to the Asuras, 58
 — how they became unequal, 61
 — by birth are alone objects of sacrifice, 131 ;
 "work - gods" may themselves offer sacrifice, 132, 496
Gokarna, 284
Goldstücker's (Prof. Th.) Pāṇini, or Mānavakalpa Sūtra, 5, 169
 — Sanskrit Dictionary, 62
Gopati, 253
Gopis, 50 f.
Gorresio's Rāmāyaṇa, 34, and passim
 — opinion regarding Rāma's incarnation, 447, 481
 — opinion regarding Śiva's worship in Southern India, 411
 — remark by him, 415
Govinda, 38, 219
Graha (Rahu), 190
Grahas, 62
Guha, 350. See Kārtikeya
Guṇas, 43

H.

Habakkuk, iii. 6—72
Hall (Dr. Fitzedward), his aid acknowledged, 374, 377, 407
 — his edition of Wilson's Vishṇu Purāṇa, 3, and passim
Hansa, name of Kṛishṇa, 264
Hansa, name of Brahmā, 490
Hanumat, 456
 — his merits as a grammarian, 490
Hari, 39. See Vishṇu
Harivaṁśa quoted, or referred to—
 line 35,—32
 43,—393
 171,—120
 549,—13
 589,—120
 940,—431
 2725,—151
 3236,—433
 4169,—151

Harivaṁśa, continued—

4166,—151
 6579,—215
 6833,—250
 7418,—83
 9423,—435
 10235,—435
 10660,—278
 11548,—120
 12195,—151
 12425,—32
 12456,—120
 12900,—151
Sections 183 f,—178
Haug's (Prof. M.) translation of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, 9, 84, 290, 320, 493
 — dissertation by him referred to, 289
Hayagrīva, 39
Heaven (sva), 80
Heti, 486
Himālaya, 230, 269
Himavat, 385, 430
Hiranyagarbha, 15 ff, 31 ff, 188, 355, 388
Hiranyakāshipu, 190, 215.
Hiranyapura, 234.
Hotri priest, 66
Human sacrifices, whether practised in the Vedic age, 289
Hri, 168
Hrishīkeśa, 181, 203, etc.

I.

Ikshvāku, 445
Ilā, 161
Immortality, how acquired
 "by the gods, 54 ff.
Incarnation of a portion of Vishṇu, 253
 — of white and black hairs of Vishṇu, 257 ff.
Indha, 22
Indische Studien (Prof. A. Weber's), referred to or quoted, 23, 28, 123, 200, 277, etc.
Indra, 15, 20, 22, 25 f., 40, 48, 61, 64, 66, 160, etc.
 — texts in which his greatness is celebrated, 99 ff.
 — celebrated conjointly with Vishṇu, 74, 78, 83, 86
 — with other gods, 108
Indra conquered by Indrajit, 495
 — corrupts Ahalya, 49, 496
Indradymna, 253
Indrajit, son of Ravana, and conqueror of Indra, 411, 417 ff, 450, 494
Indrāṇi, 406
Interpolated passages in Rāmāyaṇa, 479
Indu (soma), 77
Irāvati, 253
Isaiah, xi. 6—190
 — xl. 22; xlv. 12, 18—86
 J.
Jagati, 123, 162
Jaigishavya, 432
Jaimini, criticized by Commentator on Rāmāyaṇa, 496
Jamadagni, 177, 322
Jambavat, 146
Jambavati, wife of Kṛishṇa, 189
Jambha, 234, 245, 249
Jambudvīpa, 440
Janaka, father of Sītā, 175, 372, 464 f.
Janaloka, 38, 146, 388
Jarū, rākshasi, a household goddess, 291
Jarāsandha, 212, 246
 — destines human victims for Rudra, 288 ff.
 — slain by Bhīmasena, 291
 — his birth related, 291
Jarūthi, 253
Jāvali, 171
Jayadratha, 184, 186, 286
 — worships Rudra, 286
Jayanta, an Aditya, 118
Jayanta, son of Indra, 495
Jayanti, daughter of Indra, 153 f.
Jayantiṭha, 300
Jiva, 44
Job xvi. 7—101
Journal of American Oriental Society, referred to or quoted, 48, 398
Jvara (fever), 374
Jyeshtha sūman, 193
Jyotiṣṭoma, 62

K.

Ka (Prajāpati or Kāyapa), 15, 138

- Kaikasi**, mother of Rāvaṇa, 487 f.
Kaikēyī, 173, 175, 445 f.
Kāṇasa, 230, etc.
Kaitabha, a Dānava, 280, 433, 435
Kaivalya Upanishad, 362
Kālakanjas, 234
Kālānemi, an asura, 264
Kālī, 416, 426, 427, 429. See *Umā*.
Kālīnga, 202, 249
Kalki incarnation, 156
Kamalāsana (Brahmā), 43
Kāmbhoja, 243
Kanadhūma penance, 152f.
Kandarpa, 364
Kanyākumārī, 427
Kansa, 245, 255, 480
Kapardin, epithet of Rudra, 301, 394
 — epithet of Pūshan, 301
 — of the Tritēus, 301
Kapila incarnation, 156
Karālī, 425, 429. See *Umā*
Karṇa, 221 ff, 227 f.
Kartavīrya, 253
Karttikeya, his birth according to the Mahābhārata, 349
 — according to the Rāmāyana, 364
Kārtiśha, 214
Kaserumat, 253
Kasyapa, 13, 27, 33 f, 118, 133, 136, 177, 322, 369
Kataka, commentator on the Rāmāyana, on interpolations in that work, 480 f.
Kāthaka, 319, 396
Kātyāyana's srauta sūtras, 126
Kātyāyānī, 360, 426
Kausalyā, 171, 173, 175, 445
Kaushitaki Brāhmaṇa, 343, 423
Kauṣṭika 193
Kauṣṭiki, 234
Kaustubha gem, 263
Kena Upanishad, quoted, 420
Kēśin (the long-haired), 318
Kēśin (his car), 336
Kēśin (a Dānava), 350
Ketumatī, 487
Khaṇḍaparaśu, 240
Khāṇḍava, 128
Khāṇḍava forest, 161, 246
Khara, a rākṣasa, brother of Rāvaṇa, 471, 482
Kimpūruṣa, 289
Kirāta, form of, taken by Rudra, 230
Kirti, 163
Kośala Videhas, 328
Krātha, 253
Kṛiṣṇu, 75, 316
Krishṇa, his adulteries, 18ff.
 — his self-consciousness, 178
 — identified with Rāma, 181
 — son of Devaki, and pupil of Ghora, 183
 — renders homage to Mahādeva, 186 ff.
 — receives boons from Mahādeva and Umā, 195
 — is a great devotee, 251
 — performs a ceremony for a son, 259
 — recommends worship of Durgā, 205
 — his supernatural character disputed by Ś'isupāla and Duryodhana, 205 ff, 281
 — explanation of his names, 218
 — identified with the rishi Nārāyaṇa, 185, 228
 — his supernatural power and various exploits, 245
 — produced from the black hair of Viṣṇu, 257 ff.
 — identified with the Supreme Spirit, 50, 208, 240, 264 ff.
 — Brahṁā and Rudra produced from him, 230, 267, 273
 — one with Rudra, 268, 280
 — his fight with Rudra, 279
 — goes to Dvāravatī from fear of Jarāsandha, 288
 — summary of views regarding him, 281 f.
Kṛita age, 196
Kṛittikūs, 350
Kṣhayadvīra, sense of the word, 301 f, 399, 507
Kuener's (Prof. A.) Historisch-Kritisch Onderzoek referred to, 320
Kuhn's (Prof.) opinion referred to, 424
Kuhn and Schleicher's Breiträge, etc., 81
Knllūka on Manu, 3, 31.
Kumāra, 151
Kumāra (a boy), applied to Agni, 341
Kumārila Bhaṭṭa, 48
Kumbhakarna, brother of Rāvaṇa, 462, 482
Kūrma (tortoise) incarnation, 27, 156
Kūrma Purāṇa, 376, 472
Kurukṣetra, 126, 128
Kuśa, son of Rāma, 478
Kutea, 162
Kuvera, 180, 366, 482 f, 486
 L.
Langlois's Harivaṁśa, 250
Lassen's (Prof. Christian) Indische Alterthumskunde, or, Indian Antiquities, referred to, 136, 169, 211, 243, 245, 283, etc.
Lakṣhmaṇa, brother of Rāma, 175, 445, etc.
 — wounded by Indrajit, 449 ff.
 — ascends to heaven, 478
Lakṣmi, 182, 460 f, 460, 466
Lava, son of Rāma, 478
Linga Purāṇa quoted—
 1, 3, 28 ff—42
 1, 4, 59 ff—39
 1, 17, 5-52—386
 1, 19, 8 ff—391
 2, 28—426
Linga worship, 192, 405 ff.
Lingin (receptacle of the linga), 368
Lokampriya, 57
Lokāyatikas, 138
Madhu, a Dānava, 230, 435
Mādhuki, a muni, 123
Madhura, a city, 478
Madhusūdana, 133
Maghavat (Indra), 105 f.
Mahābhārata, quoted or referred to—
 i. *Ādiparvan*.
 1215—219
 2519—118
 2592—11
 2598—118
 2785—80

Mahābhārata, continued.

- 7049—286
7306—259
8196—246
- ii. Sabhā-parvan.
582—297
626—287
653—288
729—291
861—289
869—278
1211—205
1333—206
1410—212
- iii. Vana-parvan.
166 ff.—117 f., 474
192—371
461—229
471—251
484—136
616—216
1518—184, 230
6054—284
8168—285
8349—285
10209—369
10316—48
10368—388
10932—38
11001—284
12797—38
14287—351
14427—350
15274—293
15777—286
15872—481
15999—285
16148—413
16492—413
16529—415
- iv. Virāṭa-parvan.
178—425, 433
- v. Udyoga-parvan.
130—243
147—243
320—261
414—496
1875—247
1917—232
2527—216
2560—218
3459—235
3501—119
4407—250
4409—210
4418—220
- vi. Bhishma-parvan.
793 ff.—205, 432
2932—236

Mahābhārata, continued.

- vii. Droṇa-parvan.
382—244
401—191
419—235
2224—479
2355—243
2838—184
9575—203
9632—199
- viii. Karna-parvan.
1625—221
- ix. Śāilya-parvan.
2434—261
3619—294
- x. Sauptika-parvan.
289—191
312—186
780—406
786—373
- xii. Śānti-parvan.
241—369
1414—295
1500—263
1748—287
3655—277
6775—35
6805—35
7092—118
10226—373
10272—374
12943—135
13133—266
13152—185, 266
13171—63
13228—219
13229—88
13265—238
13337—241
13723—393
- xi. Anuśāsana-parvan.
590—187
1160—406
6295—268
6397—189
6889—189
7092—118
7232—369
7356—274
7402—198
7510—405
- xiv. Aśvamedhika-parvan.
1536—275
- Mahādeva. See Rudra
Maharloka, 146, 388
Mahat, 42
Mahāvīra, 126
Mahendra, 150. See Indra
Mahādhara's commentary

- on Vajasaneyi Samhitā,
7, 15 f., 17, 104
Maitri Upanishad, quoted,
267
Makha, 125 ff.
Makhavat, 126
Makha Vaiṣṇava, 128
Mālatī-Mādhava, 430
Māli, 487
Mālini, 482
Mālyavat, 487
Mānasa (a name of the
Creator), 35
Mandara (a mountain), 279
Mandhātṛi incarnation,
156
Mandodari, Ravana's
queen, 455, 466
Man-lion (nara-siṃha) in-
carnation, 136, 166
Manojavā (one of the
tongues of Fire), 429, 498
Manthara, 484 f.
Manu, quoted—
i. 5 ff.—30
— 32 ff.—25, 48
iii. 2 —413
vii. 38 —413
viii. 82 —48
ix. 305 —117
— 308 —148
xii. 91 —30
— 121 —164
Manu, the bard, 27
Manu Svāyambhuva, 13
— Vaivasvata, 33, 113
Manvantara, (Chākshusha
and Vaivasvata), 120
Manyu, 349
Marichi, 33 f., 47, 118, 120
Marka, 155
Mārkaṇḍeya, 279
— Purāṇa, 343,
435, 497
Marus, 128
Maruta, 45, 68, 76, etc.
Mārtāṇḍa, 13, 15, 115
Mataparikhā, 49
Matsya (or Fish) incarna-
tion, 156
Matsya Purāṇa, 45
— quoted, 48
— 47th section
of, abstracted & quoted,
151 ff.
Maya, an Asura, 223
Meghanāda (or Indrajit),
son of Ravana, 460, 495
Mena, wife of Himavat,
385, 430 f.

- Mera**, 42
Mithilā, 175
Mitra, 14, 68, 74
Molesworth's Marathi Dictionary, 53
Mrida, 379. See **Rudra**
Mridāni, 405
Mūjavat, 322
Müller's (Prof. Max) edition of Rigveda, 314
 — his translation of ditto, 66, 68, 105, 111, 301, 314
 — **Ancient Sanskrit Literature**, 5, 17, 48, 103, 108, 113, 129, 289 f.
 — translation by him in *Zeitschr. der D. M. G.*, 105
 — article on funeral rites of the **Brāhmanas** in ditto, 415
 — his aid acknowledged, 498
Mundaka Upanishad, 29
 — i 2, 4 — 429
Muni, the, 318 f.
Munjakesavāt, 240
Mura, 245, 250
Mūradeva, 410
 N.
Nagnajit, 245, 249
Nahum, i. 3—64
Nairuktas (or etymologists), 66, 92, 169
Nalakūvara, 461, 485
Namuchi, slain by **Indra** with foam, 261, 472
Nandīśvara, 380, 460 f.
Nara, 31 f., 119, 156, 185, 228 ff.
Nārāḥ, 31 f.
Nārada, 269
 — incarnation, 156
 — denounces **Brahmā**, Preface, vi.
Nārada-pañcharātra, edited by **Rev. K. M. Banerjē**, Preface, vi.
Naraka, an **Asura**, 245, 250
Nārāsaiṃsa, 96
Nārāsaiṃsa's hymns, 159
Nārāyaṇa, 31 f., 37, 119, 156, 185, 228 ff.
Nara-siṃha, or **man-lion** incarnation, 135, 156, 216
Nārāyaṇa, commentator on the **Mahābhārata**, 119
Nārāyaṇas, cowherds so called, 243
Nārāyaṇīya Upanishad, 426
Narmada river, 140
Nelkunda, 427
Nidra Kalarūpini, 433
Nighaṣṭu—
 2, 7, 10, 17—310, 316
 2, 10—103
 2, 17—74
 6, 3—159
Nikumbhilā, place of sacrifice, 416
Nilakantha, name of **Rudra**, 427
Nilakantha, commentator on the **Mahābhārata**, 260, 265
Nilarudra Upanishad quoted, 363
Nimi, 372
Nirmochana, 250
Nirriti, 78, 313
Nirukta, quoted or referred to—
 1, 15—355, 403
 1, 17—320
 1, 20—69
 2, 6, 7—69, 73
 2, 11—441
 2, 13—117
 2, 17—74
 3, 7—165
 3, 10—190
 3, 21—19
 4, 19—71
 4, 24—310
 5, 7, 8, 9—88, 505
 5, 11—81
 6, 11—332
 6, 15—8, 51
 6, 17—82
 6, 22—75
 7, 4ff—65, 157 ff.
 7, 25—74
 7, 29—114
 8, 11—309
 9, 1—28, and 35 ff—159
 9, 9—159
 9, 10—310
 10, 6ff—299, 314
 10, 10—100
 10, 26—9
 10, 27—8
 10, 32—111
 10, 44—71
 11, 9—310
 11, 23—13, 159
 11, 49—420
Nirukta, continued—
 12, 19—64, 156
 12, 23—71
 12, 26—318 f.
 12, 36—115
Nirukta, Pariśiṣṭa—
 1 — 114
 1, 1—104
 2, 1—71
 2, 10—8
 2, 12—94
 2, 21—76
Nishad, a sort of **tree**, 265
Nishādas, 328
Nisunda, 252
Nivātakavaḥas, 234
 O.
Ogha, a **rākṣasa**, 250
 P.
Padma Purāṇa, quoted, 278
Padma-kalpa, 37
Panchadasastoma, 162
Panchajanya, an **asura**, 246
Panchaviṃśa Brahmapa quoted, 129
Pāṇchi, a **muni**, 123
Pāṇini, 405, 490, 502
Pāṇkti metre, 162
Pannagas, 199
Parameshthin, 19, 26
Parasurāma, 156, 170, 175 ff., 227, 287
Parīṣah, 128
Parījāta tree, 246
Parikṛt, 57
Parjanya, 82, 111, 120, 160
Pārvatī. See **Umā**, and **Himavat**
Paśubandha, 57
Paśupati, 289, 336 f. See **Rudra**.
Paśupata weapon, 184, 232
Paśupata rite, 361
Pātāla, 38, 110
Paulomas, 234
Pemplus, 427
Pictet's (M. Adolphe) Origines Indo-Européennes, 81
Pinākin, 191. See **Rudra**
Pisachas, 188
Pitṛa, 245
Pliny, 427
Prabhāsa, 252
Prāchyas, 328
Pradhāna, 3, 42, 194, 338
 See **Prakṛiti**.

Pradyumna, son of **Kṛishṇa**, 221, 246, 436
Prāgyotisha, 214, 253
Prahēti, 486
Prahāda, 149, 152, 154 f.
Prajāti, 8, 15, 17 f, 28 f, 33, 37, 54 ff, 97
 — created by the gods out of seven men, 22
 — creates the *Veda*, 22
 — creates the waters, 22, 439
 — born in an Egg, 25
 — takes the form of a tortoise, 27
 — **Agni**, **Indra**, etc., spring from him, 26
 — produced **Agni** from his mouth, 28
 — is **Dakṣa**, 28
 — is supporter of the universe, 28
 — seeks to conquer worlds, 29
 — his passion for his own daughter, 45
 — half of him mortal, 55
 — father both of Gods and *Asuras*, 59
 — gives names to the *Kumāra*, 241, 245
 — produces **Agni**, **Vāyu**, **Chandramas**, and *Ushas*, 345
 — gods depart from him, 348. See *Brahmā*.
Prajāpati in a secondary sense applied to *Kasyapa*, *Manu*, 138, 273
Prakṛiti, 263, 389. See *Pradhāna*
Pralambha, 245
Pramathas, 379
Prāṣṭra, 200
Prasūti, daughter of *Manu*, and wife of *Dakṣa*, 378
Prathas, 96
Pravargya, 126, 128
Prayati, 4
Prisui, 309, 311, 333
Prisnigarbha, 264
Prishṭhas, 182
Prishā, mother of *Arjuna*, 53 f., 63, 185
Prithivī, 161
Prithurāmi, 492
Prishu incarnation, 156
Pulastya, 482, 485
Puloman, 496

Punjikasthalā, daughter of *Varuṇa*, 458, 462
Punjishṭhas, 328
Purandara (*Indra*), 120
Puraudhi, 82
Purikayas, 337
Pūrnamāsa, 57
Pūru, 103
Purūravas, 457
Purusha, 10, 19, 33, 42, 44, 73, 194
Purusha incarnation, 156
Purusha Nārāyaṇa, 29
Purusha-sūkta, 10, 29
Purushottama, 252
Purushottama of the *Chedias*, 297
Pūshan, 68, 76, 95, 115, etc.
 — his teeth knocked out by *Rudra*, 200, 383
Pushpotkata, mother of *Rāvaṇa*, 482, 487
Pūtānā, female demon killed by *Kṛishṇa*, 210
Putriyā ishti, 170
 R.
Radheya, 286
Rāhu, 190
Raivata-sāman, 163
Raghuvamśa quoted, 53, 117, 138, 153
Rajas, 11, 71, 267, 276
Rājendralal Mitra (*Babu*), his translation of the *Chhāndogya Upanishad* quoted, 26
Rajasas, 337
Rājasūya sacrifice, 205, 287
Rākā, 482, 487
Rākshasas, their origin at early history, 486
 — did they specially worship *Rudra*? 411
Rāma, represented as an incarnation of *Vishṇu*, 168 ff.
 — his miraculous birth discussed, 170 ff., 441 ff., 481
 — ignorant of his own nature, 180
 — told by *Brahmā* who he is, 181
 — the gods anxious about him, 447
 — congratulated by gods, 472
 — says he can easily destroy *Rākshasas*, 476

Rāma wounded by *Indra-jit*, 450
 — recovers his senses, 452
 — told by *Vāyu* who he is, 453
 — does not know *Garuḍa*, 453
 — defeats *Rāvaṇa*, 457
 — defied by *Rāvaṇa*, 463
 — advised to utter a hymn to the Sun, 473
 — his divinity owned by *Mandodari*, 467
 — ascends to heaven, 479
Rāmāyaṇa quoted or referred to—
 i. *Bāla-kāṇḍa*.
 1, 4, 81 ff., 84, 86—443
 1, 13 & 18—442
 2, 32—443
 3, 3 ff.—441
 4, 14—442
 8, 1—170
 11, 1—170
 11, 20—171
 12, 1—171
 13, 36, 54—171
 14, 1—165
 16, 1—173
 17, 1—173
 18, 1 ff.—173, 444
 19, 1 ff.—174
 19, 10 ff.—444
 23, 10—164
 29, 9—250
 31, 2 ff.—130
 32, 2 ff.—132
 35, 20—364
 36, 13—430
 37, 3, 5—364 f.
 42 & 43 —365
 45, 21—366
 46, 26—50
 48, 16 ff.—48
 49, 1 ff.—49
 66, 7—372
 66, 13—404
 75, 14—176
 ii. *Ayodhyā-kāṇḍa*.
 108, 3—188
 110, 2—33
 119, 2—34
 iii. *Aranya-kāṇḍa*.
 24, 19—448
 30, 20—447
 30, 27—371, 471

Rāmāyana, continued.

30,	36—373
31,	10—373
32,	5—361
58,	1—443
70,	2—373
iv. <i>Kishkindhā-kāṇḍa.</i>	
5,	30—371
40,	11—443
40,	54—439
43,	20—366
43,	46—480
43,	54—367
44,	27—366
44,	46—368
44,	117—367
v. <i>Sundara-kāṇḍa.</i>	
12,	39—373
24,	44—416
89, 1 ff.—	370, 419, 483
91,	3—477
vi. <i>Yuddha-kāṇḍa.</i>	
7,	18—412
17,	1—483
18,	22—476
19,	33—416
26,	8 ff.—453
33,	26—455
34,	7—464
39,	21—441
40,	44—463
41,	2—463
44,	32—416
45,	50—449
51,	17—371
54,	23—373
55,	88—371
59,	105—455
60,	5—457
60,	67—462
60,	11—462
63,	2—462
63,	13—418
64,	11—418
65,	12—419
66,	2—418
71,	28, 31—412 f.
72,	62—413
73,	37—371
76,	93—371
84,	14—418
85,	12—418
86,	14—419
87,	2—418
93,	30—413
93,	55—413
95,	5—468
95,	25—469

Rāmāyana, continued.

96,	10—414
106,	1—473
111,	23—413
113,	5—466
113,	49—494
113,	112—414
119,	1—173
vii. <i>Uttara-kāṇḍa.</i>	
Sections 1—11—485 ff.	
4,	9—439
16,	1—460
17,	1—458
17,	35—451
19,	—457
23,	—480
25,	2, 7—416
27,	30—495 ff.
30,	12—418
30,	19—497
31,	42—406, 420
36,	44—490
37,	—480
59,	—480
103 ff.	—477
<i>Rāmopakhyaṇa</i> , story of	
<i>Rāma</i> as told in the	
<i>Vana-parvan</i> of the	
<i>Mahābhārata</i> , 481 ff.	
<i>Rāma's</i> story as related in	
the <i>Drona-parvan</i> of the	
<i>Mahābhārata</i> , 479	
<i>Rathantara</i> , 96, 161, 193 f.	
<i>Ratnagarbha</i> , commen-	
tator on <i>Vāṣṇu Purāṇa</i> ,	
quoted, 257	
<i>Rambhā</i> , an <i>Āpsaras</i> , 458,	
461	
<i>Rātri-sūkta</i> , 498	
<i>Rāvaṇa's</i> birth, 482, 488	
— his austerities, 482,	
488	
— obtains boon from	
<i>Brahmā</i> , 482, 488	
— drives <i>Kuvera</i> from	
<i>Lankā</i> , 483	
— acts oppressively,	
483	
— <i>Brahmā</i> promises	
his destruction, 483	
— wounds <i>Laksh-</i>	
<i>mana</i> , 455	
— defeated by <i>Rāma</i> ,	
457	
— his reflections, 457	
— sues, and then in-	
sults, <i>Vedavati</i> , 459	
— his arms crushed	
by <i>Rudra</i> , 461	

Rāvaṇa violates *Rambhā*,

461	—
—	defies <i>Vishnu</i> , 463,
465	—
—	acknowledges <i>Rāma</i>
—	to be <i>Vishnu</i> , 466
—	his body burned
—	with <i>Brahmanical</i> rites,
414	—
—	observes the <i>Vedic</i>
—	ritual, 413
<i>Rāyovājīya</i> , 492	—
<i>Ribhukshan</i> , 76, 95, 311	—
<i>Ribhus</i> , 80, 88, 311	—
<i>Rich</i> , 10	—
<i>Richika</i> , 177	—
<i>Riddhi</i> , wife of <i>Kuvera</i> , 374	—
<i>Rigveda Sanhita</i> quoted or	—
referred to—	—
<i>Maṇḍala</i> i.	
2,	2—76
5,	4—314
7,	3—99
9,	7—310
10,	9—160
10,	11—193, 434
18,	2—317
22, 16—21—	63 ff., 97, 402
22,	17 ff.—75 ff.
24,	8—108
27,	10—299, 395
27,	13—113
32,	1—69
32,	6—102
32,	16—302
33,	11—314
33,	1—602
34,	11—54
39,	6—494
43, 1—6—	91, 300, 399 f.
45,	2—54
50,	7—71, 109
51,	2—68
51,	3—316, 408
51,	5—61
52, 8, 12—	14—99
55,	1—99
56,	4—317
59,	5—103, 111
61,	7—67, 92, 503
61,	9—99
63,	7—103
64,	2—300, 400
67,	3—111
81,	4—314
81,	5—99 f.
85,	1—301, 400
85,	7—68
90,	5, 9—68

Rigveda, continued.

- 90, 7-71
 94, 5-71
 96, 3-28, 82
 99, —499
 102, 8-99 f.
 103, 2-100
 104, 6-315
 105, 8-410
 106, 4-302
 108, 9-70
 112, 3-302
 114, 1-11-301 f., 309 f.,
 396, 400 f.
 115, 1-111
 121, 2 f.-100, 107
 122, 1-306
 125, 2-302
 126, 1-159
 127, 3-494
 128, 2-314 f.
 129, 3-306, 400
 131, 1-306
 154, 1-8-68 ff., 73, 75,
 82, 97, 101
 155, 1-8-74 f., 84, 86,
 97 f.
 156, 1-5-75 f., 97
 164, 6-71
 164, 36-76
 165, 13-314 f.
 167, 4 f.-410, 420
 180, 7-410
 181, 3-82
 186, 10-76
 190, 2-109

Mandala ii.

- 1, 3-76, 97
 1, 6-306, 400
 1, 8 f.-114
 3, 11-314
 12, 1 f., 9, 13-15, 99, 100
 15, 1-3-69, 99, 101,
 108
 18, 4-160
 22, 1-77
 27, 1-115
 27, 10-108, 114
 28, 10-63, 76
 33, 1-15-302, 307 ff.,
 396, 399 ff.
 34, 2-309, 400
 34, 11-85
 38, 4-317
 38, 8-13
 38, 9-309

Mandala iii.

- 2, 5-310
 5, 6-316

Rigveda, continued.

- 6, 4-69, 77
 17, 1-83
 18, 5-82
 26, 7-71
 30, 5-160
 30, 9-101
 32, 7-9-77, 101 f., 109
 33, 4-109
 44, 3-102
 47, 1-314
 53, 6-160
 53, 7-306
 54, 14-77, 97
 55, 10-77

Mandala iv.

- 1, 6-8
 2, 4-78
 3, 1, 6-302, 310, 400
 3, 7-78, 97
 5, 7, 13-316 f.
 6, 6-6
 7, 7-316
 16, 5-102
 18, 11-78, 97 f.
 30, 1-99, 102
 36, 9-310
 38, 5-310
 50, 2-82
 55, 4-79
 58, 5-19

Mandala v.

- 2, 1-341
 3, 1-3-79, 97
 17, 2-316
 21, 4-316
 29, 7-81
 41, 2-311
 41, 20-317
 42, 11, 15-311, 400
 43, 6-317
 46, 2-4-80
 49, 3-504
 51, 9-80
 51, 13-311
 52, 16-311, 400
 54, 6-317
 59, 8-311
 60, 5-311, 400
 63, 5-71
 70, 2 f.-300
 73, 5-91
 74, 6-316
 81, 3-72, 95
 83, 8-5
 87, 1, 4, 8-81, 97

Mandala vi.

- 1, 11-310
 11, 2-7

Rigveda, continued.

- 16, 39-312
 17, 4-310
 17, 7-99, 102
 17, 11-81, 92
 20, 2-82, 98
 21, 9-82
 28, 7-312, 400
 30, 4-99, 103
 31, 2-103
 32, 5-109
 35, 4-310
 38, 3-103
 46, 13-109
 47, 8-160
 48, 13 f.-82
 49, 10-312, 400
 49, 13-82, 97
 50, 2-13
 50, 4-312, 400
 50, 7-17
 50, 12-82
 55, 2-301
 66, 3-312, 400
 69, 1-8-83 f., 97
 70, 1, 5-108, 310
 72, 2-101, 107 f.
 74, 1, 4-313, 400 f.

Mandala vii.

- 1, 6-317
 3, 5-80
 3, 10-314 f.
 10, 4-313
 20, 1-314
 20, 4-99, 103
 21, 3-8-407, 409
 31, 7-102
 32, 16, 22 f.-99, 103, 258
 33, 1-301
 34, 21-317
 35, 6-313, 400
 35, 9-84
 36, 5-313
 36, 8-317
 36, 9-85
 37, 2-314
 39, 5-78, 85
 40, 5-85
 41, 1-313
 42, 3-317
 44, 1-85
 46, 1-4-314, 400
 56, 1, 2-316, 400
 56, 8-319
 58, 5-315
 59, 12-321
 60, 6-314 f.
 65, 3-148
 78, 4-314

Rigveda, continued.

- 82, 5-108
 83, 8-301
 86, 1-108
 86, 4-314
 87, 1, 2-102, 109
 87, 6-69
 93, 8-85
 98, 3-99, 103, 111
 99, 1-7-72, 75, 86 f.,
 97 f., 504
 100, 1-6-82, 86 f., 97,
 307, 504
 101, 4-111
 103, 7-81
 104, 12, 24-410
- Mandala viii.*
 1, 21-68
 3, 6, 8-104
 7, 10-81
 9, 12-88, 97
 10, 2-89
 12, 8-504
 12, 16, 25 ff.-89, 98
 13, 20-316
 14, 13-261
 15, 8 ff.-89, 98
 17, 12-190
 17, 14-319
 19, 10-302
 20, 3-85
 20, 7-314
 20, 17-316, 400
 20, 23-300
 21, 13-15, 100, 104
 22, 1-506
 22, 13 f.-300, 316
 25, 6-82
 25, 11-14-89, 402
 26, 5-300
 27, 8-90
 28, 5-305
 29, 1-10-90 f., 97, 400
 30, 1-113
 31, 10-91
 31, 12-317
 32, 10-82
 35, 1, 14-91
 36, 4-104
 37, 3-104
 42, 1, 2, 10-109, 111, 317
 43, 3-357
 51, 2-76, 104
 57, 1-86
 59, 5-104
 61, 3-316
 64, 12-108
 66, 4-81
 66, 10-27, 91, 97, 502

Rigveda, continued.

- 67, 5-105
 72, 7-93
 77, 3-101
 77, 4-105
 78, 5-105
 82, 11-105
 85, 5-68
 86, 9-105
 87, 2-106
 89, 3 f.-377
 89, 12-78, 97 f.
 90, 11 f.-109

Mandala ix.

- 1, 4-310
 4, 1-113
 6, 3-310
 33, 3-93
 34, 2-93
 43, 5-310
 44, 6-310
 45, 5-90
 56, 4-93
 59, 1-114
 61, 16-112
 63, 3, 12-93, 310
 65, 20-94
 66, 18-63
 67, 5, 10 f.-301, 310
 83, 5-113
 86, 28-30-112
 87, 5-310
 89, 6-112
 90, 5-94
 96, 5-94, 98, 112, 114
 96, 10, 14-114
 97, 16-103
 97, 24-112
 100, 6-95
 100, 8-113
 101, 13-126
 107, 7-113
 109, 4-113
 112, 4-410
 114, 3-115

Mandala x.

- 1, 3-95, 97
 7, 6-7, 9
 9, 5-302
 10, —48
 15, 3-508
 17, 3-162
 25, 1-314 f.
 39, 11-316
 40, 12-316
 42, 9-106
 43, 5-106
 48, 3-106

Rigveda, continued.

- 61, 4-7-46
 61, 19-341
 64, 8-316
 64, 15-317
 66, 1-95
 66, 3-317
 66, 4 f.-95
 69, 3-310
 72, 1-9-11 f., 28, 115
 75, 9-161
 79, 3-316
 81, 1-7-5 ff., 30
 82, 1-7-5 f.
 85, 37-410
 86, 1-108, 114
 86, 16 f.-410
 88, 10-65
 88, 11-114
 90, —282
 90, 2-105
 90, 16-23
 92, 5, 9-317, 400
 92, 11-95
 93, 4, 7-317
 94, 2-161
 95, 4 f.-19
 99, 1-8-408 f.
 102, 8-301
 109, 1-24
 110, 6-309
 111, 1-5-99, 101, 107 f
 113, 1 f.-95
 116, 2-160
 121, 1-10-15, 71
 125, 6-318, 400
 126, 5-318
 127, 1-8-304, 498
 128, 2-96
 129, 1-7-3 f.
 133, 2-15, 100, 107
 134, 1-25, 99, 107
 136, 1-7-318
 138, 3-99
 139, 5-71, 112
 140, 1-310
 141, 3, 5-96
 142, 2-301
 149, 1-101, 108, 110
 154, 3-278
 168, 3 f.-16
 169, 1-320
 171, 2-126
 180, 2-97
 181, 1-3-96
 184, 1-96
 Rishabha incarnation, 156
 Rishikā, 263
 Rishia, 22
 Rishyasringa, 167, 172

Ritadhāman, 180
 Rodast, 420
 Roer's (Dr. E.) translation of the Upanishads, 421
 Rohini, 260, 262
 Rosen's (Dr. F.) Latin translation of the R̥gveda, 63
 Rost (Dr. R.), suggestion made by him, 210
 Roth (Professor Rudolph), article by him in *Jour. of the American Oriental Society*, 48
 — article by him in *Journal of German Oriental Society*, 114, 148
 — his illustrations of the Nirukta, 6, 8, 9, 13, 64, 69, 73, 81 f., 105, 314, etc.
 — his remarks on *śravas* and *śru*, 494.
 See Bohtlingk and Roth
 Rudra, 42, 45, 50
 Rudra, as represented in the R̥gveda, 299 ff.
 — in the Yajurveda, 321 ff.
 — in the Atharvaveda, 332 ff.
 — in the brahmanas, 339 ff.
 — in the Upanishads, 355 ff.
 — in the Rāmāyana, 176, 364 ff., 405
 — in the Mahābhārata, 184–205, 223 ff., 230 ff., 240 f., 266 ff., 278 ff., 282 ff., 373 ff.
 — in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, 378 ff.
 — in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, 392
 — in the Linga Purāṇa, 386 ff.
 — in the Harivaṁśa, 393
 Rudra identified with Agni, 339 f.
 — fights with Viṣṇu, 176, 279
 — fights with Arjuna, 231
 — identified with Kṛishṇa, or Viṣṇu, 280

Rudra, his linga, 192, 405 ff.
 — his unchastity, 191
 — worshipped by Kṛishṇa and Arjuna, 184 ff., 195
 — worshipped by Brahmā and Viṣṇu, 193
 — his fight with Kṛishṇa, 279
 — the creator of Brahmā & Viṣṇu, 188, 193, 391
 — sprung from Brahmā, 392 f.
 — sprung from Kṛishṇa or Viṣṇu, 267, 273
 — identified with Viṣṇu, 241, 280, 384
 — identified with the Supreme Spirit, 185, 232
 — disturbs Dakṣha's sacrifice, 240, 268, 372 ff.
 — destroys castles of the Asuras, 203, 225 f.
 — his vigour increased by hymns, 226
 — his third eye formed, 270
 — his names applied to Viṣṇu, 272
 — prevalence of his worship as described in the Mahābhārata, 284 ff.
 — seizes victims at sacrifice, 284
 — human victims devoted to him, 288 ff.
 — father of Maruts, 305
 — curses Kandarpa, 364
 — the lord of thieves, 327
 — attributes applied to, or abuse of, him explained away by commentators, 327, 379
 — cursed by Dakṣha, 380
 — cursed by Bhrigu, 382
 — plucks out Bhrigu's beard and Bhaga's eyes, knocks out Pūshan's teeth, and cuts off Dakṣha's head, 383 f. (see also 200, 268)
 — formerly general of the gods, 365
 — receives the Gangā on his head, 365
 — swallows poison, 366
 — his abode, 367
 — identified with Viśvakarman, 364, 376 f.

Rudra, his linga appears & allays a dispute between Brahmā and Viṣṇu, 390
 — plays dice with Kṛivera, 483
 — his linga worship, 192, 405 ff.
 — remarks of Professors Wilson, Weber, and Whitney on him, 394 ff.
 — summary of views regarding him, 399 ff.
 Rudra Prajapati, 46
 — Vāstoshpati, 46
 Rudras, 64, 180, 331
 Rudrāṇi, 405
 Rudravartani, sense of the word, 316
 Rukmin, 215, 286
 Rukmiṇi, wife of Kṛishṇa, 189

S.

S'achi, 135
 Sādhyas, 180
 Sagara, 365
 Saint John's Gospel, iii. 8–16
 S'aivas, 385
 S'aivya, 253
 S'akapūṇi, 64 ff., 97, 156
 S'akra, 105
 S'akti, 383
 S'ukvara sūma, 162
 Śalankatankatā, 486
 S'alya, King of the Madras, 221 ff.
 Sāmaveda, parallel passages from, 5, 10, 63, &c.
 — i. 90, and i. 361–27
 S'ambara, 86
 S'ambru, 43, 367
 S'ambru, King of the Daityas, 459
 Śanaka, 38
 Sanandana, 38
 S'anda, 155
 Sandhyāvidyā, 428
 S'ankara on Brahma-sūtras i. 3, 28, referred to, 131
 Sāṅkhāyana Brāhmaṇa vi. 1 ff., 343
 Sāṅkhya, 3, 41, 224
 S'antā, 174
 S'aprathas, 96
 Saptadaśa stoma, 162
 Sarasvatī, 35, 80; 86, 424, 428
 Sarayū, 366, 478 f.

S'araga, 181

S'ara, 78

S'arva, 186, 328, 332

Sarvamedha, 369

S'arvāpi, 405

S'atadhanvan, 253

S'ataghni, a magical
weapon, 249S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa
quoted—

i.

2, 3, 6 —290

2, 5, 1 ff.—122

7, 2, 22 —59

7, 2, 24 —106

7, 3, 1 —202

7, 3, 8 —339, 403

7, 3, 18 —59

7, 4, 1 ff.—45, 201

9, 2, 34 —106

ii.

1, 1, 3 —21

1, 4, 11 —24

1, 4, 27 —123

2, 2, 8 —58

2, 4, 1 —28

4, 4, 1 —28

6, 2, 9 —321

iii.

1, 3, 3 —14, 115

9, 4, 20 —27

iv.

1, 5, 1 —48, 129

5, 4, 1 ff.—61

5, 7, 2 —54

6, 3, 1 —56

v.

1, 1, 1 —60

vi.

1, 1, 1 ff.—20 ff., 404

1, 2, 1 —46

1, 2, 8 —116

1, 2, 13, 21 —21

1, 3, 1 ff.—21

1, 3, 7 ff.—339, 404

2, 1, 1 —21

3, 1, 18 —72

6, 2, 11 —61

6, 3, 2 —61

7, 1, 17 —24

8, 1, 14 —28

vii.

4, 1, 19 —15

4, 3, 5 —27

5, 2, 11 —19

5, 2, 21 —22

VOL. IV.

S'atap Brāhmaṇa, *contd.*

ix.

1, 1, 1 ff.—330, 347

1, 1, 6 ff.—348

2, 2, 2 —21

3, 3, 2 —56

5, 1, 1 —56

5, 1, 12 ff.—58

x.

1, 3, 1 ff.—54

1, 4, 1 —55

2, 1, 1 —29

2, 2, 1, 5 —23

2, 3, 18 —23

2, 4, 8 —23

3, 5, 13 —56

4, 2, 2 —55

4, 3, 1 ff.—56

4, 4, 1 —55

6, 6, 1 —3

xi.

1, 2, 12 —58

1, 4, 4 —506

1, 6, 1 ff.—17, 24

1, 6, 14 —21

1, 8, 1 f.—30, 60

2, 3, 1 —29

2, 3, 6 —58

2, 7, 26 —61

3, 2, 1 —61

4, 3, 1 —56

5, 1, 1 —19

6, 3, 8 —116

xii.

3, 4, 1 —29

7, 3, 1 —261

xiii.

2, 4, 1 —29

6, 1, 1 —29

7, 1, 1 —29

7, 1, 14 f.—369

xiv.

1, 1, 1 —124

1, 2, 11 —27

2, 2, 2 —24

4, 2, 21, 23 —29

7, 1, 34 —131

8, 1, 1 —258

8, 6, 1 —24

S'atarudriya, 186, 198,

199, 322 ff.

— its object and name

explained, 349

S'atarūpā, 13, 48

Sati (Mahādeva's wife),

378, 385. See Umā

S'atrughna, 175, 445

Sattva guṇa, 267, 276

Satyaloka, 388

Saubha, a magical city,
246, 249, etc.

Saumanasa peak, 440

Saumya adhvara, 44

Saurva, 328

Savira, 214

Savana, 60

Sāvarni Manvantarā, 149,
155

Savitri, 20, 72, 80, 109.

See Sūrya

Savitri, 48, 379

Sayana, 11, 12, 14, 46,

261, 303, etc.

Sāyagriha muni, 252

Schlegel's Rāmāyana, 33,

and passim

— his opinion referred

to, 170

Scholia minora on the

Iliad quoted, 255

S'esha, 110

Siddhas, 165

Siddhānta, 110

Siddhānta-śromani, 110

Siddhānta-rama, 135

S'ipivishṭa, 87 f., 504 ff.

S'isnadeva, sense of the

word, 407 ff.

S'isupāla disputes

na's right to K

205 ff.

— his previous history,

211

— slain by Krishna, 215

Sītā, daughter of Janaka,

and wife of Rāma, 175,

and passim

— her birth from the

ground, 464 f.

— threatened by Rak-

shasis, 416

— sees Rāma wounded,

451

— was formerly Veda-

vati, 460

— born for Rāvana's

destruction, 460, 471

— enters the fire, 178

S'itikanṭha, 176, 240

S'iva, 176 (see Rudra)

S'ivā, wife of Aśvira

Skambha, 11 f., 18 f.

Skanda (see Kārttikeya)

Skanda Purāṇa, 152

Sky (Dyṇ), 46 [pati, 45

Sky, daughter of Prajā-

Soma, 77, 80, 94 f., 108,

113 f., 360, 422

- Somagiri, 367
 Speech, 22
 Sphulingini, 429, 498
 S'raddhā, 27
 S'ri, 78, 168, 273, 453
 S'ridhara Svāmin, 51
 S'rikantha, 241
 S'rivatsa, 241, 263
 Stasinus, Cypria, 256
 Stevenson (Dr.), on the
 ante-brahmanical reli-
 gion of the Hindus, 406
 Sthānu, 165, 167
 Stomas, 162
 Sudarsana (name of Vish-
 nu's chakra), 191, 249
 Sūdasana, 249
 Suddhāsuddhīya, 491
 Suddhūmravarnā, 429
 Sugriva, 452, 465
 Sukesha, 486
 Sūkra, 150, 152 ff.
 S'ulohitā, 429, 498
 Sumali, 487, 495
 Sumitrā, 173, 175
 Sunāman, 245, 249
 Sūnāsopa, 289, 300
 Sundarī, 487
 Supārśva (minister of Rā-
 vana), 413
 S'ūrasenas, 245
 S'ūrp-*zakhā*, 482, 488
 Sūrya, 29, 61, 66
 — texts in praise of,
 109, 473
 — one of the triad of
 gods, 66, 160 ff., 298
 Sūryā (goddess), 91
 S'ushna, 107
 Sutala, 149
 Svadhā, 4
 — sense of the word,
 314
 Svadhūvat, sense of, 314
 Svāhā, 353
 Svapivāta, sense of the
 word, 314
 Svarāt, 43
 Svayambhū, 47, 173
 Svāyambhuva, 13
 Svetadvīpa, 241
 Svetāśvatara, Upanishad,
 355
 Svishṭakṛt, 200, 372

 T.
 Taittiriya, 70
 Taittiriya Aranyaka—
 i. 14, 1 —116
 — 23, 1 — 24
 Taittiriya Aran., *contd.*—
 v. 1, 1 ff.—127
 x. 1, 8 —28, 502
 — 1, 160 —422
 Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa—
 i.
 1, 3, 5 ff.— 24
 4, 1, 1 — 59
 6, 1, 2 —317
 6, 4, 10 —321
 7, 1, 2 —347
 7, 1, 6 —261
 ii.
 2, 9, 9 — 25
 6, 9, 1 ff.— 21
 1, 5, 7 —129
 2, 7, 9 —15
 2, 9, 6 —61
 4, 1, 1 —289
 9, 21, 1 —116
 10, 9, 1 —58
 12, 3, 1 —29
 Taittiriya Sanhitā—
 i.
 1, 5, 1 —341
 1, 8, 1 —126
 ii.
 2, 12, 5 —505
 3, 2, 1 —55
 4, 9, 2 —492
 4, 12, 2 —78
 5, 5, 2 —504, 506
 6, 8, 3 —200
 iii.
 2, 4, 1 —126
 4, 5, 1 —129
 iv.
 1, 8, 3 ff.—17
 6, 2, 1 ff.—5 f.
 v.
 4, 3, 1 —348
 5, 7, 4 —348
 7, 5, 3 —24
 vi.
 2, 4, 2 —39
 2, 7, 5 —492
 6, 8, 3 —160
 vii.
 1, 5, 1 ff.—24
 4, 9, 1 —201
 Tulaketu, 253
 Talavakāra Upanishad,
 420, 422
 Tamas, 267, 276
 Tandī, 195
 Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa—
 iv. 1, 4—503
 vi. 9, 7—349
 vii. 4, 2—503
 — 5, 6—507
 — 5, 11; 6, 5—503
 — 5, 20—152
 — 8, 1 f.—503
 viii. 1, 4—491 f.
 — 2, 1—502
 — 2, 10—503
 ix. 7, 9—504
 xii. 5, 23; 9, 21; 13,
 27—503
 — 6, 8—507
 xiii. 4, 17—491
 xiv. 11, 28—491 f.
 xviii. 1, 9—492
 — 6, 26—506
 xx. 14, 2—503
 — 15, 6—504

 Tunūnapāt, 9
 Tapoloka, 146
 Tāraka, Tārakāksha, an
 Asura, 223 f.
 Tārکشya, 148
 Tides, cause of the, 219
 Time, in the form of an
 ascetic, 477
 Tirtha, a commentator on
 the Rāmāyaṇa, 480
 Tishya, 316
 Trayastrīṃśa stoma, 163
 Triad of Agni, Vayu (or
 Indra), and Sūrya, 61,
 163, 298, 421
 — of Brahmā, Vishnu
 and Śiva (or Rudra),
 280
 Trijatā, a Rākshasī, 451
 Tūkadruka, 77, 87
 Trikūta, 285
 Trimūrti, 163
 Trinava stoma, 162
 Triṇavindu, 486
 Tripishṭapa, 284
 Triple science, 60
 Trishubh, 123, 162
 Trisringa, 368
 Trīta Aptya, 89, 409
 Trivikrama, 67, 273
 Trivṛt stoma, 161
 Tryambaka, 204, 321
 Tūrghna, 128
 Tushitas, 120
 Tvaṣṭī, 80, 91, 95, 97,
 116, 317

U.

Uchhaishravas, 245
 Udayagiri, or Udaya-
 parvata, 66, 440
 Udgātṛi, 66
 Ugra and Ugradeva, 336,
 339, 342 f., 346
 Ugrasena, 249
 Ukthya ritual, 84
 Umā, daughter of Daksha
 and Prasūti, 378, 385
 — reborn as daughter
 of Himavat and Menā,
 385
 Umā Haimavati, 421 ff.
 Umā, how she got her name,
 431
 — her names and attri-
 butes, 432
 — born as a child of
 Yasodā, 434
 — connected with Vish-
 nu as Mahāmāyā, 435
 — identified with the
 Supreme Spirit, 436,
 (Called also Aparnā,
 Devī, Purgā, Kālī,
 Kāṭālī, Pūrvatī, Sati,
 Yoga-nidrā)
 Upahavya, the, 491
 Upamanyu, 189
 Upendra, 150. See Vishnu
 Urmilā, 465
 Urukrama, 121
 Uśanas, 142 f., 150, 152
 Ushas, 91, 340
 Uśījes, 112
 Uttānapad, 12 f.
 Uttānapāda, 13
 Uttānu muui, 275
 Uttara Kurus, 367
 Uttara Mīmāṃsā, 131

V.

Vāch, 23, 46 f.
 Vajrayanta, 393
 Vamānika creation, 388
 Vairāja sāman, 162
 Vairūṭh sāman, 162
 Vaishnava rite, 294, 416,
 496
 Vaishnavas, 377
 Vaisravana, 370, 482, 486
 Vaitarani river, 284
 Vaivasvata Manvantara,
 120, 136
 Vajasanyī Sanhitā quoted
 or referred to—
 57-63—321, 420
 6, 11—430

Vāj. Sanhitā, continued—

5, 15—66
 5, 16—86
 6, 3—74
 8, 45—5
 10, 20—16
 11, 57—126
 12, 102—16
 13, 4—15
 16, 1-66—302, 322ff., 505
 17, 17-23—5
 17, 25-31—5 f.
 18, 66—71
 23, 3—16
 23, 20—171
 23, 49—67
 25, 12, 13—15 f.
 27, 5—17
 27, 25 f.—16
 30, 5—289
 32, 4—358
 32, 6 f.—16
 33, 74—4
 33, 48 f.—80
 37, 3-5—27, 126
 39, 8—403
 Vajastavas, sense of the
 word, 310, 494
 Vajramushti, 487
 Vaktra, 286
 Vālmiki, "sees" the
 Rāmāyana, 441
 Vāmadeva, 171
 Vāmana Purāṇa, 228
 Vamra, 409
 Varada, 428
 Varāha, an Asura, 93.
 See "Boar"
 Varāha Purāṇa, 278
 Varchin, 86
 Varuna, 14, 20, 48, 68, 74,
 76, 98
 — his majesty cele-
 brated, 108 f.
 — his daughter, 458,
 462. See Punjikasthala
 Varuṇāni, 405
 — his bonds or nooses,
 148, 250
 Vasiṣṭha, 33, 73, 96, 171,
 etc.
 Vastavya, 202
 Vastoshpati, 47
 Vasudeva, 38, 218, 270, etc.
 — of the Pundras, 297
 Vasu Sāvitra, 495
 Vasus, 54, 91
 Vāta, 18, 76, 96
 Vāyu, 29, 46, 66, 70, 76,
 89, etc.

Vāyu, one of the triad of
 gods, 66, 70, 160 ff.
 Vāyu Purāṇa quoted, 188,
 267, 278, 375, 377
 Vedas, deprecated by the
 S'āivas, 381
 Vedavati, 458, 471
 Vedavyāsa incarnation, 156
 Vendidad, 328
 Vibhāṇḍaka, 166
 Vibhishana, 370, 450, 462,
 476
 — his righteous
 character, 483, 489
 — obtains boon
 from Brahmā, 483, 489
 Vibhvan, 80
 Vidarbhas, 215
 Vidēvas, 177
 Vidhātṛi, 81, 121, 204
 Vidūratha, 246
 Vidyutkosa, 486
 Vināvaka, 359
 Vinḍhyavali, 145, 149
 Virabhadra, 373, 377
 Virūj, 44, 48, 148, 390
 Virinchi, Virinchya, 378,
 389. See Brahmā.
 Virochana, 133
 Vīśāl, 214
 Viśeṣa, 44
 Vishnu, 20, 27 f., 31, 34
 36 ff., 47, 219, & passim
 — as represented in
 Rigveda, 63-97
 — his three steps,
 63 ff., 229, 439
 — his rank in the
 Rigveda, as compared
 with other deities, 97-
 114
 — as Aditya, 114-
 121, 164
 — as described in the
 Brāhmanas, 121 ff.
 — a dwarf, 123
 — the sacrifice, 125
 — his incarnation as
 a fish, tortoise, boar, 27,
 37 ff.
 — as a dwarf, 130 ff.
 — kills S'ukra's mo-
 ther, 152
 — doomed by S'ukra's
 curse to be born seven
 times on earth, 152,
 155 f.
 — his ten incarnations
 according to the Matsya
 Purāṇa, 156

- Vishṇu, his twenty-two incarnations according to the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, 156
 — his incarnations innumerable according to ditto, 156
 — incarnation as Rāma, 156, 168 ff., 175, 441 f.
 — his incarnation as Kṛishṇa, 156, 169, 216 ff., 252 ff.
 — one with Rudra, 241
 — one with the Supreme Spirit, 38, 50, 181, 264 ff.
 — fights with Rudra, 177 f.
 — Brahmā and Mahādeva produced from him, 230, 267, 273
 — his dispute with Brahmā, 389
 — sprung from Rudra (or Mahādeva), 391
 Vishṇupada, 65
 Viṣṇu Purāṇa quoted or referred to—
 i. 2, 21 f.—3
 — 2, 25 —41
 — 3, 1 f.—36
 — 4, 1 f.—36
 — 7 —385
 — 7, 1 —35
 — 7, 6 —392
 — 7, 12, &c.—35, 48
 — 7, 26 —35
 — 8, 9 —385
 — 15, 90 ff.—119
 — 22, 24 ff.—262
 ii. 5, 19 —110
 iii. 1, —136
 iv. 14, 4 —215
 v. 1, 1 f.—254 ff.
 — 26, 1 —216

- Vishvaksena, 181
 Viśvavās, 482, 486
 Viśvajit sacrifice, 137
 Viśvakarman, 22, 149, 176, 204, 367 ff., 377, 484
 Viśvāmitra, 177, 189
 Viśvarūpi, 429
 Viśvedevas, 89, 128
 Vivasvat, 14 f., 33 f.
 Vraja, 50
 Vratya, 338
 Vṛihadraṭha, 291
 Vṛihaspatiasava, 382
 Vṛishasipra, 86
 Vṛitra, 78, 89
 Vyādi, 490

W.

- Waters, 17 f., 22 ff., 31 ff., 119
 Warriors slain in battle, their future rewards, 277
 Weber, Prof. Albrecht, see "Indische Studien"
 — translation and remarks supplied by him, 201
 — his dissertation on Rudra, 395 ff.
 — on Umā, 421 ff.
 — his article in Journal of Germ. Or. Soc., 131
 — Indische Streifen, 289
 — article in Kuhn and Schleicher's Beiträge, 81
 — his notice of the first edition of this work, 298
 — remarks on Mundaka Upanishad, i. 2, 4—429
 — on Ś'ipivishṭa, 505
 Westergaard's dissertation on Indian history, 405
 — Radices, 299
 Whitney's (Prof. W. D.) remarks on Rudra, 398 f.

- Wilkinson's (Mr. L.) translation of Siddhānta-siromani, 110
 Williams's (Prof. Monier) Indian Epic Poetry, 161, 186
 — Sanskrit English Dictionary, 249
 Wilson's (Prof. H. H.) Sāṅkhyakārikā, 41
 — Sanskrit Dictionary, 82
 — translation of Rigveda, 66, 171
 — of Viṣṇu Purāṇa, 3, 41, 48, 119, etc.

- his remarks on Rudra, 394 f.
 "Work-gods" are not objects of sacrifice, but can offer it, 131, 496

Y.

- Yadus, 50
 Yajna incarnation, 156
 Yājñika, 152
 Yajush, 10, 96
 Yajushmatī, 57
 Yakshas, 153, 167
 Yama, 48, 180, 203, 333
 Yami, 48
 Yaska. See Nirukta
 Yatis, 491 f.
 Yātudhāna, 332
 Yātudhānia, 326
 Yavana, 253
 Yoga, 224
 Yoganidrā, 435
 Yudhishtira, 205 & passim
 — purposes
 — rajasūya sacrifice, 287, 292

Z.

- Zeus, 256

